THE

VIRGINIA MAGAZINE

OF

HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY

THE VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

FOR THE

YEAR ENDING DECEMBER 31, 1916.

VOL. XXIV.

RICHMOND, VA.
HOUSE OF THE SOCIETY,
No. 707 EAST FRANKLIN ST.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE.

ARCHER ANDERSON,

C. V. MEREDITH,

E. V. VALENTINE.

Editor of the Magazine.

WILLIAM G. STANARD.

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS, PRINTERS,
RICHMOND, VA.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

$5.00 per Annum

Single No. $1.5

THE VIRGINIA MAGAZINE OF HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

RICHMOND, VA.

VOL. XXIV—No. 1. JANUARY, 1916.

Entered at the Postoffice at Richmond, Va., as Second-class Matter.

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS, PRINTERS TO THE SOCIETY

6-8-10 North Eighth Street

CONTENTS.

MICHEL'S MAP
(Reduced)

THE
VIRGINIA MAGAZINE
OF
HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

VOL. XXIV. JANUARY, 1916. No. 1

REPORT OF THE JOURNEY OF FRANCIS LOUIS MICHEL FROM BERNE, SWITZERLAND, TO VIRGINIA, OCTOBER 2, 1701-DECEMBER 1, 1702.(1)

Translated and edited by Prof. Wm. J. Hinke, Ph. D.

[The attention of the translator (Prof. Hinke) was first drawn to the reports and letters of Michel by Mr. Albert Cook Myers, the well known Quaker historian of Pennsylvania. In his researches, connected with the editing of the "Complete Works of Wm. Penn," Mr. Myers had come across these valuable documents, which had been printed in part in 1898 in a historical year book, published in Berne, Switzerland. It is entitled, "Neues Berner Taschenbuch auf das Jahr 1898," i. e., "New Berne Pocket Book for the Year 1898." In this Year Book (pp. 59-144) Mr. J. H. Graf published a series of reports and letters of Michel, from a Ms. in the city library of Berne, under the title: "Francis Louis Michel of Berne and his first Travels to America, 1701-1704." As there were a number of omissions in this publication, a complete copy of the Ms. was secured through the

(1)-This report of Michel is accompanied by a map, which he himself drew of the entrance of the Chesapeake Bay. The reproduction in the MAGAZINE is a reduced copy of Michel's map.

kindness and courtesy of the Chief Librarian of the Berne library, Prof. Dr. Wolfgang F. von Mülinen. The whole Ms. is now published for the first time in an English translation.(1a)

Francis Louis Michel, who is well known through his connection with Baron Graffenried and the establishment of the first German colony at New Berne, North Carolina, in the year 1710, belonged to a prominent Berne family, Michel von Schwertschwendi. His father, David Michel, born 1634, was Lord of Ralligen, became member of the Great Council of Berne in 1673 and prefect of Gottstatt in 1684. He died February 7, 1696. He had three children. His younger son, John Louis, born April 6, 1684, became Lord of Aarau and revenue commissioner in Yverdon. His older son, whose date of birth seems to be unknown, led an adventurous life as traveler and explorer in America. His daughter, Johanna Esther, was married to Abraham Wild, prefect of Buchsee. In his early life Francis Louis Michel had a military training. He probably served as an officer in the French army. His whole later conduct, as well as his interest in military affairs, point in that direction. After he had returned home, Michel made two journeys to America, between the years 1702-1704. His letters and reports show that he aimed at settling a Swiss colony in America. In this he was not directly successful, but his letters led to the organization of a joint-stock company, known as George Ritter and Co., under whose auspices Christopher von Graffenried founded the German colony of New Berne, N. C., in the year 1710, at the mouth of the Trent and Neuse rivers.

The more important documents of Francis Louis Michel, preserved at Berne, are in reality not the originals themselves, but copies, made by his brother, John Louis Michel. They consist of the following:

1. A short report of his journey to America, October 2, 1701-December 1, 1702, accompanied by a series of sketches: (a) A map showing the entrance of the Chesapeake Bay; (b) a sketch of the College at Williamsburg; (c) a sketch of the State House,

(1a)-In the interpretation of difficult words, the translator had the assistance of Prof. A. B. Faust, of Cornell University, and of Prof. W. F. von Mülinen, of the University of Berne, Switzerland.

begun 1702; (d) a sketch of the Church at Williamsburg; (e) a sketch of a waterspout; (f) a sketch of three Indians and their houses.

2. "Several letters, which arrived after the departure of my brother, dated February 14, 1703, from London, and from America."

3. A draft of a petition to the Queen of England, asking for a concession, in order to found a colony there.]

SHORT REPORT OF THE AMERICAN JOURNEY, WHICH WAS MADE FROM THE 2ND OF OCTOBER OF LAST YEAR TO THE FIRST OF DECEMBER OF THIS CURRENT YEAR 1702.

On the Ship Nassau,
built for 700 tons and forty pieces [of cannon].
Account of my first travels.
Soli Deo Gloria.

1701, October. After I had determined upon this journey, I engaged passage on a ship going down the Rhine, at Basle, on the 8th of October, and on the 30th of said month I arrived in Rotterdam, where an English yacht lay ready, to convey Milord Galloway to London. I made use of this opportunity. On the evening of the 31st, we left the land and with the ebb and a weak but good wind sailed for three hours, then anchored. In the morning we made use of the tide and at ten o'clock reached Briel [Brielle](2), a city five hours distant from Rotterdam. As the wind was too weak Milord stayed there till the following morning. In the forenoon we sailed with an east wind out of the Rhine into the ocean, for about two hours, when we were forced, because of the weak wind and the unfavorable tide, to cast anchor. At evening the aforesaid wind increased and we advanced during the night about 30 hours [90 miles]. At noon we saw land, which looked as if it were enclosed by high, white walls, inasmuch as the largest part of England towards the ocean lies upon white and high cliffs of chalk. At evening

(2)-Brielle lies at what is now the mouth of the New Meuse River, on the island of Voorne.

we anchored in the Tems [Thames]. In the morning we sailed up the stream, covered with ships, through a beautiful and fertile district, passing the town of Gravesend.

1701, November. To-night, namely the 4th of November, we landed in London, not far from the Tower. But before we landed we were carefully searched for the third time, whether we had any dutiable goods. Even the trunks of Milord were not spared. The dutiable goods consist among other things of yarn, laces, linen, that is unused, wine, whiskey, and other foreign goods. As it was already dark and as I was unacquainted with English customs and the English language, I had great difficulty in finding a lodging place for the night. But in the morning a Frenchman showed me a room, in the so-called Quarter Gracq, which was rented by the week, where I stayed till my embarkation.

I shall not delay long in order to describe this great and mighty city and the fertile country, because, as one of the most beautiful and richest countries, it is sufficiently well known. In this great metropolis the splendid St. Paul's cathedral is especially noteworthy, whose size and costly workmanship excite attention, since more than thirty six years have been spent in its erection and more than ten years will still be necessary before it is completed(3). It is built of large white hewn stone. To secure the necessary money for it the burning of hard coal is taxed. Each wagonload is taxed a crown, which yields an incredibly large sum.

Not far from the city two royal castles are located, together with the adjoining pleasure and game parks, where the late king William used to spend much time. One is called Kensington(4), the other Grenwitsch [Greenwich].(5)

(3)-According to Baedeker's *London*, 16th ed., 1911, p. 91, "the present church, designed by Christopher Wren and begun in 1675, was opened for divine service on December 2, 1697, and completed in 1710. The greater part of the cost of the construction, which may be estimated at about 850,000 l., was defrayed by a tax on coal entering the port of London."

(4)-Kensington Palace was purchased from the second Earl of Nottingham by King William III. in 1689. The present brick edifice was built for William and Mary in 1689-91. See Baedeker's *London*, p. 264.

(5)-Greenwich Palace, built by Charles II. in 1667, was converted into a Hospital for aged and disabled soldiers by William III. in 1694. See Baedeker's *London*, p. 393.

In order to gain my purpose, I went out daily to inquire when the West India ships would sail. After eight days I learned that within four weeks, as usual, a large number of ships would leave for that country, but especially the ship Nassau, upon which it was possible at that time, because of the King's liberality, to travel free of charge. To that end I inquired of the commissioner, appointed for that purpose, who at once approved of my desire and informed me that the ship would sail within four weeks. The stranger can find out daily, at the Bourse, when and where the ships ready to sail leave, and also the name of the captain and at what place and time he is to be found; the size of the ship, the number of sailors and cannons is also stated.

The ordinary fare is five pounds, sometimes six, for the journey across, but only half that amount for the return journey. After I had made sure of the ship, I inquired what marketable goods could be purchased. I bought, as far as I was able, some of every kind, also what was necessary for the journey and my stay there, namely: A mattress, linen, whiskey, ready-made clothes, hats, stockings, shoes, rifles, all kinds of household goods and implements, knives, scissors, shoe buckles, hair powder, especially amber, all kinds of perfumes and laces; in short everything that a man needs, except food. The ordinary and lowest profit is fifty per cent. But there are goods on which one can double and even treble his money. The largest profit of the merchants is due to the fact that the inhabitants of the West [Western World] have to order everything from England, because through lack of artisans nothing can be made in that country, although the materials for many things can be found there. It is probable that the merchants in England make no search for this [material], but rather discourage it, because they would lose much in trade.

When I had finished my purchases and the appointed time had come, I went to the commissioner, named Captain Jaco, who resides in St. Anne street.(6) He informed me that the ship would soon be ready to leave and that it was lying at anchor

(6)-St. Anne St. is near Westminster Abbey, connecting Orchard St and Great Peter St.

at Blackwahl [Blackwall](7), one hour from London. He gave me a note to Captain Robert Trischen, to receive me and to board me according to custom.

1701, December. On the 15th of December I went on board of ship. I looked at once for a well located cabin and with some effort made myself comfortable. There were 140 persons on the same deck. We stayed there without prospect [of departure] till January 14, 1702.

1702, January. The cause [of the delay] was the contrary wind and also the fact that our ship, because of its size, was subject to military service. But Mr. William, the owner of the ship, substituted another ship in its place. He was able to secure this concession because he was a member of parliament at that time. Fourteen ships are owned by him. The king has knighted him. He has great wealth. In his youth he was a common sailor.

During this time merchandise and provisions were daily taken on board, and also some poor English (*) people, or persons who had been guilty of some crime, young and old, sold into servitude for four years. Those who are not of age must serve, according to law, till they have reached the 21st year, for food and clothes. When they are sold in Virginia the ordinary price is from ten to eighteen pounds. After they have gained their liberty, they work for some years, until they themselves can set up a plantation or farm, as indeed most of the inhabitants of that land have come in in such a manner and have settled there in that way.

In passing, I cannot omit to relate briefly what happened on the 22nd at night, at ten o'clock, through those sold into servitude. It should be known that there are people in England and especially in London, who sell foreigners and simple-minded people to go on West India ships. About fifty of these deceived and liberty-loving people plotted together, supplied themselves secretly with sticks, to be used in case they would meet opposition in their effort to seize the sloop by force and to

(7)-The Blackwall docks, near Blackwall tunnel, are at the east end of London.

(*)-The original does not read "Armee Leuten," as the printed edition (Year Book, p. 67) gives it, but "armen Leuten," as Prof. von Mülinen reads it.

return to the land. But they had to come up the stairway, close to which I and four French families had settled. We looked in upon the commotion for a while, not knowing of their intention, until they all made a furious rush to seize the stairway. We thought their object was to attack us, hence four of us seized swords and held the passage-way, until the ship's owner, together with twelve sailors, who had heard the uproar in their beds, came down in their shirts with their guns and anchor bars, saw the tumult and knocked down everybody who resisted and did not escape. Many were badly wounded and beaten. They took twenty of the leaders, whom they laid, during the whole cold night, backwards across the cable and the anchor-ropes. The noise was heard on shore and became known in London. The captain came to hear what was the nature of the tumult. After he had heard of their plan, he ordered twelve of the chief ringleaders and also two women, who had incited the revolt, to be locked up in irons. They had to suffer for it during the whole journey. The owner of the ship and also the captain were very grateful, that so few of us had held up the mob, and had taken the part of the ship's owner, in return for which we were well treated. Especially at our departure, when the King refused to pay the passage money for the fugitives from France [Huguenots], as the commissioner informed us, we had no other thought than that we would have to pay, namely six pounds sterling. But the rich owner asked us to see him. We had to relate to him from beginning to end how it all had happened. He told us that, though there was no hope that we be paid from the king's treasury as hitherto, yet in consideration of our services and faithfulness, he wished us good luck on our journey, but asked no money. Each one also had to drink to his health.

After the above date we were fully ready for the journey and we weighed anchor for the fifth time, in vain. On the 14th, however, we had good sailing weather, hence we left in the forenoon and in the evening reached Gravesend, situated about 21 miles from London. It is provided with a strong fort(8), on

(8)–"On the Essex bank, opposite Gravesend, we observe the low bastions of Tilbury Fort, originally constructed by Henry VIII. to defend the mouth of the Thames, and since extended and strengthened;" see Baedeker, *London*, p. 392.

the other side of the water, where ships stop, sometimes because of stormy weather, at other times to get papers of clearance and ammunition(9). The servants of the ship are also paid here, if they have anything to demand.

We lay there till the 24th. As there was good wind then, we left in the forenoon and in the evening reached the mouth of the Tems [Thames] at Northpoint(10). There we anchored. The battle ships of the first class pass the winter here. On the following day, with a weak wind, we advanced 88 miles. The next day we passed a dangerous place over the covered sandbanks(11),which lie between Northpoint and Dunes [Downs](12) The path of the ships is marked, as being 3, 4, 5 to 6 fathoms of water. The dangerous character of the place is shown by the masts, which protrude out of the water at many places. These lie not far from Marget [Margate]. On the 26th, in beautiful weather, but with weak, contrary wind, we reached Dunes [Downs], where 64 large as well as small warships and merchantmen of different nationalities were assembled. This harbor is guarded by two sea castles, between them lies an open notable place (13),but the east wind is very dangerous to the ships, which stay there, as five days before our arrival fifteen small and large ships, through the severe storm and the breaking of anchor ropes or cables, were broken to pieces on the chalk cliffs, and partly were driven to and upon sandbanks where most of them suffered shipwreck.

1702, February. We stayed there to the 6th of February, on account of the contrary north-west wind. Two ships returned from the sea badly used up through the rough weather. Inasmuch as the wind blew from the east in the evening, we, to-

(9)-The description of Baedeker agrees closely: "Vessels on their way up the Thames here take pilots and customs house officer on board, and outward bound vessels also usually touch here;" see *London*, p. 433f.

(10)-Northpoint is identical with the promontory North Foreland, about half a mile from Margate.

(11)-These sandbanks are the dangerous quicksands, called Goodwin Sands; see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, 3rd ed., 1894, p. 24.

(12)-"The 'Downs,' between Goodwin Sands and the mainland form an excellent harbour of refuge in stormy weather;" see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, p. 25.

(13)-This notable place is Deal, with Deal Castle to the north of the town and Walmer Castle to the south of it; see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, p. 25.

gether with twelve other ships, weighed anchor, but we could not leave this evening with the others, because the captain delayed too long on shore and we had to weigh two heavy anchors. At dawn, on the 7th, we sailed by Douvres [Dover], six miles from Dunes. Here the channel is only 21 miles wide, so that Calais in France can well be recognized. The wind changed to our disadvantage, hence we had to tack about, towards the coast of Normandy. We saw some French fishermen together with a large ship. It soon signalled by a flag that it was English. Finally we were compelled to make for Spitheat [Spithead](14), which lies opposite the Isle of Wight. We had great difficulty in veering about, because the wind was altogether contrary. There is a strong fort which guards the harbor(15) This is one of the best and securest sea ports of England. A large number of warships were there, most of them ready to sail. They were filled with men pressed into service. We stayed there during the night. The next morning we sailed about six miles, in stormy weather, and cast anchor before Cow [Cowes], a beautiful place in the island(16). There were 56 merchantmen there, waiting for east wind, which had not blown for ten weeks, the northerly and westerly wind is especially common. There was among others a large Dutch ship there, destined for the East Indies, which had waited six weeks for favorable wind. The ship's company was large and sickness was among them, so that more than forty persons had died since they were lying there.

We had to wait again for wind till the 18th. In the meantime the empty water barrels were filled in the beautiful and fruitful Isle of Wight. It extends thirty miles in length and six miles in width(17). Oysters are taken there in large quantities. It looked as if the wind would not change soon, hence the captain sent for his wife from London. It is only forty

(14)-The roadstead of Spithead is between Portsmouth and the Isle of Wight.

(15)-Blockhouse Fort, opposite Point Battery in Portsmouth, is probably meant; see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, map facing p. 55.

(16)-West Cowes has the best harbor in the Isle of Wight, see Baedeker, l. c., p. 74.

(17)-Baedeker's *Great Britain*, p. 67, gives the extent of the island as 22 miles in length and 13 miles in width.

miles by land(18). She reached the ship Saturday evening. But in the morning of the 18th, at dawn, it began to blow from the east. At noon it was very good sailing weather, so that all preparations for sailing were made. The captain's wife took leave and was taken back on a sloop with two pieces of cannon. At the same time our pilot, Mr. Bonnus, went on land, because of his health, in his place Mr. Buller came. At two o'clock all the ships were under sail. They were saluted by the fort located there, with many shots of cannon, to which the ships gave many replies and thus they took leave. They sailed together between the island and the mainland, passed the last fort(19), which lies on the land near the place of exit, and then they passed into the sea. Each ship showed by its flag its nationality, namely English, Dutch, Swedish, Danish and those from Hamburg. Most of them took their course southward. Our ship alone turned westward. The condition of our ship was as follows: We had only 18 pieces of cannon that could be used, besides the captain, officers, sailors, passengers and merchants, together with 130 persons that had been sold, in all 218 souls. We were also sufficiently supplied with all kinds of provisions. Food was henceforth distributed in the following manner: Five passengers had to club together. They received daily four pounds of biscuit, one quart of beer, two quarts of water, two pieces of beaf and pork, weighing six pounds, in addition every noon, which was mealtime and announced by the ringing of bells, a dish full of large peas. On Sundays and Wednesdays we received in place of the meat two pounds of flour and half a pound of pork lard, out of which a thick paste is made, which is put into a linen sack. It is cooked with the meat, but not as long as the latter. Grape juice is often put into it, which is a good dish, called boudin [pudding]. It happens often that instead of meat fresh and large beans with butter are given out. The food is often, on account of the heat and because it is not salted sufficiently, like the water, of such bad taste that we suffered considerably, especially because the large number of

(18)-The exact distance from London to Portsmouth is 44 miles; see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, p. 55.

(19)-Probably Hearst Castle is meant, one of the cost defences of Henry VIII; see Baedeker, *Great Britain*, p. 95.

mice spoiled our bread altogether. The captain and those that eat at his table are always supplied with fresh meat, nor do they use wine and strong beer sparingly. It costs ten pounds for the journey outwards and six pounds for the return trip to eat at his table, besides the transportation fare.

This night the ship began to rock. In the morning we saw no land, but two ships came in sight. As the wind increased the ship rocked more than before, so that almost all were seized with sea sickness. With many others I was unable to eat anything within four days. Even if one did eat something, it did not stay, but the stomach had to surrender it again, which was a great hardship to the people. Usually one cannot eat for some time even that food, which one could eat before the sickness. The meat was lying about in large quantities, because the rations were cooked as usual, although during the first days hardly anybody ate anything.

The east wind continued constantly, so that we needed from twelve to sixteen sails. On the 21st, we passed Sorlingen(20) [Scilly islands], the extreme end of England, a dangerous cliff. A French woman died to-day. She was a lively, sensible and thoughtful woman, who left a husband together with two little boys. Three hours after her death a sack full of stones was attached to her and thus she was consigned to the deep.

1702, March. The above mentioned wind continued blowing strong to the 8th of March. We sailed every twenty four hours between sixty and eighty miles. While doing it we were troubled considerably by the violent motion of the ship. During this time nothing remarkable occurred. On the 8th, at noon, as on every day when the sun shines, the captain took the latitude. He found that we were on the 45th degree, about 650 hours or 1950 miles from London. Day and night there was at this point a difference of two and a half hours in time. The more one turns west, the longer the day becomes, compared with our country or Europe. The acute fever prevailed among us very much, so that about forty men and women were sick, and every week one or two were taken off. They were all

(20)-Sorlingues is the French name of Scilly Islands, forty miles from Land's End, the extreme south-west corner of England.

thrown into the ocean as mentioned above. Hitherto I have kept well, except getting sea-sick, but on the 11th I fell asleep on the stern of the ship, lying in the sun. The climate of this region is said to be warm throughout the whole year. During this time there died among others an English lady, of high family and great wealth. As she had been guilty of some indiscretion, her family was sending her to Virginia. The captain had a coffin made for her, in which were placed stones and through which holes were bored, so that it might sink more readily.

From the date mentioned last till Easter we advanced fairly well. Inasmuch as a long journey was anticipated, the daily rations were diminished, especially did we suffer for lack of water. On Easterday a driving storm blew from north-east, mixed with rain and showers. We could not cook to day, because the ship was repeatedly thrown from one side to the other. At noon the storm increased, so that not more than half a sail could be hoisted. A large rope, which was meant to steady the mast, was torn.

1702, April. We had again beautiful sailing weather, with wind from the north-east. The captain, with the owner of the ship, took the latitude. They found that we had passed the 31st degree. We saw, upon our left, about an hour's distance [three miles] from us a waterspout(21), which are usually seen at certain places, when good sailing weather is coming, but they are terrible and dangerous to the ships, if one cannot escape from them, or break them up through cannon balls, which are shot off at them. They appear like a cloud on the water and in the air. From the lower cloud rises a stream of water like a serpent into the upper cloud. Experience shows that when a ship comes near and breaks up the waterspout, a mass of water falls down, which, if it does not sink the ship, damages it seriously.

On the 2nd we had beautiful warm weather. We saw a ship in the morning behind us, well provided with sails. It was approaching us. We made ready for a fight, if it had to be. Towards evening we were still close together. We thought it was

(21)-This waterspout must have impressed Michel very much, for he made a sketch of it, which forms part of the Ms.

surely a pirate. Finally the captain hoisted the English flag. It was answered by the same, which pleased us very much. We did not feel much desire to fight. Finally we came together so closely that the captains could talk to each other through the speaking trumpet and could drink to each other's health. The ship was from Bristol and like ourselves on the journey to Virginia. As this was the first company we had, the captains would have liked to come together to celebrate, but the high sea did not permit it. Upon our inquiry how far we were from land, he answered, 250 miles. According to our count it was 300 miles. In order to find out how far a ship has sailed or gotten away from land, on the one hand, the degrees of latitude are taken, on the other hand the English have the custom to take soundings every two hours, day and night, without interruption, by means of a line, to which a little board in triangle shape is attached. On the one side, namely below, it is covered with lead. It [the triangular board] is attached with a cord at two places. It remains perpendicular and almost immovable in one place in the water. When the ship goes fast, much cord on the ship is unrolled from a capstan. A sandglass of half a minute is used at the same time and when the little board in the water is ready, the glass is turned around, and the cord is let go. When the glass is empty, the cord is held, which is marked, and it can be seen easily how many fathoms the ship made in half a minute. Then they figure out how many miles the ship makes in two hours, which is recorded in the [log] book.

A large number of fish were encountered. From that time I had more and more heat in my head, until I lost consciousness on the 16th. The physician, a Saxon, who cared more for eating and drinking than for his calling, gave me various remedies, so that after a lapse of eight days I improved. What was most troublesome was the fact that I could not eat the ship's food, but we did not have any other. About this time the favorable wind began to fail. The captain stated that he had traveled westward nine times, but had never seen this wind last so long, nor had traveled westward so far in so little time. It should be known that on the journey across north and west winds generally prevail.

After the calm had lasted two days and we had traveled in that time hardly thirty miles, the wind began to blow from the north, which was not favorable for us. On the 19th, at daybreak, we discovered a ship on our right, about twelve miles from us. As the wind carried us towards it, it made every effort to approach. In this latitude pirates are commonly found. We saw that it approached us and was sailing better than we, hence we prepared our defence. The masts were fastened with chains, the cannons and firearms were loaded, the broad swords and short pikes were laid out. All the men were assembled, the women were locked in the hold. The sailors had to fix their beds and hammocks on the quarter deck as a breastwork, so that we might be safe against the small arms. Forty bottles of whiskey were ready to fill the people with courage. Meanwhile we approached closer. We saw through the fieldglasses that it was not as large as ours, but we could not discover the nationality or whether it was a pirate. Finally evening came and, because of the darkness, we saw it no more. But we kept a good lookout and changed our course, so that in the morning we had lost sight of each other. In clear weather one can see from seven to ten hours [21-30 miles]. The wind was eight days north north-west and often even west. We had to change our course not only, but were even driven back about one hundred miles. During this time we suffered very much through the roughness of the sea, so that we could not lie down at night, much less could we rest. If we did not hold fast somewhere we were thrown from one side to the other. With great trouble and cost I had a pitcher of ptisan(22) cooked for me, which one night was hurled down from its place, because the ship was thrown on one side, and all was lost. We saw at different times large and small fish. Once at evening during a violent rainstorm, we saw a part of a broken ship, drifting close to us, indeed so near that it was difficult to turn away from it. The wind turned to south and often north-east, so that we had to go with a quarter sail and even less, yet we made day after day 28

(22)–The form of the word used by Michel is "phtisana." It is a Greek word, *ptisane*, peeled barley, then also barley water. Webster defines ptisan as "barley water with other ingredients." In Latin the form is *ptisana*, in French *tisane*, in English *ptisan*, pronounced tizan.

to 36 hours. On the 22nd two large ships hove in sight, east of us. It was stormy weather and dark, so that we were soon unable to see them. On the 3rd of May it was beautiful weather for sailing. The captain of a ship which had sailed with us since yesterday came on board during the calm of to-day. He was well received by our people and entertained till evening.

1702, May. On the 4th, the wind came from the south-east, which expedited our journey. We saw again two ships. The one seemed to be a warship. But we made no efforts for our defense as before, because we did not regard ourselves capable of making a resistance, if they should attack. It also looked like an English ship, but it could not approach us to-day. On the morning of the next day it was an hour [three miles] away from us. It made straight for us. We were rather afraid. But we soon saw by the flag that it had an English emblem and color, red with a white cross in a white field, at the upper corner near the pole. As it was good sailing weather, the captains came to our ship, where they were hospitably entertained. The large ship, which we had taken for a warship, was one of the most beautiful merchantmen, named "Indian King" or "Wild King," because it had been built in Virginia. Three years ago it fell into the hands of the pirates not far from land, but was rescued after a hard battle by the governor(23). Sixty pirates were taken prisoners, of all kinds of nations, nearly all of whom were later hung in England. The joint reckoning of all the captains agreed that we were not more than fifty miles from land, because we had seen signs of land for four days, plants of roses from the Bahamas, as also all kinds of land birds. The water had already changed its former blue color into green. To-day we saw a large fish [whale], which could swim very fast and from time to time threw up much water archlike. The "Wild King" sailed to-day close to us, as also the other ships, because, as stated above, their captains were with us. The crew of the above mentioned ship had a large fishing-hook, to

(23)–Robert Beverley in his *History and Present State of Virginia*, London, 1705, Book I, p. 102f., shows at length that it was not Governor Nicholson who deserved credit for the capture of the pirates, but Captain Passenger, Commander of the Shoram, a fifth rate man of war.

which four pounds of meat were attached by a rope. In the evening a hundred pound fish was hanging to it, which caused great joy and rejoicing. Our cook, an Indian by birth, was sent by the captain to that ship to get a piece [of the fish]. It was at once prepared and distributed, but it was not good.

On the 6th we had still beautiful weather. We saw various signs of land. We made a sounding for 200 fathoms, but contrary to expectation, did not strike bottom. To the rope an oblong piece of lead is attached, to the bottom of which a piece of tallow is pasted. If it strikes stony soil, the tallow frequently stays down. By the soil that adheres those who are expert in it can tell how far the land is and what region it is. On the 7th another sounding was taken, but, to our surprise, we were again unable to find bottom. The reckoning is perhaps sixty miles wrong. At night bottom was struck to our great joy at 118 fathoms. The lead and the tallow were cut off and, according to custom, were fastened to the small mast, the number of the fathoms being added with chalk. White sand and small oyster shells had adhered to the tallow. On the following day bottom was found at 90, 78 and 52 fathoms and, as we did not dare to sail at night, for fear of running upon the large sand-banks, which lie before the bay, we anchored. At break of day we heard from the mast the pleasant call: Land, land! Every one appeared happy and thanked God. It is customary to give a bottle of whiskey to the one who first sees the land.

The coast appears at first like a forest standing in water. When we drew nearer, we could recognize out of the different green colors the various kinds of trees, growing together. At noon we sailed between Accomac and Quiquedam into the [Chesapeake] Bay, with four and five fathoms of water. Fourteen miles further up we ran into the York river and on the same night we reached Yorktown, where six ships were lying at anchor. We were greeted with many salutes, to which we replied.

What has become known to me of this country and what I have learned from my own experience and have heard from the inhabitants, I shall now relate briefly:

It is well known that this fourth part [continent] of the world

was first discovered in the 15th century, about 1492, by Jean [Christopher] Colombo, an Italian of Genoa. The first island which he saw towards the south he called Hispaniola. From there they sailed to the kingdoms of Peru and Mexico, so rich in gold and silver. Whole books have been written regarding the things that happened on their further journeys and the inhuman cruelty which they showed towards the poor natives.

After he had found such a great kingdom and fruitful country and it had become generally known, other nations sailed forth to become acquainted with that country and, if possible, gain a foothold there. The first colony was planted in the north, called New York(24), which is now the principal province of the British empire. The capital in the west is called Boston. It is governed like other lands and islands ruled by the king of England, without participation of Parliament. For these lands are hereditary possessions of the English kings, who caused them to be discovered and colonized by their own means. They also protect them and, in the beginning, waged fierce wars with the ancient inhabitants or savages.

Pennsylvania or New Netherland(25), adjoining New York, was first settled by the Hollanders, as even today a large number of them dwell there. In the treaty made in 1665 this country was surrendered to England by way of exchange for the island of Courshaw [Curacao] and Surinam, small but advantageously located places for commerce, which is carried on with the Spaniards. It [Surinam] lies not far from the Spanish islands of the Amazon River.

The capital is called Philadelphia. According to the statements of those who have visited it, it is described as a large,

(24)–Michel evidently never heard of the New England colonies and thought Boston was in New York. There are a number of other mistakes in the following paragraphs, introductory to his description of Virginia, but it is not necessary to point out all of them in detail.

(25)–What Michel writes here about Pennsylvania applies to New York. It is an interesting point, generally overlooked, that the exchange mentioned by him took place. The article "Guiana" in the *Encycl. Brit.*, 11th ed., Vol. XII, p. 676, states: "This colony [Surinam] was however formally ceded to the Netherlands in 1667 by the peace of Breda, Great Britain taking New York. According to the *Cambridge Modern History*, Vol. V, p. 112f. it was agreed by the treaty of Breda that both England and Holland should keep their conquests.

rich, commercial city, as also the country itself is said to be one of the most fruitful countries which the English hold there in their possession. It is especially rich in grain. Charles II, for services rendered gave this province, together with the government and full religious liberty, to the Baptists(26), who live there in large numbers. But the government was taken from William Penn, the last governor, because he harbored sea-robbers or pirates. Many towns and villages are found in it.

Then follows Maryland, adjoining the last mentioned country. It took its name from Queen Mary, because it was discovered and first settled in her reign. It is rich in tobacco, which, however, cannot be compared to that of Virginia, nor is it sold as dearly. It is mostly exported to Holland. It is the smallest province.

Then follows Virginia. As I have lived there, it is my purpose to describe its characteristics more at length.

Carolina borders on it in the south. It was discovered and settled under a king Charles. An extensive wilderness lies between Virginia and this country [Carolina], so that thus far people have not been in the habit of traveling by land [from one to the other].

Finally follows Florida, of which I do not know much to report, except that it borders on the Spanish and French possessions. Although unknown to me, this country comprises an incredibly large area, whose inhabitants are very numerous and increase every year. All these are part of the American continent. In the east they are bounded by the ocean, in the north by Canada, which is inhabited by the French, but because of the great coldness very inconvenient, in the west by the unknown wilderness and in the south by the Spanish country.

The many streams and large rivers, together with the innumerable smaller ones, which branch out into the country from the larger on all sides, and their abundance of fish are indescribable.

Regarding the islands, which like the above mentioned countries are in English possession, it may be said that there is first of all Barbados, very rich in sugar, of which mostly rum is dis-

(26)-Quakers should be substituted for Baptists. The story about Penn harboring pirates is of course fictitious.

tilled, which is a kind of whiskey, the gallon or four quarter barrel is sold at the place for three shillings. Many ships stop there every year and a considerable commerce is carried on with that island. It lies about 100 miles from the main land.

Jamaica is another island, situated not far from the first(27), also rich in sugar. Many negroes are brought from this island and sold in Virginia. Besides all kinds of fruits are raised there and also much cattle.

St. Christopher was only half inhabited by the English. But when they heard of the war this year, they took up arms and drove out the French, who occupied the best part. They were compelled to go to St. Dominique. It is very warm in that island, but it is rich in money, which the privateers took from the Spaniards. A terrible wind is said to come there every year, called hurricane, which causes great damage on land and sea when its period arrives, which is November. Then the water appears of a whitish color and rises higher than usual. Indeed it often passes beyond its barriers and does damage. When the ships see such signs, they seek the best possible safety.

As stated above we arrived here on April 8th [read May 8th]. I shall now state briefly what has become known to me.

Virginia (*) lies on the 37th degree of latitude, westward or towards the setting sun. The difference in time between London and here is six hours, namely when it is noon in England, it is six o'clock in the morning in this country.

The extent of the country is as follows: The width from Maryland to Carolina, together with the wilderness between the two countries, amounts to 500 miles(28), the length extends into the wilderness, which is not known to any one and the end is impossible to find.

---

(27)–The geographical knowledge of Michel is somewhat defective.

(28)–This extent is of course much too large. It may be, however, that Michel uses "Virginia" here in a wider and more original sense. Beverly in his *History*, Book II, p. 2 says: "The least extent of Bounds in any of the Grants made to Virginia, since it was settled, and which we find upon Record there is Two Hundred Miles North from Point Comfort, and Two Hundred Miles South."

(*)–In editing the latter part of Michel's report, the translator had the able assistance of the editor of the MAGAZINE Mr. Stanard, who very kindly furnished notes 30, 33, 36, 37, 40, 42 and 49.

Among the navigable and principal waters the bay, which runs between Accomac and Quiquedam for more than 400 miles(29), must be mentioned first. It ends or rather begins in Pennsylvania. The entrance or mouth is 25 miles wide, full of dangerous sandbanks, as shown by the fact that recently a royal ship suffered shipwreck on one of the banks, where a part of the ship can still be seen. Ebb and tide control this water like the ocean. Into this bay empty many large and small rivers. I shall mention only the four principal rivers, which pass through Virginia and are navigable for large ships for 80 to 100 miles up stream. They have 3, 4 to 6 fathoms of water. From these four main rivers branch off an innumerable number of tributaries or small rivers, which are very convenient for the people, who seek to live near them, because of their convenience. The first is called James or Jacob's river, whose mouth not far from the ocean or Quiquedam(30), is a very broad and wide-spread river. According to the testimony of the Indians its end or rather its beginning has never been found. This river abounds in fish till Falensgrig [Falling Creek], 80 miles up inland. That far reaches the ebb and tide of the ocean. It cannot get farther, because the river falls there over high rocks, which causes much noise that can be heard far away. The salt water also reaches as far as the falls, above them it is a smoothly flowing, sweet water river, about half a mile wide. Twenty five miles farther up this river is a French colony, of which more will be reported later on.

The second is called York river. It empties sixteen miles from the first into the bay. They are equally wide. It has its full width till fifty miles farther up, where it branches at West

(29)-It is only 200 miles.

(30)-Quiquedam is evidently intended for Keckotan or Kickotan, the Indian name of the present town of Hampton, Va., on Hampton Roads. There was an Indian village here at the time of the first settlement; but within a few years the tribe was exterminated by the Powhatans. At the time of Michel's visit Hampton (or Kickotan) was a prosperous village with a church and at least one inn, the Rose and Crown.

Falling Creek flows into James River on the south side 6 miles below Richmond. Here, in 1620, the first iron furnace in America was established. It was destroyed and the workmen killed by the Indians in the Massacre of 1622. Lumps of ore (some with partly melted charcoal in them) are still found at the site of the furnace. Bog ore, found in shallow pockets along the creek, was used.

Point. The large ships, as well as ebb and tide, come up to this point. Farther up the water is sweet. As stated, half of the river branches off northwestward, for about thirty miles, called Mattabaney river. The other branch runs southwest a great way into the wilderness. It is called Pomonquay river. It runs quietly, like the other, with sweet water. It is two to three fathoms deep and half a mile wide.

The third is the Rabahanock river. It runs into the bay thirty miles from the last. It has the same width, as well as ebb and tide, like the other two. It extends into the wilderness through Stratfort County. It is also plied by ships for sixty miles up into the country. With sloops or other boats one can go up still farther.

The fourth and last is the Pattomac River, the broadest of all, about eighteen miles wide at some places. It runs far up into the country, with ebb and tide like the others. It is much visited by merchantmen and divides Virginia and Maryland. These four rivers come partly from the bay, but partly and even mostly from the interior or the wilderness. When they meet, that part which comes from the interior is sweet and runs constantly, but the part that comes from the bay flows up and down, like the ocean, and is salty.

Regarding religious services it may be said that they are held according to the principles of the reformation, as in our [Swiss] churches, although with some customs in the English language not current among us, except at Manigkintown(31), where the French Huguenots dwell. There services are held in their own language. I shall shortly report more about Manigkintown, which is located on the James River.

Going to church means at some places a trip of more than thirty miles, but, as can be seen from what follows, it is not a great hardship, because people are well mounted there. Horses, which are hardly used for anything else but riding, are half

(31)Manakintown, is the present Powhatan County, on the south side of the James about twenty miles above Richmond, was the home of the Monocans or Manocons, a tribe always hostile to the Powhatans. In 1669 they numbered 30 bowmen or about 100 individuals; but by 1700, they had emigrated or become extinct and their lands were given to the Huguenot colony in Virginia.

deers. They run always in a fast gallop. When services are held on Sundays or on other days none goes to church except on horseback. The churches are not all built alike. Most of them are of timber, without towers or bells. In every county there are one, two or three churches, according to the population, whether it is thickly settled or scattered. There are also stone churches, of which I have seen three, built of bricks, especially at Jamestown(32), where the church has a tower and a bell. The other [brick church] is at Williamsburg(33) and the third in Claster [Gloucester] County.

---

(32)–There is no mention elsewhere of any stone churches in Virginia; but it is obvious, from the context, that Michel means brick. There were more than three brick churches in Virginia at this time.

After the first log churches in the fort at Jamestown, several frame ones were erected. In 1617, a new church 50x20 feet was built. It was a frame building and probably stood on the site of the later brick church. When the foundations of the brick church were excavated the walls were found to be three feet thick and to have heavy buttresses. There was also a tiled chancel unearthed. Within these foundations were discovered fragments of a 9 inch brick wall, based on round cobble stones. Builders and architects who examined it stated that it would not have sustained a brick wall, and was no doubt the brick under-pirning of a frame church. This could have been only that of 1617. If this supposition is correct, the first American legislature, the Virginia Assembly of 1619, met here. Between 1639-45, a substantial brick church and tower were built. This was burnt by Bacon's men in 1676; but there is good reason to believe that the low, thick walls did not fall, and that they were used in the church which was rebuilt soon afterwards. The last was the church Michel saw. After Jamestown was abandoned it gradually fell to decay; but exactly when it was pulled down to the ground is not known. There is so much moisture at Jamestown, in soil and atmosphere, that any disinterred brickwork left open to the air rapidly crumbles away. To prevent this a brick structure which is a remarkable reproduction of the old church was built over the foundations, and by an ingenious use of hidden concrete piers and steel beams, the new structure though apparently resting on the old foundations does not really do so. The earth has been cleared away from these foundations inside making them visible. This building was a present to the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities (which owns the grounds at Jamestown) from the National Society of Colonial Dames. Excavations within the church showed three tiled chancels, one beneath another, evidently belonging to the three successive churches.

(33)–There was a parish and church here in 1632 when the place was called Middle Plantation. Bruton parish was organized in 1674 and in 1683 a brick church (that seen by Michel) was completed. It became dilapidated and in 1715 a new church, the present one was completed.

Gloucester county had four parishes, Petsworth, Abingdon, Ware and Kingston. The first three certainly had brick churches (two of them, Abingdon and Ware, still standing and in regular use); but all were probably built in the 18th century. The particular church Michel refers to cannot be identified.

The clerical profession in that country is worth visiting, especially those who are well educated. They are well respected and well paid. There are congregations in which every sermon costs one guinea. Ordinarily members, whether they are few or many, must make up for the services yearly 16,000 pounds of tobacco(34). In addition certain fees are fixed in money for marriages, baptisms and funerals(35). They have also their residence and their glebe.

Mr. Blair(36) is Bishop in this country, and also president in the Council or Parliament. He is a learned, sensible and well-to-do man. Together with others I had some business with him. He showed us much courtesy and kindness. Nor can I pass by in silence the many kind acts I experienced from a certain Mr. Foes(37), a Frenchman by birth. He has two churches to take care of. He has lived for thirteen years in this country as an English clergyman. Through a marriage with a widow, who died soon afterwards, he has amassed large means. There are also some Catholics, who can hold their religious services in Maryland. But there are only a few of them.

---

(34)-This statement is supported by Jones, *Present State of Virginia*, London 1724, p. 71: "The salary of the Minister is yearly 16000, and in some parishes 20000 l. of Tobacco."

(35)-The fees, according to Jones, l. c., p. 72, were: "20 s. for every wedding by license,and 5 s. for every wedding by Banns, with 40 s. for a funeral sermon, which most of the middling people will have."

(36)-James Blair, D. D., A. M., University of Edinburgh 1673, came to Va. in 1685, was minister of Henrico parish for nine years, then removed to Jamestown, where he was for some years the minister. In 1689 he was appointed Commissary of the Bishop of London in Va., and being most influential in founding Wm. & Mary College was chosen its first President in 1692. In 1710 he was appointed minister of Bruton parish, was appointed member of the Council of State of Va. 1689, was long President of that body, and as such was acting governor Dec. 1740-July 25, 1741. He died April 18, 1743.

(37)-Rev. Stephen Fouace came to Virginia in 1688, and was minister of York-Hampton parish. In 1692 he was one of the first trustees of Wm. & Mary College; but returned to England in 1702, and died at Bedfont, Middlesex.

Regarding the government(38). The governor, sent by the English King for six years or even longer, is appointed as his viceroy. He rules absolutely in the name of the king. A Parliament has been associated with him, which serves him with help and counsel. The members are selected from the most respected men in the country. They are usually those who fill the highest offices.

After this supreme authority follows the semi-annual Court or Assembly. These are two chosen, honorable and able men, from every county who remain usually from two to three weeks with the governor. They decide those things that are not of the highest importance. Each one receives one hundred pounds of tobacco daily as long as he stays. The county must pay the costs, just as in the case of the religious establishment.

Then follows lastly the monthly Court. Each county namely has a court or house of assembly, where every householder is obliged to appear at the specified time, in order to assist in settling difficulties which one may have with the other. But if no settlement can be made in this assembly, it is submitted to the semi-annual assembly, and if it cannot be settled there, an appeal is taken to the parliament as the last court, from which no further appeal is possible. But if it is an insignificant dispute or accident there is in every county a justice of the peace. But if the dispute cannot be settled by him, it is reported to the above-named courts.

This country, as far as it is settled, is divided into twelve parts, called counties(39). The first is called Claster [Glou-

(38)-The statements of Michel regarding the government of Virginia are inadequate and inaccurate. The appointment of the governor ran "during pleasure" of the Crown (Beverley, *History*, Book IV, p. 2). There was associated with him the General Assembly, made up of the Upper House consisting of the Governor and twelve Councillors, who had executive power, and of the Lower House of Burgesses, two delegates from every county. The General Court consisted of the Governor and the twelve councillors, which met twice a year, in April and October, for eighteen days. The County Courts consisted of eight or more Justices of the Peace in each county. (See Beverley, *History*, Book IV, Chapter VI). In civil cases an appeal from the General Court to the Queen and Council in England was possible in certain instances, see Beverly, *History*, Book IV, p. 21.

(39)-The number of counties in Virginia in 1702 was twenty-five. See Beverley, *History*, who gives a tabular list of all the counties for the year 1702, with the acres of land, the number of souls, of titheables. of women and children, of the militia, and the names of the parishes in each county. According to him the total number of souls in 1702 was 60,606, the titheables 25,023, the militia 9,522 and 34 parishes.

cester] County, the second York, the third New Kent, the fourth King and Queen, the fifth Stratfort, the sixth Charles, the seventh City County, the other five have escaped my memory. These counties appear to be very large and populous, but although the number of people is unknown to me, it can be estimated from three facts. In the first place, there are said to be about 20,000 negroes or black people, of whom I shall report more at another place. Secondly, I have traveled through most of this country and have seen the large number of people. And lastly at the time the Queen was proclaimed six counties were called to muster, when about 2000 men responded. I shall soon relate how this proclamation was made. The governor made his residence at Jamestown(40), situated on the James River. It is one of the largest and most beautiful places in the country, although it does not have more than thirty-five houses. Four years ago the late King William ordered at Middle Plantation, which is now called Williamsburg in his honor, a large building, a so-called College(41), together with a State House(42) to be erected. He contributed 4000 guineas to it. The governor now resides there. It is, moreover, because of the convenient place or situation, and also because of the many

(40)-The researches of Mr. S. H. Yonge ("Site of Old Jamestown"), show that the earliest governors houses were east of the present churchyard in what was called the "Newtown." Various houses were occupied, but the site of the house in which the governor resided in Michel's time is not known.

(41)-The charter of Wm. & Mary College was dated Feb. 8, 1693. The design for the building to be erected at Williamsburg contemplated a rectangular structure two stories and a half high, 136 feet long and 40 feet wide, with two wings, each 60x25 feet inside measurement. The building was completed about 1700 (when the first commencement was held), and several sessions of the Assembly were held in it; but on Oct. 29, 1705 it was burnt, only the sturdy walls remaining. It was soon rebuilt. Michel saw the original building.

(42)-The capitol at Williamsburg was at the eastern end of Duke of Gloucester street. It consisted of two buildings, 75 feet long, inside measurement, connected by a gallery with rooms above it. The whole was of the shape of the letter H. The buildings were two stories and a half high with a hip roof. One end of each building was semi-circular, and at this end of each was a room, 50 feet long, on the first floor, for the Burgesses and Council. A detailed description may be found in "Williamsburg The Old Colonial Capitol," by Dr. Lyon G. Tyler. The Capitol was completed in 1704; but was burnt in 1746, and another erected on the same site which was completed in 1752. The foundations can still be seen.

springs(43) which are there, a large place, where a city is intended and staked out to be built. There are at present, besides the Church, College and State House, together with the residence of the Bishop, some stores and houses of gentlemen, and also eight ordinaries or inns, together with the magazine(44). More dwellings will be built year after year. This place lies between the James and the York rivers, six miles from Jamestown and ten miles from Yorktown. The youth is instructed in the higher branches in the College there. But, because most of the people live far away, only the more well-to-do parents, who have the means, can secure boarding for their sons there, which costs yearly twenty guineas. There are about forty students there now. Before this it was customary for wealthy parents, because of the lack of preceptors or teachers, to send their sons to England to study there. But experience showed that not many of them came back. Most of them died of small-pox(45), to which sickness the children in the West are subject.

Regarding the military organization it may be said that the governor is the general. The present one is a distinguished man and a good soldier(46). This he showed in person, as stated, in the sea-battle four years ago with the pirates, not far from Quiquedam in the Bay, when he rescued the ship "Indian King" after fierce resistance.

Then follow the colonels, of whom there are twelve in the country. They are conspicuous, rich men, who allow themselves to be used for police as well as military duty. When they are in service, they have a salary. At other times it is an honorary title, like that of major and captain, as it is in our country [Switzerland]. Thus the people are summoned when necessary. No fort or soldiers are kept in the country, because the inhabitants protect themselves. They are on horseback most

(43)–Jones in his *Present State*, p. 31, refers also to the "excellent springs of good water" in Williamsburg.

(44)–The "magazine" was a "large octagon tower," used as "a repository of arms and ammunition," cf. Jones, *Present State*, p. 31. It is still standing.

(45)–Jones, *Present State*, p. 46, corroborates this statement. More sons would be sent to England, he says, "were they not afraid of the Small-Pox, which most commonly proves fatal to them."

(46)–The governor of Virginia in 1702 was Col. Francis Nicholson.

of the time, armed with carbines, pistols and swords. They are divided into cavalry or dragoon squadrons, and also some infantry. But they are very inexperienced in military training or manoeuvers, which are unheard of in this country, much less attended. There are indeed every year two and even three musters, when the guns are examined and the most necessary things are reviewed. At first there were fierce and numerous battles with the aborigines, namely the wild Indians. In particular can I not pass by with silence how the country was first settled by Christians in the reign of Queen Elizabeth(47).

This happened as follows: The captain of a ship, whose name I have forgotten, sailed by this country. He made as careful inquiries as possible, saw the many kinds of lofty trees, the beautiful streams, the good soil and that there was an abundance of game, birds and fish. After his return [to England] he reported to the Queen that this was a very advantageous country to settle. In consequence of his elaborate report, the command was issued to gather together all the criminals, and who else had come into the land, in the whole kingdom, whose number was 400. They were taken on board of a ship, provided with all kinds of provisions, necessary for life and war. The ship left England in the year 1530 [1585]. After the lapse of several months they made a safe landing in this country. They took along their provisions, arms and ammunition. They were shown where they were to settle and build their cabins. They were commanded to stay together there and to guard the place with breastworks or pallisades, so that, if something should happen, they could defend themselves better. They were promised that they would be visited again within a year and the additional promise was made that they could rely upon the favor and assistance of the Queen. They were well satisfied with that and began to build their cabins. Meanwhile the ship returned to England, after the settlers had been provided with a

(47)–The following story of the three expeditions must be based on oral statements, which Michel heard. It is too inaccurate to go back to any printed history. It is an interesting instance of how tradition distorts history. The story is an echo of the three colonies sent out under Raleigh, 1585-1589. See Beverley, *History*, Book I, pp. 1-10; Winsor, *Critical History*, Vol. III, pp. 105-120.

physician, with the report that they [the settlers] had been safely landed and that there was no apprehension that after a year's time they would not be found alive and in good condition. Meanwhile they gathered up in England all persons, who were dangerous and burdensome to the country, about 800 of them, who like the first were supplied with all kinds of provisions and implements. With these they sailed, upon the order of the Queen, in two ships, to strengthen the above mentioned 400, and to make a beginning with a new colony. They had a long and troublesome journey. But finally they landed, expecting to encamp with the above-mentioned settlers, in order to learn from them how they had fared thus far. To their great consternation they found no one, not even a trace of their labors. They were much surprized and fearful that there might be Indians near by. They concluded to supply themselves with provisions for several days and, following the river, to march into the country, in the hope of finding a trace of their people. But they were unable to find anything except an immense quantity of game of all kinds. Finally they saw from a mountain smoke and thought they might find there what they were looking for, namely their people. But when they reached the place they found nothing but a large fire that had been made there, around which they found game and other things. From these and other indications they were able to conclude that the Indians had been there. They then believed that their people had been surprized by the Indians. In time they learned that they had been killed by the Indians(48), for, when they fought with them later, they found many things among the Indians which had been taken from the four hundred.

Then the others withdrew after this discovery, hoping that if they would attack them again, they could take vengeance for their lost people. They enclosed their settlement at once with pallisades. At the same time several small pieces of cannon from the ship were left with them, which they placed in the most favorable position. They also kept good watch. The ship,

(48)-The first colony was taken back to England by Sir Francis Drake, but when Sir Walter Raleigh sent the next expedition which did not find them, he thought they were all destroyed by the Indians. Beverly, *History*, Book I, p. 9.

after leaving the people in a good position and after promising to return in a little time with further assistance, left the land, after commending them to the protection of the Most High. They returned safely to England, and reported how they had found matters. Meanwhile the Indians came again to surprize the settlers at night, but they met such a reception that many of them were left on the place. Afterwards they returned no more.

In England meanwhile a third expedition of volunteers and others, men as well as women, was fitted out on four ships. They all arived safely in this country among their people, which caused rejoicing on both sides. They undertook at once an expedition against the Indians, whom they defeated several times, although they were frequently the weaker party. Of this I could write more at length, but I shall endeavor to be brief. From that time on more people were imported yearly, and they also increase here. The country has expanded in such a manner that it is surprizing. It will also continue to enlarge every year, because there is no lack of land. The farther they push inland, the better and more productive the soil is found to be.

Regarding the military equipment it should be mentioned that, since three years ago, warships lie at anchor not far from Quiquedam. Whenever pirates are noticed they must, according to military orders, attend to their duty. They are usually two to four in number.

Now as to the condition of the land. It consists of hills, valleys and plains, which are by nature covered with high trees, whose kinds and names I shall soon mention. The soil is mostly light and partly sandy, except at Manigkinton, where it is black and heavy. The aborigines, namely the Indians, had reason to choose this place for their settlement. Their city, called Manikinton by them, stood there. To-day there is a red, rough stone, standing four feet out of the ground, where at certain times they held religious services, as they supposed. What has become known to me of their religious beliefs, I shall report, when I describe their arrival in Williamsburg. Beside the above mentioned stone there are also mulberry and peach

trees planted there. About thirty years ago they still dwelt there. But when they inflicted some injury upon the Christians, Colonel Bornn(49), who is still alive and who was then living on the frontier, namely at Falensgrig [Falling Creek], as soon as he heard of this ravage, mounted at once his company (he was then captain) and attacked the Indians boldly (who had promised obedience but had not kept it). He soon overcame them after some resistance and put all of them to the sword, without sparing any one. He also destroyed their settlement and whatever they owned. For this service the then king of England granted him the whole district between his land and this place, which extends twenty-five miles in length and eighteen miles in width. Those Indians who were not at home or escaped, still camp during the summer not far from their former home.

Regarding the fruitfulness of the country it may be said that almost everything grows that is put into the ground. Especially tobacco is the principal article there, with which trade is carried on. It passes for money, because gold and silver are seldom seen there, especially among the common people. All purchases or payments are made in tobacco. It is planted in such quantities that this year 150 ships, large and small, but not more than twenty small ones among them, left the country laden with tobacco. Merchants pass up and down through the country. They have their store houses or magazines filled with all kinds of goods which are needed there. When the inhabitants need something, they go to the nearest merchant, who gives them what they want. It is recorded according to agreement. When the tobacco is ripe, the merchant arrives to take what is

(49)–Prof. von Mülinen has very kindly verified the reading of this name. The original, he says, has undoubtedly *Bornn* It is, however, probable that Michel misunderstood the name or failed to remember ot correctly. He describes an event that happened before his time.

"Col. Born" is probably intended for Col. Wm. Byrd, who owned much land on Falling Creek, though he lived at the site of the present Richmond. He received no such grant as Michel describes; but in April 1679, the General Assembly granted him a tract of land five miles long and three miles wide lying on both sides of James River at the falls, on condition that he kept 50 armed men there as settlers. It is possible, though not at all probable, that Michel may refer to Col. Wm. Claiborne, who though he neither owned land nor resided near Falling Creek, was a distinguished Indian fighter. There was a certificate of his valor, dated March 17, 1677, formerly on record at King William C. H.

coming to him. A hundred [pounds] are usually reckoned at twenty shillings. When the rainy season comes, the tobacco is packed solidly, one leaf above the other, into a barrel which holds or weighs from 700 to 1000 pounds. It is a laborious job, demanding much care. Tobacco is planted after the soil has been prepared. Then with a broad hoe the soil is loosened on top and made into round little heaps, six feet apart. It is planted in rainy weather. When it is fully grown it spreads so much that all the plants touch each other. It grows best in new soil, but the land must be very good if it is to bear tobacco for twenty years. However, it is not done. Hence the inhabitants do not live close together and the country is not settled in villages, because every twenty or thirty years new ground must be broken. A settler who has a piece of land, divides it into three parts, the first for tobacco and corn, the second and third parts as meadows for his cattle and as forest, if he needs wood. When the tobacco field does not want to bear any more, he sows corn in its place. After six or eight years it does not yield corn any more. Then he lets it lie fallow and takes up the second part and so forth. A workman must plant yearly from 15 to 2000 pounds of tobacco, besides six or eight barrels of corn.

As to corn, the "Wirden"(50) or Turkish corn is grown in most cases. It is so productive that it yields fifty to a hundred fold. It makes pretty good bread. It is also pounded and cooked, called humin [hominy]. Its flour is taken and cooked thick in water. Then it is put into milk. It is mostly the food of servants. The flour is also frequently taken and a thick dough is made out of it with water. Then, by means of a hot fire and many coals, it is baked in a little while(51). When the corn is planted, a small hole is made and three or four grains are put into it. Then they are covered with ground. Like the tobacco they are always planted six feet apart. This grain is

(50)–This is the reading of the word, as confirmed by Prof. von Mülinen after renewed examination. What it means is not known to the translator. He thought at first of "Welsh" corn. But the original apparently does not admit of that interpretation.

(51)–This corn bread was called pone or ponn, cf. Beverley, *History*, Book IV. p. 55f; Falkner, *Curieuse Nachrickt Von Pennsylvania*, 1702, p. 28 (see Proceedings of the Pennsylvania German Society, Vol. XIV, p. 143).

raised in great quantities and is used for people and cattle. The stalks grow over ten and even fourteen feet high and are very thick. They bear usually from two to four ears, while there are three or four stalks to a hole. Throughout the summer the weeds must be removed from time to time, as in the case of the tobacco. The ordinary price of this corn is two shillings a bushel, or about two measures as used here [in Switzerland].

The other kind is wheat, which is planted by every family for its use, in such places where the cattle have been penned in at night. After they have been in a field for three or four weeks, they are moved to another field. In this way the soil is fertilized, for no other manure is used. This grain bears twenty-five fold. It is planted as in our country and it costs in ordinary years three or four shillings per bushel.

Barley and oats are also planted and they turn out well usually. The inhabitants pay little attention to garden plants, except lettuce, although most everything grows here. But fresh seeds must be imported every year from Europe, for, if the seed of this country is planted, it turns into the wild kind again.

The custom of the country, when the harvest is to be gathered in, is to prepare a dinner, to which the neighbors are invited, and for which two men have sufficient work to do. There are often from thirty to fifty persons cutting grain, so that frequently they have work for only two hours

This is one of the principal festivals or times of rejoicing. When I was unable to travel at one time, because of the rain, I stayed at a house, where they intended to cut wheat that day. When everything was ready to receive the guests at noon, it looked in the morning as if the weather was going to be favorable. Ten persons had already arrived, when the weather changed and turned into a violent rain, so that the hope to harvest in a few days came to nothing. Fresh meat cannot be kept in summer longer than twenty-four hours, hence the good people were compelled, if they did not want to let the sheep and chicken, which they had prepared, spoil, to entertain us, which lasted for a day and a half.

Fruit trees are growing in great abundance. I shall describe them according to their several kinds. The apple trees are very numerous, most of them not very large nor high, like pear trees. But they are exceedingly fruitful. I was at many places this year, where I could not estimate the large quantities which were rotting. They are the nicest apples that can be seen. There is a kind somewhat earlier than the others, they are called Cattalines. They are pointed and of a sour taste. The summer cider is made of them. A later kind is valued more highly and, like the first, cider is made of them, which keeps longer than the other. The gallon or four quarts cost one bit or four Batzen(52), according to our coin. It is drunk mostly during the winter. As the common man does not have good cellars, this drink cannot be kept during the summer, but it turns sour. There are also pears of all kinds, but they are not as common as the apples. There are several kinds of peaches, and in such quantities that people cannot eat the fourth part of them. The rest is fed to the pigs. It should be noted that this fruit ripens in a few days. Cherries, especially the cultivated cherries, are found in great abundance, where they are planted. Good wine is made of them.

All kinds of berries grow in the wilderness and also on the plantations, in such abundance that it cannot be estimated. There are also many different kinds, namely of black and white color. The best are brown, long and large. This berry is largely eaten by pigs and birds. Whoever has a desire for berries, does not need to buy them or ask for them, for the abundance is so great that no one pays any attention to them, nor are they used very much, because people do not want to take the trouble to pick them, as they have enough other food.

There are also plums, but they are not common. Also many other kinds of fruit, but they are not known to me. There is, especially among the garden plants, a certain kind of beans, not unlike the Turkish, which is planted with the Indian corn(53) It grows up along the stalks and is very productive. It is

(52)-A bit is worth 12½ cents, according to Webster. and a Batzen is a Swiss nickel coin of the value of ten centimes or two cents.

(53)-The bean planted with the corn. "upon whose stalk it sustains itself," is also mentioned by Beverly, *History*, Book II, p. 29.

nourishing food. There is another kind which creeps on the ground. There are also different kinds of peas, planted in the gardens, but growing also outside of them. Besides, there are potatoes in great quantities and many kinds of melons. Some are cooked, others, like the water melons, are eaten raw, since this fruit is very refreshing in the hot summer because of its cool, sweet juice. They are grown in great quantities and one can get as many as he desires.

The water is no less prolific, because an indescribably large number of big and little fish are found in the many creeks, as well as in the large rivers. The abundance is so great and they are so easily caught that I was much surprized. Many fish are dried, especially those that are fat. Those who have a line can catch as many as they please. Most of them are caught with the hook or the spear, as I know from personal experience, for when I went out several times with the line, I was surprized that I could pull out one fish after another, and, through the clear water I could see a large number of all kinds, whose names are unknown to me. They cannot be compared with our fish, except the herring, which is caught and dried in large numbers. Thus the so-called catfish is not unlike the large turbot. A very good fish and one easily caught is the eel, also like those here [in Switzerland]. There is also a kind like the pike. They have a long and pointed mouth, with which they like to bite into the hook. They are not wild, but it happens rarely that one can keep them on the line, for they cut it in two with their sharp teeth. We always had our harpoons(54) and guns with us when we went out fishing, and when the fish came near we shot at them or harpooned them. A good fish, which is common and found in large numbers, is the porpoise. They are so large that by their unusual leaps, especially when the weather changes, they make a great noise and often cause anxiety for the small boats or canoes. Especially do they endanger those that bathe. Once I cooled and amused myself in the water with swimming, not knowing that there was any danger, but

(54)-Michel uses here the peculiar Swiss word "guerre," which, according to Prof. von Mülinen, is still used today, in the form of "Gehr" or "Geer," for a harpoon or spear.

my host informed me that there was. This is only a small part of what could be told about the fish there, but I could not learn everything in the short time I was there. The [larger] waters and especially the tributaries are filled with turtles. They show themselves in large numbers when it is warm. Then they come to the land or climb up on pieces of wood or trees lying in the water. When one travels in a ship, their heads can be seen everywhere coming out of the water. The abundance of oysters in incredible. There are whole banks of them so that the ships must avoid them. A sloop, which was to land us at Kingscreek, struck an oyster bed, where we had to wait about two hours for the tide. They surpass those in England by far in size, indeed they are four times as large. I often cut them in two, before I could put them into my mouth. The inhabitants usually catch them on Saturday. It is not troublesome. A pair of wooden tongs is needed. Below they are wide, tipped with iron. At the time of the ebb they row to the beds and with the long tongs they reach down to the bottom. They pinch them together tightly and then pull or tear up that which has been seized. They usually pull from six to ten times. In summer they are not very good, but unhealthy and can cause fever.

There are frogs in the water, which at night all together, make a wonderful noise. Indeed, if one is not acquainted with it, it sounds as if the noise or sound was made by people. In the large waters of the wilderness there is a very large kind. When they call, their voice can be compared to the bellowing of an ox. It is not the same but as deep and audible as far. I saw one on the other side of the water at Manigkinton, which was a foot long, with an awful head or mouth(55). When he jumped into the water there was a splash as if one had thrown a pretty large stone into the water. There are also water snakes and all kinds of costly animals, which live in the water, such as beavers,

(55)–This sounds incredible. But Beverley in his *History*, Book IV, p. 63, tells of a similar story: "Last year I found one of these bull-frogs near a Stream of fresh water, of so prodigious a Magnitude, that when I extended its Leggs, I found the distance betwixt them, to be seventeen Inches and a half. I am confident six French-Men might have made a comfortable Meal of its Carcase."

otters and muskrats, which smell very agreeably. I left two in England. The Indians shoot many of these animals. By means of rum or other more insignificant things one can get them from them. They can afterwards be sold advantageously in London, especially the beavers, of which castors(56) are made in part.

Now I shall again turn to the land and report what animals are found there, first of all the tame animals. The horses, like the English breed, are very lightfooted. They never ride them in a walk, but always in a gallop, as if a deer was running. They are very common. It must be a poor man who cannot afford one. Not many people can be seen traveling on foot, even if it is only an hour's distance. They are seldom used to draw wagons or the plow, because the nature of the country does not demand it. They cost from three to eight pounds of sterling.

Horned cattle are found in large numbers, so that in summer time much milk is used. Butter is also made, as much as is needed. But most of the people know nothing of cheese. There were a few who undertook to make it. It was good but could not be compared to ours. The common farmer has usually from ten to forty heads of cattle. The gentlemen have about a hundred. There is little trouble taken with cattle, because they are left the whole year on the meadows. Not even a stable is built for them, but they are driven into pens, as stated above, in order to fertilize the ground, where wheat is to be planted. No hay is stored, for the winter is not like ours, and even if it snows a little or is cold, it passes away in a few days. It is true the poor cattle are at times half frozen and starved, as I have seen in spring by their bodies. But when the weather is severe, they are given corn. The north wind is said to blow very cold. But such weather does not last long, as soon as the south wind comes it is warm again.

Pigs are found there in such numbers that I was astonished(57). They are not large, but increase so rapidly that

(56)-Castors are hats made of beaver fur. The Latin word for beaver is castor.

(57)-Beverley (*History*, Book IV, p. 81) puts it more picturesquely when he says: "Hogs swarm like vermin upon the earth, insomuch that when an inventory of a considerable Man's Estate is taken by the Executors, the Hogs are left out and not listed in the Appraisement."

their number becomes large in a short time. Their meat or pork is considered by everybody as the best and most delicate. Many are taken every year alive to England. As they are fed with nuts, acorns, berries, apples and corn, they cannot be less than the best. They must be better than those which are fed with poorer food. This is shown by the Carolina ham, which smells after fish, because the pigs there are fed with fish. The pigs cause no care, as they are always left in the woods near the house or not far away. They find their food throughout the whole year. They often do not come home in eight weeks. But many are lost when they run off into the wilderness. On the frontiers the bears do some damage. Each farmer has his mark, with which he marks their ears.

Sheep are raised in constantly increasing numbers. They thrive well. But, as the necessary workmen are wanting to use the wool, they are kept only for their meat(58).

Turkeys, geese, ducks and chickens are very common. As to the game, this land is a real zoological garden, filled to overflowing with all kinds of animals. They might justly be called half wild, because they do not fight shy of man.

In the first place, stags are very plentiful, deer also. Bears are found in large numbers. They are not vicious, hence they are shot without fear. Then there are wild boars and wild horses; also raccoons, fierce animals like wild cats but larger; and the "monac"(59), an animal, unknown in this country [Switzerland] and not much larger than a cat, but of a different kind. We had one on our ship, on the return journey, but it died. Foxes and hares are much smaller than in this country, fox-squirrels are also numerous, but are more than four times larger than here and not of the color found here, but grey; also another kind of squirrel, like those above, but smaller. Furthermore, ground-squirrels, but they are very small and of brown color, more like mice. The fourth and last kind are bats, very small

(58)–This statement is corroborated by Beverley, *History*, Book IV, p. 64. The deficiency was, however, soon supplied. In 1724 Jones mentions (*Present State*, p. 41) wool from Leominster being "near as good as any."

(59)–The monac or moonack, is according to Webster, a word of Indian origin (cf. Delaware, monachgen). It is a dialectical word used for the woodchuck or groundhog, the *marmota monax*.

and pretty, of brown color, but with white belly. They fly only in the evening or at night. Instead of wings they have skin over their toes which they spread when they fly.

The feathered game is very common and tame. The first is properly the eagle. Then comes the turkey, whose number is very great. It is a large bird, which weighs from twenty to forty pounds. Many of them are shot because of the fine meat. The first two which I met in the woods, I thought I could overtake with running without shooting them. But when I came near them, they ran so fast that I could not catch up with them. Finally they flew away. Wild geese and ducks, together with all kinds of snipes and waterfowl, are very numerous during the winter season. They are unlike those here [in Switzerland] in size and color. They are not wild. No hunter will shoot at one or two of them, but they are hunted in uncounted numbers. Patridges are also numerous and tame. It is not an uncommon sight to see them eating with the chickens. They are smaller, but excel them in the fineness of their meat. I was surprized to see them sitting on trees and hear them sing. I have shot many of them for their good meat and because they are found everywhere, but never only one of them. Regarding the others I must confess that I do not know their names, because they are not like the European birds. One species is as large as a finch, of scarlet color, another is blue, others green and others have variegated colors, wonderfully mixed. Then there is a little bird, somewhat larger than a hornet, which always hovers over flowers(60). When one looks at its wonderful colors, one cannot help being surprized. Another kind is also worthy of observation, because it has aurora color mixed with red. The noxious birds are like a species of blackbird, which do not a little damage when the corn is sown and cut. They come in incredibly large numbers. At such times the fields must be guarded. But that does not help much. When they are chased from one field they fly to another. They fear people hardly at all. Hence it happens that fields must often be sown three times. They even pick it out of the ground after it has sprouted. The most valuable species, because of their song,

(60)–The humming bird is meant.

are the "mocketbort" [mocking bird], which are sold in England for two guineas and more. They can be compared to the nightingale, because, they change their sweet song in many different ways. They are not unlike a shrike(61). The "noise-maker" comes to the houses in spring. He screams at night with such a loud voice and so continuously that, if one is not accustomed to it, one can hardly sleep. I could catch a sight of many other species and still others I have forgotten.

Poisonous animals did not become known to me, except the so-called rattle snakes, a species which is large and much feared. They stay most generally at swampy places. When angry they rattle with their tail as if it were a bell. When they bite anybody he has to die. There is no help for him. Only the Indians know the secret, but they don't want to make it known(62). If one can come to them in time, they can cure him at once. At one occasion I traveled with some others from Manigkinton on a wet, rainy day. Seven miles from that place we came across such a snake in the forest, lying on the road. We had not seen any thus far. As we were looking at it, it rattled with the tail as with a bell(63), and, since we had heard that such were of the dangerous kind, we went back and intended to avoid it. Then it rose partly on its tail and we thought that it would attack us every moment. One man who was with me ran off. I had my gun ready to fire, but, as there was only one bullet in it, I was afraid to miss. Hence I turned slowly away. There is another large snake, but it is not poisonous like the one just mentioned. It is so delicate that one needs only to strike it gently on the head with a stick to kill it instantly.

In the hottest part of summer it is troublesome to travel because of vermin(64). Hence no one can lie or sleep on the

(61)–Michel uses here the Swiss word "Dorn-Aegerste," which, according to Prof. von Mülinen, is the great "shrike," the *Lanius excubitor*.

(62)–Beverley, *History* Book IV, p. 64, says on the contrary that "the remedies are so well known that none of their servants are ignorant of them." At another place (Book II, p. 23) he mentions Rattle-Snake-Root, as effectually curing the bite of a rattle snake.

(63)–The peculiar Swiss word "Rollin" is here used by Michel, which, according to Prof. von Mülinen, is a kind of a bell.

(64)–The same fact is expressed more strikingly by Beverly, *History*, Book IV, p. 62:"All annoyances and inconveniences of the Country may fairly be summed up under these three Heads, Thunder, Heat and troublesome Vermin."

ground, because so many vermin have crawled over the same, since the creation, that it is poisoned so to speak, for experience shows that those who work with bare feet in new soil are often poisoned all over.

In summer the mosquitoes are very annoying. Rains are usually warm and the sun has such power that, when something is planted, it grows in a short time. It is astonishing to see a thing, half grown or half ripe one day, reaching ripeness in a few days. The fruits are all ripe much earlier than in this country [Switzerland]. But this year everything has been very late compared with other years. The trees began to blossom in April. Half of June, July and August were very hot, so that one thought the air was on fire in some places and people were parched with thirst. But the cool springs are very refreshing at that time. Their water is not inferior to ours. If one desires a drink at that time, half a vessel of cold water is taken, sugar is put in with some vinegar and nutmeg, together with some good glasses full of rum. At times they mix in some lemon. It is a good drink. One could easily get drunk from it. It is called Pons [punch]. A tankard or half quart costs from four to six "Batzen."

They have also severe thunderstorms, such as we saw this year in June at Yorktown, when a ship, lying there at anchor, was covered with waves, which broke over the deck. The carpenter was in the sailor's cabin, the door was locked. There were two loopholes in the wall. Against one he placed his shoulder, which became black and burnt by the heat. At the other hole lay his axe, whose head was melted by the heat, which many people came to see(65).

Terrible winds, called hurricanes frequently come with such violence and force that people often fear that houses and trees will have to give way. But they are soon over. One can see and hear them come. Corn and other grain is often blown off the fields. The winter is not long nor cold. Not much snow falls. The cattle, as stated before, can stay outside, on the meadows, all the time, because they do not make hay. The north wind is said to be very cold in winter, but it does not last

(65)–This is of course a sailor's yarn.

long. As soon as the south wind blows it is warm again. One can see trees split and bent through the cold. But it does not stay so long. During that time they make huge fires in the big fire places. There is as much wood as one desires at the door(66).

Regarding wild [forest] trees, it may be said justly that none can be found which are superior to them. I rightly regard as first the cedar tree, which is very common. The governor of late fenced in a garden. The trees were all cedars, whose wood is very durable. There is, furthermor, a kind of wood or spice, of saffran color, whose name I have forgotten. This wood is cut into chips. They are cooked afterwards and drunk. Every year much of it is exported to England. The tall, wild nut trees [walnuts] are very useful for building purposes, if fine work is desired. It is of brown color. This tree bears a fruit like our beech trees, but larger. It cannot be opened without a nail. The pigs usually eat them. There are chestnuts at some places, but they are small. The most numerous and the largest trees are the oaks. There are also very tall and straight red pines. White pines I have not seen, and also only one beech tree. The little boats, called canoes, are usually a trunk of a tree hollowed out. From six to ten persons can ride in them comfortably. Besides the trees mentioned there are many other species unknown to me by name. They blossom beautifully. Some of them are not like the trees here either in wood or in foliage, nor are they difficult to cut. The branches do not start way down the trunk, but far up. On one occasion a sloop or canoe came from Carolina. It was made of one piece, its size was astonishing. It had two sails and carried forty barrels of pork. The forests are very convenient to ride or hunt in. The trees are far apart, with no undergrowth on the ground, so that one can ride anywhere on horseback. The game is easily discovered, because of the openness of the forest. The hunting of the Indians helps not a little to clear the forests and pastures.

(66)-Almost the identical expression is used by Beverley, *History*, Book II, p. 9: "Wood grows at every Man's Door."

(67)-This "fire hunting" of the Indians is described more at length by Beverley, *History*, Book II, p. 39.

It takes place in October, in the following manner(67): From twenty to forty persons and often more gather and make a circle, assigning to each a certain section in the circle. Afterwards each sets fire to the foliage and underbrush, which through the heat is dried up. The flames devour everything before them, until finally the area is much narrowed and the game, fleeing before the fire and the smoke, is driven together to a small space, around which the hunters stand, shooting down everything. Then they take only the skins and as much of the meat as they need. The rest they leave to decay. This is their great hunt. They are good shots. They do not hold the rifle as we do. Their left hand takes hold of the barrel as far forward as possible. Thus they direct it mostly with the left hand. I shall soon report more about them.

The wild horses are hunted(68) in April and May, at the time of the year when, being famished after the winter, they fill themselves with the fresh grass to such an extent that they become lazy and are unable to run. The English place their best horses for four or five weeks into the stable, feed them with oats. Then they mount and ride their horses in companies while they hunt them. They are soon found, because they run about in large numbers. As soon as they are sighted, they are chased. They can stand the running for some time, but are finally overtaken by the horses that have been fed with oats. They are then caught, kept for a time with the tame horses and broken in. They develop great endurance. They are grey, but not quite as tall as the others. Their meat is good to eat. They are also caught in pits. When it is known which way they go to the water, a deep pit is dug, which is covered slightly. When the horse passes over it, it falls down and can't get out again, until it is bound with ropes and pulled out. There are people who make their living by this practice.

Turtles of different kinds are found in the woods. They are gathered and eaten by the negroes or slaves. The largest which I have seen was like a small hat in circumference. They

(68)–The hunting of wild horses, "which young people take great delight in," is also described by Beverley, *History*, Book IV, p. 75f.

are of various colors and very beautiful. There is especially a small species, which is found in large numbers on roads, mostly of a yellow color. They are most beautifully decorated. I took one of them with me and used it on board of ship as a drinking cup.

This is the small amount of information which I can give about things in general. There are many other facts regarding them unknown to me.

(To be Continued)

THE VIRGINIA FRONTIER IN HISTORY—1778.

By David I. Bushnell, Jr.

IV. Events Leading to the Treaty of Fort Pitt

The winter of 1777-1778 was one of the darkest periods in the history of the western frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania. The death of Cornstalk on November 10 had caused his followers to assume a more restive attitude, and thus endangered the scattered settlements beyond the Blue Ridge. Northward, on the border of Pennsylvania, small bands of hostile warriors reached the settlements eastward from Fort Pitt and did great damage: destroying property and killing the settlers. About this time a letter was sent by Col. Lochry, Lieutenant of the county of Westmoreland, to Thomas Wharton(1) setting forth the grave perils surrounding the outlying posts. The original letter is in the Library of Congress (Pennsylvania State Papers, No. 69, Vol. 1, folio 437). The letter follows:

"Honoured Sir:

"The distressed situation of our country is such that we have no prospect but desolation and destruction. The whole country on the north side of the road, from the allegany mountains, is all kept close in forts, and can get no subsistance from their plantations.—they have made application to us, requesting to be put under pay and receive rations; and as we can see no other way to keep the people from flying and letting the country be evacuated, we were obliged to adopt their measures, requesting your excellency to give the necessary orders to enable us to put them in execution—if these very measures is not adopted I see no other method that can secure the people from giving up the country—these people, whilst they support these frontier posts,

1–Thomas Wharton was born in 1735, and died May 22, 1778. On March 5, 1777 he was inaugurated as President of Pennsylvania and held that office until his death.

are certainly serving the publick, and certainly cannot continue long so to do, unless supported by the publick. Lieutenant Colonel Charles Campble and four other persons are made prisoners on the waters of black legs creek,(2) four other men killed and scalped near the same place, one man kil'd near Wallaces(3) fort on conemaugh; eleven others person killed and scalped at Palmers(4) fort and near Ligonier, amongst which is Ensign Wood. At the place where Colo. Campble was made prisoner four rascally proclamations was left by the savages, by the Governor of detroit, requesting all persons to come to him or any other of the governors occupied by his majestys troops, and they should receive pay and lodgings as they rank with us. Every private for encouragement to have two hundred acres of land. In short there is very few days there is not some Murder committed on some part of our frontiers. If your excellency will please to adopt our measures and give the necessary orders for putting them in execution,I hope with divine assistance, we shall be able to hold the country till we are enabled by the more effectual measures; that is carrying on an expedition in their country. We have likewise ventured to erect two Stockade forts at Ligonier and Hanna'stown at the public expence, with a store house in each, to secure both publick and prviate property in, and be a place of retreat for the suffering frontiers in case of necessity; which I flatter myself will meet with your excellencys approbation—and beg leave to subscribe myself Your excellencys

"Westmoreland, 4th Nov. 1777 most Obliged

To his excellency most humble servant

Thomas Wharton, jr. Pres. A. Lochry. Lieut"

2-In The American Gazetteer, by Jedidiah Morse, Boston, 1797, is the following brief note which may refer to this creek: "Black *Lick*, lies in Westmoreland co. Pennsylvania, about 36 miles E. of Pittsburg."

3-Wallace's Fort. "The Fort was erected on the farm of Richard Wallace, who was one of the first settlers in that part of Derry township in Westmoreland county, which lay between the old Forbes road and the Conemaugh river. * * * This fort was the place of resort and refuge for the inhabitants of the frontiers lying north of the Old Road and east of Hannastown and Fort Hand all through the Revolution; and particularly for those who lived along the Conemaugh river and north of that as far as settlements were made." Report of the Commissioners to locate the site of the Frontier Forts of Pennsylvania, 1896. Vol. II, p. 344 et seq.

4-Palmer's fort, or stockade, stood in Fairfield township, Westmoreland county.

In the same volume of manuscripts is a communication from the Council of Safety to the Delegates in Congress, in which reference is made to the receipt of the preceding letter. It is dated from Lancaster, November 14, 1777, and from it the following quotations are made:

"Sir:

"This Council is applied to by the people of the County of Westmoreland in this Commonwealth with the most alarming Complaints of Indian Depredations. The letter of which the inclosed is a copy will give you some Idea of their present situation. We are further informed by verbal accounts, that an Extent of 60 Miles has been evacuated to the savages, full of Stock, Corn, Hoggs & Poultry, that they had attacked Palmer's Fort about 7 miles distant from Fort Ligonier(5) without success; and from the information of White Eyes(6) and others circumstances; it is feared Fort Ligonier has by this time been attacked. There is likewise reason to fear the Savages will extend to Bedford county and along the frontiers. We shall order out the Militia of Bedford county and take such other steps as may be immediately necessary for the relief of these settlements, but we find they are greatly deficient in the article of arms, and especially ammunition and flints. In fort Ligonier, when our informants left it, there was not more than forty pounds of powder and fifteen pounds of lead, flints are sold at a dollar a piece. We know not the situation of Gen. Hand,(7) his forces or his views; but we have reserved the militias of Bedford & Westmoreland, for the purpose of co-operating with him in those parts of the states, & the neighbourhood."

The letter from the Council of Safety was referred to a committee in congress which reported six days later. A copy of the report was immediately sent to Virginia. This copy of the

5–"Fort Ligonier lies on the road from Philadelphia to Pittsburg; 266 miles from the former and 54 from the latter, and 9 miles from the E. side of Laurel Hill." (Morse, Jedidiah, op. cit.) A fort had been erected here by the British during the French and Indian war.

6–White Eyes, a chief of the Delaware and friend of the Americans. He was succeeded by Killbuck.

7–General Edward Hand was at this time in command of the Western Department, with headquarters at Fort Pitt.

report, together with Governor Henry's letter transmitting it to the General Assembly, are preserved in the Virginia State Library, Richmond, and are given below:

"Decr 5th 1777

"Sir.

"I beg Leave to communicate to the general Assembly, the Resolutions of Congress & the letter from Mr Laurens, which accompany this. I also enclose you a Letter from General Washington & have the Honor to be

Sir

Your most obedient

Servant

P. Henry"

On the back of the letter is the address: "The Hon'ble George Wythe Esqr, Speaker of the House of Delegates," and the subscription "Commissioners for indian affairs at Fort Pitt—Detroit."

The document received from Congress is in a perfect state of preservation, and is of great interest:

"In Congress: Novr 20: 1777—

"The committee, to whom the letter of the 14: from the council of safety of Pennsylvania & the letters from fort Pitt were referred, report:

"That an inroad has been made on the Western frontiers of Virginia & Pennsylvania, by some savage tribes of Indians, wherein a number of helpless people have been cruelly massacred, & the peaceble inhabitants driven from their homes, & reduced to great distress: That from a number of papers stiled proclamations, under the hand and seal of Henry Hamilton, lieut. gov^{r} of fort Detroit, left by the Indians, where they committed their murders, & of which there is one, now in the possession of the committee, as well as from other information & circumstances, it appears, that these savages have been instigated by the British agent and emissaries & particularly, by the said Henry Hamilton to this barbarous & murderous war—

"The committee apprehend, That so long as that post continues to be garrisoned by British troops, who are restrained

by no laws of humanity, from using every means to accomplish their purpose of subjugating these States, those frontiers will be incessantly exposed to the barbarous ravages of the Indian tribes under their influence.—

"That by means of the said agents & emissaries, a dangerous spirit of disaffection has been excited & formented, among some worthless & evil disposed persons on the said frontiers, who lost all sentiments of virtue, honor or regard for their country have been induced to aid our remorseless enemy.—

"That the Shawanese & Delawares continue well affected & disposed to preserve the league of peace & amity entered into with us for which reason they are threatened with an attack by their hostile neighbours, who have invaded us, & are at the same time exposed to danger from the attempts of ill disposed, or ill advised persons among ourselves.—

"Your committee therefore are of opinion, That for the safety & security of the frontiers, as well as to preserve the public faith of these United States plightes to our Indian allies, speedy & effectual measures ought to be taken to suppress the spirit of disaffection among our own deluded people—to repel & put a stop to the hostile invasion of our enemies—to protect ourIndian allies & confirm them in their good disposition & to remove, if possible, the cause from whence all the evils in that quarter arise: whereupon

"Resolved, That three commissioners be appointed to repair without delay to fort Pitt. That they be instructed to investigate the rise, progress & extent of the disaffection in that quarter, & take measures for suppressing the same & bringing the deluded people to a sense of their duty.

"That the said commissioners be invested with full power to suspend for misconduct any officers in the service of the United States employed in that quarter & appoint others in their room, & confine in safe custody all such officers, against whom they shall have satisfactory proof of being offenders against the rights & liberties of America.

"That the said commissioners be directed to cultivate the friendship of the Shawanese & Delawares & prevent our people from committing any outrages against them.

"That they be impowered to engage as many of the Delaware & Shawanese warriors in the Service of the United States as they judge convenient.

"That they be impowered & directed, for effectually checking the progress of the enemy, to concert with brigadier general Hand, a plan of carrying the war into the enemy's country, & cause the same to be executed with all convenient dispatch.

"And in order to prevent such barbarous incursions for the future, that the said commissioners be impowered to cause the operations of the war to be extended against the British garrison at Detroit & its dependencies, provided the reduction of that fortress can in their opinion be effected at this season of the year, & the whole can be accomplished by a force not exceeding two thousand men, exclusive of Indian auxiliaries.

"That it be earnestly recommended to the legislative powers of Virginia & Pensylvania, to invest the commissioners with every necessary authority over their respective militias; to impower them to arrest and commit for tryal, such of their respective inhabitants on the Western frontiers as shall appear to have been concerned in any conspiracy or plot, against the United States, or otherwise to afford the said commissioners, such assistance, as shall be necessary in consequence of these resolves—

"Resolved, That the case of colonel Geo. Morgan be included in the business referred to the consideration of the commissioners who are to be appointed for various purposes on the Western frontier, that in the mean while col. Morgan be restored to the appointment of agent for Indian affairs, & that he be appointed deputy-commissary-general of purchases in the Western district.

"Congress proceeded to the election of commissioners to proceed to fort Pitt, & the ballots being taken, Colo. Samuel Washington, Gabriel Jones Esq. & Col. Joseph reed were elected.

Extract from the Minutes Chas. Thomson Secy."(8)

8-Col. Samuel Washington, of "Harewood," Berkeley Co., Va., 2d son of Augustine and Mary Washington, was born Nov. 14, 1734. He has many descendants.

Gabriel Jones, of Augusta and Rockingham Counties, born May 17, 1724, died October 1806. He was long a distinguished lawyer, and was frequently in the House of Burgesses. See Waddell's "Annals of Augusta County" 81-84. He married Mrs. Margaret (Strother) Morton and has descendants.

Col. Joseph Reed, born at Trenton, N. J., Aug. 27, 1741, died in Philadelphia, March 5, 1785. He was actively engaged during the Revolution and was the close friend and confidential secretary of Gen. Washington.

Chas. Thomson, of Pennsylvania, Secretary of Congress, 1774-1789.

The following letter, the original being in the Library of Congress, among the Papers of the Continental Congress (No. 56, folio 89), is self explanatory:

"Sir:

"His Excellency Patrick Henry Esqr has been Pleased to apoint Colo. Saml. McDowell & my self in the Room of Saml. Washington & Gabriel Jones Esqr who have Declined the apointment of your Honourable Body on the 20th Novr Last. The Inclemency of the Season has prevented us from Setting out on our Journey, but should the weather Permitt we purpose going on moonday the 23^{d} Ins^{t} & hope to be at Pitsburg in Ten days after y^{t} time, where we shall Expect to meet with the other gentlemen who may be apointed from the State of Pensylvania—I have the Honour to be for Colo. McDowell & my self—Sir

Your most obedient
& Most Humbl Servant
Samp. Mathews"(9)

Staunton 13th Febry 1778

Addressed on back:

"To the Honourable Henry Laurance
President of Congress"

Pennsylvania appointed one commissioner, George Clymer, a signer of the Declaration of Independence. He reached Fort Pitt before the Virginian and on March 7, 1778 communicated with Congress. The letter, dated from Pittsburg, is preserved in the same volume with the preceding, it is in part:

"Neither of my Collegues having joined me from Virginia, Congress has yet reaped little advantage in this Quarter from the Appointment of Commissioners * * *. To repair this unhappy

9—Samuel McDowell, born in Pennsylvania Oct. 27, 1735, removed to Va. in 1737, died near Danville, Kentucky, Oct. 25, 1817. A member of Lewis's company at Braddock's defeat, and for many years a member of the Virginia Assembly. In 1782 he was appointed a commissioner to settle land claims in Kentucky, and served in the Kentucky Legislature.

Sampson Mathews, of Augusta County, Va., died in 1807. He was long a prominent citizen of the county, was commissary of Col. Charles Lewis' regiment in the Point Pleasant campaign and served in 1781 as Colonel of Augusta militia. (See Waddell's "Annals of Augusta County.")

loss of time as much as lies in my power, I shall of my own Authority send off a Messenger to the Delawares tomorrow, to make known to them the friendly disposition of Congress, to communicate the prosperous Situation of our Affairs, and to invite their principal Men to Fort Pitt: confessing to you at the same time my Doubts whether they will incline to put themselves in the power of our frontier people, whose indiscriminate hatred of Indians, has been such as to make them shew, on some occassions, little regard to the Laws of Protection or Maxims of good policy * * *."

Mathews probably reached Fort Pitt about the middle of March, being the only representative from Virginia, thus he and Clymer served as the commission by virtue of the resolutions of Congress of November 20, 1777. A very interesting letter, signed by them jointly, and addressed to the President of Congress, is among the Papers of the Continental Congress, (No. 78, folio 155) and is here quoted in full:

"Sir:

"In our Letter of the 31 March which we had the honor to write you, we communicated the several steps pursued by us, previous to the elopement of McKee,(10) to cultivate the Friendship of the Delawares: since when we have laboured assiduously by messages, and letters to take off any bad impressions he, and his associates, might have left on the Minds of these people. By these Means, and Fixing on a new day, we have obtained a visit from two of their Chiefs; but as a particular relation of our Proceedings with them accompanies this, we shall only observe that 'tho these Indians appear well disposed to be in friendship with us, we could not venture to make them any proposition towards engaging a number of them in our service.

Congress will perceive the Expediency of appointing Commissioners to Conduct the Treaty proposed to be opened here the twenty-third day of July next.

10-This refers to the escape of McKee and some followers, including members of the Thirteenth Virginia regiment, from Fort Pitt on the night of March 28, 1778. They had remained loyal to the English and appear to have made their way to Detroit.

We have already endeavoured to give Congress some Idea of the weak and disjointed state of the Frontier, against which the Wyandots, and other Indians from the neighbourhood of Lake Erie, continue to exercise their cruelties, and we have now more possible Reasons to apprehend that so far from effectually repelling the Indians the Inhabitants will rather retire to the other side of the Mountains—an event perhaps to be deprecated, less as temporary loss of country, than as it may produce in many an aversion to the cause, an attachment to which has occasioned their sufferings. And we may add, a political change of this nature will not be thought improbably to take place in minds ill-informed, and when consequently but little steadiness of Principle is expected. This among other considerations induces us to submit to Congress the propriety of immediately setting on foot an Expedition, whose object shall be Detroit, the source of all the Calamity, in which if we are fortunate, Peace and Security will undoubtedly succeed in this Quarter. If the Idea is adopted by Congress, it is proposed to employ in it three thousand of the Militia, as we conceive a smaller number would not effectually secure a march through the Indian Country, but as an Assult may be found necessary, they would be accompanied by at least four hundred regular troops, together with a small Artillery. The Dependence for Militia we have supposed must be almost altogether on Virginia, from a presumption all the force, that of two most westerly counties excepted, which the Government of Pennsylvania can draw into the field must necessarily be employed this Campaign within the State. The great Kenahwa is thought of as the properest Rendezvous of those from the nearest Counties, to consist of fifteen hundred men, and Fort Pitt for that of the remainder, but a junction of the Divisions to be made at the Great Kenahwa, from whence the whole should proceed together.

Some Estimates, with a Calculation of the Sums that will be required to be lodged in Virginia, to set forward the Division to Kenahwa come herewith for the View of Congress.

This attempt being made with so powerful a Force, we are not without hopes the Delawares generally, with the well dis-

posed Shawanoes, would engage more decisively in our favour, as from what we learn, they are already greatly irritated by the Threats, and Insults they have received from the enemy Indians in passing through their Country to ours.

Nothing material remaining for us to do in this Question, we propose this to finish the Business of our Commission, and shall set out for home Tomorrow

We have the honor to be
with Sentiments of Regard, Sir
Your most obed^{t} hum Serv^{ts}

Pittsburgh Geo. Clymer"
April 27, 1778 Samp. Mathews."

The honorable Henry Laurens Esqr President of Congress."

On the back of the letter is this note:

"Letter from Commissioners
at Fort Pitt, 27 April 1778
rec'd 6 May
referred to the board of war
who are directed to report
thereon.—"

Thus the commissioners made two distinct suggestions to Congress, first the desirability of an active campaign, with Detroit as the objective point, and second "the Expediency of appointing Commissioners to Conduct the Treaty proposed to be opened here [Fort Pitt] the twenty-third day of July next." Both suggestions were accepted by Congress and the campaign, as conducted by General McIntosh, formed the subject of the second article of this series. The question of the proposed treaty was probably discussed by the Commissioners in an earlier communication to Congress, as it was merely mentioned in the above letter of April 27.

The letter was duly considered by the Board of War, and on June 4 the following resolutions were entered in the Journal of Congress:

"The Board of War having represented the expediency of appointing commissioners to meet the Indians at Fort Pitt, and to attend the treaty proposed by the late commissioners,

Resolved, that three commissioners be appointed for the purpose of holding a treaty with the Delawares, Shawanese, and other Indians, who may assemble at Fort Pitt, on the twenty third of July next.

Resolved, That the governor and council of the State of Virginia be requested and authorized to appoint two gentlemen, and the executive power of the State of Pennsylvania, to appoint one gentleman, of suitable characters, for the purpose aforesaid.

Resolved, That Congress will make an adequate allowance for the services and expences of said commissioners."

And on June 20 the following entry was made in the Journal of Congress:

"The Committee on Indian Affairs to whom was referred the letter of Colonel G. Morgan, dated the 10th instant, brought in a report: Whereupon,

Resolved, That the Committee of Commerce be directed to procure goods, and such other articles as are proper for presents to the western Indian nations, to the amount of ten thousand dollars, and transmit the same to Fort Pitt, to the commissioners, who are to treat with the Indians there on the 23 day of July next: and that the said commissioners be also directed to dispose of the said goods amongst the said Indians in such manner as they shall judge will best conduce to conciliate their affections and secure them in the interest of these states:

That the said commissioners be empowered to draw on the military chest at Fort Pitt, for such sums as shall be necessary to defray the contingent expenses of the said treaty."

The resolution of Congress of June 4, was acted upon by Governor Henry of Virginia on June 18. On that day the following was entered in the Journal of the Virginia Council, a manuscript volume now in the State Library at Richmond:

"Agreeable to a Resolution of Congress, Andrew Lewis(11)

11–Andrew Lewis was born in Ireland about the year 1720, and died in Bedford county, Virginia, September 27, 1781. He was closely associated with Washington during the campains of 1754 and 1755. In 1756 he led the Sandy Creek expedition. On March 1, 1776 he was commissioned Brigadier General in the Continental army, but soon resigned on account of failing health.

& John Walker(12) Esquires, are, by the Governor with the advice of Council, appointed Commissioners for the purpose of holding a Treaty with the Delaware, Shawanesse & other Indians who may assemble at Fort Pitt on the twenty third day of July next."

And again on July 4, the subject was mentioned in the Journal of the Council:

"John Walker esquire having signified that it will be out of his power to Act as a Commissioner at the Indian Treaty to be held at Fort Pitt on account of the Indisposition of his family, Thomas Lewis(13) esquire of Augusta is appointed in his room; And as there is a probability of Andrew Lewis Esquire his refusing to Act on Account of the Indians having committed Hostilities near his house, in that Case, Sampson Matthews Esquire is appointed to act in his stead."

Pennsylvania failed to have a commissioner at the treaty which was conducted by the two brothers, Thomas and Andrew Lewis, on behalf of the United States, and the three Delaware Chiefs, White Eyes, Pipe, and Killbuck as representatives of their nation. On account of the delay in the arrival of continental troops at Fort Pitt, it became necessary to change date of July 23, as originally set. Colonel Brodhead, with the Eighth Pennsylvania regiment, reached Fort Pitt on September 10, 1778. The Commissioners and Indians were gathered there, and two days later, on September 12, they met in Council. The events of the succeeding days, closing with the signing of the treaty on September 17, will form the subject of the fifth article of this series.

12–John Walker, eldest son of the well-known Dr. Thomas Walker, of "Castle Hill," Albemarle Co., Va., was born Feb. 13, 1744, and died Dec. 2, 1809. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, the Conventions of 1775, was an aide to Washington in the Revolution and U. S. Senator from Virginia in 1790.

13–Thomas Lewis, the older brother of Andrew Lewis mentioned above, was born in Ireland in 1718; died in 1790. He was a member of House of Burgesses and likewise a member of the State convention that ratified the Federal constitution.

MINUTES OF THE COUNCIL AND GENERAL COURT 1622-1629*.

From the Originals in the Library of Congress.

(CONTINUED.)

*All erasures in the originals are here printed in italics.

The practice, previously followed, of printing these records line for line with the original will not be, hereafter, continued.

[150]

*(1)And with them they kept ye frigott wch they had first taken and theire owne And tooke A negro and A Frenchman who came away with them willingly. And a Portugall to be Their Pilott out of the West Indyes because they had longe gone

*(1) The depositions here and in XXIII, 404-406, relate to one of those half privateering, half piratical cruises so common at the time. The Dutch were willing to use any weapon in their desperate war with Spain and privateering commissions were freely given by the States or the Prince of Orange. In many instances, the operations of these privateers were not confined to attacks on Spanish ships. The interest in this case is that there should have been aboard the *Black Bess* two men who had helped to lay the foundations for so much history. Capt. Powell had commanded one of the ships which brought the first negroes to Va. and his subordinate Capt. Jones had commanded the Mayflower in its famous voyage to Plymouth. Both had been in the service of the Earl of Warwick. Capt. John Powell had been sent out by the Somers Islands Company in 1616, in a boat called the Hopewell; but had taken to piracy and gotten that Company into much trouble at home. In 1619, in "a Dutch man-of-war" he brought some of the first negroes to Virginia. In 1623, the Va. Company was asked to allow him to trade to Virginia, but refused as they were "afraid Capt. Powell should go to the West Indies," and there return to piracy.

Capt. Thomas Jones, in or prior to 1619, commanded in the East Indies a ship, "the Lion," belonging to the Earl of Warwick, and after his voyage with the Pilgrims in 1620, continued in the service of the Virginia Company. In 1622, in the Discovery, he made a voyage to explore the neighborhood of Cape Cod and furnished the Plymouth people with needed supplies. He died in Virginia soon after landing from the voyage described in these depositions. A frigate of the time here spoken of was a small sailing vessel and not the war ship of later days.

upp and downe and could nott gett Clerre. After this they gott cleere and came to ye cape of fflorida where they intended to take in fresh water and to gett some provisions and soe came to an anchor, and sent to the shore and gott in some Water and Turtles but by extremitie of fowle weather they lost two anchors and cables and theire boate Sunk at the Shipps stearne so as they were forcte to leave two of their Company ashore and were driven them selves out into the Current so yt they could not putt in to gett theire men abourd nor could not putt ye Portugall ashore as they intended at any place where his countrymen were, And after this not beinge Sufficiently Victuled to goe for England They resolved to shape their Course for Virginia. Theire ship also beinge very leakey, And sayeth that they landed at Cape Hatteras in a small boate wch they made themselves abourd ye shipp wth parte of ye rowne house to gett fresh water but could gett none And after yt ye next Daye They gott in at ye Capes and ran into this river uppon Mondy the eleventh of this month of January 1625

---

[151]

William Gundry of Feversam in Kent sworne and Examined Sayeth yt he was shipt at fflushing by Capt. Jonnes into ye blacke Bess and yt he harde Capt Powell's Commission readd, and yt they having victuled at the Isle of Wyght and taken in Some more Company they putt to Sea & shaped theire course for ye western Islands where they beate upp and Downe a few days and after went for the West Indies and at the Granados they builte them a shallopp, And they bay levinge ye shipp at an Anchor They went in the shallope aboute 25 men and boarded a Spanish frigott but the men were all ashore where they found some small p'visione and certen Raw hides on the shore, And they mande ye frigott and kept her in Consort with them, But after Capt Powell cutting short theire allowance and requiringe them to signe to Certen Articles, among wch one was yt thay should fyght againste any whether they were Friend or Foe, whereuppon they resolved to depart from him and to goe for theire Country, and soe was Capt. Jounes for theire Capt and mor who was willinge to come with them. And furnishinge

them with Some provisions and fresh water, They parted from their Admirall and beatinge upp and Downe one nyght lying at hull in the morninge the espied this frygott, and makinge after her, The men hoysted out theire boate and went ashore, when the went aboarde ye frygott and found never a man in her; but 60 live Goattes and fower pecks of meale and some lynnen and woollen Cloathes and some 5 or 6 hundred weight of Tobacco and 2 peeces of ordynance and some other small matters. Soe they man'd this frygott and carried her wth them and after came to Cap Carebe

---

[152]

There they fownd another frigott wch ran under theire lee they went w'th her to the wateringe place And often they took owt of this frigott Certen Raw hides and some Tobacco and a french man and a negro who were very willinge to come wth them and a Portugall to be theire pilott leavinge wth them the frigott wch they had first taken and theyre owne, And after they came to Cape Florida, and having sent ashore for water and theire men caringe aboard wth water and some Turtles, leaving two of their Company ashore for the featchinge of Turtles, By fowle weather they lost two Cables and Anchors and theire boate sunke at the Shipps Stearne, and were forced to sea by wch means they could not recover their men nor putt the Portugall ashore, whom they were forced to take in to be a Pilott for to bringe them out of the Islands, their victualls being short and the shipp leaky they resolved to shape their course for Virginia and arrived there on Mondye the eleventh day of July 1625

---

[153]

Andrew Poe of Holte in Northfolke sworne and examined Sayeth yt he was shipt in fflushinge by Capt. Powell and Capt Jonnes in the Black Bess, and having victuled at Isle of Wight they put owt to sea and went forth to ye western Islands, and from thence to ye West Indies where they lighted on a friggott, but he, this Examint was not aboard her the shallopp yt took her. Soe they mand the frigott and tooke her alonge wth them

and after because they could Capt. Powell would not allow them Sufficient water and victualls and required them to sett their hands to Certen articles the Company grew Discontented and soe Capt. Powell bid them that would goe for theire Country to take the frigott and goe in her, Whereupon the Chose Capt *Powell* Jonnes for their Capt and M'r and parted from him intendinge to goe Immediatelie for their Country but their few p'vysions and water being spent, they were forced to putt in for releefe, And having gott some pr'vysions they could nott gett, finde the way owt of the Islands, the Capt beinge unacquainted in those parts, And after beating upp and Downe they lighted uppon a ffrygott where they found 60 Turtles and some Tobacco and meale and other small matters and takeing her wth them afterwards lighted uppon a Spanish frigott wch came under their lee and they gave them their first frygott taking out of her some Raw hides and some Tobacco and a negro and a ffrenchman who

---

[154]

were desirous to goe along wth them and a Portugall to be theire Pilott owt of the Islands intendinge to sett him ashore uppon Cape fflorida or thereabouts when beinge arived there and after they gott some fresh water and p'visions ashore They left two of theire Company ashore and the weather growinge fowle they lost two cables and anchors and theire boate sunke at the ships sterne, by means wherof they coulde not goe for their men but were driven out to sea, And after had no oportunitie to sett the portugall ashore but came directly for Virginia, where they Arrived one Mondye the Eleventh of July 1625

July the xxi being present Sir ffrancis Wyatt Knight, Governor &c., Capt Francis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt Raphe Hanor, Mr William Cleyborne

Yt is ordered yt fourteene of those men wch came in wth Capt Jones shalbe sent upp to James Cittie wth ye first, To be disposed of by the Governor and Counsel to such places in the Colony as they shall thinke fitt, wherof the Frenchman to be one, And yt Capt Francis West make Choyse of such others as he shall thinke fitt of.

And ye Courte doth Consent to ye request of Capt. Francis West that he may make use of the frygott and all the Tackell Apparell Munitions masts sayles sayle yardes &c., now to her belonginge or appertayning, Provided that he shalbe accountable for the valuable some of twelve hundred pounds weight of Tobacco wch some Capt Jounes and the ships company hath Demanded for her To any such to whom of right she shall Appertaine uppon further Consideration

Yt is also ordered yt the Companie shalbe sent upp to ye neck of lande unto Mr Luke Boyse, there to abide untill further order

---

[156]

November 1624

Received of Doctoris Christmas and John Shepparde for the use of Southampton Hundred fower barrels of corne by the appoyntmentt of Mr John Powntis

℘ me John Utie

Mr Pountis receaved yt them when he went a trading for the use of his Pynnace said barrell of Corne

Witnessed by Richard (x) Croker

Receaved the 9th of December 1623 for the use of Mr Pountis in pte of another some one hundred and fowre pounds of Tobacco, I say receaved of John Shepparde the same above

Nathaniell Basse

---

[157]

A Courte held the xxii of August 1625

being pr'snte Sr francis Wyatt, Knight Governor &c, Capt. Fra. West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt. Raphe Hamor, Mr Wm. Cleyborne.

John Southerne sworne and Sayeth that Thomas Passmore*(2) and Christopher Haule came unto him for to have him make

(2) Thomas Passmore was a carpenter who lived, with his wife Jane, on James City Island. Christopher Hall appears from the Census of 1624-5, to have been a neighbor. The same Census shows that John Hall and Elizabeth, his wife, also lived near by. The name rendered Kersie in the text, should probably be Kerfitt. Thomas Kerfitt, aged 24, in 1624-5, was one of Passmore's servants.

a payr of covenants betwixt them, the saide John Sutherne demanded of them w't their bargain was, they said the cropp was to be sett in seaven p'tes wherof Mr Passmoure was to have fowre shares and Christopher Haule to have three, But Mr Passmoure saide he would have a little peece of grounde to him selfe for his wife and his boy to plant and tend. Christopher Haule said I will make no new bargaine and yt you will stand to our first bargaine (so) otherwise will make no other bargaine and so they departed. Thomas Bradfiel sworne and Examined Sayeth that he sitting in Company wth Passmoure and Christopher Haule he heard Mr Passmoure saye that Christopher Haule should have three shares of ye Cropp and yt he would leave his men over to Christopher Haule and meddle not wth them and this was spoken before this Examin't after they had been wth Mr Southerne. Mr Passmoure called this Examt to take notice wt the said

Yt is ordered that John Haule have his house and fowre acres of land joyninge to the land of Thomas Passmoure sytuate in James Cyttie Island where he hath now built & seated

---

[158]

Thomas Kersie sworne and Examined sayeth That Christopher Haule did woorke about ye Cropp sometymes two howers in a D'ye and sometymes three houres and very seldome a whole D'ye together.

John Buckmaster sworne and Examined affirmeth as much as Thomas Keisie hath formerly said.

It is agreede by and wth the Consentt of Thomas Passmoure and Christopher Haule (as followeth) that is to say yt ye Cropp now in question between them Mr Passmoure shall have fower shares therof & Christopher Haule to have three shares and Thomas Passmoure to have the little hill now planted with pease and pompions to him selfe, And if Christopher Haule shall neclect his lawfull labour for ye good of ye Cropp, That then he shall make allowance to Thomas Passmoure for the same.

*Wheras Mousyer Bomount**(3) Yt is ordered yt Mounseyer Bomounte may seate him selfe and his people uppon any place About ye Esterne Shore being five miles from any land actually possessed by ye Company or any other man. And for any other order the Courte cannot determine before they be farther informed wth ye Certentie of ye bounds of ye lande wch he desireth to have granted.

---

[159]

A Courte held the xxx^th^ of August 1625, beinge present Sr ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt Raphe Hamor, Mr Wm Cleybourne.

Cadwallader Jonnes Sworne and Examined sayeth yt uppon Tuesday nyght last he harde a Tumulte in Joseph Johnsone*(4) his house betwixt the said Joseph [and his?] wiefe. And sayeth yt Mr Bransbye his m'r caled to this Examint and other of his fellows to come to him soe this Examinat and Robert Crew his fellow servant went to Joseph Johnsones house where he and his fellow servant found their M'r and Joseph Johnsone fallen fowle together they being uppon the bed where they p'ted them, And further sayeth yt Mr Bransbie *caled Joseph Johnsone* said this I have for p'tinge a Newgate birde and Bridewell whore.

George Proust sworne and Examined Sayeth yt uppon Thursday last Mr Bransbie his m'r after he came from Joseph Johnsone's house sent this exam'nt to Johnsones house for his hatt and hat band And Cominge away from ye house he heard Mr Bransbie say to Joseph Johnsone yt yf he did beat and abuse his wiefe any more he would beate him tyghtlie unless ye Governo^r^ comanded ye contrary.

And further Cadwallader Jones sayeth yt about ye midst of October 1624, Joseph Johnsone goinge abroad with his peice,

(3) It is singular that there is no mention of this Mons. G. Beaumont in Hotten, the Minutes of the Virginia Company, or in any other record but this. Neill (*Virginia Carolorum*, p. 30) says that Giles Beaumont, a Frenchman, arrived in 1625 with some colonists, authorized to claim the privileges of an English subject and establish a plantation.

(4) Joseph Johnson, his wife Margaret and George Prouse, were living at Archers Hope, 1624-5. At the same time Thomas Bransbie, with three servants, Nicholas Greenhill, Cadwallader Jones and Robert Crew, was living at the same place. The account shows that Bransbie was commander of Archers Hope plantation.

very far from his house and in great danger of the Enemie, Mr Bransbie being Comander of ye Plantation, hath often admonished him therof, And Mr Bransbie offering to disarme him of his peece ye said Joseph beinge gott into his house, presented his peece against Mr Bransbie, sayinge come if you will.

---

[160]

And further George Proust before sworne and examined sayeth that about Easter laste Joseph Johnsone, beating of his wiefe, Mr Bransbie and others wth him Cominge upp towards Johnsones house to pacific them, The said Johnsone presented his peece owt at his window and said To them wt have you to do heere, you were best kepe back or I will keepe make yo, stand back

Yt is ordered at this Courte that Joseph Johnsone in regard of his contempt against the Comande of the Plantacone as also for ye Contynuall assaultinge of his wiefe, shall enter into bonds of fortie pounds wth a sufficient securitie to be from henceforth of good behaviour, as well towards our Souveragne lord ye Kinge as other his liege subjects

---

[ink folio 161]

A Courte helde the 12th of September 1625 beinge present Sr: Francis wyatt Knight, Gouernor, & Capt' Roger Smith Capt' Samuell Mathewes Mr Abraham Peersey mr Wm Cleybourne

Yt is ordered yt william Browne Boatswayne of the good shipp called the Elizabeth, shall deliuer three hatts to mr Thomas Allnut*(5), wch were sent him owt of Englande, wch the said Wm Browne sold at Kackowtan, At or before the xixth daye of this instant moneth of September beinge mondye next

Mr James Stogden minister sworne and examined sayeth that he by the Apoyntment of mr John Powntis did paye to mr Edward Cage and mr Tho: Edwards two hundred and twenty pownd waight of Tobacco for wch they gave ye said mr Stogden Accquitanc for ye receipt therof (wch was lately burnt in his howse by Casualtie of fyer

(5) Thomas Alnutt, who came in the *Gyte*, and his wife who came in the *Marygold*, were living at James City at the census of 1624-5. Edward Cage, who came in the *Marmaduke*, lived near him.

Doctoris Christmas being sworne (Deposeth that he brought the said Accquittance from m^{r} Edwardes and Deliuered it to m^{r} Stogden.

Further m^{r} Stogden deposeth y^{t} m^{r} John Powntis did accept of a bill of dept for fower barrells and a halfe of Corne, wch Mr Samuell Jorden had bounde him selfe to pay to m^{r} Tho. Dowse, And in leu of the said bill, did discharge Dictoris Chrismas and John Hassarde of fower barrells & halfe of corne dew from them to ye said m^{r} Jo. Powntis wch bill he said he was ye more willinge to accept of for y^{t} he was indepted to m^{r} Jurden.

[ink folio 162]

A Courte held the xixth daye of September 1625 beinge present Sr. Francis wyatt, Knight, Gouernor, &c., Capt' Roger Smith, Capt' Raph Hamer, Mr Abraham Persey m^{r} Wm Cleybourne Walter Horsefoot sworne and examined sayeth that the shipp caled the Elizabeth was acosted at Dover for the King service, whervppon the purser of the shipp rid to London and brought A Letter to the Livt' of Dover Castle. And soe the shipp was discharged.

Further he sayeth y^{t} John Hobbs a servant of Capt' Bickley cam away from the shipp and after Mr Page goinge wth the water baylie to ye Capt' wch when Hobbs was had him del'ved agayne.

And further sayeth y^{t} some of Mr Perseys men marched in theire armes, before m^{r} Page his face, And further sayeth y^{t} one Hugh Symster A Carpenter offered m^{r} Page y^{t} yf he wold paye xx^{s} and discharge his hoste he wold come alonge wth him wch Carpenter was one of m^{r} persyes men

Yt is ordered in Courte y^{t} m^{r} Peersey shall have one of the boyes named Burrows sold by the purser, or otherwise the purser to Compound wth m^{r} persy for him Mr Persy desireth now to haue Robert Burrows

Walter Horsefoote further sayeth y^{t} m^{r} Page saide that m^{r} Wake was to haue a boy of his named burrows.

Wm Webster purser Doth Consigne over to Mr Abraham Persy Hugh Brooke, Wm Larance and Jane Steckie, in lew of three servante wch ye M^{r} and Company suffered to goe away from them beinge three of m^{r} persie sevance

[ink folio 163]

Received of m^{rs} Woollrige
one hogshed marked—T D
one barrell marked—T D
one servante
william WB Browne
his marke

Ytt ys ordered y^{t} m^{r} woolgrige shall haue a boye servante Caled whiffie now remayninge wth Thomas Spillmas in satisfaction for his servante, wch ye ships Company suffered to goe away.

Yt is Also ordered y^{t} for a kilderkin and smale chest of Surgery sent over by m^{r} Woodall to Christopher beast, the Colony beinge in great want of said surgery That not wthstanding of m^{r} woodalls desire of hauinge the same retornde, m^{r} wake Do leaue the saide goods heere wth ye Phisitions and Chirurgions y^{t} they be furnished therwth, they puttinge in securitie to this Courte, To pay to m^{r} woodall in Englande so much redie money as it Cost wth such resonable proffit as shalbe to his Content.

Y^{t} is ordered y^{t} the Purser of the Elizabeth shall pay to m^{r} Pearle for 6 tonne of beere and 9 hundred of bred wch they spent of his at sea the some of twelve hundred waight of good Marchantable Tobacco at or before the last Dye of November next enswinge, vppon payment wherof, Mr Pearle shall give the said purser A Discharge for all the goodes shipt aboorde the Elizabeth by m^{r} Benet And for five servantes y^{t} rann away in Englande at Dover, Mr Benett is to Receive satisfactione for them in England.

(To be Continued.)

VIRGINIA GLEANINGS IN ENGLAND.

(Contributed by the late Lothrop Withington, London, Eng.)

Simon Aston, Citizen and Grocer of London. Will 2 August 1638; proved 15 August 1638. To wife Elizabeth ½ of goods and executrix. Overseers: Brothers William Wheeler Esq. and Robert Aston, Citizen and Grocer of London. Richard Nelme £10 to make up accounts of Shopp. To poor of St. Peters Cheap £4. To Mother £20 per annum. To eldest son William Aston £50. Witnesses: James Smith, Thomas Lavender, John Hope. **Lee,** 99.

Elizabeth Aston of London, widow. Will 12 April 1647; proved 25 September 1647. I commit my body to the earth to be buried in decent manner in the parish church of All Saints Staining, London, as near to my later dear father, John Wheeler, esq., deceased, as conveniently may be, but not with pomp and solemnity or mourning, which I leave to the discretion of my brother and executor to do therein as I have to him declared. I give to my sisters Ann Wynn and Mary Anesworth 40s apiece to buy them rings. To my sister Lucilia Dodd £10 to remain in the hands of my executor to her proper use. To my brother John Wheeler 40s. for a ring to wear in remembrance of me. To my sisters Agneta Moone and Clara van de Welde the like sum apiece. To my sister Mrs. Elizabeth Wheeler a ring of 40s. price in testimony of my love and affection unto her. To my cousin Mrs. Elizabeth Aby 40s. To my cousin Mrs. Mary Ruddiard, widow, a ring of 40s. price to wear in remembrance of me. To my servant Elizabeth Cornwell £5. To Marie Butt, sometimes my servant, 20s. To eight poor widows, at the election of my executor, 10s. apiece. To the poor of St. Katherine Coleman, London, and of all Saints Steyning, 40s. to

either parish. To Master William Engler 40s. To my three sons, William, Simon, and Robert Aston, £200 apiece at their several ages of 21. To my eldest daughter Anne Aston £300, and to my youngest daughter Sarah Aston £200, at their several ages of 18. I give also to my said daughters such of my plate, linen, and woolen things, as I have set apart for them, and parcelled out with my own hands and set their names thereon. To my three sons, £5 apiece in old gold. I give unto my executors, children, and servants mourning apparel only, and desire that the rest of my friends will be contented with the legacies only before mentioned and intended unto them. The residue of my goods I give equally among my said five children. I ordain my very loving brother William Wheeller, of Westburie county, Wilts, esq., and my son William Aston my overseers. And to my said brother Master William Wheeller, for his great care and pains to be taken therein, and for a remembrance of my love to him, I give £10 to buy him a piece of plate at his discretion and pleasure. Codicil 24 July 1647. I do further declare that, in regard my sister Dod has shown great love to me in the time of my long sickness, to the £10 formerly given to her £10 more be added; and likewise that £5 more be distributed to poor widows. The mark of Elizabeth Aston Witnesses: William Steedman, Thomas Coleman, servt. to Thomas Bostocke, ser. Proved by William Wheeller, with power reserved, etc. **Fines,** 188.

The *Visitation* of London, 1634, states that Walter Aston, of Longdon, Staffordshire (grandson of Sir Walter Aston of Tixall), had issue: 1 Thomas, living at Kilbary, Ireland; 2. Simon, of London, Grocer, who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Wheeler, of London; 3. Walter, "now in the West Indies;" 4. Robert, of London, grocer. As Virginia was then frequently referred to as in the West Indies, it is very probable that the Walter Aston referred to was the one whose tomb is at the site of the old church at Westover. The epitaph is as follows:

"Here Lyeth interred the body of leftenant
Colonell Walter Aston who died the 6th
Aprill 1656. He was Aged
49 years And
Lived in this country 28 yeares
Also here lyeth the Body of Walter Aston
the son of Leftenant Collonel Walter Aston
who departed this life ye 29th of Ianuari 1666
Aged 27 Yeares and 7 Monthes."

Walter Aston, Sr., came to Virginia in 1628, and settled in Charles City County. He was a member of the House of Burgesses for Shirley Hundred

Island 1629-30, Both Shirley Hundreds &c., 1631-32, Shirley Hundred Maine and "Cawseys Care" Sept. 1632, and Feb. 1632-3, and Charles City Co. 1642-3. He was also justice of the peace and lieutenant colonel of militia. His first wife was named Warboro, or Narbrow, and his second (who survived him and married Col. Edward Hill) was Hannah. On Aug. 2, 1646, Walter Aston patented 1040 acres in Charles City on Kymages Creek, including 200 more on "Cawseys Care." Lt. Col. Aston died in 1656 having issue: (1) Susannah, widow, in 1655, of Lieutenant Col. Edward Major; (2) Walter; (3) Mary, married Richard Cocke; (4) Elizabeth, married ——— Binns. The will of Walter Aston, Jr., was dated Dec. 21, 1666, and proved Feb. 4, 1666-67. Legatees: to his mother Hannah Hill, a parcel of land called "The Level:" to godson John Cocke, son of Richard Cocke, deceased, 4000 lbs. tobacco; to godson Edward Cocke, son of Richard Cocke, 6000 lbs. tobacco; the survivors to have the whole amount of 10,000 lbs. and if they were without issue it is to go to the other children, sisters Mary Cocke and Elizabeth Binns 20 shillings each for a ring: a gun called Pollard to servant John Mitten and a sow; to testators Irish boy Edward a sow, to Mr. George Harris, merchant, all the dividend of land at Cawseys Care, the land at Canting Point and rest of estate].

Henry Eltonhead of London Merchant bound for a voyage to the East Indies in the good ship called the Hound of London. Will 23 November 1616; proved 12 February 1619-20. To my brother Nicholas Eltonhead of Greenwich county Kent, gent all my estate whatsoever and I make him sole executor. William Manley servant to Nicholas Reeve, scr., Edward Pierce servant to said scrivenor. **Soame,** 22.

The ancient family of Eltonhead, of Eltonhead, Lancashire, has many descendants in Virginia. See Hayden's *Virginia Genealogies* 228-230. Henry Eltonhead, whose will is given here was evidently the son of William Eltonhead. His name and that of his brother Nicholas appear on the chart pedigree. Henry Eltonhead, whose will was dated in 1665, was a brother of Richard Eltonhead, of Eltonhead, though not named in the chart. This is evident as he mentions his brother Thomas Meares].

Henry Eltonhead late of London Esq deceased. Will 27 July 1665. These seuerall following I doe giue to my Brother R. Eltonhead if I dye a single man. Moneys due to me in Ireland by bond in Mr. John Doughty's hands in Dublin £100. Mr. Thomas Houghton is bound interest due 10 in hundred this bond is in hands of Mr. Walter Scudamore. In hands of Mr. Timothy "Grolliers" in Dublin wherein Mr. James Butteele is bound at 10 in hundred. In my landlords hand Mr. Joseph Stokers in Dublin £100 at his house in Castle Street Dublin, interest to be paid by him by reason I lay two yeares in his

house and paid nothing for my chamber which I ought to pay for after the rate of fiue pound ten shillings a year. In my brother Richard Barrys hands my salary due from the King as Commissary for Munster £97. Two bonds of Mr. Edwd Rands £90 some years ago. Two bonds of my brother Tho. Mearas £6 in hands of Mr. Nathaniell Foulkes he lives at the sign of the Horseshoe in Castle Street Dublin. I owe Mr. William Richardson £24. Mr. Clement Hog for two last terms Business £8. Due from Mr. Denton £100. Due to my proctor Mr. John Clements £10. Grant Book 1638-1675 fo. 54. Letters of Administration with will etc to Richard Eltonhead of Eltonhead in county Lancashire in England Esq of goods of Henry Eltonhead late of London Esq deceased on 23 August 1670. **Prerogative Court of Ireland, Will Book 1668-72, folio 166.**

William Barlowe. Will 21 February 1617; proved 15 June 1625. If I die at Easton my body to the Chancell. God having given me ability in my lifetime to provide for my wife and children, I will now be the shorter. My daughter Anne having as yet very little of certainty I make her estate worth £300. To my brother John Barlowe 100 marks. To my son Thomas all my Loadstones and Mathematical books and instruments. To the poor of Winchester 40s. To those of the seale 30s. To poor of Easton 40s. To poor of Avington 20s. To my men servants and maids half a years wages. My wife Julyan Barlowe and my son William Barlow joynt executors. My son William Barlow shall have £40 to assist his mother but all things to her direction. My daughters Mary and Katherine portions may amount to £300 apiece. All such reversions of the Church Coppihoulds as I shall have at my death unbargained for and unsold I give to my son Barnaby Barlowe. **Clarke,** 67.

About the middle of the Seventeenth century a Ralph Barlowe lived in Northampton Co., Va. Various references in the records there show that he was related to Robert Parker of that county, who, like William Barlowe, whose will is given above, was a Hampshire man. On Oct. 28, 1653, Mr. George Parker sued Mr. John Elsey, executor of Mr. Ralph Barlowe, and on June 28, 1658, Jone Elzey "of Old England" petitioned Northampton Court that Mr. John Elzey executor of Mr. Ralph Barlowe, should pay her 500 lbs. tobacco left her, in Ralph Barlowe's will].

COUNCIL PAPERS, 1698-1701

(From the Original in the Virginia State Library.)

(Continued)

Thanksgiving Proclamation

Whitehall November ye 11th 1702

Sir

We send you here inclosed her Majestys proclamation directing a publick thanksgiving throughout England for the great Successes of her Ma'tys Arms by Sea and land. And we do hereby Signify to you her Majestys pleasure that a day of publick thanksgiving for those Successes be likewise solemnized throughout all her plantacons in America; You are therefore to take care that a day be accordingly set apart for that purpose as soon as conveniently may be after your receipt hereof, And that the same be observed throughout her Majestys Colony and Dominion of Virginia under yor Government, with such due Solemnities as are Suitable to so great an occasion. So we bid you heartily farewell.

Yor very Loving Friends
Rob. Cecill
Ph. Meadows
Wm. Blathwayt
John Pollexfen
Mat Prior.

Council of Virginia to the Queen Anne

To the Queen's most excellt Majtie

May it please yor Ma'ty

We the Council of yor Maty's Colony and Dominion of Virginia after due perusal and serious consideracon of Yor Majties

gracious Letter signifying yor Royal pleasure concerning a voluntary Contribution of men and money for New York laid before Us by his Excellency Francis Nicholson Esqr yor Majestys Lieu^{t} and Governor General of this Colony and Dominion, being extremely concerned that our answer to the like demand made by Yo^{r} Matys Royal Brother William the third of blessed memory contained in our petition of October ye 1st 1701 did not give your Maj^{tie} the expected satisfaction, but that our management of that affair was disallowed by the Lords of the Council for Trade and plantacons Humbly beg leave in the most dutifull manner to lay before Yo^{r} Majesty our answers to those particulars wherein by the advice of the said Lords, We find yor Majesty disapproves our conduct in that petition, together with an account of our late endeavors to comply with yor Maties commands in the said Letter as far as is within the reach of our Station and province.

Whereas in the first place we are charged as having made our application to yor Maties Royal Brother in an irregular manner by an Agent of our own without the consent of our Governour We humbly offer to yor Maties consideracon that as we were altogether free from any ill design in this method, so we Never heard before that any such Rule had been sett limiting the Addresses of Subjects in the plantations to their Soveraign to be made only by the consent and through the hands of their Governors, and in this particular case, our Governor had signified so much of his disapprobation of the proceedings of the General Assembly on acco^{t} of the said Address that we judged it would have been improper to have desired or expected his mediation or concurrence therein: But now that we know yor Maj^{ties} pleasure we shall take care in this, and all other applications to yor Majesty to observe the said Rule as to the manner of presenting our petitions.

In the next place it is observed of the said petition wch was presented to Yo^{r} Maj^{tie} in the name of the Council and Burgesses of Virginia that it was signed by no more than four of the members of the said Council: But to this we humbly offer to yor Maj^{ties} consideracon that it often happens by reason of sickness, and the very remote and distant habitations of many

of the members of yor Council, the badness of weather, and the unpassableness of great Rivers and Bays at certain Seasons that we are obliged to act with very small numbers: and particularly at that time there being but a thin Council before the late nomination, and these reduced to many inconveniences by a tedious absence from home during a very long Session of Assembly, Several of them had repaired to their homes to look after their business which Sufferred exceedingly by so long absence, by which means it came to pass that there were no more of the Council left, but those few who subscribed the said petition, the rest who went away before it was finished having been consenting while they staid to the several Resolves that had been made about it, So that it was really an unanimous consent of the Council, tho' signed only by those four who gave their attendance to the last.

Besides the objections against the manner of presenting the said petition, the reasons for excusing ourselves from the aforesaid contribution are excepted against as insufficient. To which all we have to offer is, that tho' we were then, and still are of the opinion (with Submission to the better Judgements of the Lords of Council for Trade and plantations) that the Reasons laid down in the said petition were very Sufficient to justify the proceedings of that Assembly with relacon to a Contribution of men and money for New York; Yet so great is the deference we have for yor Maj^{ties} recommendation of that affair to the present General Assembly, that tho' the said reasons seem to us to be still in full force, We have taken no notice of them, but have used our best endeavors consistent with the methods of Assembly to further the intent of Yo^{r} Maties gracious Letter with the House of Burgesses, and to take some good method with the said House for Yo^{r} Maties satisfaction.

And therefore we doubt not Yo^{r} Majestys candid construction of our proceedings and endeavors, wch tho' ineffectual to overcome the general dissatisfactions of the Country and their Representatives in this affair of New York, Yet we think it our duty to assure Yo^{r} Majesty that you reign entirely in the hearts of Yo^{r} Virginia Subjects, and that there are none in all yor

Dominions better affected to Yo^{r} Matys person and Government than they are.

And upon this occasion we humbly take leave to congratulate the wonderfull Success of Yo^{r} Maties Forces by Sea and land in this last Summers expedition, and to pray to Almighty God that the remaining part of yor auspicious Reign may answer so glorious a begining, to yor Maj^{ties} immortal honour the terror of yor enemies, and the happiness of all yor Subjects and Allies

William Byrd	E Jenings	J Lightfoot
Benja Harrison	Matthew Page	James Blair
Robert Carter	Phill. Ludwell jun^{r}	Wm Bassett
Jno. Custis		Hen. Duke.

Memorandum

April ye 24th 1703. His Excell'cy was pleased to appoint Major Arthur Allen to be Naval Officer & Collector of the Virg'a dutys in the Upper District of James River who thereupon took the Oaths appointed by Act of parliam^{t} to be taken in stead of the Oaths of Allegiance & Supremacy Subscribed the Test & took the Oath of Naval Officer, And entered into three sev'll Bonds for the due execution of his Office with Henry Duke of James City County Esqr as his Security.

Money Furnished by Virginia to New York

Received of his Excellency Francis Nicholson Esqr her Majestys Lieuten^{t} and Governor Gen'll of her Colony and Dominion of Virginia, three bills of Exchange all of the same tenure & date, upon Messieurs Micajah Perry Tho: Lane & Richd Perry Merchants in London for the Sum of 900 lb. Sterling, which said Sum of 900 lb. Sterling is the Quota appointed by his late Majestys Royal comands dated the 19th of January 1700-1 and by her present Majestys Royal commands dated the day of to be furnished by her Matys s^{d} Colony of Virginia towards the ffortifications on the Frontiers of New York; but the Colony of Virginia having refused in the

Gen'll Assembly to raise the s^{d} Sum of 900 lb. Sterling required by the Crown, & his s^{d} Excellency having given the s^{d} three Bills upon his own Credit, through the zeal he has for the service of the Queen, I do hereby promise & engage that unless the Queen shall be pleased to allow the s^{d} bills to be paid out of her Ma'tys Quitt rents of the Colony of Virginia the s^{d} bills shall immediatly be cancelled & made void & of none effect Witness my hand this 24th day of May, 1703.

Cornbury

ADDITIONAL INSTRUCTIONS

Lurs Sigilli Anne R—TO OUR TRUSTY AND WELBELOVED FRANCIS NICHOLSON ESQ^{r} OUR LIEUTENANT AND GOVERNOR GENERAL OF OUR COLONY AND DOMINION OF VIRGINIA. Given at our Court at St James's the 7th day of January 1702-3 in the first year of our Reign.

Whereas it has been represented to us that Ships sailing from our plantacons in America without Convoy during this time of War are Subject to great hazards, and that diverse of them have been taken by the Enemy to the great Loss and detriment of our Loving Subjects: And whereas for the preventing the mischiefs that may happen in that manner to the Trade of those parts, We have been pleased to give direction that a Convoy do proceed from hence with the outward bound ships the latter end of this instant January, Which Convoy is to return from Virginia the first or tenth of July next with the Trade that shall then be ready to accompany them, and that another Convoy be likewise sent with such Ships as shall be ready to sail from hence to Virginia & Maryland in July next, It is therefore our will and pleasure that you take especial care that during the time of War, no ships do sail from Virginia otherwise than with Convoy, Such ships only excepted as shall have Licence from Us under our Royal Sign manual, our Order in Council, or from our high Admiral. And for yor so doing this shall be yor Warrant.

A. R.

BOARD OF TRADE TO THE GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA.

Whitehall January the 26th 1702-3

Sir

Since our Letters of the 4th and 11th November, We have not received any from you: So that what we have now chiefly to acquaint you with is in relation to the Convoys appointed this year for Virginia & Maryland.

The Merchants trading to those parts not agreeing as you did foresee about the time for the sailing of those Convoys, nor about the restraining or permitting ships to return from thence without Convoy; Her Majesty has been pleased to give her directions according to the Instructions wch you will herewith receive.

The Arms and Stores formerly appointed for Virginia are now ready, tho' they are not in the same quantity as you desired, Yet they are as many as her Majesty could conveniently spare. They will be sent to you by the first Convoy, and we do not doubt but you will make the best use of them for the defence of yor Governmt.

So we bid you heartily farewell.

Yor very Loving Friends

Rob. Cecil
Ph: Meadows
Wm. Blathwayt.

John Pollexfen
Mat Prior

March ye 25th 1703

We herewith send you two lettrs from the Earl of Nottingham relating to the French & Spaniards upon occasion of the present war, not doubting of yor care in observing the directions thereby given within her Matys province under yor Government.

GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL OF MD. TO THE GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA

Maryland port of Annapolis May 5th 1703

May it please yor Excell'cy

We being Sensible by many signal instances how ready yor Excell'cy is on all occasions to promote the Trade as well of yor

own as this Countrey & others concerned therein, especially in the many speedy notices you have been pleased to give us on all occasions to joine the Convoys from yor Excell'cys Government, and that to yor no small trouble & expence—presuming upon yor wonted goodness, We address Ourselves to yor Excell'cy for yor favourable protection to Capt James Mitchell commander of the ship Owners Adventure of London who has lately received many abuses and hard threats from Capt Nathaniel Bostock Commander of her Matys Advice boat the Eagle (now supposed to be in yor Excell'cys Governm^{t}) and is still apprehensive of further insults from him; Therefore in regard the said Mitchell is a fair Trader and a very Civil honest man (in his way) We intreat yor Excell'cy will be pleased to grant him yor protection that his person may not be abused nor his Voyage endammaged or retarded by the said Capt Bostock's impressing his men or otherwise within yor Governm^{t}, In wch you will continue to oblige

Sr

Yo^{r} Ex'cys most faithful humble Serv^{ts}

Jno Hammond
Edwd Lloyd
Thomas Tench Presid^{t}
Robert Smith
Wm Holland
James Sanders

(To be Continued)

VIRGINIA IN 1678.

(Abstracts by W. N. SAINSBURY, and copies in the McDonald and De Jarnette Papers, Virginia State Library.)
(CONTINUED)

July 6, 1678

CERTIFIED COPY BY GOV. JEFFREYS OF A DEPOSITION OF PAUL WILLIAMS in reference to what Col. Edward Hill said concerning his Maj. letter if any should come in favour of Byrd [indorsed by Col. Moryson] "who was a prisoner of Bacon's and carried about with him when Col. Warner was plundered for which they have awarded a thousand pound for Bird to pay tho' after his Maj. pardon." Indorsed Read. 14 Dec. 1678.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

Virginia July 10, 1678

GOVERNOR HERBERT JEFFREYS TO COLONEL FRANCIS MORYSON—Wrote him a full account of all affairs last week by Capt. Jeffreys of the Golden Fortune, and now refers him to the bearer Col. Place, an eye witness of many of the particulars—Desires he will inform himself of what he long since propecied, what a sad and hard game Jeffreys had and has still to play, besides the misery of sickness he has undergone and is not yet quite rid of.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

James City, Virginia, Aug. 8, 1678

WM. SHERWOOD TO SECRETARY SIR JOSEPH WILLIAMSON. The peace of the Country interrupted by the malice of discontented persons of the late Governor Berkeley's party who endeavour to bring a contempt upon Col. Jeffreys, their present good Governor—the chief being Lady Berkeley, Col. Philip Ludwell, Thos. Ballard, Col. Edward Hill & Major Robt. Beverley, all cherished by Sec. Ludwell, who acts severely. Their faction upheld by the hope of Lord Culpeper doing

mighty things for them. Is hated and abused for opposing that faction & vindicating the King's authority—Refers him to the bearer Col. Rowland Place, for a more ample account.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

Sept. 24, 1678

LIST OF ACTS MADE IN VIRGINIA TRANSMITTED BY CAPT. JEFFERIES and received from Mr Secretary Coventry on the 24th of Sept. 1678, Sir Wm. Berkeley Governor.

Which Acts begin in March 1660 and end in October 1677.

1st Session from		3 March 1660 to 23 Dec. 1662.
2nd Do	"	2 Dec. 1662 to Sept. 1663.
3rd Do	"	10 Sept. 1663—20 Sept. 1664.
4th Do.		20 Sept. 1664—10 Oct. 1665.
5th Do.		5 June 1666.
6th Do.		5 June 1666—23 Oct. 1666.
7th Do.		23 Sept. 1667.
8th Do.		23 Sept. 1667—17 Sept. 1668.
9th Do.		17 Sept. 1668—20 Oct. 1669.
10th Do.		20 Oct. 1669—3 Oct. 1670.
11th Do.		3 Oct. 1670—20 Sept. 1671.
12th Do.		20 Sept. 1671—24 Sept. 1672.
13th Do.		24 Sept. 1672—20 Oct. 1673.
14th Do.		20 Oct. 1673—21 Sept. 1674.
15th Do.		21 Sept. 1674—7 Mar. 1675.
16th Do.		5 June 1676.
17th Do.		20 Feb. 1676-7.
18th Do.		10 Oct. 1677.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 84.)

Also Copies of the above Acts certified by Robt. Beverley, Clerk of the Assembly.

(Ibid. pp. 1-102.)

Oct. 25, [1678]

COL. FRANCIS MORYSON TO W. BLATHWAYT, Sends an order lately received from Virginia [see 23 Oct. 1677.] which will give their Lordships (of Trade & Plantations) a prospect of the arrogancy of Virginia Assemblies—It was made by an

Assembly which was called after their coming away—that which sat during the time the Commiss[rs] executed their Commission, never so much as questioned their power which was sufficiently understood—This very Beverley (that complained) had a sight of as much as concerned his delivery of the records before they had them—Did not think it necessary to record an executed Commission in an Inferior Court—This order was made by the House of Burgesses and not by both Houses so he will see how unfit Appeals in causes lye to them from the Governor & Council that make the other house.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

Oct 29 [1678]

COL. FRANCIS MORYSON TO [WM. BLATHWAYT]—Has sent the Commission the Commiss[rs] acted upon in Virginia that the Lords may be informed the records and other papers were commanded by virtue of their Commission and not by force as the Order of Assembly imports (see 23 Oct. 1677). That Beverley had a sight of said Commission before he delivered the records.

Replies to other points in reference to said Order.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

Whitehall, Oct. 30, 1678

ORDER OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL ON REPRESENTATION OF THE ASSEMBLY OF VIRGINIA TO GOV. JEFFRYES setting forth that his Maj. Commissioners had forced from the Clerk of the Assembly all their original journals, acts and other public papers which they took as a great violation of their privileges and desired that they might be assured no such violation should be offered for the future, his Maj. taking notice of the great presumption of said Assembly in calling in question his authority derived to his said Commissioners refers the consideration thereof to the Lords of Trade and Plantations for their report what they think fit to be done in vindication of his Maj. authority and for bringing said Assembly to a due sense and acknowledgment of their duty and submission towards his Maj. and such as are commissionated by him—also to prepare a Scheme

of Laws & Orders to be transmitted to said Colony of Virginia.
(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

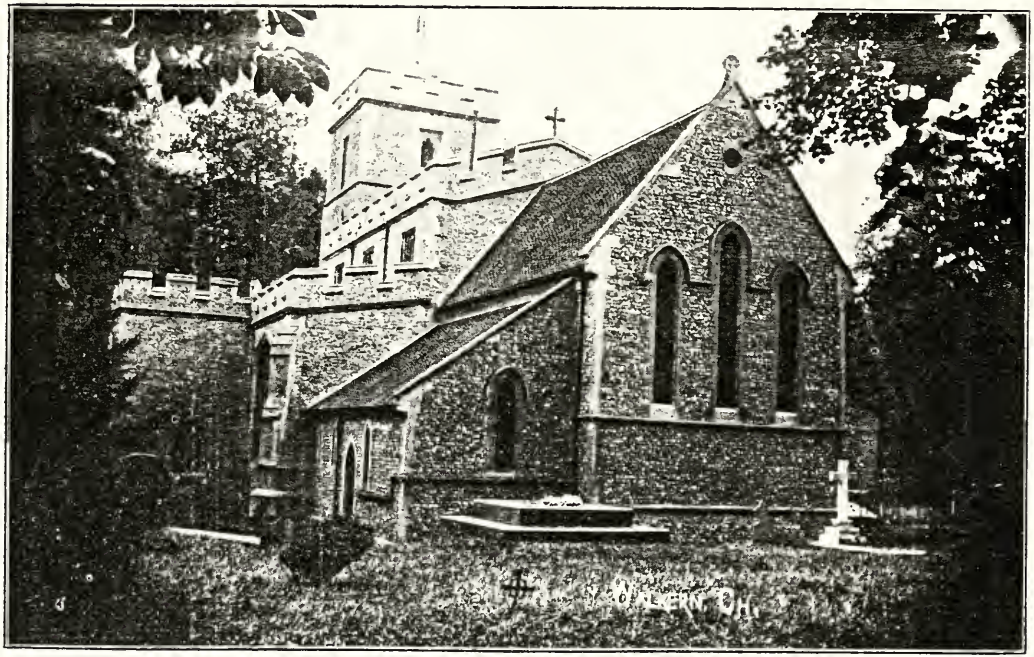
Dec 13, [1678]

Col. Francis Moryson to [Wm. Blathwayt]. Has advice that Col. Rowland Place is lately arrived from Virginia—He is the gentlemen Gov. Jeffreys mentions as able to give a true information of all transactions in Virginia since the Commiss^rs coming away [see letter of 10 July 1678]—He is one of the Council and a very honest Gentleman—Conceives it necessary for the King's service to have a true prospect into the affairs there before Lord Culpeper goes—Wishes him to defer giving in the papers—the Queen [of Pamunkey]'s letter & complaint—the Governor's deposition concerning the denial of his Maj. letter in the case of Bird, and the Interpreter's letter.
(Colonial Papers. 1. p.)

Dec 12, 1678

Minutes of a Committee for Trade and Plantations—Proposals received from Lord Culpeper in reference to the Governor of Virginia (read on 14 Dec.) "in pursuance of his Maj. commands" with marginal notes—Some of the Articles are "agreed" (see Orders of 14 and 20 Dec. 1678.)—These heads were delivered in Jan'y 1677(-8) to Secretary Coventry and read at the Committee of Foreign affairs in May last, but by reason of my Lord Treasurer's absence, nothingdone—But on the 11th August after a full debate upon every one, it was resolved as in the margin and so set down by Mr Secretary Some lesser points were then also agreed to.
(Colonial Papers.)
Another Copy is entered in Col. Entry Bk. No. 80. pp. 258-263.

(To be Continued)



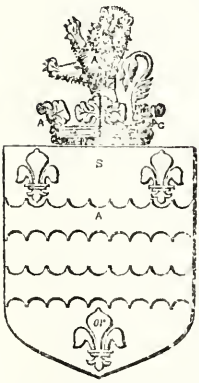
WALKERN CHURCH, HERTFORDSHIRE, ENGLAND

GENEALOGY.

The Gorsuch and Lovelace Families.

(By J. H. P., Baltimore, Md.)

Gorsuch.



A brief but very interesting sketch of the Lovelace and Gorsuch families, representatives of which were early settlers in Virginia, Maryland and New York, contributed by the editor, appeared in The Virginia Magazine in 1909 (Vol. XVII-p. 288-293). The editor also presented new evidence identifying Francis Lovelace, the early colonial governor of New York (1668-1673), as a brother of Richard Lovelace, the poet, of the Bethersden family of Lovelace, and disproving the usually accepted statement that he was of the Hurley branch of the Lovelace family and a son of John Lovelace, Baron Lovelace, of Hurley. Accompanying this sketch there was published a chart pedigree of the Lovelace and Gorsuch families showing connections by descent or marriage with the families of Sandys, Gilbert, Raleigh, Barne, Digges, Wyatt and with other noted families whose names are intimately associated with the early efforts to colonize Virginia.

Since the publication of this sketch in The Virginia Magazine several years ago, the present writer has secured a great deal of data in regard to the Lovelace and Gorsuch families which was not accessible to the editor at the time the sketch just referred to was written, which corroborates the evidence then produced as regards the identity of Governor Lovelace, and also gives much additional information in regard to the early Lovelace and Gorsuch settlers in the new world, and their English ancestors. Photographs recently secured of several members of these families as well as of places of interest with which their names are associated, also seem of sufficient interest to warrant publication.

The few errors which have been detected in the sketch just referred to are due to the fact that some of the evidence in the hands of the editor was meagre and therefore misleading, or due to clerical errors in copying

the original records. Attention will be directed to any statements which additional evidence or a reexamination of the original records, has shown to be incorrect. While the reader is referred to the sketch itself for the evidence which is there presented in full, it will be well to summarize here the main points of the evidence as presented, which have an important bearing upon the subject. (1) The Gorsuch pedigree in the Visitation of London, 1633. (2) Daniel Gorsuch's will, 1638. (3) Petition of Richard, Robert and Charles Gorsuch, sons of John Gorsuch, to the Lancaster, Va. court, April 1, 1657, for the appointment of their sister, Katherine *Whitty** as guardian. (4) Confirmation by Charles Gorsuch of the title to land in Maryland granted to his brother, Lovelace Gorsuch, in 1661. (5) A letter from Governor Francis Lovelace of New York to Governor Berkeley of Virginia, December 6, 1669, requesting the latter's interest in behalf of Will Whitbey, a son of Lovelace's niece, Mrs. *Ruth*† Gorsuch. (6) Deed of gift of Anna Todd of Maryland mentioning her brother Charles Gorsuch, 1676. (7) Marriage certificate of Charles Gorsuch, 1690-1, giving his parentage. (8) Will of William Whitby, Jr., 1676, of Middlesex County, Va.

Based upon the above evidence, the editor in his sketch stated that the first mention of the Gorsuch family in Virginia ocuerred in the petition of 1657 to the court of Lancaster County, Va., by Richard, Robert and Charles Gorsuch, "sons and coheirs of John Gorsuch, P'fessor in Divinity," that their sister Katherine *Whitty* might be appointed their guardian for their English interests, and that Francis Moryson (afterwards governor of Virginia) guardian for their Virginia estate.

Attention was also called to the fact that these three brothers soon afterwards moved to Maryland, where their names thereafter appeared upon the records of that colony, and further that in 1669 title to certain lands in Maryland,granted to another brother, Lovelace Gorsuch in 1661, was confirmed by Charles and Lovelace Gorsuch. It was also noted that January 13, 1676-7 Mrs. Anna Todd, widow of Thomas Todd, of Baltimore County, made her brother Charles Gorsuch her attorney to transfer certain lands to her children. Still further corroboration of the Gorsuch pedigree was noted by him in the certificate of marriage of Charles Gorsuch dated 1690-1 to Anne Hawkins, recorded in the West River, Md. Quaker Meeting records in which it is stated that Charles was theson of John and Anne Gorsuch, of the Kingdom of England, deceased. The above evidence from the colonial records cited by him, led the editor to the conclusion that John and Anne Gorsuch had four sons, Richard, Robert, Charles and Lovelace, and three daughters, Katherine Whitty, Ruth Whitby and Anne Todd. Attention was further directed to

*As will be shown later, the correct reading of this name in the Lancaster records is *Whitby* not *Whitty*.

†The reading *Ruth* Gorsuch is also an error in copying. The correct reading in the original is *Kath* Gorsuch. In modern terms she would have been "Miss Kath Gorsuch."

the fact that the Gorsuch pedigree in the Visitation of London, 1633, showed that the Rev. John Gorsuch, rector of Walkern, married Anne Lovelace, sister of the poet Richard Lovelace and daughter of Sir William Lovelace of Bethersden, Kent, and that in addition to the above, they had three older sons, Daniel, John and William.

Recent researches by the writer in England and Maryland have added very considerably to our knowledge of the Gorsuch and Lovelace families and their connections, and would seem to be of sufficient interest to justify rewriting the Gorsuch pedigree with the new evidence upon which the corrected pedigree is based, and also presenting a sketch of the Lovelace family. Some of this new material has been obtained from English wills and parish register records hitherto unpublished. Additional light has also been thrown upon the subject by an examination of certain more or less inaccessible printed publications. The Maryland records have furnished much new information in regard to the Gorsuch family, while the unpublished and recently published colonial records of New York have cleared up many uncertain questions in regard to several members of the Lovelace family. From the latter sources every doubt in regard to the identity of Francis Lovelace, Governor of New York, has been settled, so that it now is possible to give a more or less accurate sketch of his life and to clear up the confusion which has so long existed in distinguishing between him and Francis Lovelace of Hurley. The photographs of the portraits and places of interest, so far as is known, have never been previously published. Incidentally, in following the fortunes of the various members of the Gorsuch family in their migration from Virginia to Maryland, a fact of very great interest to students of Maryland history has been established. This is that the first actual settlement along the shores of the Patapsco, where the City of Baltimore now stands and in its immediate neighborhood, was made about 1659 by a group of settlers from Lancaster, County, Va. All the evidence points to the fact that many if not all of these settlers, were recent converts to Quakerism, and that they left Virginia on account of religious persecution, just as a decade before the Virginia Puritans had sought refuge in Maryland and settled Providence, or as it was afterwards called Annapolis, and the neighboring parts of Anne Arundel County.

Gorsuch Pedigree

In the Visitation of London 1633-5 (Harleian Society; Visitations Vol. XV-p. 327) there is to be found the pedigree of the Gorsuch family of Bishopsgate Ward, London, recorded in 1633 by Daniel Gorsuch of London, father of the Rev. John Gorsuch, who married Anne Lovelace. An illustration and description of the Gorsuch arms accompanies the pedigree.

I. "William Gorsuch of London, Marchant, descended out of Lancashire nigh Ormchurch." Married "Avice da. of - - - Hillson, brothers daughter to Robert Hillson of London, Marchant." Issue.

II. "Danyell Gorsuch of London, Marchant, late Alderman's deputy of Bishopsgate Ward living 1633." An illustration of the arms as borne by Danyell Gorsuch (see illustration) is given and the statement is made that they were by "Letters pattents dated 1577 granted to Robert Hillson of London marchant by Clar. Cooke and continued to the descendants of Gorsuch to bear as their paternal coate." Danyell Gorsuch is stated to have married "Alice da of John Hall of London, marchant sometimes one of the Bridge Maisters." Issue, 1 son and 1 daughter.

III. (1)"John Gorsuch, Rector of Walkhorne in Hertford, 1633." Married "Anne da of Sir William Louelace of Kent, Kt., etc." and (2) "Katherin, wife of Thomas Haynes of Auborne Wiltshire." John and Anne (Lovelace) Gorsuch had issue living 1633, 3 sons and 1 daughter.

IV. "Danyell Gorsuch aged about 4 yere ao 1633, John, William, Catherine."

No effort has been made by the writer to trace back the Gorsuch family beyond William of Ormskirk (Ormchurch), Lancashire, but confirmation of the Visitation pedigree and much additional data has been obtained from independent sources. The will of Daniel Gorsuch, the father of the Rev. John Gorsuch, has previously been published among Mr. Lathrop Withington's Virginia Gleanings in England in The Virginia Magazine (Vol. XVII, p. 302-303). The will is quite lengthy and the reader is referred to the Magazine for its full details. Only a few points having a genealogical interest need be again referred to here. In this will dated October 6th, 1638 and proved November 24. 1638 in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Daniel Gorsuch is described as of Walkerne, county Hertford, gent. late citizen and mercer of London. He refers to his wife Alice and to "Mother Hall, deceased." He mentions his son John and the latter's wife Anne, and leaves to him sundry tracts of land, rents, leases, etc., as well as horses and cattle about the parsonage grounds. He leaves to his grandson John, son of his son John, certain freeholds in Weston and settles certain other lands in Weston upon his son John's five other children, Daniell, William, Katherine, Robert and Richard, and upon any other children who may be born to his son John. He also makes a bequest of £500 to his daughter Katherine Haynes and leaves to her husband Thomas Haynes £20 for mourning. To his daughter Ann Gorsuch (wife of John) he leaves £20. To his *godson* Daniel Haynes he leaves £5. Reference is made to his brother-in-law Johnathan Browne, Doctor of Civil Laws, his brother Richard Beresford, his cosen Margaret Browne, his cosen Barnard, and his cosen Edward Gorsuch in Lans. To William Gorsuch he leaves his gold ring with W. G. engraved in it. This will of Daniell Gorsuch is thus seen to confirm the Visitation pedigree and moreover shows that there were two other children of his son, John, viz. Robert and Richard, born between the date of the Visitation (1633) and the date of the will (October 6, 1638). The Visitation shows that "my *godson* Daniel Haynes" of the will was in reality his *grandson.* His brother-in-law Johnathan Browne, Doctor of Civil Laws, will be

shown later to be the second husband of Anne Barne who, by her first husband, Sir William Lovelace, was the mother of Anne Lovelace, who had married the testator's son, John Gorsuch. The exact relationship of the other persons mentioned in the will has not been determined.

An examination of the parish register of Ormskirk published by the Lancashire Parish Register Society (Vol. XIII) shows numerous entries under the name Gorsutch in the 16th and 17th centuries, although none can be directly identified as of the immediate family of the Rev. John Gorsuch, his father or grandfather, although Edw. Gorsuch, whose son Edw. was buried July 1, 1611, may be "cosen Edward Gorsuch in Lans." mentioned in the will.

The will of Alice Gorsuch, widow of the above mentioned Daniel Gorsuch, which the writer has recently been fortunate enough to locate and to secure an abstract of, throws additional light upon the family. Alice Gorsuch outlived her husband twenty-five years. Her will dated July 7, 1662, was proved February 3, 1662-3 in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury.

Abstract of the will of Alice Gorsuch of Weston, co. Hertford, spinster, dated 7 July, 1662. (Prerogative Court of Canterbury—Juxon. 17)

I give to my grandson Robert Gorsuch, £20——————————
To my grandson Richard Gorsuch, £10——————————
To my granddaughter Elizabeth Powell, £10——————————
To my grandsons Charles and Lovelace Gorsuch, £10 apiece, all these being children of my son John Gorsuch, D. D.

My lease for about five years yet to come, of about £52 a year in the parish of St. Olave, Southwark, payable by Frances Wilkinsonne and Richard Daniell, shall be divided equally among six of my grandchildren, viz. Johanna and Frances Gorsuch, daughters of my said son John, Ann Gorsuch, daughter of my grandson Daniell Gorsuch, John Gorsuch, son of my grandson William Gorsuch, and William and Elizabeth Whittby, son and daughter of my granddaughter Katherine Whittby.

All the rest of my goods, leases, lands, etc. I give to my grandson Daniell Gorsuch, gent., whom I make my executor.

(signed) Alice Gorsuch

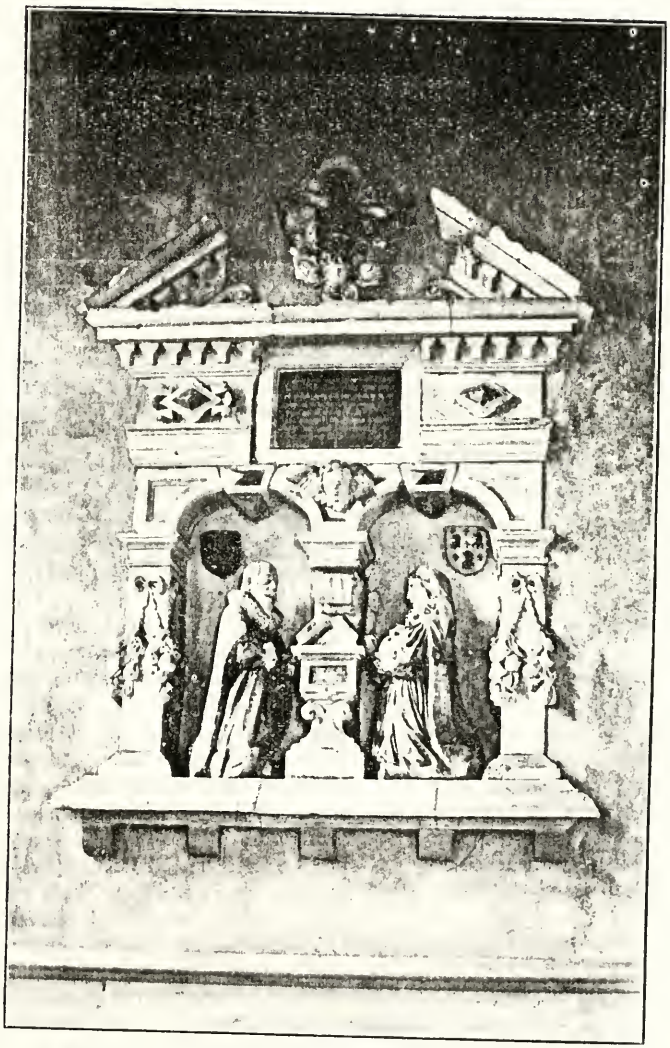
Witnesses: Edmund Hinde, Dorothy Caesar, John Crouch
Proved 3 February 1662 (-3) by the executor named

The will shows that the widow at the time of her death was living in Weston, a parish which adjoins Walkern, where her husband also owned property. Mention is made of five grandchildren described as the children of her son John Gorsuch, viz. Elizabeth Powell, Charles Gorsuch, Lovelace Gorsuch, Johanna Gorsuch and Frances Gorsuch, who were not mentioned in her husband's will and who therefore evidently were born after the latter's death in 1638, while the will shows that of the older children of her son John at least three, viz. Daniel, Robert and Richard

Gorsuch were still living. The will leaves us uncertain as to whether two other of her son John's older children viz. William Gorsuch and Katherine Whittby, to whose children, however, bequests are made by name, were still living. The term "spinster" as applied to the testatrix in the probate was in common use, especially in Essex and thereabouts even down to the early part of the 18th century, as the equivalent of gentlewoman, whether married or single.

Cussan's History of Hertfordshire (Vol. II, Hundred of Broadwater, p. 72-85), in a description of Walkern gives an interesting account of Daniel Gorsuch and his son John Gorsuch, who became rector of this parish. It appears that the living was at the disposal of the owner of the rectory. After tracing the various owners through several centuries it is stated that the rectory was "Purchased November 30, 1616, by Edward Beale of London, grocer, who sold it to Daniel Gorsuch of London, merchant, who presented his son John Gorsuch D. D. as rector, July 28, 1632, and built a new rectory for him." In the chancel of the Walkern Church there is a handsome marble monument erected by Daniel Gorsuch to his own memory and to that of his wife. The name Gorsuch incised upon the monument is said to have been mutilated. This may possibly have been done by some of the Puritan enemies of the rector during the Civil Wars. Cussan, after commenting upon the error in the inscription gives its reading as follows: "Daniel Gorsnor Citizen & Mercer Of London In Ye Month of July 1638 Cavsed Ys Tombe To Be Made For Himself & His Wife Alice By Whom He Had Three Children Iohn Katherine & Mary His Age Being Yn 69 Years 6 Monthes And Odd Dayes, Who Died The Eighth Daye Of October Ao DO 1638." Cussan in describing the monument says that it shows the arms of Gorsuch impaled with the arms of Hall. The writer has been fortunate in securing a photograph of this monument. Cussan states that in the east window of the Church there are four shields. One shield is charged viz. Sable; two Bars engrailed between three Fleur-de-lys, or; Crest; Issuant from a Ducal coronet a Lion rampant or, for Gorsuch. Another shield is charged with the arms of The Mercers Company of which Daniel Gorsuch was a member. The arms of Hall as impaled with Gorsuch on the monument are described viz. Argent; seme of Crosses—crosslet gules, three Griffins heads erased sable. The Bishop's Transcripts of the Parish Register of Walkern contain the entry that "Danyell Gorsuch of London, merchant (was) buried Oct. 1638." The monumental inscription shows that in addition to John and Katherine there was a daughter Mary who apparently died young, as her name does not appear in the Visitation among the children of Daniel and Alice Gorsuch, nor is she mentioned in either her father's or mother's will.

An effort to obtain additional information in reference to the Gorsuch family from the Parish Register of Walkern disclosed the fact that the Register itself prior to 1680 was missing. Through the assistance of the Registrar of the Lincoln Diocesan Registry, the writer was recently able



TOMB OF DANIEL AND ALICE (HALL) GORSUCH
SOUTH SIDE OF CHANCEL OF WALKERN CHURCH,
ABOVE THE SEDILIA

to locate the "Bishop's Transcripts" of the Walkern Parish Register, for a portion of the period which it was important to cover. For some unexplained reason these Transcripts are not deposited in the Diocesan Register, but from 1609 to 1813 with breaks from 1642-1660, and a few others of shorter period, are now in the possession of Mr. W. O. Times of Hawkins & Co., Hitchen, Hertfordshire. Mr. Times has kindly made copies of the 17th century Gorsuch entries up to the break of 1642.

Gorsuch Entries—Bishop's Transcripts of the Walkern Herts Register

1632 July 28—John Gorsuch, Rector of Walkern, instituted.
1633 November 26—Katheren Gorsuch, daughter of John, baptised.
1635 November 19—Robert Gorsuch son of John and Anne his wife, baptised.
1637 April 19—Richard Gorsuch son of John and Anne his wife, baptised.
1638 October 16—Danyell Gorsuch, London, merchant, buried.
1638-9 March 13—Anna Gorsuch daughter of John and Anne his wife, baptised.
1641 May 13—Elisabeth Gorsuch, daughter of John and Anne, baptised.
1642 August 25—Charles Gorsuch, son of John and Anne, baptised.
1642—John Gorsuch, rector of Walkern, ejected.

Among the *marriages* for 1639 is entered—1639-40 March 15-Anna Gorsuch, daughter of John and Anna Gorsuch, baptised.

The Bishop's Transcripts are intact for the entire period of the Rev. John Gorsuch's incumbency at Walkern. The Visitation (1633) fortunately gives a list of the children born prior to the period covered by the Walkern Transcripts (1632-1642). Daniel Gorsuch's will confirms the Visitation and the Transcripts down to 1638, while from Alice Gorsuch's will (1662) we are able to supply the names of several children born after the eviction from Walkern, and are thus from various sources enabled to construct what is probably a complete list of the children of John and Anne Gorsuch. The only point of uncertainty is whether Johanna Gorsuch mentioned in Alice Gorsuch's will is identical with Anna of the Walkern Register or whether there were two daughters Anna and Johanna.

The Rev. John Gorsuch appears to have been an aggressive Royalist. In Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, 1714 (part ii, page 251) there is an account of the charges filed against John Gorsuch D. D. rector of Walkherne by the parliamentary party. As an example of the unrestrained rancour of the times and as typical of the trumped up charges under which hundreds of inoffensive clergymen of the established church were persecuted and deprived of their livings, the charges are of sufficient interest to publish, although some of the phrases employed are too coarse to reprint. The date here given is obviously incorrect and should read

1642 instead of 1652. The account in part is as follows: "In 1652. He was the son of Daniel Gorsuch, of London, Mercer. The Charge against him was the Hackney one of Drunkenness. as also Gaming. seldom appearing in the pulpit, and observing the Orders of the Church. But that which carrieth the greatest Vonom in it is that he had 'Endeavored to hire one Jones to ride a Troop-Horse for Prince Rupert, to serve under him against the Parliament, ----------, and had published a wicked Libel against the Parliament, that some of the Lords who he named were Fools, Bastards and Cuckolds. And if this be not enough to make him Scandalous and Malignant, I know not what is.' He had been presented to the Living by his Father; who if I mistake not had also built a new Parsonage-House from the Ground, before he gave his son a Living." Cussan's History of Hertfordshire (idem) throws additional light upon John Gorsuch's eviction. It quotes the following order under date of October 26, 1647 contained in the Accounts of Plundered Ministers (Add. Mss. 15671, fol. 253 Brit. Mus.) "Upon Complaint made by Mr. Nath: Ward to whom ye Rectorie of Walkerne in ye County of Harford is sequestered that Doctor Gorsuch from whom ye same is sequestered hath in comtempt of the sd. Sequestracon taken awaie by force & detained from ye said Mr. Ward the corne of the gleab of good value to the great p'iudice of the said Mr. Ward. It is therefore ordered that the wife of the said Doctor Gorsuch doe shew cause before this Comittee on the 18th day of November next whereof shee the said Mrs. Gorsuch should not bee debarred of the 20 li a years granted her in lieu of the 5th pt. for ye saide wronge & contempt & in case the said Mr. Ward shall forbeare paymt of the said 20 li a yeare unto her in the mean tyme. It is ordered that the said detainer shall not be accompted a contempt of the said order of this Comittee." Cussan adds that the Commissioners appointed by Parliament in 1650 reported that the Walkern rectory was a "Rectory presentative of the value of £160 and then held by Mr. Simon Smeath." It is also stated by Cussan that there is a note made about 1740 by the Revd. Thomas Tipping, Vicar of Ardeley in a copy of Chauncy's Historical Antiquities of Hertfordshire which reads: "Dr. Gorsuch was smothered in a Haymow. Fairclough of Weston acting Rascall under Manchester, set a body of rebels to Seize and eject Gorsuch for Smeath, Vicar of Weston. Gorsuch betook himself to ye Haymow & there lost his life. *He left a very good name.*" It seems possible that Gorsuch dissatisfied with this meagre allowance lost his life about 1647 in attempting to assert his legal rights, if the story related by the Vicar of Ardley is really authentic. On the other hand it is just possible that the story of his death was fabricated to facilitate his escape, although certainly there is no authentic record of him either in England or Virginia after this time. It is an interesting fact that Smeath for whom he was ejected and who then became rector of Walkern, was the vicar of Weston, the parish adjoining Walkern. The Gorsuch family also owned property in Weston and lived

there after the eviction and prior to their emigration to Virginia. It is to be noted that the Vicar of Ardley bears witness as to John Gorsuch's good name, while as regards the motive for the charges made against him we need not go further for an explanation than the desire of Smeath, vicar of the adjoining parish of Weston to obtain the more lucrative living at Walkern and its new parsonage. An able assistant was found in "Fairclough of Weston, acting Rascall under Manchester" who seems to have brought to fruition the ambitions of the vicar of Weston.

The Gorsuch family next reappear in Virginia. The Virginia Land Office records show that a patent was issued February 22, 1652 to Theo. Hoane for 720 acres of land on the north side of the Rappahannock River, for the transportation of fifteen persons into this colony. The names of Elizabeth, Charles, Lovelace and Kath: Gorsuch head the list of "rights." The fact that the patent to Theo. Hoane was issued at this date does not mean that the individuals for whose transportation he received his land, may not have been brought over by him some time previously. The Virginia records do not show when or how Anne Gorsuch the mother or her children Robert, Richard and Anna came to the colony. It seems probable that they were the first to arrive and were followed later by the three younger children, Elizabeth, Charles and Lovelace under the charge of their oldest sister Katherine. That their mother had probably come to Virginia as early as 1651 is shown by the administration granted upon her estate in England recently discovered by the writer. "Letters of administration issued 2 June 1652 to Daniel Gorsuch son of Anne Gorsuch, late of Weston Co. Hertford. but deceased in parts beyond the seas, widow" (Prerogative Court Canterbury; Admons. 1652). While this shows almost conclusively that Anne, the widow of John Gorsuch, died either in Virginia or at sea. it does not support the supposition by Bruce (Institutional History of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century, Vol. I, p. 179) and others, that her husband ever lived in Virginia. This assumption would appear to be based entirely upon the petitions of 1657 to the Lancaster County, Virginia, court for the appointment of guardians for some of the children of "John Gorsuch, professor in Divinity, dec'd." Even if the story of John Gorsuch's death by suffocation in the hay mow sometime about the year 1647, be regarded with suspicion, this administration upon Anne Gorsuch's estate shows that she was a widow as early as 1652. The explanation for the emigration of the widow Gorsuch and her younger children to Virginia is probably to be found in her brother Colonel Francis Lovelace's association with that colony. It will be recalled that in 1652 Francis Lovelace, who was then in Virginia, was entrusted by Berkeley, with the consent of the Parliamentary commission, to carry to Charles the Second the news of the surrender to the representatives of the Parliament of this colony (vid. Francis Lovelace). The numerous connections between the Lovelace family and various persons prominent in the early settlement of Virginia have already been shown by the editor in the chart pedigree which accompanied the sketch

of the family in this Magazine, and seem sufficient to explain why Anne Gorsuch selected Virginia as the place where her younger children should cast their fortunes.

The Rev. John Gorsuch married Anne Lovelace, the daughter of Sir William Lovelace, Knight, of Bethersden, Kent, and his wife Anne Barne. She was the sister of Richard Lovelace, the poet and cavalier, and of Col. Francis Lovelace, Governor of New York. This marriage is proven not only by the Gorsuch pedigree in the Visitation of London already referred to, but is confirmed by the will of her mother "Dame Anne Lovelace," in 1632, which makes mention of "Anne Gorsage, my daughter," to whom she bequeaths "my third suit of diaper which I made in the Low Countries," and also refers to "Daniell Gorsage and his wife and my son Gorsage." Under the will of her father, Sir William Lovelace, dated 1622, his daughter Anne Lovelace was left by him "all my stock and adventures in the East India Company with all the profits thereon to be paid her at the age of twenty-one or marriage." Full abstracts of these wills will appear later in an account of the Lovelace family. The exact date of Anne (Lovelace) Gorsuch's birth is not known, but as her eldest son was born in 1628 or 1629, it would appear that she was married not later than 1628. She was probably born about 1610. She died, as has been stated, early in 1652 "in parts beyond the seas," doubtless in Virginia.

The additional information which has come to light since the sketch of the family by the editor, which appeared a few years ago in the Magazine, was written, requires the correction of a few minor errors found there as regards some of the children of John and Anne Gorsuch. In the sketch there was published in full (page 288) a letter dated December 6, 1669, from Francis Lovelace, then Governor of New York, to Governor Berkeley of Virginia, in which Lovelace refers to the appointment of "Mr. Tho. Todd of Mockjack bay—Guardian to the will Whitbey's son by my niece Mrs. *Ruth* Gorsuch." As no reference to a daughter of John and Anne Gorsuch named *Ruth* has ever been found elsewhere, and as it is definitely known from the will of John Gorsuch's mother, Alice Gorsuch, that the eldest daughter Katherine married a man named Whittby and had by him two children, William and Elizabeth, it has seemed advisable to have the contemporary copy of the letter in question now in the Congressional Library among the "Virginia Miscellaneous" of the Thomas Jefferson Collection, reexamined to determine whether an error had not been made in deciphering or copying the name in question. A tracing of the name kindly made by one of the Library staff, very recently obtained for me by the editor of the Magazine, who has assisted me in every way in his power to straighten out these matters, shows that the proper reading is *Kath* Gorsuch, which makes the entire matter perfectly clear, thus corroborating the will and establishing the fact that Katherine Gorsuch married William Whitby, and that there was no daughter named *Ruth* Gorsuch. An error which has also occurred in transcribing

the Lancaster records, previously referred to in a footnote, by which the name Katherine *Whitby* is erroneously made to read Katherine *Whitty*, and which gave rise to an erroneous conclusion that one of the Gorsuch sisters married a Whitty and another sister a Whitby, would seem to make it advisable to publish here in full the petitions and orders of the Lancaster Court as very recently transcribed for the present writer.—April 1st, 1657, At this Court personally appearing Richard, Robert & Charles Gorsuch, sonnes & Coheirs of John Gorsuch, professor of Divinity, dec'd, did by their petition presented to this Court noiate (?) that their sister Katheryn Whitby, widd. their guardian for such estate as doth any ways belong to them in Englande. The Court taking the question into consideration did accordingly admitt & approve of the s'd Katheryn guardian according to the request of petitioners. At this Court personally appearing Richard, Robert & Charles Gorsuch sonnes & Coheirs of John Gorsuch, professor in Divinity, dec'd, did by their petition presented to this court noiate (?) that Francis Morrison Esqr their guardian for such estate as doth any ways belong to them in Virginia, craving this court to admit thereof, of such request this Court taking consideration did admitt & approve of the s'd Coll. Francis Morrison according to the request of the petitioners. (Lancaster County Records Vol. 1656-LXVI p. 7).

A brief statement of certain facts known in regard to the twelve children of John and Anne (Lovelace) Gorsuch, before considering each child separately in detail, will be of interest. Of these the eldest son Daniel and the third son William remained in England. Nothing is really known in regard to the second son John or in regard to Francis, who appears to have been the youngest son; possibly neither of them reached maturity. Nor is anything certainly known in regard to Johanna other than a mere reference to her in her grandmother's will. As already stated, it seems possible that this name is merely a variation of Anna, whose history is known. If so, the number of children is reduced to eleven. Seven of the younger children, viz. Katherine, Robert, Richard, Anna, Elizabeth, Charles and Lovelace, came to Virginia about 1652 or thereabouts, settling in Lancaster County, Katherine marrying in Virginia and afterwards apparently returning to England, the other six removing to Maryland about 1659 or within a few years later, settling on the north side of the Patapsco river at or near where the city of Baltimore now stands. Anna, whose husband Captain Thomas Todd of Gloucester County, Virginia, was a settler on the Patapsco a few years later, and Katherine, who appears to have married Howell Powell, a member of a family which patented lands on the Patapsco River at the same time as the Gorsuch brothers, seem to have both married before leaving Virginia. Charles Gorsuch and Thomas Todd and his wife Anna remained as permanent settlers on the Patapsco. Richard and Lovelace Gorsuch and the Powells, after remaining in Baltimore County for a few years, later moved to Talbot County on the Eastern Shore,

with which section they were afterwards identified. Robert Gorsuch returned to England a few years after coming to Maryland, and does not reappear in the colonies. Several of the Gorsuch brothers and sisters who came to Maryland were Quakers. Whether they became converted to Quakerism in Virginia and emigrated to Maryland on account of the repressive measures exerted against this sect in Virginia at this time, cannot be certainly determined, but seems very probable. It is certain that Charles and Lovelace Gorsuch were Quakers, as their names figure conspicuously in the Maryland Quaker records. The same may be said of the Powell family. Nothing certain has been learned of the religious affiliations of Richard or Robert Gorsuch, although a deed from Richard Gorsuch to Thomas Powell dated "the 12th day of the 11th month called February" has a distinct Quaker flavor. There is nothing to suggest that Thomas Todd or his wife were Quakers.

The record of the establishment of this little colony stretched along the north shore of the Patapsco and made up of various members of the Gorsuch family would appear to begin with an entry in the Maryland Land Office records which reads "July 16, 1659, Warrants granted the undersigned conditionally that they enter Rights and seat their land between this and the 25th of March next: Thomas Powell 700 acres; Walter Dickinson 600 acres; Robert Gorsuch 300 acres; Richard Gorsuch 300 acres; Howell Powell 300 acres; William Ball 500 acres; William Clapman jur. 500 acres; Richard Ball 500 acres; Thos. Humphry 600 acres; Hugh Kensey 400 acres (Md. Patents Vol. IV, fol. 51). Most of these names occur soon after in the Quaker records of the province, so that it seems quite probable that they were a little group of Quaker colonists who had come up from Virginia to take up the recently opened lands on the Patapsco in Baltimore County, which appears to have been erected into a county this same year. The Gorsuches, Powells, Claphams, Dickensons, Balls, Kinseys (Kenseys) and Humphreys are known to have come from Lancaster County, while the Todds, who came a year or two later, were from Gloucester. That the conditions in regard to entering their rights and seating their lands were complied with by the warrantees, is shown by the subsequent entries in the records of the Land Office of certificates of survey, and finally by the issuance of patents to all whose names appear in the warrant of 1659. July 28, 1659 a tract of 500 acres called "Gorsuch" was surveyed for Robert Gorsuch, planter, on the north side of the Patapsco river "respecting" (i. e. opposite) the land of Hugh Kensey on the south side of the river (Md. Patents, Vol. IV, fol. 228), and a patent issued February 13, 1659-60 (Idem. fol. 322). July 29, 1659 a tract called "Richardson" of 500 acres was surveyed for Richard Gorsuch, planter, on the north side of the Patapsco east of Welshman's Creek, and the patent issued February 14, 1659-60 (Idem. fol. 234 & 311). Thomas Powell and Richard Gorsuch May 13, 1661 entered rights for transporting various members of the Powell and Gorsuch families into Maryland (Idem. fol. 551). As will be shown later the Powells were from Corotoman River, Lancaster County (see Elizabeth Gorsuch). Lovelace Gorsuch, August 1, 1661, had surveyed for him "Cold Comfort" 50

acres on the north side of the middle branch of the Patapsco (Idem. Vol. V, fol. 18). Charles Gorsuch, August 3, 1661 had surveyed for him "Whetstone Point" 50 acres, comprising that part of the present city of Baltimore now occupied in part by Fort McHenry. Among the others who received lands on the Patapsco under the warrant of July 16, 1659, William (Clapman) Clapham, Jur. is referred to a few years later in a power of attorney from Thomas Todd, dated 1670, empowering Todd to transfer lands which Clapham had taken up in Baltimore County, as "William Clapham of Lancaster County, Va." (Baltimore Deeds I. R.:P. P. fol. 88). William Ball and Richard Ball, each of whom received warrants for 500 acres of land under the warrant of 1659 and became settlers on the Patapsco, have been shown by Dr. Christopher Johnston to be the sons of Colonel William Ball, of Lancaster County, the progenitor of the distinguished Virginia family of that name (Virginia Mag. Vol. VII p. 440 and Vol. VIII p. 80). Hugh Kinsey and Thomas Humphrey have been shown by Mr. Miles White, in his Ancestry of Johns Hopkins, to have also come from Lancaster County (Publications Southern Historical Association, Vols. IV, p. 395 and V, p. 360). Walter Dickenson, another one of the warrantees who patented land on the Patapsco is without doubt the individual of the same name who appears in 1654 among the tithables of Lancaster County (Va. Mag. Vol. V, p. 158 *et seq.*) It seems highly probable that an investigation of the headrights which these settlers from Lancaster brought into the province, would show that very many of these were also from Lancaster.

That a very considerable proportion of the early settlers in Maryland drifted up the Chesapeake from Virginia, has always been known. While lands along the Patapsco had been patented by a few prominent residents of Anne Arundel County as early as 1651, is also well known, but as Mr. C. W. Bump has shown, all the evidence points to the fact that these men were merely speculating in lands and did not become bona fide settlers on the Patapsco (Md. Hist. Mag. Vol. III, p. 51-60). In fact no patents upon the Patapsco appear to have been issued between 1651 and the date of the issuance of the above mentioned warrant of July 16, 1659. That the actual settlement of the Patapsco and the foundation of what afterwards became Baltimore City dates from the latter year has always been generally recognized. It is interesting to find however, that many if not all of these first acual settlers were probably a group of friends who came up together from Lancaster County and that the probable motive of their migration was religious persecution, as most of them are known to have been Quakers, and it was at this time that Virginia began to put into full effect the various repressive measures against the numerous recent converts to this sect, in order to drive them out of that colony.

To the very numerous descendants of certain of the children of the Rev. John Gorsuch and his wife Anne Lovelace living in Virginia and Maryland and elsewhere throughout the country, some account of these children and their descendants to the fourth generation, where it has been possible to trace them, will doubtless be of interest.

(To be Continued)

The Ancestors and Descendants of John Rolfe with Notes of Some Connected Families.

The Fleming Family.

(Continued)

9. John[3] Fleming; b. ——; d. April 21, 1767, in Cumberland County; m. ——; Susanna ——.

John Fleming lived in Cumberland, doubtless at "Maiden's Adventure" which had been left him by his father. He was a lawyer, and soon obtained note at the bar, and an extensive practice. His fee book, covering the period 1754-1766, has been preserved, and shows the extent of his practice. In 1756, he was elected a member of the House of Burgesses for Cumberland, and represented that county continuously for eleven years, until his death in 1767 (*Journals of the House of Burgesses*). When the political troubles with England began, he sided with the advanced adherents of colonial rights, and became the warm friend of Patrick Henry, and a supporter of the measures he advocated. Wirt and Henry, in their lives of Henry, state that John Fleming of Cumberland, and George Johnston of Fairfax, were the only members to whom Patrick Henry showed his famous resolutions of 1765, before offering them in the House. Edmund Randolph in his manuscript fragment on the history of Virginia, says "The resolutions offered by Mr. Henry are understood to have been written by Mr. John Fleming, a member for Cumberland County, distinguished for his patriotism, and the strength of his understanding."

The Virginia Gazette, April 30, 1767, contains a notice of the death of Col. Fleming: "On Tuesday, the 21st of this instant died, at his home in Cumberland, Col. John Fleming, member of the Assembly for that county, and an eminent practitioner in the law. He was a gentleman of distinguished merit and abilities, which makes his death much lamented by all who had the pleasure of his acquaintance, and may be considered a public loss."

The following is an abstract of his will, dated April 7, 1763, and proved in Cumberland April 27, 1767: "I John Fleming, of Cumberland Co., attorney at law. In compliance with will of deceased father John Fleming, have given my brother Charles Fleming, land on Willis' Creek. To wife Susanna my land at and adjoining Maiden's Adventure, including 100 acres I purchased of Wm. Dudley and 100 of Silvester Alford, for her life, and at her death, to my son John. To my wife 3604 acres in Lunenburg Co., I purchased of Hugh Miller, and two lots in Gatesville [Chesterfield Co.] and also all my slaves and personal estate. Wife to provide for the maintenance and education of the children. To son John the violin I bought of Col. Hunter, and my case of razors. * * * Appoint my brothers Thomas, William, and Richard guardian of my son John, and my daughters."

MARY BOLLING,
WIFE OF COL. JOHN FLEMING, SR.

Negative Property of
H. P. Cook, Photographer,
Richmond, Va.

Col. John[3] and Susanna Fleming had issue.

† 17. John[4]; b. ——; killed at the battle of Princeton, Jan. 3d, 1777; never married.

† 18. Mary[4]; married (1) Warner Lewis, Jr., of "Severn Hall," Gloucester Co.; (2) ——Ellis; died without surviving issue, leaving Susan Lewis, afterwards Mrs. Byrd, her chief legatee (*Vouchers in Va. Land Office*).

† 19. Susanna[4], married Addison Lewis of Gloucester Co. (See genealogies of Lewis and Byrd families).

There is on record in Goochland, a deed dated September, 1777, from Mary Fleming daughter of John Fleming, deceased, attorney at law, conveying to Wm. Fleming, of Powhatan Co., attorney at law, and Charles Fleming, Captain in the Seventh Virginia Battallion in the Army of the United States of America; for love and affection to the said Wm. and Charles, her uncles, one full moiety of a tract of land in Goochland, on the north side of James River, and on both sides of Little Lickinghole Creek, containing 750 acres, which tract was devised to Thomas Fleming, uncle of said Mary, by the will of John Fleming deceased, dated Nov. 1756, and recorded in Cumberland, and was devised to John Fleming, father of the said Mary, by the will of the said Thomas Fleming, dated Goochland, July 1759, and also all the right of the said Mary in the slaves and other personal estate of the said Thos. Fleming, who made John, father of the said Mary, his residuary legatee; said Wm. and Charles to pay all debts due from the estate of her father, John Fleming, deceased.

There is also recorded in Goochland, a deed dated Nov. 11, 1777, from Warner Lewis, Jr., of Severn Hall, Gloucester Co., to John Page, of Rosewell, conveying a tract of land in Goochland, called Dover, containing 700 acres, which had lately become vested in the said Mary and Susannah Fleming her sister, as co-heirs of their brother John Fleming, deceased.

The two sisters, Mary and Susanna Fleming, appear to have lived much in Williamsburg, and a letter written from that place has been preserved.

Williamsburg April 16, 1777

"My Dearest Uncle,

I received your favor acquainting me of your having been five days under Inoculation, and have since had the pleasure to hear that you have recover'd from the Small-Pox; ten thousand blessings on the kind old woman that nursed you, Robinson I think is her name, I shall ever hold it in high veneration for the tenderness she has shewn towards you; for my sake, for the sake of all the friends you have left behind, be as careful of your Health as your situation will allow, let me not be depriv'd of all that's dear; already have I lost too much in the best & most lov'd of Brothers [Jno. F. killed at Princeton]—You also my Uncle know what it is to have lost a Brother; [Col. Thos. F.] I thought of your situation at the time of his Death, and believe me I suffer'd more for the surviver,

than for Him whom I trust is supremely blest and out of the reach of those distresses we poor mortals are subject to, & no doubt looks down with pity and compassion on those he has left behind him, & wonders how they can be so short-sighted as to grieve for those who enjoy the blessings prepared for them who die in the Lord; they enjoy that happiness which no tongue can tell, no pen describe, nor has it enter'd into the Heart of Man to Conceive.

I have the pleasure to tell you that my Uncle Wm. is much better than you left him, and in a fair way of recovering entirely. I wrote to him respecting our living with Mr. Webb, but have received no answer yet.

I suppose you have receiv'd my poor dear Brother's things by this time, if he shou'd have left any letters, shall be oblig'd to you to take particular care of them. I wrote to Him by Colonel Bland but as he did not get there before the Death of my Brother, shou'd be obliged to my dear Uncle if he will enquire of Him what he did with the letter, and if he has not destroy'd it get it and commit it to the flames. My sister desires her love to you and will write by the next opportunity. Miss Polly Clayton's best wishes attend you, & when you have accepted of my love & duty conclude me

Your most affect.
and faithful Niece
Mary Fleming"

Mr. and Mrs. Webb desire their love and best wishes to you.
M. F."

"Capt. Charles Fleming
of the 7th Virginia Reg."

Some time prior to 1777, a Williamsburg versifier, supposed to have been St. George Tucker, or Dr. McClurg, wrote lines intitled "The Belles of Williamsburg," describing the leading beauties and belles of the capital city. An annotated copy was printed in the Richmond Standard, of July 16, 1881. The stanzas relating to the Fleming sisters are as follows:

IV

"Advance Then, each illustrious maid
In order bright, to our parade
With Beauty's ensigns gay;
And first, two nymphs, who, rural plains
Forsook, disdaining rustic swains
No where exact their sway

V

Myrtilla's * beauty who can paint?
The well turned form and glowing tint
May deck a common creature
But who can make th' expressive soul
With lively sense inform the whole
And light up every feature?

VI

At church Myrtilla lowly kneels
No passion but devotion feels
No smiles her looks environ
But let her thoughts to pleasure fly
The basalisk is in her eye
And on her tongue the syren.

VII

Fond youth no longer gaze; beware!
Lest, once enslaved, the dangerous fair
Should leave you in the lurch
The god whom poets make their care
I supplicate that I may ne'er
Behold her but at church.

VIII

More rigorous beauty, fresher bloom
With tints from Nature's richest loom
In Sylvia's† features glow
Would she her sister's arts apply
And catch the magic of her eye
She'd rule the world below."

"**Miss Fleming* †*Miss S. Fleming*."

(To be Continued)

Harrison of Northern Virginia.

(Continued)

Before continuing the genealogy it is desirable to give some corrections and additions derived from later information.

3. Thomas[3] Harrison (XXIII, 215, 216) had, in addition to the sons named, a daughter Elizabeth who married in 1727, Benjamin Bullitt, of Prince William Co., who died in 1757. She was the mother of Cuthbert

Bullitt and other children. Thos.[3] Harrison also had daughters Frances who married Valentine Peyton (who died in 1751) and Ann Frances who married John McMillan.

5. Burr[4] Harrison (XXIII, 331, 332) had 15. Jane, who appears certainly to have married ———Triplett; 22. George, born 1737, married Elizabeth, daughter of Tavenner Beale and removed to Kentucky; 17. Elizabeth, born 1741; married ——— Linton; 21. Sarah, born 1746, married Col. Lion Powell.

36. Sarah, wife of Rev. Thomas Harrison (XXIII, 444) died Dec. 16, 1842.

34. Frances Harrison married Wiley Short.

---

18. Burr[5] Harrison (Burr[4]) of Prince William County, was born June 16, 1734, and died Aug. 2, 1790. The Virginia Council Journal 1776-7, p. 347, shows that he was colonel of the militia of his county. He was a member of the House of Delegates 1778. He married, Sept. 1760, Mary Ann, daughter of Matthew Barnes. His will was dated Feb. 5, and proved in Prince William Feb. 7, 1791. His legatees were, his wife Mary Ann, daughter Ann Catherine Harrison, son Matthew, son Cuthbert (to whom he gave a military claim for 2000 acres in Kentucky &c), son Thomas (to whom he gave land purchased from testators brother Cuthbert Harrison), a daughter Mary Ann Harrison. Mrs. Mary Ann Harrison died Dec. 2, 1803. Her will was proved Jan. 2, 1804.

Issue: 56. Ann Catherine, born Oct. 23, 1761, died Dec. 6, 1839; married April 5, 1793, by Rev. Thomas Harrison, Francis Hereford; 57. *Matthew*[6]; 58. Jane, born 1765; 59. Burr[6], born 1767; 60. Cuthbert[6], born Dec. 28, 1768, died Sept. 26, 1795, unmarried; 61. Ann Barnes, born Feb. 20, 1771; 62. Thomas[6], born May 22, 1774; 63. Mary Ann, born May 1, 1776.

20. Matthew[5] Harrison (Burr[4]) was born Oct. 7, 1738, and died ——. He was a merchant at Dumfries. He married (1) Miss Slaughter, (2) Miss Wood, sister of Governor James Wood; (3) Miss Webb; (4) Eleanor Tyler.

Issue: (1st. m) 64. Matthew[6], went to Bermuda, married and died there; (2d. m) 65. Daughter, married Obed. Waite of Winchester, Va., 66. Daughter, married Col. Andrew Wood, of Romney, now W. Va.; 67. Daughter, died unmarried; (3d. m.) 68. George[6], went to Kentucky; 69. Fanny, married Mr. Jones and went to Kentucky; (4th. m.) 70. Charles, went to sea in early life and was not heard of after 1815; 71. Gustavus[6]; 72. William Alexander[6]; 73. Eleanor, married Wm. P. Hale of Loudoun Co., and removed to Mason Co. in 1817; 74. Nancy, married Dr. Elias T. Safford, of Gallipolis, Ohio, who removed to Parkersburg, now W. Va.; 75. Frederic Tyler[6], died unmarried.

23. William[5] Harrison (Thomas[4]) married Jane ———. She married secondly ———Mallory.

Issue (Harrison): 76. William[6], died unmarried in 1791, leaving his estate to his brother Burr, and sister Lucy Mallory, late Lucy Harrison; 77. Burr[6]; 87. Lucy, married ———Mallory.

37. John Peyton[6] Harrison (Thomas[5]), of Fauquier County, was born about 1748. He was appointed by the State of Virginia ensign in the 2d regiment, Sept. 21, 1775, and by Congress Jan. 23, 1776; 2d. lieutenant June 1776, Captain May 4, 1777. He appears to have resigned Sept. 27, 1780, and on March 10, 1783, received from Virginia 3000 acres of land for three years service. He was appointed a justice of Fauquier Co. in 1787. He married (1) Jan. 12, 1779, Frances (born March 4, 1754, died April 6, 1795), daughter of John Peyton, and (2) in 1796, Elizabeth (born 1761, died July 25, 1816), daughter of Yelverton Peyton (see Hayden's *Virginia Genealogies*, 510, 511).

Issue: (1st. m.): 79. Robert Peyton[7], born Oct. 10, 1779, died without issue at Dumfries; 80. Seth, born March 18, 1781, married Mr. Atwell, of Middleburg; 81. John Peyton[7], born Oct. 6, 1782, died Aug. 4, 1786; 82. Sarah Ann, born Oct. 31, 1784, married ——Short; 83. Frances, born June 4, 1787, died unmarried; 84. Elizabeth, born April 24, 1789, died April 27, 1862, married Gabriel Freeman; 85. Jane Linton, born April 27, 1791, died in the District of Columbia Jan. 19, 1870, married Feb. 13, 1817, Nelson Green, of Fauquier Co.; (2d m.) 86. Dr. Daniel[7], married Jane Cecilia, daughter of Thos. Harrison and granddaughter of Rev. Thos. Harrison (and had issue: a. Walter Peyton[8]; married 1st. ———; 2d Catherine S. Conway; 3d. Elizabeth W. Conway; b. Thomas[8]).

Dr. Daniel Harrison was not a son of Thomas[5] Harrison as previously stated.

(To be Continued)

The Blackwell Family.

(By Miss Stella Pickett Hardy, Batesville, Ark.)
(Continued)

5-1. Lucy Pickett, b. May 2, 1767; d. 1825; m. Sep. 13, 1787, Hon. Charles Marshall, of Warrenton, Va., b. Jan. 31, 1767; d. 1805; son of Col. Thomas & Mary Randolph (Keith) Marshall, of "Oak Hill," Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-2. Ann Pickett, b. 1770; m. cir. 1790, Francis Brooke, of Fauquier Co., Va., Clerk of the County Court, 1793 to 1805. Son of Humphrey & Ann (Whiting) Brooke, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-3. Judith Pickett, b. 1772; m. Stanton Slaughter, of Culpeper Co., Va., son of Col. Robert Slaughter, of "The Grange" Culpeper Co., Va., and his wife Miss Stanton; and had issue.

5-4. Mildred Pickett, b. June 1, 1777; d. Mar. 22, 1805; m. Jan. 9, 1794, William Clarkson, of Fauquier Co., Va., son of Henry Clarkson of Stafford Co., Va., and his wife Dorcas; and had issue.

5-5. George Blackwell Pickett, of Madison Co., Ala., b. 1779 in Fauquier Co., Va.; d. 1829 in Huntsville, Ala., removed to Alabama. about 1826, and located in Madison Co.; m. in Richmond, Va., 1818, Courtney Heron, b. 1797 in Richmond, Va.; d. 1865 in Lexington, Ky.; daughter of James & Sarah (Taylor) Heron, of Richmond, Va., and had issue.

5-6. Leticia Pickett, b. 1780; d. 1802; m. Hon Charles Johnston, of Richmond, Va., son of Hon. Peter & Martha (Butler) Johnston, of "Chiny Grove," Prince Edward Co., Va., and had issue. He married second, Elizabeth Prentiss Steptoe, daughter of Hon. James & Frances (Calloway) Steptoe, of "Federal Hall," Bedford Co., Va.

5-7. Elizabeth Pickett, b. 1788; m. 1805, Judge John Scott, of Fauquier Co., Va., b. Feb. 3, 1781; d. Jan. 17, 1850; son of Rev. John & Elizabeth (Gordon) Scott, of "Gordondale," Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-8. Steptoe Pickett, of Limestone Co., Ala., b. at "Paradise," Fauquier Co., Va., June 22, 1790, d. in Limestone Co., Ala., Dec. 16, 1843; removed to Alabama in 1821; m. in Westmoreland Co., Va., Jan. 10, 1811, Sarah Orrick Chilton, b. at "Currioman," Westmoreland Co., Va., Oct. 2, 1793; d. in Limestone Co., Ala., Feb. 19, 1865; daughter, Orrick & Felicia (Corbin) Chilton, of "Currioman" Westmoreland Co., Va., and had issue.

4-4. Lucy Blackwell, b. 1749; m. Sep. 24, 1773, William Stanton of, Fauquier Co., Va., Issue, among others,

5-1. Joseph Blackwell Stanton, of Tennessee.

4-5. Leticia Blackwell, b. Oct. 3, 1750; m. Apr. 10, 1768, Capt. John Chilton, of "Rock Spring," Fauquier Co., Va., b. Aug. 29, 1739, in Westmoreland Co., Va., d. Sep. 11, 1777 on the Battlefield of Brandywine; served in the Revolution, Captain of 3rd Virginia, Apr. 29, 1776, (Heitman's Historical Register, p. 154.) A number of most interesting letters written by him, during his military career, are now in the possession of his descendants, also a diary. Son of Thomas & Jemima (Cooke) Chilton, of Westmoreland Co., Va., Issue,

5-1. Thomas Chilton, of Kanawah Co., Va., b. May 10, 1767; m. 1797, Jane Corbin, b. Sep. 6, 1779; d. 1843; daughter of Hon. Gawin & Joanna (Tucker) Corbin, of Middlesex Co., Va., no issue.

5-2. George Chilton, of Henry Co., Ky., b. July 5, 1770; d. 1852; m. Mary Ellen Ball, b. 1771; d. 1855; and had issue.

5-3. Nancy Chilton, b. Oct. 8, 1771; m. Augustine Smith, b. Sep. 28, 1774; son of Thomas & Elizabeth (Adams) Smith, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-4. Lucy Chilton, b. Dec. 20, 1773; m. John Hansdell, of Fauquier Co., Va., and removed to Henry Co., Ky., and had issue.

5-5. Joseph Chilton, of Fauquier Co., Va., b. Sep. 20, 1774; d. Nov. 10, 1841; m. Apr. 25, 1795, Ann Smith, b. June 20, 1775; d. 1820; daughter of Capt. Thomas & Elizabeth (Adams) Smith, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

4-6. Joseph Blackwell, of Fauquier Co., Va., bo. 1752; served in the Revolutionary War, as Major in the Subsistence Department Virginia Line; received a large grant of land in Kentucky for his service. He was a signer of the Westmoreland Protest of 1776; He was a staunch Churchman, a Vestryman of Dettengen Parish, Prince William Co., Va.; m. 1783, Mrs. Anne Eustace Hull, widow of Capt. Edwin Hull, of 15th Va.; killed Sep. 15, 1780; and daughter of Isaac & Agatha (Conway) Eustace, of Stafford Co., Va., Issue,

5-1. Ann Blackwell, b. 1786; d. 1873; m. 1802, John Hancock Gaskins, b. 1781; d. 1851; son of John & Frances Sinah (Cole) Gaskins, and had issue.

5-2. Joseph Blackwell, b. 1788; m. Elizabeth Blackwell Edmonds, b. 1791; d. 1860; Issue,

6-1. Octavia Edmonds Blackwell, m. 1832, John Chilton, and had issue.

6-2. Elizabeth Miller Blackwell, m. 1835, James Edmonds.

6-3. Jane Blackwell, b. 1820; d. unm.,

6-4. Ann Blackwell, d. young.

6-5. Joseph Blackwell, d. young.

6-6. Elias Blackwell, d. young.

6-7. Frances Blackwell, d. young.

6-8. James DeRuyter Blackwell, C. S. A., b. 1828; m. 1851, Judith Emma Edmonds, b. 1828; daughter of Capt. Elias Edmonds, of Fauquier Co., Va., had issue 1. Frances Blackwell, b. 1852; 2. Joseph Wildy Blackwell, b. 1854; 3. Elias Edmonds Blackwell, b. 1855; m. 1882, Fannie Grayson Blackwell, b. 1858; daughter of Moore Carter & Sarah Alexander (Foote) Blackwell; 4. Edmonia Blackwell, b. 1857; d. 1860; 5. Elizabeth Miller Blackwell; 6. Adeline Blackwell; 7. Austin Edmondson Blackwell; 8. DeRuyter Blackwell.

5-3. John Blackwell, b. 1791; d. 1866; m. (first) 1819, Rebecca Davenport, d. 1831; daughter of John & Ellen H. Davenport, of Frederick Co., Va.; (second) 1832, Frances Cordelia Digges, d. 1860; daughter of Edward & Ann (Eustace) Digges; (third) 1862, Catherine R. Diddes; Issue by 1st m.

6-1. Joseph Blackwell, b. 1819; m. 1842, Lucy Blackwell Smith, b. 1822; daughter of Col. William Rawley & Lucy (Blackwell) Smith, Issue,

7-1. William Blackwell. 7-2. John Blackwell,

7-3. Joseph Blackwell, 7-4. Lucy Blackwell,

7-5. Edwin Smith Blackwell, b. 1849; m. 1878, Anna Leavell, daughter of John Leavell, of Culpeper Co., Va., had issue 1. Agnes Newton Blackwell, b. 1880; 2. Louise Steptoe Blackwell, b. 1881; 3. Nannie Leavell, b. 1882.

7-6. Agnes Conway Blackwell, b. 1852; d. 1877.

7-7. James Blackwell.

6-2. Ellen Harris Blackwell, b. 1820; d. 1878; m. 1839, Richard M. Smith, son of Col. William Rawley & Lucy (Blackwell) Smith, and had issue.

6-3. John Davenport Blackwell, D. D., b. 1822; d. 1887; an eminent Methodist Divine, served in C. S. A., as Chaplain of 18th Va. Inf.; m. (first) 1853, Julia Anna Butts, d. 1866; daughter of Francis P. & Emma P. Butts, of Southampton Co., Va.; (second) 1869, Fannie Grayson Smith, daughter of Henry & Frances (Foote) Smith, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue by 1st m.

7-1. Robert Eustace Blackwell, b. 1854; m. 1877, Effie Duncan, daughter of Rev. James A. Duncan, and had issue.

1. Effie Blackwell, b. 1879.

7-2. Ellen Denegre Blackwell, b. 1856; d. 1857.

7-3. Gertrude Blackwell, b. 1858; m. Lewis Milton.

7-4. John Francis Blackwell, b. 1861.

7-5. Anna Davenport Blackwell, b. 1863; m. Mr. Mosby.

7-6. James Denegre Blackwell, b. 1866; d. 1871.

Issue by 2nd m.

7-7. Henry Davenport Blackwell, b. 1871; d. 1871.

7-8. Irving Hall Blackwell, b. 1872.

(To be Continued)

Taylor of Southampton &c.

(Continued)

23. John[4] Taylor (Henry[3]) was bequeathed considerable property by the will of his father in 1781. He lived in Southampton County and died in 1799. His will, "John Taylor, Jr.," was dated Feb. 10, 1799, and proved Dec. 19, 1799. Bequest to wife for her life. The estate given her to be used also for support of children William, Henry, Eliza, and Hannah until they are of age and then to be equally divided. All lands to be equally divided between William and Henry. John Taylor married, March 3, 1783, Martha Peterson (Southampton marriage returns). Her will as Martha K. Taylor was dated May 19, 1808, and proved in Southampton August, 1808. She gave her son William Taylor, a negro, son Henry Taylor a negro, daughter Nancy Fitzhugh her riding chair and a negro, daughter Eliza Peterson a negro &c., and appointed her son William Taylor and friends John T. Richeson and Thomas Ridley executors. There is in Southampton the record of a suit by Joshua Claud, administrator, Henry Taylor, Ellis G. Blake and Polly his wife, William Hall in right of his wife, William Taylor, Nancy Taylor, Elizabeth Taylor, Hannah Taylor and Henry Taylor, children of John Taylor, deceased,

and Co-heirs and representatives of Temperence Taylor, deceased [the mother of John[4] Taylor *vs* Nicholas and Edward Fauleon, executors of William Browne, deceased.

Issue: 39. William[5]; 40. Henry[5]; 41. Polly, married Ellis G. Blake; 42. Daughter, married Wm. Hall; 43. Nancy, married ———Fitzhugh; 44. Elizabeth, married ———Peterson; 45. Hannah.

An account with the estate of Hannah Taylor, deceased, by Thomas Fitzhugh, executor, 1808, &c., includes a payment to William Taylor of the amount due him in the division of John Taylor's estate.

24. HENRY[4] TAYLOR (Henry[3]) of Southampton County. He was not of age in 1786, for on March 20th of that year, Etheldred Taylor leased for five years a store-house, dwelling, and 250 acres adjoining, belonging to Henry Taylor, infant son of Henry Taylor, deceased. He left no will (at least in Southampton) and the date of his death is not known. The only other Henry Taylor living in Southampton at this time was the son of John Taylor, Jr., and was a child at the date of his father's will in 1799. A record preserved by a descendant states that 24. Henry[4] Taylor, married Rebecca Tyson, and had only one child.

Issue. 46. Elizabeth, born Aug. 21, 1785, died July 31, 1831, married Dec. 23, 1800, Peter Blow (born May 10, 1771), of Southampton, but later of Missouri. By a deed recorded in Southampton, and dated Jan. 6, 1809, William Taylor and Angelina his wife, of Southampton, conveyed to Peter Blow of the same county, the interest of the said William Taylor in a tract of land, allotted as dower to Rebecca wife of Richard Barham and widow of Henry Taylor. Evidently this was land which, on the death of Henry[4] Taylor without male issue, reverted to his brother John's heirs.

(To be Concluded)

BOOK REVIEWS.

THE HORD FAMILY OF VIRGINIA. A SUPPLEMENT TO THE GENEALOGY OF THE HORD FAMILY. Compiled by Rev. Arnold Harris Hord, Registrar of the Diocese of Pennsylvania, Member of the Executive Board of the Church Historical Society, Member of the Virginia Historical Society. Anno Domini 1915 [Philadelphia] pp. 119, with a number of illustrations and charts.

Dr. Hord is already, through his *Genealogy of the Hord Family*, well-known as a genealogist. In this book, taking as a clue the fact that Alan Hord came to Virginia as a head-right in a grant to Moore Fauntleroy, and following this up with a careful investigation of English genealogical sources which show a relationship between the families of Hord and Fauntleroy in England, he has worked out a very plausible theory of descent from an old English family. The author does not claim that the proof is positive; but the evidence is so strong that it is believed that it may yet be confirmed, beyond doubt, by farther discoveries. Incidentally he gave much information about the Fauntleroys. The latter part of the volume contains much new matter in regard to the Hords of Virginia. Dr. Hord has done a thorough and valuable piece of work.

THE JEFFERSON-LEMEN COMPACT. A Paper Read Before the Chicago Historical Society, Feb. 16, 1915. By Willard C. MacNaul (with an Appendix of Documents), University of Chicago Press 1915, pp. 59.

This address, to which is appended a number of documents, states the claim that Jefferson made a secret compact with James Lemen, a native of the Valley of Virginia, to go to the Northwest Territory and oppose the introduction of slavery there. This claim is supported by extracts from two letters stated to have been written by Jefferson. The originals of these letters are not known to be in existence. In one of these, addressed to Robert Lemen, a brother of James, Jefferson says, in reference to the latter "Among all my friends who are near, he is still a little nearer. I discovered his worth when a child." Though copies are given of letters from Lincoln and Douglas, and an account prepared by a Rev. Mr. Peck in 1857, which refer to those letters, the whole thing has an air of unreality. One would suppose that in the vast mass of Jefferson's works and letters and the numerous lives, there would be frequent mention of his dearest friend; but, strange to say, in not a single instance is there such a reference.

To take another point of view. James Lemen was born in 1760 in or near Harper's Ferry, evidently the son of a small farmer. Anyone who knows Virginia, knows that small farmers rarely in those days (or indeed at present) went outside of their own counties. Jefferson, of course, was at Harpers Ferry prior to 1781, as the well-known passage in the "Notes" shows; but there is not one jot or tittle of evidence to show that he was in that section long enough to know anything of the child of an obscure farmer. It would be difficult to convince any critical student that Jefferson wrote such a letter unless the originals were produced.

Extracts from James Lemen diary which are quoted, seem equally open to doubt. Under date "Near Yorktown Va., Sept. 26, 1781," he says "My enlistment of two years expired sometime ago, but I joined my regiment today and will serve the siege." The records of the War Department show that James Lemen enlisted in the 4th Va. regiment March 3, 1778, "to serve one year." J. B. Lemen adds that James Lemen "had his term of enlistment extended for two years and was transferred to another regiment." After his term expired "he rejoined his old regiment and served through the siege of Yorktown." Now the 4th Virginia regiment, his "old regiment" was not at Yorktown. and may not have existed as an organization at all as it was captured at Charleston. There was no Virginia regiment at Yorktown which had been in existence in 1778-79, and therefore, none which could have been called his "old regiment." The only Virginia regulars at Yorktown were two newly organized regiments under Colonels Gaskins and Dabney. Neither the Revolutionary records at Washington or Richmond contain any mention of Lemen's second enlistment, though, of course, this is not positive proof that he did not re-enlist.

In the diary he also says that he served under Lafayette in the assault on the redoubt on October 14th. It is a well-known fact that there were no Virginia troops engaged in this assault. Another discrepancy to be accounted for.

The whole matter of this alleged "compact" needs thorough investigation before it can be accepted as history.

A Brief History of the First Harrisons of Virginia. Descendants of Cuthbert Harrison of Ancaster, England. From A. D. 1600 to A. D. 1915. By Henry Tazewell Harrison. April 2, 1915 [Leesburg, Va.], pp. 36.

The title page of this handsome little book is misleading. This family of Harrisons was not the first of that name in Virginia nor is there any positive proof that they had anything to do with Ancaster. The sole authority for their origin is the entry in the parish register of St. Margarets, Westminster, showing that Burr, son of Cuthbert Harrison, was born there in 1637. And of course this old English register, written long before there was any Harrison at Chappawamsic in Virginia, makes no

mention of Chappawamsic. It is simply a misunderstanding on the part of the author of the book. Neither is there any evidence that Cuthbert Harrison, father of Burr, ever came to Virginia. It is stated without qualification that Burr Harrison the emigrant, was father of William Harrison. This is probably true, but there is no absolute proof. With these exceptions the genealogy seems to be very well done. The line of descent from Burr Harrison through his son Mathew, who was the head of the Leesburg line is particularly full. Mr. Harrison does not attempt to give many details nor to trace fully the other branches of the family. This is being done as far as possible in the genealogy now in course of publication in the Magazine, though we will not trench on Mr. Harrison's special province, the descendants of Mathew Harrison. He has done that too well to need repetition.

Burford Genealogy Showing the Ancestors and Descendants of Miles Washington Burford and Nancy Jane Burford. By Wesley B. Burford. Privately Printed. Indianapolis, 1914, pp. 133. Illustrated.

This is a carefully prepared account of the descendants of Elijah Hastings Burford, who was born in the town of Burford, Oxfordshire, Feb. 9, 1682, who emigrated to America in 1713 and finally settled in Amherst County, Va., where he died in 1771. Descendants through female as well as male lines are fully given.

The Education of the Negro Prior to 1861. A History of the Education of the Colored People of the United States from the Beginning of Slavery to the Civil War. By C. G. Woodson, Ph. D. (Harvard). G. P. Putnams Sons, New York and London. 1915, pp. 454.

This carefully studied and valuable book goes into every phase of the education of the negro prior to 1861. There may be some things in which we of the South differ with the author; but when it is considered that this author is a negro, we find that the instances are rare. There is nothing in the title to indicate that the author is a negro and the writer of this notice has no other information in regard to him; but a negro he certainly is; none but one of his race would write "Reverend Thomas," "Reverend Taylor," "Reverend Whitmore" as he does. It is odd that in spite of his Harvard Ph. D., this trait of negro writing should remain. This is indeed only worth noting as a curious example of an adhering race trait, and has nothing to do with the merits of an excellent book.

A List of Documentory Material Relating to State Constitutional Conventions. Compiled for use in the Newberry Library by Augustus Hunt Shearer, Ph. D. of the Library Staff. Bulletin of the Newberry Library No. 4, Chicago, 1915, pp. 37.

The title of this valuable publication is the only needed description. It should be in every library and in the hands of all students of Constitutional history.

THE TREZEVANT FAMILY IN THE UNITED STATES, from the arrival of Daniel Trezevant, Huguenot, at Charles Town, South Carolina, in 1685, to the present date. By John Timothie Trezevant, Columbia, S. C. The State Company 1914, pp. 122.

This is a very careful and complete account of one of the most distinguished of the old Huguenot families of South Carolina. Like other American families it has now spread to other states, and has been well-known in Virginia. John Trezevant (1758-1816) removed to Virginia, and served as a surgeon in the Virginia Continental Line. Lewis Cruger Trezevant, a nephew of John also came to Virginia; so the family has been largely represented here. The book is an admirable example of genealogical work.

THE PRESTON AND VIRGINIA PAPERS OF THE DRAPER COLLECTION OF MANUSCRIPTS. Publications of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin. Calendar Series, Vol. I., Madison Wis., 1915, pp. 357.

That the Wisconsin Historical Society is to publish a Calendar of the Draper Manuscripts is good news to all students of American history. Much most valuable material from this source has already been published by the Society or by individual writers; but a full calendar has always been greatly desired. In making a beginning the editors have conformed to the original arrangement of the manuscripts and printed first the Preston and the "Virginia" papers. The Prestons and their relations and friends the Pattons, Buchanans and other well-known Western Virginia people bore a leading part in the settlement and defence of the frontier of the Colony of Virginia. The 146 pages of the calendar containing these papers include much of great historical value. The Virginia Manuscripts (pages 147-309) cover dates from 1742 to 1901, and these, also, relate chiefly to events or people in the western portion of Virginia. There is, however, a great deal of matter relating to Western Pa., Kings Mountain, &c. The volume is indispensable to to anyone interested in early frontier history. It has an admirable index.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, FARMER. Being An Account of His Home Life and Agricultural Activities. By Paul Leland Haworth. Author of The Path of Glory, Reconstruction and Union, America in Ferment, &c. With Many Illustrations, Fac-Similes of Private Papers and a Map of Washington's Estate Drawn by Himself. Indianapolis, The Botts-Merrill Company, Publishers [1915], pp. 336.

This book is a curious mixture of knowledge and ignorance. When the author is writing on the subjects indicated in his title (and this, of

course, comprises the chief part of his book), he writes with full knowledge and does valuable and interesting work. . When he writes of conditions in general in Virginia he shows great ignorance. The reason is plain. In regard to Washington's home life and agricultural activities, there is a great mass of evidence, which Dr. Haworth has carefully studied. There is also elsewhere a great amount, scattered it is true, in regard to agricultural conditions in Virginia, but of this the author knows practically nothing.

George Washington's life, aside from that portion of it devoted to public service, was that of a great planter and he was always a most devoted and painstaking student of agricultural problems. We all know this is a general way; but no one who has not read this book can realize how much of interest there is in the plantation side of Washington's life. Dr. Haworth has made a careful investigation of this, and has brought to light many hitherto unknown facts.

"He finds that Washington was one of the great scientific farmers in America, that he was one of the first to conserve the soil, that he performed hundreds of interesting agricultural experiments, that he made farming machinery with his own hands, that he was a pioneer in improving the breeds of stock, that he was the first American to raise mules, that he owned over sixty thousand acres of land and died the richest citizen of the Republic.

He was one of the first American experimental agriculturists, always alert for better methods, willing to take any amount of pains to find the best fertilizer, the best way to avoid plant diseases, the best methods of cultivation, and he once declared that he had little patience with those content to tread the ruts their fathers trod. If he were alive to-day, we may be sure that he would be an active worker in farmers' institutes, an eager visitor to agricultural colleges, a reader of scientific reports and an enthusiastic promoter of anything tending to better American farming and farm life."

So far nothing but praise can be accorded to the book. But when the author leaves what he has studied, and writes in a cock-sure way about things of which he knows little or nothing, he goes far astray.

We will consider only three subjects, horses, sheep and coaches. On page 53, the author seems to think that Randolph's "Shakespere" was an exceptional thing in the way of high bred horses. He evidently does not know that every writer who treats of Colonial Virginia speaks of the quality of the horses. For an instance, J. F. D. Smyth, who was in Virginia in 1772, says "Indeed nothing can be more elegant and beautiful than the horses bred here, either for the turf, the field, the road or the coach." Of course, Dr. Haworth does not know that between 1740 and 1775, the names of at least fifty stallions and thirty mares, of thoroughbred (or "blooded" as was the frequently used term) stock imported to Virginia, are preserved. The whole thing is too obvious to waste time in discussing farther.

On page 55, he says "Sheep raising was not attempted to any great extent." One of course does not know exactly what the author means by "any great extent," but if he means that sheep were not common in Virginia, he is again badly informed. Without asking him to go to manuscript sources, it may be said that if, to any great extent, he had examined the volumes of the *Va. Magazine of History and Biography* and *The William and Mary Quarterly* he would have found sufficient mention of sheep to show him that they were bred in Virginia to a considerable extent. Such an examination shows the following persons owned sheep (the references are chiefly to wills and inventories): George Menifee, 1645 (who bequeathes his "Sheep at Buckland" in Charles City County), Giles Brent, 1671, James Godwin, 1688 (had 33 sheep), Thomas Taberer, 1692, John Sandford, 1693 (had 24 sheep), George Brent, 1694, John Pitt, 1702, John Farnefold, 1702, Samuel Timson, 1704, Joseph Ball, 1711, William Churchill, 1711 (had 118 sheep), Benjamin Harrison, 1711, William Armistead, 1714, Thos. Ballard, 1711 (had 29 sheep), Edmond Berkeley, 1718, James Burwell, 1718 (had 107 sheep), Robert Brent, 1719, Samuel Selden, 1720, Thomas Chisman, 1722, Joseph Walker, 1723, Ambrose Madison 1731 (had 19 sheep), Robert Carter, 1732 (had 573), William Stanard, 1733 (had 29), John Tayloe, 1747, Wm. Daingerfield, 1734 (had 300 sheep), Anthony Thornton, 1757, John Herbert, 1760, Philip Ludwell, 1767 (had 175), Benjamin Ward, 1776 (advertised for sale at his plantation in Charlotte County, "600 choice sheep"), Landon Carter, 1776 (who had at "Sabine Hall" alone, 158 sheep "in addition to the fatted sheep"), and Peter Presley Thornton, 1781 (who had 172 sheep).

Even at the end of the Seventeenth century sheep had become numerous. Bruce (*Economic History* I, 481) says "In the last decade of the century, the inventories reveal the fact that sheep formed a not unimportant part of many estates."

Dr. Haworth reaches, perhaps, his climax of ignorance when he quotes Martha Washington (page 49) as saying that she remembered a time when there was only one coach in Virginia. If she said this she was at the moment in a state of mental debility of which there is no other record. Coaches were not entirely unknown in Virginia even in the Seventeenth Century and as early as 1701, William Fitzhugh bequeaths "both my coaches." Mrs. Washington was born in 1732 and her first intelligent knowledge of such things would have begun about 1747. In the middle of the Eighteenth century it would be a most conservative estimate to say that there were, at least, fifty coaches in Virginia. A systematic examination of our county records (such as Mr. Bruce made for the preceding century) would easily prove this; but in lieu of such research we may consult the volumes of the *Va. Magazine of History and Biography, The William and Mary Quarterly*, and a few printed genealogies which contain wills. In a few cases, abstracts of unpublished wills and administrations, which were at hand, have been used. The following list has

been compiled from these sources of men who owned coaches (or four or six horse chariots, calashes, chaises and phaetons, which amount to the same thing). These references* are mainly to wills and inventories, and of course persons concerned had probably owned the vehicles for a number of years. The names are as follows: William Churchill, 1710, John Custis 1714, Edmund Berkeley 1718, James Burwell 1718, Joseph Walker 1723, Robert Carter 1726, (2 coaches), T. W. Belfield 1730, Alexander Spotswood 1732 (a coach and a chariot), Francis Eppes 1733, Sir John Randolph 1733, William Byrd 2d 1732, Gawin Corbin 1739 (in will names his white coachman), Moore Fauntleroy 1739, William Randolph 1742, William Thornton 1743 ("a chair and a carriage"), Benjamin Harrison 1743, Thos. Nelson 1745, Richard Randolph 1747 (a coach and a chaise), Henry Lee 1747, John Tayloe 1st, 1747 (chariot and six horses, and coach and four horses), Philip Lightfoot 1748, Thomas Bray 1751, John Dixon 1751, John Blair 1751, John Lightfoot 1751, William Montgomery 1752, William Dawson 1752, James Steptoe 1755, Philip Grymes 1756, Philip Rootes 1756, William Beverley 1756, John Spotswood 1758, Nicholas Meriwether 1758, Richard Kennon 1761, John Martin 1761, George Lee 1761, William Kennon 1761, Mrs. Mary Lee 1762, Richard Eppes 1762, John Tabb 1762, Clement Read 1763 (a chariot and a chair) Charles Carter 1764, William Byrd 3d, 1765, Robert Page 1765, Philip Ludwell 1767, Willoughby Newton 1767, Peter Randolph 1767, John Wayles 1768, Landon Carter 1770, William Nelson 1772, Wilson Cary 1772 (a coach and a post chariot), John Tayloe 2d, 1773 (a coach and a chariot), William Daingerfield 1774, Peyton Randolph 1774, John Nash 1776, Anthony Walke 1776 ("my newest chariot and four horses"), Robert Burwell 1777, Richard Bland 1777, Tarleton Fleming 1778, David Minge 1779.

Turning to other evidence on this subject; Hugh Jones ("Present State of Virginia," 1722) says "most people of any note in Williamsburg have a coach, chariot, Berlin or chaise." A traveller to America, whose account was published in the *London Magazine* in 1746, states in regard to Yorktown, "Almost every considerable man keeps an equipage, tho' they have no concern about the different colours of their coach horses." When the same traveller reached Williamsburg, he was struck by "the prodigious Number of Coaches that crowd the deep, sandy Streets of this little City." *The Virginia Gazette* states that on July 13, 1749 "This day the Hon. John Robinson, Presid't. and the rest of the gent: of the Council went all in Coaches to wait on the Gov'r."; and finally we quote Francis Jerdone, a merchant of Yorktown, who in a letter dated Sept. 20, 1753, acknowledged the receipt of a second hand chariot which had been sent him from London for sale, and said "I now advise you that I have sold the chariot you sent me by Capt. Paterson for forty pistoles being £43 current to Col. ffolke Moseley, which was the most I could make of it, and if that gentleman had not bought it, I believe it would have been on hand at this time, second hand goods being no way saleable here; for our Gentry have such proud spirits that nothing will go down,

but equipages of the nicest and newest fashions. You will not believe it when I tell you that there are sundry chariots now in the country which cost 200 guineas and one that cost 260."

*The following are the printed sources for the statements made above: ***Virginia Magazine of History and Biography***: II, 278; III, 125, 263, 394; IV, 66, 93; V, 145; VI, 4, 268, 369; VII, 64, 398; IX, 239; X, 180, 189; XI, 424; XIV, 242, 328, 421; XVI, 97, 98; XVII, 322, 370, 372, 373; XVIII, 99, 188, 446; XIX, 87; XXI, 204, 397, 405, 414; XXII, 278, 442; ***William and Mary Quarterly***: IX, 107, 246, 247; IV, 16, 269; VI, 41, 65, 143, 150; VII, 88, 188, 253 304, 312; VIII, 39, 40, 41, 128, 139, 146; IX, 188; X, 110; XII, 159, 160, 220, 255; XIII, 46, 205; XIV, 133, 161, 186; XV, 223; XVII, 246; XIX, 276; XX, 16; XXI, 175; Page's "Page Family," 163; Waters' "Gleanings," 513; Lee's "Lee of Virginia," 134, 136, 143; "Writings of Wm. Byrd" (Bassett), 333, 370; Hayden's "Virginia Genealogies," 59; "Rootes of Rosewall," 18; Griffith's "Descendants of Nicholas Meriwether," 42, 43, 115.

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS. By Mildred Stapeley, New York. The Mac Millan Company, 1915, pp. 240.

DAVY CROCKETT. By William C. Sprague. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 189.

ROBERT FULTON. By Alice Gray Sutcliffe, Great-Granddaughter of Robert Fulton. Author of "Robert Fulton and the Clermont," &c. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 195.

NATHAN HALE. By Jean Christie Root. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 160.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN. By E. Lawrence Dudley, Author of "The Isle of Whispers," "The Ghost Ship," &c. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 232.

WILLIAM PENN. By Rupert V. Holland, Author of "Historic Boyhoods," "Knights of the Golden Spur," &c. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 166.

The MacMillans are doing a most excellent work in the publication of "True Stories of Great Americans"—the general title of the series. In contrast to various "true" biographies published previously, and which were frequently compounded of misinformation and trivial gossip, these books are the result of real scholarly work. Though intended primarily for younger readers, they will prove equally valuable to the great mass of people who have no time nor inclination to read long biographies and yet are anxious to have compact interesting narratives of prominent men, which can be gone through in a short time and which yet contain the latest results of research in regard to the various subjects. To such readers as well as to school boys and girls, these books can be highly commended.

In the Footsteps of Napoleon. His Life and its Famous Scenes. By James Morgan, Author of "Abraham Lincoln, the Boy and Man" &c. New York. The MacMillan Company, 1915, pp. 524, with 33 illustrations.

To those interested in Napoleon—and who is not?—this is a very interesting and timely book. Just before the outbreak of the present great war, the author made a journey of nearly twenty thousand miles to visit the famous scenes of Napoleon's life and along the line of his celebrated marches. This alone would qualify an intelligent student of the great Emperor's life to give freshness and value to any new book about him. The present great war adds intense interest to nearly every phase of Napoleon's life. The author is of the opinion that, though some of the parties to the old combat have changed, sides "in their motives and their strategy, the two wars are strangely alike, and I have depicted the earlier as the forerunner of this later conflict."

Some Emigrants to Virginia. Memoranda in Regard to Several Hundred Emigrants to Virginia During the Colonial Period, Whose Parentage is Shown or Former Residence Indicated by Authentic Records, Compiled by W. G. Stanard. Second Edition Enlarged. The Bell Book and Stationary Company Publishers, Richmond, Va., 1916.

The first edition of this book was exhausted early in 1915, and another, with considerable additions is published this month.

The Majors and their Marriages, By James Brach Cabell, with Collateral Accounts of the Allied Families of Aston, Ballard, Christian, Dancy, Hartwell, Macon, Marable, Massie, Patterson Pressey, Seawell, Stephens, Waddill and others. The W. C. Hill Printing Co., Richmond, Va. [1915], pp. 188.

Through minute investigations in the records of Henrico, Chesterfield, Charles City and York counties, and with the fortunate preservation of some notes made from the records of Nansemond, Mr. Cabell has been able to make a valuable addition to Virginia genealogy. Much of the work is now presented for the first time. This is particularly so in regard to the families of Major, Patteson and several others included.

The author has throughout printed confirming or illustrative documents from the records. The deductions seem to be carefully made and are mainly, indisputable; but there does not appear to be any very clear proof given that William Stephens of Warwick County was a son of Capt. Richard Stephens.

Mr. Cabell's book covers a wide field and will interest great numbers of Virginians and people of Virginia descent.

$5.00 per Annum Single No. $1.50

THE VIRGINIA MAGAZINE OF HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE
VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY
RICHMOND, VA.

VOL. XXIV—No. 2. APRIL, 1916.

Entered at the Postoffice at Richmond, Va., as Second-class Matter.

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS, PRINTERS TO THE SOCIETY
6-8-10 North Eighth Street

CONTENTS.

OFFICERS AND MEMBERS

OF THE

Virginia Historical Society

JANUARY, 1916.

President.

W. GORDON MCCABE, Richmond, Va.

Vice-Presidents.

ARCHER ANDERSON, Richmond, Va.
EDWARD V. VALENTINE, Richmond, Va.
LYON G. TYLER, Williamsburg, Va.

Corresponding Secretary and Librarian.

WILLIAM G. STANARD, Richmond, Va.

Recording Secretary.

D. C. RICHARDSON, Richmond, Va.

Treasurer.

ROBERT A. LANCASTER, JR., Richmond, Va.

Executive Committee.

C. V. MEREDITH, Richmond, Va.
CHAS. W. KENT, University of Va.
J. STEWART BRYAN, Richmond, Va.
A. C. GORDON, Staunton, Va.
S. S. P. PATTESON, Richmond, Va.
S. H. YONGE, Richmond, Va.
WM. H. PALMER, Richmond, Va.
RT. REV. A. M. RANDOLPH, Norfolk, Va.
DANIEL GRINNAN, Richmond, Va.
J. P. MCGUIRE, JR., Richmond, Va.
WM. A. ANDERSON, Lexington, Va.
MORGAN P. ROBINSON, Richmond, Va.

and ex-officio, the President, Vice-Presidents, Secretaries and Treasurer.

The Annual Meeting of this Society will be held early in 1916. The Proceedings of the Meeting will be published in the April Magazine.

Richardson, D. C., Richmond, Va.
Rives, Hon. Geo. Lockhart, New York, N. Y.
Robinson, Morgan P., Richmond, Va.
Scott, Frederick W., Richmond, Va.
Scott, Winfield, New York, N. Y.
Stevens, Mrs. Byam K., New York, N. Y.
Stires, Rev. Ernest, M. D. D., New York, N. Y.
Stubbs, Wm. C., New Orleans, La.
Swanson, Hon. Claude A., Chatham, Va.
Sweet, Mrs. Edith M., St. Albans, W. Va.
Talcott, Col. T. M. R., Bon Air, Va.
Waterman, W. H., New Bedford, Mass.
Webb, W. Seward, New York, N. Y.
Wickham, Henry T., Richmond, Va.
Williams, A. D., Richmond, Va.
Williams, Thomas C., Richmond, Va.
Winslow, H. M., Harriman, Tenn.
Woodson, Captain R. S., U. S. A., St. Louis, Mo.

ANNUAL MEMBERS.*

Abney, John R., New York, N. Y.
Adams, Samuel F., South Boston, Va.
Adams, Walter, Framingham, Mass.
Addison, E. B., Richmond, Va.
Adkins, S B., Richmond, Va.
Aguilar de, Mrs. F. B., New York, N. Y.
Alexander, F. W., Oak Grove, Va.
Alexander, Dr. W. T., New York, N. Y.
Allen, E. W., Savannah, Ga.
Allen, Herbert F. M., Washington, D. C.
Ambler, Ben. Mason, Parkersburg, W. Va.
Ames, Mrs. Joseph S., Baltimore, Md.
Ancell, Rev. B. L., Yangchow, China.
Anderson, Col. Archer, Richmond, Va.
Anderson, B. P., M. D., Colorado Springs, Col.
Anderson, Charles C., Richmond, Va.
Anderson, Davis C., Cincinnati, Ohio.
Anderson, Edward L., Cincinnati, Ohio.
Anderson, W. A., Lexington, Va.
Andrews, Prof. C. M., Yale University, New Haven, Conn.
Antrim, Hugh, Richmond, Va.
Atkins, Mrs. G. W. E., New York, N. Y.
Atkinson, Thomas, Richmond, Va.
Austin-Leigh, Richard A., London, Eng.
Axtell, Decatur, Richmond, Va.

Bagby, Mrs. Parke C., Richmond, Va.
Baker, C. C., Azusa, Cal.
Baker, Mrs. Gibbs L., Washington, D. C.
Ballard, N. H., Brunswick, Ga.
Barbour, John S., Fairfax, Va.
Barham, Dr. W. B., Newsoms, Va.
Barton, R. T.; Winchester, Va.
Baskervill, P. H., Richmond, Va.
Bayne, Howard R., New York, N. Y.
Beatty, Mrs. John, Blackwell, Oklahoma.
Beckett, John T., New York, N. Y.
Beckwith, Thomas S., Sr., Petersburg, Va.
Beer, George Louis, New York, N. Y.
Beirne, Francis F., Baltimore, Md.
Bell, Landon C., Columbus, Ohio.
Bell, Robert O., Richmond, Va.
Belmont, August, New York, N. Y.
Belt, Mrs. Eliz. Talbot, Millen, Ga.
Bennett, Robert R., Washington, D. C.
Best, Frank E., Chicago, Ill.
Beveridge, Hon. A. J., Indianapolis, Ind.
Blackstock, Ira B., Springfield, Ill.
Blair, Miss Louisa Coleman, Richmond, Va.
Blow, A. A., Gloucester Co., Va.
Boatwright, Mrs. Gertrude F. H., Roanoke, Va.
Boisseau, Sterling, Richmond, Va.
Boisseau, P. H., Danville, Va.
Bolling, Charles E., Richmond, Va.
Bolling, Stanhope, Richmond, Va.
Bondurant, Dr. Eugene D., Mobile, Ala.
Booker, Mrs. Hunter R., Hampton, Va.
Boreman, R. J. A., Parkersburg, W. Va.
Bosher, Mrs. Robert S., Richmond, Va.
Bourgeoisie, Mrs. A. C., St. Louis, Mo.
Bowles, Henry L., Denver, Col.
Bowling, Benjamin L., Urbanna, Ill.
Boyle, Mrs. P. A., Birmingham, Ala.
Boyle, Mrs. Virginia Frazier, Memphis, Tenn.
Bradshaw, Mrs. Rosena, Paducah, Ky.
Branch, John K., Richmond, Va.
Brodhead, Mrs. Lucas, Versailles, Ky.
Brooke, George D., Chillicothe, Ohio.
Brooke, Richard N., Washington, D. C.
Brooke, Richard, Newark, Ohio.
Brooke, Robert T., Birmingham, Ala.
Brooke, S. S., Roanoke, Va.
Brooke, Dr. T. V., Sutherlin, Va.
Brown, Prof. W. G., Columbia, Mo.

*This list also includes subscribers to the Magazine.

Brown, J. Thompson, Richmond, Va.
Brown, Wallace F., Richmond, Va.
Bruce, Hon. C. M., Clarkton, Va.
Bruce, Philip Alexander, Norfolk, Va.
Bruce, Mrs. Mary Howard, Richmond, Va.
Bryan, George, Richmond, Va.
Bryan, Thomas P., Richmond, Va.
Bryan, St. George T. C., Richmond, Va.
Budlong, Mrs. Milton J., New York, N. Y.
Bukey, Mrs. John Spencer, Vienna, Va.
Bullard, Mrs. B. F., Savannah, Ga.
Bullitt, Wm. Marshall, Louisville, Ky.
Burges, Richard F., El Paso, Texas.
Burruss, Mrs. Nathaniel, Norfolk, Va.
Burwell, D. S., Norfolk, Va.
Byrd, Samuel M., Kosciusko, Miss.

Callahan, G. C., Philadelphia, Pa.
Cameron, Col. Benehan, Stagville, N. C.
Cameron, George, Petersburg, Va.
Campbell, Mrs. A. A., Wytheville, Va.
Campbell, R. K. Washington, D. C.
Cannon, G. Randolph, Richmond, Va.
Capps, W. L., U. S. N., Washington, D. C.
Cargill, Mrs. T. A., Houston, Texas.
Carpenter, Pay Director J. S., U. S. N., Boston, Mass.
Carr, Frank Overton, Wichita, Kansas.
Carter, Hill, Ashland, Va.
Cartwright, Mrs. S. A. Brooke, Washington, D. C.
Cary, T. Archibald, Richmond, Va.
Catlett, Mrs. Richard H., Staunton, Va.
Chamberlayne, Churchill G., Richmond, Va.
Chandler, Prof. J. A. C., Richmond, Va.
Chandler, R. G., Chicago, Ill.
Chandler, Walter T., Chicago, Ill.
Chauncy, Mrs. Agnes C., Narberth, Pa.
Chilton, W. B., Washington, D. C.
Christian, Judge Geo. L., Richmond, Va.
Christian, Walter, Richmond, Va.
Claiborne, Dr. J. H., New York, N. Y.
Clark, W. Welch, Danville, Va.
Clark, Wm. Hancock, New York, N. Y.
Clarke, P. N., Louisville, Ky.
Clayton, Joseph C., Brooklyn, N. Y.
Clement, Mrs. N. E., Chatham, Va.
Clyde, W. P., New York, N. Y.
Cobb, Wm. H., Elkins, W. Va.
Coffin, Charles P., Brookline, Mass.
Coke, Captain John A., Richmond, Va.
Coleman, Charles W., Washington, D. C
Coles, Mrs. T. B., Brooklyn, N. Y.
Colston, Edward, Cincinnati, Ohio.
Cook, Miss Mary E., Columbus, Ga.
Cooke, Mrs. James P., Concord, N. C.
Coolidge, Archibald C., Cambridge, Mass.
Corbin, Richard Beverley, New York, N. Y.
Corbin, Richard W., Newport, R. I.
Corbett, Mrs. L. G., Greenville, S. C.
Courtney, Miss Emma, Louisville, Ky.
Cox, General Wm. R., Penelo, N. C.
Cram, Mrs. R. A., Boston, Mass.
Crenshaw, S. Dabney, Richmond, Va.
Cridlin, W. B., Richmond, Va.
Crittenden, W. L., Stigler, Okla.
Croasdaile, Mrs. Richard, Canton, Ohio.
Crocker, Major J. F., Portsmouth, Va.
Crockett, R. H., Franklin, Tenn.
Crump, Judge Beverley T., Richmond, Va.
Culleton, Leo., London, Eng.
Cutright, W. B., Buckhannon, W. Va.

Dabney, Dr. William M., Baltimore, Md.
Dabney, Prof. R. H., University of Va.
Daingerfield, Francis Lee, Alexandria, Va.
Dandridge, Miss Mary E., Cincinnati, O.
Darling, Mrs. Frank W., Hampton, Va.
Daughters, A. R., Washington, D. C.
Davenport, G. A., Richmond, Va.
Denham, Edward, New Bedford, Mass.
Denson, C. B., Raleigh, N. C.
Dickey, Judge Lyle A., Lihue, H. T.
Doolittle, Mrs. Wm. W., Passadena, Cal.
Doran, J. J., Philadelphia, Pa.
Doremus, Mrs. C. A., New York, N. Y.
Downing, George C., Frankfort, Ky.
Driscoll, Mrs. Owen E., Charlottesville, Va.
Duke, Judge R. T. W., Jr., Charlottesville, Va.
Dunn, John, M. D., Richmond, Va.
Dupont, Col. H. A., Winterthur, Del.
Duval, Miss Maria P., Charlestown, W. Va.
Dwight, Dr. E. W., Boston, Mass.

Easley, J. C., Richmond, Va.
East, John P., New York, N. Y.
Eaton, George G., Washington, D. C.
Eckenrode, Dr. H. J., Richmond, Va.
Ellis, Wade H., Washington, D. C.
Ellyson, Hon. J. Taylor, Richmond, Va.
Embrey, Judge Alvin T., Fredericksburg, Va.

Empie, Adam, Wilmington, N. C.
English, Mrs. W. E., Indianapolis, Ind.
Eskridge, R. S., Seattle, Wash.
Eustace, Wm. Corcoran, Oatlands, Va.

Farragut, Loyall, New York, N. Y.
Farrar, Edgar H., New Orleans, La.
Faulkner, C. J., Boydton, Va.
Feild, W. P., Little Rock, Ark.
Feldhauser, Mrs. Goode K., St. Paul, Minn.
Ferrell, Mrs. Chas. C., Anson, Tex.
Fife, Prof. R. H., Middletown, Conn.
Fitzhugh, Gen. Chas. L., Pittsburg, Pa.
Fitzhugh, E. H., Montreal, Can.
Fletcher, William Meade, Sperryville, Va.
Fontaine, W. W. Austin, Tex.
Fountain, General S. W., U. S. A., Devon, Pa.
Fox, Fred. L., Sutton, W. Va.
Frances, Mrs. Charles E., Bedford, Ind.
Freeman, D. S., Richmond, Va.
French, Dr. Jno. Herndon, New York, N. Y.
Furlow, Floyd C., New York, N. Y.

Gaines, C. Carrington, Poughkeepsie, N. Y.
Garland, Spotswood, Wilmington, Del.
Garner, J. W., Falls Church, Va.
Gibson, Rt. Rev. Robt. A., Richmond, Va.
Gilbert, Mrs. R. M., New York, N. Y.
Glover, Rolfe E., Richmond, Va.
Good, D. Saylor, Roanoke, Va.
Goodwin, Rev. E. L., Richmond, Va.
Goodwyn, Mrs. W. S., Emporia, Va.
Gordon, Armistead C., Staunton, Va.
Gray, Henry W., Jr., Hartford, Conn.
Gregory, George C., Rio Vista, Va.
Grinnan, Judge Daniel, Richmond, Va.
Grinnan, John C., Norfolk, Va.
Groome, H. L., Warrenton, Va.
Guthrie, John W., Flagstaff, Arizona.

Hagan, John C., Richmond, Va.
Hairston, S. W., Roanoke, Va.
Hamilton, Alexander, Petersburg, Va.
Hamilton, Mrs. Amelia C., New York, N. Y.
Hardy, Miss Stella Pickett, Batesville, Ark.
Harpel, Mrs. Almeda B., Des Moines, Iowa.
Harris, A. B. B., Chicago, Ill.
Harrington, Howard S., New York, N. Y.
Harris Alfred T., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Harris, Graham H., Chicago, Ill.
Harris, John T., Jr., Harrisonburg, Va.
Harrison, Mrs. Carter H., Staunton, Va.
Harrison, Hon. Francis Burton, Manila, P.I.
Harrison, Geo. T., M.D., Charlottesville, Va.
Harrison, Robert L., New York, N. Y.
Harrison, W. Preston, Chicago, Ill.
Harvie, Miss Anne F., Richmond, Va.
Hawes, S. H., Richmond, Va.
Hays, Francis B., Oxford, N. C.
Heatwole, Prof. C. J., Harrisonburg, Va.
Heath, James E., Norfolk, Va.
Hempstone, W. D., Leesburg, Va.
Herbert, Col. Arthur, Alexandria, Va.
Herbert, R. Beverley, Columbia, S. C.
Herndon, J. W., Alexandria, Va.
Heyer, Mrs. Mary B., Wilmington, N. C.
Higgins, Mrs. D. F., Joliet, Ill.
Hill, W. M., Richmond, Va.
Hine, Major Charles DeLano, Vienna, Va.
Hogg, Mrs. Clara H. D., Cadiz, Ohio.
Holladay, A. Randolph, Richmond, Va.
Holmes, J. T., Columbus, Ohio.
Holt, R. O., Washington, D. C.
Hord, Rev. A. H., Philadelphia, Pa.
Horsley, Dr. J. Shelton, Richmond, Va.
Howard, Mrs. Eleanor Washington, Washington, D. C.
Howard, Major McHenry, Baltimore, Md.
Hughes, A. S., Denver, Col.
Hunt, Gaillard, Washington, D. C.
Hunter, James W., Norfolk, Va.
Hunton, Eppa, Jr., Richmond, Va.
Hurt, George F., Atlanta, Ga.
Hutcheson, H. F., Boydton, Va.
Hutcheson, Mrs. J. C., Houston, Tex.
Hutchins, W. S., Washington, D. C.
Hutchinson, Cary T., New York, N. Y.
Hyde, Mrs. Charles R., Chattanooga, Tenn.

James, Mrs. J. O., Petersburg, Va.
Jameson, Mrs. S. W., Roanoke, Va.
Jarman, Prof. J. L., Farmville, Va.
Jeffress, T. F., Drewry's Bluff, Va.
Jenkins, Luther H., Richmond, Va.
Jewett, W. K., Colorado Springs, Col.
Johnson, B. F., Washington, D. C.
Johnston, Dr. Geo. Ben., Richmond, Va.
Johnston, Miss Mary, Warm Springs, Va.
Jones, Fairfax C., Richmond, Va.
Jones, Judge L. H., Louisville, Ky.
Jones, W. Strother, Red Bank, N. J.
Junkin, Francis T. A., Chicago, Ill.

Kable, Mrs. W. G., Staunton, Va.
Keach, Mrs. O. A., Wichita, Kan.
Keim, Mrs. Betty L., Philadelphia, Pa.
Kelly, Mrs. Effie Bowles, Richmond, Va.
Kemper, Charles E., Washington, D. C.
Kent, Prof. C. W., University of Va.
Kimber, A. L., Chicago, Ill.

Lamb, E. T., Norfolk, Va.
Lambert, Mrs. W. H., Germantown, Pa.
La Monte, Geo. M., Bound Brook, N. J.
Lancaster, R. A., Jr., Richmond, V
Lathrop, Bryan, Chicago, Ill.
Lawton, Mrs. James M., New York, N. Y.
Leake, J. Jordan, Richmond, Va.
Lecky, Robert, Jr., Richmond, Va.
Ledbetter, Mrs. C. R., Little Rock, Ark.
Lee, Blair, Washington, D. C.
Lee, R. E., Jr., Fairfax County, Va.
Le Grande, Mrs. J. H., Tyler, Tex.
Leigh, Egbert G., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Levy, Jefferson M., New York, N. Y.
Lewis, Charles, Cincinnati, Ohio.
Lewis, Herbert, I. Wast Point, Va.
Lewis, Judge Lunsford L., Richmond, Va.
Lodge, Hon. H. C., Washington, D. C.
Lomax, E. L., San Francisco, Cal.
Long, E. McL., New York, N. Y.
Lorton, Heth, Garden City, L. I., N. Y.
Loyall, Captain B. P., Norfolk, Va.
Lukeman H. Augustus, New York, N. Y.
Maddox, E. L., Grand Rapids, Mich.
Mallory, Lt. C. K., U. S. N., Syracuse, N. Y.
Mallory, Col. J. S., U. S. A., Culebra, Canal Zone.
Maloney, Mrs. Eva Grant, New Castle, Va.
Mangum, Mrs. Wm. W., New Orleans, La.
Markham, George D., St. Louis, Mo.
Mastin, Mrs. George R., Lexington, Ky.
Matthews, Albert, Boston, Mass.
Maxwell, Mrs. Allison, Indianapolis, Ind.
Mayo, E. C., Richmond, Va.
Mayo, Mrs. Etta Booth, Commerce, Tex.
Mayo, P. H., Richmond, Va.
Mercer, Mrs. William P., Elm City, N. C.
Meredith, Charles V., Richmond, Va.
Meredith, Philip T., Harrisburg, Pa.
Meriwether, Mrs. Minor, Shreveport, La.
Merrill, Mrs. Lida W., Terre Haute, Ind.
Meyer, Mrs. August R., Kansas City, Mo.
Miller, Rudolph P., New York, N. Y.
Minnigerode, Charles, Baltimore, Md.
Minor, Benj S., Washington, D. C.
Mitchell, Robert, Richmond, Va.
Mitchell, Kirkwood, Richmond, Va.
Moffett, Miss Edna V., Wellesley, Mass.
Montague, Hill, Richmond, Va.
Moore, Warner, Richmond, Va.
Morehead, C. R., El Paso, Texas.
Morgan, Dr. D. H., Amelia C. H., Va.
Munford, Mrs. Beverley B., Richmond, Va
Munford, R. B., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Myers, Barton, Norfolk, Va.

McAllister, A. S., New York, N. Y.
McAllister, J. T., Hot Springs, Va.
McBryde, Dr. J. M., Blacksburg, Va.
McCabe, Capt. W. Gordon, Richmond, Va.
McCluer, W. B., Chicago, Ill.
McClung, C. M., Knoxville, Tenn.
McConnell, Prof. J. P., Radford, Va.
McCormick, R. Hall, Chicago, Ill.
McCormick, Harold F., Chicago, Ill.
McDonnel, Mrs. Eugene, Fort Howard, Md.
McFadden, Charles, Jr., Philadelphia, Pa.
McGraw, John T., Grafton, W. Va.
McGuire, Dr. Edward, Richmond, Va.
McGuire, Mrs. Frank H., Richmond, Va.
McGuire, John Peyton, Jr., Richmond, Va.
McGuire, Murray M., Richmond, Va.
McKim, Rev. Randolph H., Washington, D. C.
McIlwaine, Dr. H. R., Richmond, Va.
McIlwaine, W. B., Petersburg, Va.
McIntosh, Charles F., Norfolk, Va.
McKenny, Miss Virginia Spotswood, Petersburg, Va.
McNeil, Mrs. Walter, Richmond, Va.

Nash, Dr. F. S., U. S. N., Washington, D. C.
Neilson, Miss Lou, Oxford, Miss.
Nichols, Rt. Rev. W. F., San Francisco, Cal.
Nixon, Lewis, Metuchen, N. J.
Norvell, Mrs. Lipscomb, Beaumont, Texas.

Osborne, W. L. H., Glade, Oregon.
Outerbridge, Mrs. A. J., University, Va.
Owen, Thomas M., Montgomery, Ala.

Padgitt, Mrs. J. Tom, Coleman, Texas.
Page, Mrs. Mann, Elizabeth, N. J.
Page, S. Davis, Philadelphia, Pa.
Page, Rosewell, Beaver Dam, Va.
Page, Hon. Thomas Nelson, American Embassy, Rome, Italy.
Palmer, Mrs. Potter, Osprey, Fla.
Palmer, Col. William H., Richmond, Va.
Parker, Col. John, Browsholme Hall, Clethiroe, Lancashire, Eng.
Parker, W. S. R., Beaumont, Texas.
Patteson, S. S. P., Richmond, Va.
Paxton, T. B., Jr., Cincinnati, O.
Payne, John B., Chicago, Ill.
Pegram, Lt. John C., U. S. A., San Francisco, Cal.
Penn, Mrs. James G., Danville, Va.
Pescud, Peter F., New Orleans, La.
Peterkin, Mrs. George W., Parkersburg, W. Va.

Pettus, William J., M. D., U. S. Marine Hospital Service, Charleston, S. C.
Phelps, Wm. B., Duluth, Minn.
Pinckard, W. P., Birmingham, Ala.
Pinckney, C. C., Richmond, Va.
Pleasants, Edwin, Richmond, Va.
Pleasants, Dr. J. Hall, Baltimore, Md.
Plummer, Miss Lucy Dupuy, Chicago, Ill.
Poindexter, Judge Miles, Spokane, Wash.
Poindexter, W. W., Lynchburg, Va.
Pollard, Henry R., Richmond, Va.
Powell, J. E., Washington, D. C.
Prentiss, Judge R. R., Suffolk, Va.
Purcell, Col. J. B., Richmond, Va.

Raines, Dr. Thomas H., Savannah, Ga.
Raine, T. C., New York, N. Y.
Ramey, Mrs. Alice Lewis, Brownwood, Tex.
Randolph, Rt. Rev. A. M., D. D., Norfolk, Va.
Randolph, Epes, Tucson, Ariz.
Randolph, Mrs. Robert Lee, Alexandria, La.
Randolph, Tom, St. Louis, Mo.
Redman, Ray C., Vincennes, Ind.
Reed, P. L., Richmond, Va.
Richardson, Albert Levin, Baltimore, Md.
Richardson, Wm. D., Richmond, Va.
Ridgeley, Mrs. Jane M., Springfield, Ill.
Rives, Mrs. W. C., Washington, D. C.
RoBards, Col. John Lewis, Hannibal, Mo.
Roberson, Mrs. J. Fall, Cropwell, Ala.
Roberts, Miss Sarah B., Dupree's, Va.
Roberts, Mrs. James W., Marietta, Ohio.
Robertson, Frank S., Abingdon, Va.
Robertson, John C., Richmond, Va.
Robertson, Thos. B., Eastville, Va.
Robins, Dr. C. R., Richmond, Va.
Robinson, Alexander G., Louisville, Ky.
Robinson, Judge C. W., Newport News, Va.
Robinson, P. M., Clarksburg, W. Va.
Rockwell, Mrs. Eckley, Washington, D. C.
Roller, Gen. John E., Harrisonburg, Va.
Rose, Mrs., Charles A., Richmond, Va.
Rose, Mrs. Robert L., New York, N. Y.
Rowland, Miss Kate Mason, Richmond, Va.
Rucker, Mrs. B. H., Rolla, Mo.
Ryan, Thos. F., Oak Ridge, Va.

Sampson, Henry A., Richmond, Va.
Sands, Alexander H., Richmond, Va.
Savage, N. R., Richmond, Va.
Scherr, Henry, Williamson, W. Va.
Schouler, Prof. James, Intervale, N. H.
Schuck, L. E., St. Louis, Mo.
Schwartz, J. L., Washington, D. C.
Scott, George Cole, Richmond, Va.
Scott, Thomas B., Richmond, Va.
Scott, W. W., Richmond, Va.
Semmes, Raphael T., Savannah, Ga.
Shearer, W. B., New Orleans, La.
Shepherd, Dr. Wm. A., Richmond, Va.
Shine, Dr. Francis Eppes, Bisbee, Ariz.
Shippen, Mrs. Rebecca Lloyd, Washington D. C.
Sim, John R., New York, N. Y.
Sitterding, Fritz, Richmond, Va.
Slaughter, A. D., Chicago, Ill.
Smith, Mrs. Alda L., Belton, S. C.
Smith, H. M., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Smith, Mrs. Rosa Wright, Fort Sill, Okla.
Smith, Willis B., Petersburg, Va.
Smith, Captain, R. C., U. S. N., New York, N. Y.
Smith, W. D. G., Castleton, Vt.
Smithwick, Mrs. Martha, C. D., Memphis, Tenn.
Southgate, T. S., Norfolk, Va.
Southall, Rev. S. O., Dinwiddie, Va.
Spencer, Mrs. Samuel, Washington, D. C.
Spencer, J. H., Martinsville, Va.
Spilman, Gen. B. W., Warrenton, Va.
Stanard, W. G., Richmond, Va.
Staton, Mrs. James G., Williamston, N. C.
Stearnes, Arthur L., New York, N. Y.
Steiger, E., New York, N. Y.
Stettinius, Mrs. E. R., Dongan Hill, Staten Island, N. Y.
Stevens, B. F. and Brown, London, Eng.
Stevens, Prof. H. Morse, Berkeley, Cal.
Stewart, Miss Annie C., Brook Hill, Va.
Stewart, Miss E. Hope, Brook Hill, Va.
Stewart, Miss Norma, Brook Hill, Va.
Stewart, Miss Lucy W., Brook Hill, Va.
Stewart, Rev. J. Calvin, Richmond, Va.
Stewart, J. A., Louisville, Ky.
Stiles, Mrs. Barnett, Winslow, Arizona.
Stone, Miss Lucie, P., Hollins, Va.
Strother, Henry, Fort Smith, Ark.
Strother, James French, Welch, W. Va.
Strother, Hon. P. W., Pearisburg, Va.
Stuart, Hon. Henry C., Elk Garden, Va.
Symington, Miss Edith, Baltimore, Md.

Taliaferro, Mrs. Richard P., Ware Neck, Va.
Taylor, Dr. Fielding L., New York, N. Y.
Taylor, Jacquelin P., Richmond, Va.
Taylor, John M., Richmond, Va.
Taylor, Prof. T. U., Austin, Texas.
Taylor, W. E., Norfolk, Va.
Terhune, Mrs. E. T., New York, N. Y.
Thomas, Douglas H., Baltimore, Md.
Thompson, Miss George, Ft. Worth, Texas.

Thompson, Mrs. Maurice, Chicago, Ill.
Thompson, Mrs. W. H., Lexington, Ky.
Thornton, Mrs. Champe F., Norfolk, Va.
Thornton, R. G., Richmond, Va.
Throckmorton, C. Wickliffe, Boeme, Texas.
Thruston, R. C., Ballard, Louisville, Ky.
Tidball, Prof. Thomas A., Sewanee, Tenn.
Tiffany, Mrs. Louis McLane, Baltimore, Md.
Torrence, W. Clayton, Richmond, Va.
Traber, Mrs. Herman, Muskogee, Oklahoma
Travers, S. W., Richmond, Va.
Trippe, Mrs. M. W., New York, N. Y.
Tucker, H. St. George, Lexington, Va.
Tunstall, Richard B., Norfolk, Va.
Tunstall, Robert B., Norfolk, Va.
Turner, Rev. C. H. B., Waycross, Ga.
Turner, D. L., New York, N. Y.
Turner, Morton W., Roanoke, Va.
Tyler, Dr. Lyon G., Williamsburg, Va.

Valentine, B. B., Richmond, Va.
Valentine, E. V., Richmond, Va.
Valentine, G. G., Richmond, Va.
Valentine, M. S., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Victor, E. K., Richmond, Va.
Vincent, George A., Fairmount, W. Va.

Waggener, B. P., Atchison, Kan.
Walker, G. A., New York, N. Y.
Walker, J. G., Richmond, Va.
Walker, Norvell B., Richmond, Va.
Waller, E. P., Schenectady, N. Y.
Walling, Mrs. Willoughby, Chicago, Ill.
Ware, Mrs. L. C., Staunton, Va.
Watson, Mrs. A. M., Washington, D. C.
Washburne, Mrs. Mary M., Louisville, Ky.
Watts, Judge Legh R., Portsmouth, Va.
Wayland, Prof. J. W., Harrisonburg, Va.
Webster, Admiral Harrie, U. S. N., Richmond, Va.
Wellford, B. Rand, Richmond, Va.
Wertenbaker, Prof. T. G., Princeton University, Princeton, N. J.
White, J. B., Kansas City, Mo.
White, Miles, Jr., Baltimore, Md.
White, William H., Richmond, Va.
Whitner, Charles F., Atlanta, Ga.
Whitridge, Mrs. Wm. H., Baltimore, Md.
Whitty, J. H., Richmond, Va.
Wight, Mrs. Agnes D., Cockeysville, Md.
Willard, Mrs. Joseph E., American Embassy, Madrid, Spain.
Williams, E. Randolph, Richmond, Va.
Williams, Mrs. F. L., Bristol, R. I.
Williams, Langbourne M., Richmond, Va.
Williams, Mrs. S. W., Salem, Va.
Williamson, H. M., Portland, Oregon.
Willson, Mrs. Howard T., Virden, Ill.
Wilson, Col. Eugene T., U. S. A., Cristobal, Canal Zone.
Winston, James O., Kingston, N. Y.
Wise, Mrs. Barton, H., Richmond, Va.
Wise, Prof. Henry A., Norfolk, Va.
Wise, Col. Jennings C., Richmond, Va.
Wise, John C., M. D., U. S. N., Washington D. C.
Wise, Rear-Admiral Wm. C., U. S. N.
Wise, Wm. H., Chicago, Ill.
Withers, Alfred D., Roane's, Va
Woodhull, Mrs. Oliver J., San Antonio, Tex,
Woodward, Dr. E. L., The Plains, Virginia
Worsham, John C., Henderson, Ky.
Wortham, Coleman, Richmond, Va.
Wrenn, Rev. Virginius, Amelia C. H., Va.
Wright, E. E., New Orleans, La.
Wyatt, Wm. H., Jr., Richmond, Va.
Wynn., Mrs. James O., Atlanta. Ga.
Wynne, Miss Mae, S. M., Huntsville, Texas.
Wysor, Harry R., Muncie, Ind.

Yoakum, R. B., Leavenworth, Kan.
Yonge, Samuel H., Richmond, Va.

Zimmer, W. L., Petersburg, Va.

LIBRARIES—Annual Members.

American Geographical Society, New York, N. Y.

Boston Public Library, Boston, Mass.
Brooklyn Public Library, Brooklyn, N. Y.
Brown University Library, Providence, R. I.

California Society, S. A. R., Los Angeles, Cal.
Carnegie Free Library, Alleghany, Pa.
Carnegie Free Library, Nashville, Tenn.
Carnegie Library, Atlanta, Ga.
Carnegie Library, Pittsburgh, Pa.
Chicago Public Library, Chicago, Ill.
Chicago University Library, Chicago, Ill.
Cincinnati Public Library, Cincinnati, O.
Cleveland, Ohio, Public Library.
Coast Artillery School Library, Fort Monroe, Va.

Colonial Dames of State of New York, New York, N. Y.
Cornell University Library, Ithaca, N. Y.
Cossitt Library, Memphis, Tenn.

Department of Archives and History, Jackson, Miss.
Detroit Public Library, Detroit, Mich.

Georgetown University Library, Washington, D. C.
Goodwin Institute Library, Memphis, Tenn.
Grosvenor Pub. Library, Buffalo, N. Y.

Hampden-Sidney College Library, Hampden-Sidney, Va.
Hampton N. and A. Institute Library, Hampton, Va.
Handley Library, Winchester, Va.
Harvard University Library, Cambridge, Mass.

Illinois State Historical Library, Springfield, Ill.
Illinois Society S. A. R., Chicago, Ill.
Indiana State Library, Indianapolis.
Indianapolis Public Library, Indianapolis, Ind.
Iowa Historical Dept. of Des Moines, Ia.

Kansas City Public Library, Kansas City, Mo.

Lexington, Ky., Public Library.
Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.
Long Island Historical Society Library, Brooklyn, N. Y.
Los Angeles, Cal., Public Library.
Louisville Free Public Library, Louisville, Ky.
Lynn, Mass., Free Public Library.

Maine State Library, Augusta, Me.
Massachusetts State Library, Boston, Mass.
Mechanics Benevolent Association Library, Petersburg, Va.
Michigan State Library, Lansing, Mich.
Milwaukee Public Library, Milwaukee, Wis.
Minneapolis Athenaeum Library, Minneapolis, Minn.

Nebraska University Library, Lincoln, Neb.
Newberry Library, Chicago, Ill.
New Hampshire State Library, Concord, N. H.
Norfolk Public Library, Norfolk, Va.
Northwestern University Library, Evanston, Ill.

Oberlin College Library, Oberlin, Ohio.
Omaha Public Library, Omaha, Neb.
Ohio State Library, Columbus, Ohio.

Parliament Library, Ottawa, Canada.
Peabody College for Teachers Library, Nashville, Tenn.
Peabody Institute, Baltimore, Md.
Pennsylvania State College, State College, Pa.
Pennsylvania State Library, Harrisburg, Pa.
Peoria Public Library, Peoria, Ill.
Pequot Library, Southport, Conn.
Philadelphia Institute Free Library, Chestnut and 18th Sts., Philadelphia, Pa.
Philadelphia Law Association Library, Philadelphia, Pa.
Pratt Free Library, Baltimore, Md.
Princeton University Library, Princeton, N. J.

Randolph-Macon College Library, Ashland, Va.
Randolph-Macon Womans College, College Park, Va.

Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, Louisville, Ky.
State Department Library, Washington, D. C.
Stanford University Library, Cal.
St. Joseph, Mo., Public Library.
St. Louis Mercantile Library, St. Louis, Mo.
St. Louis Public Library, St. Louis, Mo.
Syracuse Public Library, Syracuse, N. Y.

Toronto Public Library, Toronto, Canada.

Union Theological Seminary Library, Richmond, Va.
University Club Library, New York, N. Y.
University of California Library, Berkeley, Cal.
University of Illinois Library, Urbanna, Ill.

University of Indiana Library, Bloomington, Ind.
University of Michigan Library, Ann Arbor, Mich.
University of Minnesota Library, Minneapolis, Minn.
University of North Carolina Library, Chapel Hill, N. C.
University of Virginia Library, Charlottesville, Va.
University of West Virginia Library, Morgantown, W. Va.

Vanderbilt University Library, Nashville, Tenn.
Virginia State Library, Richmond, Va.
Virginia Military Institute Library, Lexington, Va.
Virginia Polytechnic Institute Library, Blacksburg, Va.

War Department Library, Washington, D. C.
West Virginia Department of Archives and History, Charleston, W. Va.
Wheeling Public Library, Wheeling, W. Va.
Wyoming Historical and Geological Society, Wilkes-Barre, Pa.

Yale University Library, New Haven, Conn

LIBRARIES—Life Members.

Boston Athenaeum Library, Boston, Mass.

California State Library, Sacramento, Cal.
Columbia College Library, New York, N. Y.

Library Company, Philadelphia, Pa.
New York Public Library, New York, N. Y.
New York State Library, Albany, N. Y.

Richmond College Library, Richmond, Va.

Washington and Lee University Library Lexington, Va.

THE
VIRGINIA MAGAZINE
OF
HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

VOL. XXIV. APRIL, 1916. No. 2

REPORT OF THE JOURNEY OF FRANCIS LOUIS MICHEL FROM BERNE, SWITZERLAND, TO VIRGINIA, OCTOBER 2,(1) 1701-DECEMBER 1, 1702.

Part II

Translated and edited by Prof. Wm. J. Hinke, Ph. D.

Now I return again to York Town, where, as mentioned before, we arrived on April 8th. On one side lies York, opposite Closter [Gloucester]. On the following day the captain departed for Willemsburg, where the Governor resides, a distance of about 18 miles, to announce his arrival. At night he returned again. On the 10th we went to him to learn whether we could land. He replied, the Governor had been informed

(1) After the first part was in print, the translator noticed that he had failed to render one sentence correctly. It is the last sentence on page 37 of the Magazine, continued on page 38. It should read as follows: "The fourth and last kind are flying [squirrels], very small and pretty, of brown color, but with a white belly. They fly only in the evening or at night. Instead of wings they have loose skin along the side of their body which they spread when they fly or jump."

On page 19, note *, a misprint was overlooked. It should read "Mr. Stanard very kindly furnished notes 30–33, 36, 37, 40–42, and 49."

The editor of the *Magazine*, Mr. Stanard, very kindly contributes the following notes to this part: Nos. 2a, 3, 5, 7, 11, 12, 24, 25, 26, 27, 40, 43.

of our arrival, (because of the four French families, with whom I traveled). He congratulated us on our arrival. We were also allowed to go where we pleased. We asked him [the captain] for permission to leave our clothes and the rest of our goods in the vessel until we had explored the land and had found a suitable place for us to settle in. He consented to this. Together with two Frenchmen (the name of the one was Peir, the other Sabattier, (2) honest and good people) I had myself at once brought to shore, on the Closter [Gloucester] side. It gave us great pleasure when we could again step on land for the first time. It was in the most beautiful season of the year, the flowers, trees, birds, their song and everything we saw bore no comparison to European things. The lovely fragrance of the many trees that blossomed, their strange species and leaves delighted us not a little.

After we had passed through the forest for several miles, we saw at our right and left plantations or farms (for as already indicated people do not live closely together, but each one selects a suitable place, where he finds good soil, pasture and water.) Finally we became curious to know how the houses looked inside and what food people were eating. We entered one which stood near the road, but no one was at home, except the maid servant, whom we asked for some water. She gave us also some food, a species of small white beans, cooked with bacon, which had been prepared for the overseers of the slaves. It was good. The food prepared for the negroes that work was pounded Turkish maize, cooked in water, called hominy, a healthy food. The bread was made of the above-mentioned corn, baked on the fire(2a). We did not like it very much and could hardly eat it. The bread, baked in an oven, is better. Bread is also made of wheat, but not for the slaves or servants.

Before I continue my journey I find it necessary to report a good habit or custom which prevails there with regard to strangers and travelers. Namely, it is possible to travel through the whole country without money, except when ferry-

(2) Pierre Sabattie occurs several times as godfather in the baptismal record of King William Parish.

(2a) This was the ash cake now almost as unfamiliar to Virginians as to Michel.

ing across a river, which costs not less than 1 bitt or 4 Batzen. In the first place, there is little money in the country, the little that is found there consists mostly of Spanish coins, namely dollars. Tobacco is the money with which payments are made. There are also few ordinaries or inns. Moreover, it is not a country in which much traveling is done, though the inhabitants visit one another. Even if one is willing to pay, they do not accept anything, but they are rather angry, asking, whether one did not know the custom of the country. At first we were too modest to go into the houses to ask for food and lodging, which the people often recognized, and they admonished us not to be bashful, as this was the custom of rich and poor. We soon became accustomed to it. Thus we continued our journey.

It was our purpose to travel to Mattabany(3), where Swiss people were living, especially a man named Willion, known to me from military service, another of the Pays de Vaux de Bex(4), back of the bailiwick of Aehlen, who was lieutenant captain under Sacconay. After we had proceeded some distance, we saw the Closter [Gloucester] Church,(5) standing solitary in the forest, which I have already mentioned as being one of the most beautiful, built of bricks. From there we continued through the forest. We met a man on horseback (it is a strange sight to see anyone traveling on foot) whom we asked about the way. For the guidance of those not knowing the way it is only necessary to watch the signs that are found on trees along the great high road. Every year white places are cut into the trees with hatchets, by the removal of the bark. There are so many ways that otherwise one could easily go astray. There are many paths that lead to plantations, others have been made by the cattle or the game. The man on horseback just mentioned, asked us where we came from and where we intended to go to. He told us that not far from that place Swiss people were living. I was anxious to see them.

(3) *Mattabany* (*Mattapony*)—Willion, is he known? Possible Willeroy, a name still found in King William County.

(4) Pays de Vaux de Bex is the Canton of Waadt in Switzerland, called Pays de Vaux in French. Bex is a small town near the Rhone river, South-east of Aigle, to which Michel refers by the German name Aehlen.

(5) Gloucester Church. From the statement that he soon reached the Swiss people at Mattapony, this was probably Petsworth Church.

We reached the house in a short time. I expected to find [French] Swiss, but met there the four sisters Lerber(6) from Berne. I do not want to stop to describe their condition. It would be very desirable if they had someone, who could manage their place and secure servants for them. Their mother died shortly after their arrival. From there we continued our journey. In the evening we came to a kind-hearted man, of whom we inquired about the way, but, as it was late, he did not want us to proceed, but gave us good lodging. He showed us an unoccupied farm, which he was willing to let us have for a year without rent, but we did not like it. There are many people who have plantations for rent. Two to five pounds secures a good dwelling, and as much land as one can work. Most of the wealth consists in slaves or negroes, for if one has many workmen, much food-stuff and tobacco can be produced. These negroes are brought annually in large numbers from Guiné and Jamaica, (the latter of which belongs to England) on English ships. They can be selected according to pleasure, young and old, men and women. They are entirely naked when they arrive, having only corals of different colors around their neck and arms. They usually cost from 18-30 pounds. They are life-long slaves and good workmen after they have become acclimated. Many die on the journey or in the beginning of their stay here, because they receive meagre food and are kept very strictly. Both sexes are usually bought, which increase afterwards. The children like the parents must live in slavery. Even if they desire to become Christians, it is only rarely permitted, because the English law prescribes that after seven years' service they are [in that case] to be freed,

(6) The following note is found in the "Berne Year book," page 83f. about these ladies. They were probably the daughters of Francis Ludwig Lerber, Secretary to the city treasurer of Berne, who had the following daughters: Anna Barbara, born 1675; Anna Magdalena, born 1676; Catharine, born 1678; Maria, born 1680; Johanna Margaretha, born 1682; and Barbara Elizabeth, born 1685. In the proceedings against the Annabaptists at that time the "Lerber sisters" are mentioned. It is, therefore, probable, though not certain that they left Switzerland, because of their faith. In Brock's *Huguenot Emigration to Virginia*, page 33, "Madame Herbert and her four daughters," is mentioned as a Swiss settler. Could they be identical with these ladies?

(7) in accordance with the Mosaic law. When a slave is bought from the captain of a ship, he is not paid at once, but the slave so bought usually plants tobacco, in order that the captain may be paid with it. Lately, before my departure, I was over night on a ship, which several days before had come from Guiné* with 230 slaves. They get them there for a small sum, as also gold and ivory, but a hundred of them died on the journey to Virginia. It is said to be a very unhealthy country. Half of the sailors died also, including the brother of the captain, who had sailed along as clerk. The others were sickly and yellow in their faces. It often happens that the ships must be left in Guiné, because everybody dies of sickness. The captain, to whom I refer, was named Schmid. He almost shared the same fate. I was surprized at the animal-like people, The savages [Indians] are a far better breed. Among such people food tastes so badly, that one can hardly stand it. The negro fever is due to this, because it is their common sickness. It clings to people for a long time and emaciates them very much.

To return to my former journey After five days we came to my countrymen, who had arrived in this country two years ago(8). We were surprized at the good condition they had reached in so short a time. Especially one of them, born at Neuenstatt(9), was well provided with house, cattle and grain. They are the last settlers on the side of Mattabany. Mr. Willon had not become accustomed to such work and did not have the means at that time to buy slaves. Besides, his house burnt down once with all of its contents. They entertained us according to their ability. We stayed with them for two days. But their conditions [of settlement] which they had made

(7) Was there such a law? Under various Virginia laws servants over 19 years of age, coming in without indentures were to serve five years. In 1667, the Assembly enacted that baptism of slaves did not free them. As the parish registers show, the baptism of slaves soon became common.

(*) This is French Guinea in West Africa, called Guinée by the French.

(8) This Swiss colony at Mattapony was probably a branch of the Huguenot colony at Manakintown. Michel dates its establishment in the year 1700.

(9) Neuenstatt, usually called by its French name Neuveville, lies at the Lake Bienne, in the Canton of Berne, Switzerland.

with Major Borell(10), did not suit us. They were to plant and clear the land for fourteen years. Meanwhile he would advance to them whatever they needed. They in return were to give him one-third of the cattle, together with several 100 pounds of tobacco annually, repay the money loaned and at the end of the above mentioned years he should be free to decide whether he would allow them to stay there any longer or not. This agreement did not suit us, although it [the settlement] was located at a cheerful, healthy and good place. We bade them farewell, hoping that we would find a more suitable place. It is very important to make inquiries first before settling. We traveled on the other side of the stream, between two rivers for about 50 miles till we came to Westpoint,(11) where two rivers part, as stated above. As the river is very broad and the ferryman lives on the other side, it is customary to make a smoke. As soon as he notices it, he comes across. Each person must pay one shilling as fare.

We had forty miles to travel to Willemsburg to greet the Governor. Mr. Peir had a letter of recommendation to give to him, which is of much assistance in such places. We came to see him one morning, when he had sent for us and had read the letter. We had to go with him to prayers because it was time for them. Afterwards he asked us what our desire was. We told him, namely, to settle at a favorable place and we asked him to give us advice. He promised to remember us and told his Secretary [Edmund Jenings] to take us to the Bishop, who is also called President Blair, with instructions to inform us what the custom and usage of the country was. Before leaving he ordered dinner to be served to us, with command to treat us well. The servants, however, are not on good terms with the French and did not carry out the order right. They gave us soup with fresh ham and some small beer. But the butler took us into the cellar, filled with all sorts of strange

(10) This was no doubt Major Lewis Burwell, of "Carter's Creek," Gloucester County, and "Kings Creek," York County. He was a member of the Council and died Dec. 19, 1710.

(11) Westpoint, at the head of York River, where the Mattapony and Pamunkey meet, was on a large tract of land owned by Col. John West, Jr., nephew of Lord Delaware. In 1691, a town was established here which was named Delaware in 1705.

drinks. He gave us some English stout, very strong, afterwards Rhine wine. The Governor drinks no wine nor strong drink. From there we went with the Secretary to Mr. Blair, who received us courteously and drank to our welcome from silver vessels. After he had been informed of our desire, he laid before us a number of points in the French language as well as he could (for he could speak only a little French). He told us that it depended upon us entirely, whether we would take up some college land according to custom, as much as we desired, and for three years without taxes. After that time we would have to pay the royal taxes, namely, every male person who had reached the 16th year, annually 100 pounds of tobacco and about the same amount for the Church. These are all the taxes. When this small amount is paid, one enjoys freedom and protection in this country. This proposition suited us much better than the first at Mattabany. Nevertheless, in view of the worship, my companions preferred to see Manigkinton first, for they have a preacher there paid by the King. The soil there is also much better and more fertile than in most places in Virginia. Besides, the settlers there have seven years in which they pay nothing. We therefore postponed decision, wishing neither to refuse nor to accept this offer, but we took it under advisement. On the same day we went to Mr. Foüs, [Fouace] to whom I have already referred. He gave us however a short answer. The reason was that he had done much for the French but they had rewarded him ill. He told us that when twelve Frenchmen were together, ten of them were no good and not worth getting a lodging. We attempted to excuse ourselves as well as we could, but it was of no avail. He asked whether we had the mark [of our worth] on us, by which we could be recognized. Later, when he heard from our captain how we had acted on the ship, he showed us much kindness and love.

After we had been away till the 20th of April, we returned to our people, who were very anxious for us and were afraid that something had happened to us. In the morning the captain informed us that he had to sail to Westpoint and he would like to have us remove our goods, which was agreeable to us. We had

our boxes and barrels removed from our sloop to another. The captain gave us two sailors to take us to Kinskrig [Kingscreek](12) not far from Willemsburg. Then we took leave of him. He promised to be ready at all times to help us, except one of us, an aged man, who had lost his wife on the journey, named Savori. He would have to pay his passage, because he had made the captain angry several times and had had many quarrels with him. As soon as we had left the ship, they weighed their anchors and sailed 40 miles farther up into the country. We made only 5 miles tonight, then anchored. On the following day, however, with good wind we sailed to the above mentioned Kingscreek. We ran against an oyster-bank and had to wait there for two hours, till the tide came. At three o'clock we reached our destination, where we left the boat to look for a place in the nearest houses to store and get shelter for our goods. There was on a hill a house next to our people, belonging to a man Refhubert. All of us made a weekly agreement with him for ten shillings. We unloaded the goods and brought them on land that evening, but because there was so much of them and it was already late we could not get them into the house. We intended to keep watch with them. Towards midnight we went there all together with rifles to watch. We made a fire, but soon there came such a thunder-storm and rain that our fire was quickly extinguished. We lay down under a sack with covers and mantles, but we could hardly stand it half an hour. Finally we got very wet and as no improvement could be expected and as it rained still faster, we left our post. We had the greatest trouble to get up the hill, which was overgrown with trees, and find our way to the house. In the morning we found everything in good condition. We carried our goods that day into the house and counselled about taking a new journey. Together with Sabattier I was appointed to travel to Manigkinton, which was about 75 miles distant. On the 23rd we started on our journey, telling the others to take good care of themselves. I had a map of the country with me which was very serviceable. I also took my rifle and bayonet along, partly to shoot partridges, which we

(12) Kings Creek flows into York River.

had met on our last journey in large numbers, partly for the sake of security, although there is not the least danger to travel in that country because of wicked people. But in case of travels to and beyond the frontiers, none goes without a rifle because of the savages.

After a three days' journey we came to Falensgrig [Falling creek] during which time nothing of note happened to us. We found good lodging places everywhere and since the people love strangers, we had a good time. During the day we shot turtle-doves which are found there in large numbers, together with some partridges. From there it is 25 miles to the [French] colony through the wilderness. On the way there were no houses, hence we were concerned about going astray. We had received the best possible instructions as to the situation of the place. Hence we left the river on our right. Thus we could not go astray, as the place lies on the river. In the morning we started our journey. We met some countrymen armed, who came from a plantation. We asked whether they came from a hunt, they said no, but that it was not safe in this region because of the savages. After we had followed till noon a path, pointed out to us, over hills and valleys, we finally came to two roads and did not know which one to take. We took the one on the right hand, which we followed till evening. We saw no end and became impatient thinking that we had missed the right way. The outlook was for a thunderstorm and night was approaching. We marched, according to the best of our ability, till we saw a little house, but found no sign that anybody lived there. We continued a little farther, when we saw a number of huts. But they were all abandoned. Finally we saw smoke, which gladdened us not a little. When we reached it, it was a small house with no one in it, and as the rain began to fall, we went in and started a fire. The house was in sad condition regarding beds and furniture, nor was food there in abundance, only a piece of game and a little bread. From there we came in half an hour to a Frenchman, who was cutting down a tree. He told us that we

were near Manigkinton,(13) which we reached soon. I recognized at once a man from Aargau,(14) who gave me lodging and was very glad to meet a countryman. On the following morning I visited two French Swiss, named Nicon and Detoit.(15) The first is lieutenant of the place. They are richly provided with everything. The governor dined with him recently. The captain or head of the place is a surgeon by profession, named Chaltin,(16) who had long resided at Ifferton [Yverdon, Switzerland]. We went to the pastor, Mr. Dujoux.(17) Since his house burnt down recently he lodged in the church, which is still very small, but £200 have been set aside to build a new church. Conditions here differed in every respect from those of other places. Things that are grown are there in such abundance that many Englishmen come a distance of 30 miles to get fruit, which they mostly exchange for cattle. Gardens are filled there with all kinds of fruit, especially the garden of the man from Aargau. The cattle are fat because of the abundant pasture. The soil is not sandy, as it is generally in Virginia, but it is a heavy, rich soil. Each person takes 50

(13) Beverley in his *History of Virginia*, ed. 1725, part IV, page 45, describes the settlement of the Huguenots at Manakintown as follows: "In the year 1699, there went over about three hundred of these, and the year following about two hundred more, and so on, till there arrived in all, between seven and eight hundred men, women and children." They were settled on a tract of 10,000 acres about twenty-five miles above the falls of the James River, on the south side of the river, in what is now Powhatan County. The district had formerly been occupied by the Monacan tribe of Indians, after whom the settlement retained its name Monacan (Manakin)-town. A disagreement in the second year of their settlement caused many to leave, so that in May 1701 there were about 250 settlers left. See Brock, *Huguenot Emigration to Virginia*.

(14) Aargan is a Canton in the northern part of Switzerland, adjoining the Canton of Basle.

(15) The nearest approach to Nicon is Abraham Nicod, who came to Manakin-town as a member of the first colony, see Brock, l. c., p. 45. Pre. Dutoit is mentioned in a list of French Protestants in King William Parish, of about the year 1714, They may be identical. See Brock, l. c., p. 74.

(16) Chaltin is probably identical with Stephen (Etienne) Chastain, who came with his wife Martha as a member of the first colony (Brock, l. c., p. 45). They had four children (Brock, l. c., p. 21), among whom were probably Jean and Pierre Castain. They were prominent about 1714. Brock, l. c., p. 74.

(17) Rev. Benjamin De Joux, formerly pastor of the Reformed Church at Lyon, headed the second colony. He served as pastor till 1701. An inventory of his estate is dated April 1, 1701, see Brock, l. c., pp. VIII, 13, 26.

paces in width, the length extends as far as one cares to make it or is willing to work it.(18) I have already mentioned that the Indians had a town there and how it was destroyed. Since that time trees have not grown very large, so that in a short time and with little effort a large place could be cleared for building purposes. I have seen there the most awful wild grapevines, whose thickness and height are incredible. There are several kinds of grapes, the best are as large as a small nut. They make fairly good wine, a beginning has been made to graft them, the prospects are fine.(19) It is much healthier there than towards the ocean. The country is full of game and fish. The Indians often visit there, bringing game, rum and other smaller things. There is a good opportunity to trade with skins. They [the Indians] often bring pottery and when desired fill it with corn. There are more than 60 [French] families there.(20) They all live along the river.

Lately two wealthy gentlemen came and had buildings erected there, because of its convenient location. In a word, we saw that this place would be very useful to us. To further our end the minister gave us a letter, signed by the officials of the place and addressed to the Governor, requesting that we might enjoy the same privileges(21) as they did, which was later granted by the State Council. We left there much pleased and returned to our people, where we made everything ready for our journey thither. We rented a sloop which carried our baggage till Falensgrig [Falling creek]. Thence with carts and horses it was brought to the proper place, where we occupied our land. I handed mine over to Mr. Dutoit, who will manage it in my absence. I instructed him to make every preparation, so that,

(18) Each family at Manakin-town was allowed 133 acres, see Brock, l. c., p. 71.

(19) This is corroborated by Beverley, who writes: "The last year they began an Essay of Wine, which they made of Wild Grapes gather'd in the Woods; the effect of which was a Noble strong-bodied Claret, of a curious flavour." Ed. 1725, part IV, p. 46.

(20) On May 10, 1701, Col. Randolph, Capt. Eppes and Capt. Webb visited Manakintown, when they found there about seventy huts, see Brock, l. c., p. 42.

(21) On December 5, 1700, the French settlement at Manakintown was created into a separate parish, King William's Parish, with their own minister, the settlers being freed from taxation for a period of seven years, see Brock, l. c., p. 60.

when I return, he can carry out my intention. I regretted not a little that I was not sufficiently provided with means and hence compelled to return. About 400 dollars are necessary in order to set up a man properly, namely to enable him to buy two slaves, with whom in two years a beautiful farm can be cleared, because the trees are far apart. Afterwards the settler must be provided with cattle, a horse, costing at the usual price 4 lbs., a cow with calf 50 shillings, a mare [?] 10 shillings. Furniture and clothes, together with tools and provisions for a year, must also be on hand. It is indeed possible to begin with less and succeed, but then three or four years pass by before one gets into a good condition. The one who is not used to work in great heat, becomes sick and must suffer much, before he can make progress by his work alone. By the above method a man is put into such a condition the first year, that he can be happy and enjoy life. It is indeed said truthfully that there is no other country, where it is possible with so few means and so easily to make an honest living and be in easy circumstances. For two servants can raise a bigger crop than one needs; the cattle increase incredibly fast without trouble; fruit grows in abundance. When a tree or something else is planted one must be surprized to see it grow up so soon and bear fruit. Besides, in the gardens grows whatever one desires. The cows are pasturing round about the house during the whole year. They yield enough butter, cheese and milk. In addition there is no lack of game and fish. Besides it is a quiet land devoted to our religion, and he who wants to enjoy honest exercise finds opportunities enough for it, especially the one who loves field work or hunting. It is, therefore, possible to live an honest life, quietly and contentedly. Much evil is absent there, because there is no opportunity for it.

On the other hand, I recognized that it was more useful to me to first explore the land and gain a sufficient knowledge of trade, so that, if the Lord will bring me back again safely, there may be no doubt that I shall have the pleasure of enjoying it. The man who wants to take up trading needs not to do more than two things in order to succeed. For one thing, to double the money is almost inevitable for one who has experience in it [trade].

Poor people, such namely as ask for alms, are not seen. If one is disabled in means and strength, the county keeps him.

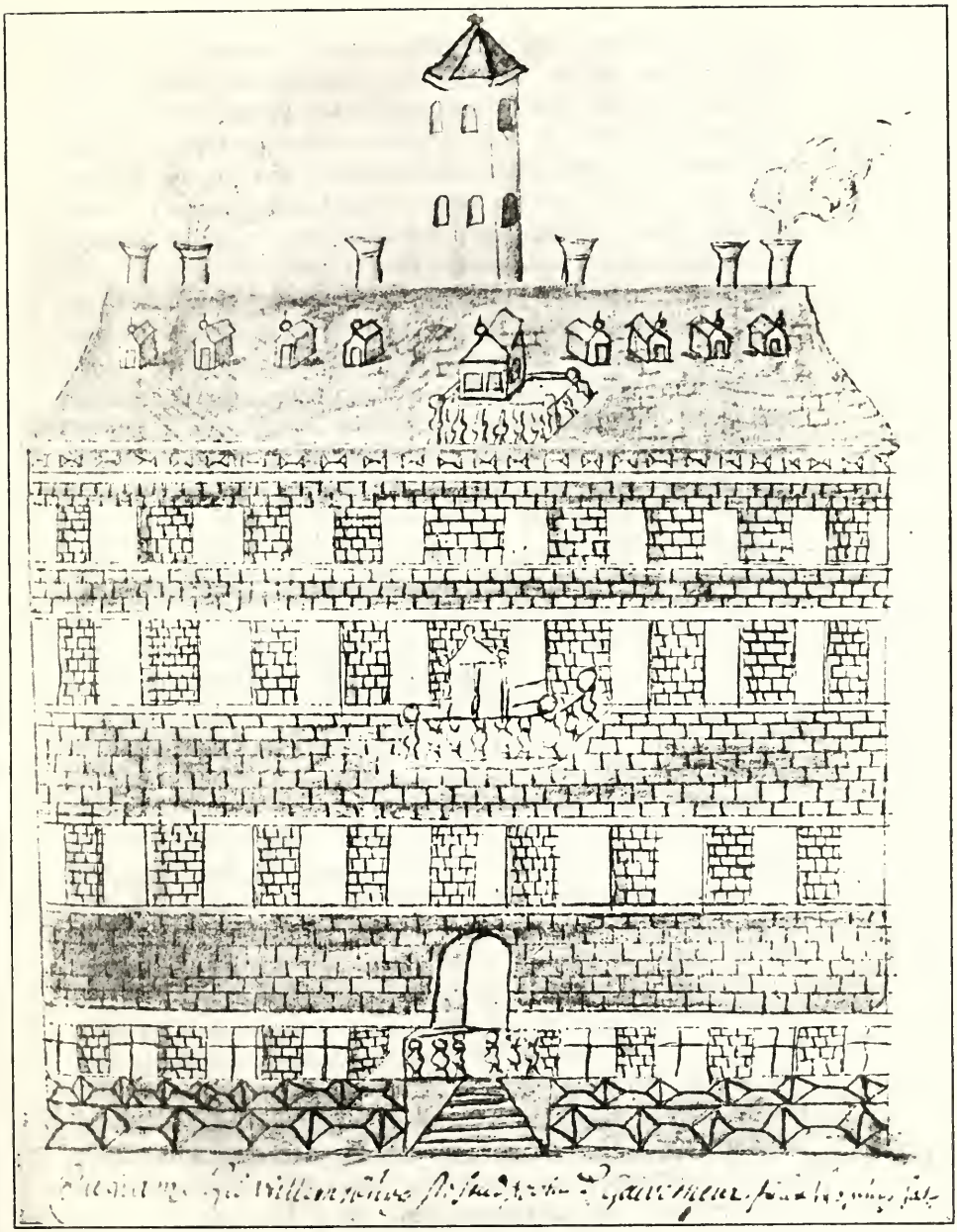
If one wants to hire out, as there are some who do so, he can get annually from 4 to 6 pounds from merchants; the wealthiest gentlemen do not pay more than 10 pounds. In short, provisions are there in abundance. It is a land for people, who desire with small means to reach a comfortable living and do not care for society and luxury.

After I had stayed in Manigkinton for several days, on my second visit, and had received from my countrymen, as well as from the others, much kindness, I took leave. With the hope that I would soon see them again, I returned alone through the wilderness and lost my way, because, when I reached a path, I thought it was the way, but it was only used by the game. After several hours it suddenly ended, which dumbfounded me not a little. After much trouble and walking about I found the right road again. I saw much game. After traveling four days I reached Kinskrig [Kingscreek] near Willemsburg at our first lodging place, where I had left most of my baggage, namely what I needed for the return journey and what I wanted to sell. As the time had been fixed when the fleet was to sail for England I sold all my merchandise, a part at the house, but most of it at Willemsburg. I was well pleased, as I could dispose of nearly everything. One who has no experience makes many mistakes, especially when taking in money, which consists mostly in Spanish piasters and is paid by weight. I also made a mistake in not exchanging everything for tobacco, but, as I shall soon report, I did not want to return this year.

Meanwhile, about the middle of May, a small French frigate arrived from Ireland, which announced the sad news of the death of King William. A few days later four warships reached Quiquedam which confirmed this report and brought a letter from the English Government to the Governor, with the order to announce the death of the late King(22) and to proclaim Queen Anne, which caused general grief and consternation. The Governor caused the order, which he had received, to

(22) King William III, had died March 19, 1702.

be read from the pulpits of his province and he called out the militia of the six nearest counties to appear about the 18th of May under arms before his residence. Meanwhile he caused everything to be in readiness, which was necessary for a memorial service of the King, as well as for the proclamation of and rejoicing over the new Queen. He also asked the Indians to be present, who appeared at the appointed time with two queens together with forty of their most distinguished warriors and servants. Inquiry was made whether any one knew how to set off fireworks. Several from the warships volunteered who with meagre knowledge made the preparations. Three theatres [grand-stands] were erected before the college where the fireworks were to be set off. On the appointed day a large number of people appeared with as well as without arms. The celebration began on a Thursday morning. The armed contingents, on foot as well as on horse, were drawn up in line. Two batteries were also mounted and a tent was pitched, where the bishop delivered an oration on the King's death. The armed men were then drawn up before the college in a threefold formation, in such a way that the college building formed one side. Then there were soldiers on both sides and also opposite, making three divisions, so that the calvary and the dragoons were stationed on the two wings and the infantry in the center. I have already given their number as about 2000. As can be seen from the drawing, the college has three balconies. On the uppermost were the buglers from the warships, on the second, oboes and on the lowest violinists, so that when the ones stopped the others began. Sometimes they all played together. When the proclamation of the King's death was to be made they played very movingly and mournfully. Then the constable appeared with the scepter. It was like the English standards [flags], which were woven with gold, covered with crape. Likewise those who carried them were dressed in mourning. Then followed the Governor in mourning, as also his white horse, whose harness was draped with black. The death of King William was then announced by the Secretary. Afterwards the Governor ordered the rifles reversed under the arms and with mournful



"THE COLLEGE STANDING IN WILLIAMSBURG IN WHICH THE GOVERNOR HAS HIS RESIDENCE, 1702"

(Michel's crude drawing shows the first college building which was burnt in 1705. It had a high basement, with three stories and a half above.)

music they marched with the clergy to the above named tent, where a touching oration was delivered, which caused many people to shed tears. After considerable marching and countermarching, the troops were ordered back to their former place [before the college] holding their rifles as is customary. It was now noon. The musicians began to play a lively tune. Then the constable appeared in a green suit, the scepter no longer draped. The Governor, who had retired, appeared in blue uniform, covered with braid. He had also exchanged his horse. The Secretary then read publicly, while heads were uncovered everywhere, the royal letter and edict, that the second daughter of the departed and late King James had been chosen and crowned Queen, in accordance with royal decree and law, with this added command to render her obedience and dutiful homage. Then everybody shouted three times Hurrah! that is, may she live. They waved their hats in the air, gave three salutes with the cannons as well as with the small arms. After this was done, the arms were stacked. Then the Governor caused most of those present, i. e., the most prominent people, to be entertained right royally, the ordinary persons received each a glass of rum or brandy with sugar.

After the meal was finished, the troops were again drawn up in line as before and marched to the State House which is under construction, at a distance of about three rifle shots, where the new Queen was proclaimed. Thence they marched to another place, called Anna Land, where the same proclamation was read as at the first place. Finally it began to grow dark (it ought to be stated that in this country day and night, in summer and winter are not more than one hour shorter or longer). As there were not enough houses to lodge all the people, they had to be content to camp under the open sky.

At night the Governor entertained again as at noon, the various toasts were repeatedly answered by cannons and buglers. A master [of ceremonies], who was stationed on one of the bridges, was considered the most expert and boasted of his skill. But the result showed that he did not succeed in gaining much honor. In order to preserve his reputation he acted as if the fire had fallen unintentionally into the fireworks,

for he blew up everything at once in a great blaze and smoke. As there were all kinds of fireworks, many and large rockets, he like others had to run and he had his clothes burnt. Many regretted the accident, but others saw clearly, that it had been set on fire intentionally, in order that his false boasts and clumsiness might not come to light. When the proper time had come, the Governor mounted his horse to superintend the rest of the fireworks himself. The college was full of the leading people, to see them [the fireworks], as also a large number of people outside; for such a performance had never been seen nor held there there before, the windows were set with a double row of candles, the musicians played as best they could, the buglers were especially good. When it was to begin the Governor asked if they were ready. They answered: yes. Then he commanded them to set off the fireworks. This was done with a reversed rocket, which was to pass along a string to an arbor, where prominent ladies were seated, but it got stuck half way and exploded. Two stars were to be made to revolve through the fireworks, but they succeeded no better than with the rockets. In short, nothing was successful, the rockets also refused to fly up, but fell down archlike, so that it was not worth while seeing. Most of the people, however, had never seen such things and praised them highly. The one who had set his part on fire carried off the highest praise, because they thought he had done something extraordinary. The fireworks were very expensive, but there was not much diversion for one who had seen much more than these. I had taken my place in the highest part of the tower on the [college] building, whence the best outlook was to be had by day and night. As it was eleven o'clock at night and my lodging place was two miles away, being also compelled to pass over a miserable, misleading road, I stayed up there over night, although I was afraid that, if somebody should find me there, it might be misinterpreted of me, being a stranger, but no one came. When day dawned, I left the building, without anybody noticing me. On this day the troops were again drawn up in line. They rendered the oath of allegiance and the Governor ordered some military drills. After much marching and skirmishing noon

for he blew up everything at once in a great blaze and smoke. As there were all kinds of fireworks, many and large rockets, he like others had to run and he had his clothes burnt. Many regretted the accident, but others saw clearly, that it had been set on fire intentionally, in order that his false boasts and clumsiness might not come to light. When the proper time had come, the Governor mounted his horse to superintend the rest of the fireworks himself. The college was full of the leading people, to see them [the fireworks], as also a large number of people outside; for such a performance had never been seen nor held there there before, the windows were set with a double row of candles, the musicians played as best they could, the buglers were especially good. When it was to begin the Governor asked if they were ready. They answered: yes. Then he commanded them to set off the fireworks. This was done with a reversed rocket, which was to pass along a string to an arbor, where prominent ladies were seated, but it got stuck half way and exploded. Two stars were to be made to revolve through the fireworks, but they succeeded no better than with the rockets. In short, nothing was successful, the rockets also refused to fly up, but fell down archlike, so that it was not worth while seeing. Most of the people, however, had never seen such things and praised them highly. The one who had set his part on fire carried off the highest praise, because they thought he had done something extraordinary. The fireworks were very expensive, but there was not much diversion for one who had seen much more than these. I had taken my place in the highest part of the tower on the [college] building, whence the best outlook was to be had by day and night. As it was eleven o'clock at night and my lodging place was two miles away, being also compelled to pass over a miserable, misleading road, I stayed up there over night, although I was afraid that, if somebody should find me there, it might be misinterpreted of me, being a stranger, but no one came. When day dawned, I left the building, without anybody noticing me. On this day the troops were again drawn up in line. They rendered the oath of allegiance and the Governor ordered some military drills. After much marching and skirmishing noon

came, when the dinner, as on the preceding day, began with much pomp and sumptuousness. After it was over, the Governor showed his liberality by arranging a rifle match. When the soldiers had finished, no one was allowed to shoot except those born in the country and some Indians. The prizes consisted of rifles, swords, saddles, bridles, boots, money and other things. When most of the shooting was done, two Indians were brought in, who shot with rifles and bows so as to surprize us and put us to shame. I shall now relate of these people as much as I was able to learn.

As mentioned above the representatives and principal men of four different tribes, about forty in number, appeared on the appointed day. First of all, there is in this country, pretty far up in the wilderness, a large people, governed by an emperor. They have not come into the colony to inflict damage, because for one thing they are afraid of English power, but especially because they are unable to flee from the cavalry, as they have but few wild horses of which they can make use. If the English hear the least report, they mount their horses and hunt them up in the wilderness, whoever falls into their hands is doomed to death. Then they also remember their neighbors, most of whom were killed in the earlier wars. Some years ago the emperor offered to the Governor several thousand men, to use them together with the English troops in fighting against the Indians in Canada, who at times travel great distances to inflict damage on the English and the Indians in Virginia. But the Governor answered him, that he was neither afraid of the Indians of Canada nor of others and he thanked him for his offer. Those who survived the recent wars, who were at first regarded as one with them, are subject to the King of England. They pay annually a certain number of beaver and otter skins as tribute and as a sign of their submission. Some years ago one of the subject chiefs was brought to England, upon the order of the English King, where he received more honor and attention than he had expected. He was sent back well dressed and with presents.

Those who are still alive, are four different nations.(23) In summer they stay in the forests here and there for the sake of hunting, but the permanent homes of one of the nations are at the Potomac(24) River, several hundred miles inland or in the wilderness. Another nation dwells at the Rabahanac River,(25) far up in the country, the third not far from Manigkinton,(26) the fourth along the ocean, between Virginia and Carolina(27). Those who were present at the proclamation brought with them as much as they could carry of all kinds of wild animal skins, prepared or fresh. They prepare them entirely white. They also brought a large number of baskets, carried on the arms, of different colors, made very artistically. The material is a kind of root(28). They weave into them all kinds of animals, flowers and other strange things, very beautifully. Everything that they bring is bought to send it as a present to England. They also make tobacco pipes, very beautifully cut out and formed. Their hats are small, round above and well closed, as the drawing shows.

They have no clothes, except what they get through trade with the English(29). They wear them when they have to go the Christians, which happens once a year, at the annual muster of the troops, in order to show them the power [of the English]. Their loins and feet are then covered with a little piece of skin. They are well formed brown people, of ordinary size, but a little smaller than we. They have small fierce eyes set deep in their heads, black hair, hanging down upon their shoulders, most of them, however, have it cut short, except the women, who wear long, black hair. When they are summoned, their

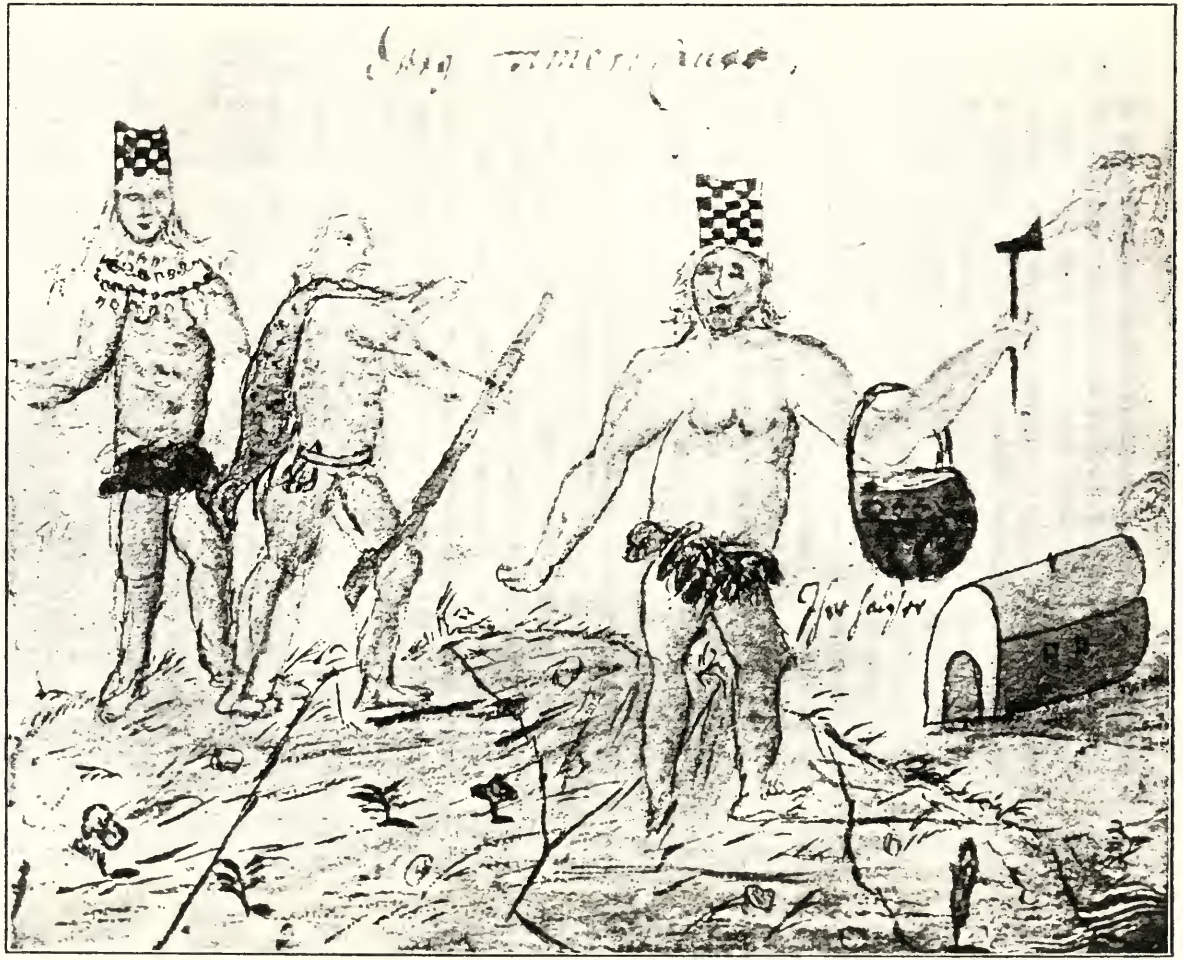
(23) The same statement is found in Jones, *Present State of Virginia*, 1724, p. 18: "But the tributary Indians, of which there are but four small nations in Virginia on this side of the Mountains, Keep to the Bounds allowed them."

(24) Indian settlement at Potomac, Rappahannock, &c. See "The Powhatan Confederacy Past and Present," by James Mooney, in the *American Anthropologist*, January-March 1907.

(25)
(26) } For these notes see reference as under (24).
(27)

(28) According to Beverley, *History*, 1725, BookIII, pp. 7, 62, the Indians made their baskets of silk grass.

(29) This does not agree with Beverley, *History*, 1725, Book III, pp. 3-7, who describes at length the summer and winter clothes of the Indians.



king or queen, as also their princes and nobles (but with some difference) wear crowns of bark,(30) a little more than a buckle wide, round and open above, with white and brown stripes, half an inch long, set in beautifully in spiral form, so that no bark is visible. The women, especially the queen and her three servants, were overhung with such things, strung on big and small threads or something similar, in place of chains.(31) I wondered what kind of material it was. I examined, therefore, the finery of one of the maids of the queen. I cannot compare it to anything better than to strips of leather, hung over the harness of horses in this country [Switzerland]. They had perhaps three pounds of such material hanging around their neck and arms. They are not unfriendly and ugly people, but their language is very wonderful, so that I cannot describe how it sounds and how they change their voice.

Regarding their religion, I have heard from reliable people, who have had much intercourse with them that they fear Satan, who torments them frequently(32). They also say that water is stronger than fire, because fire can be extinguished by water, hence water was to be feared and honored more. They further believe that if they are disobedient to one of their superiors or kill one of their people or live badly otherwise, that after their death they will come into a land in the north, cold and evil, but those who live honorably, according to their

(30) This crown is also described by Beverley, ed. 1725, part III, p. 2: "The people of condition of both sexes wear a sort of coronet on their Heads, from 4 to 6 inches broad, open at the top and composed of Peak or Beads, or else both interwoven together, and worked into Figures, made by a nice mixture of the Colours. Sometimes they wear a Wreath of Dyed Furs." Plate 3 facing p. 5 of Beverley's account shows such a coronet.

(31) Michel refers evidently to what Beverley, *History*, 1725, III, 58f. calls "wampon peak." These, he says, "they wear instead of Medals before or behind their Neck, and use the Peak, Runtees and Pipes for Coronets, Bracelets, Belts or long Strings, hanging down before their Breast, or else they lace their Garments with them."

(32) Devil Worship by the Indians is also alluded to by Beverley (ed. 1725, part III, p. 32). One of the Indians explained to him: "If they did not pacify the Evil Spirit, and make him propitious, he would take away, or spoil all those good things that God had given, and ruin their Health, their Peace and their Plenty, by sending War, Plague and Famine among them."

opinion, will come into a land in the east, good and warm(33). They like strong drink or rum beyond all measure. They drink it without modesty till they are drunk. Afterwards they make wonderful faces and act as if they were angry and wanted to strike their enemy. There were at that time no king but two queens among them. The older one got so drunk, that she lay on the ground like an unreasonable brute. When they, especially the men and unmarried fellows, want to make merry, they wet their heads and faces. Afterwards they smear it over with a red paint, so that not the smallest place can be seen that is not red.

There were also some who had a narrow spangle drawn through their nose. Its meaning is unknown to me. Some had also a tuft of strange feathers under their ears, in some cases larger than in others(34). I think it indicates those who are the best hunters. They were ridiculously dressed. One had a shirt on with a crown on his head, another a coat and neither trousers, stockings nor shoes. Others had a skin or red cover around them. In their homes they are naked, as I have seen one at Manigkinton, who came back from hunting. He had nothing but his rifle, knife and powder horn, except a linen rag which covered his sexual parts a little, and a deer skin [moccasin] protecting his feet, that the thorns might not hurt him. He had also a tuft of feathers behind his ear. When strangers come to them, they entertain them according to the best of their ability, with roasted game, wild fruits, fish and a kind of food, made of coarse and fresh meal. If one does not want to eat what they place before him, they say he is sick, but if they notice that this is not the case, but that it is done

(33) Jones, *Present State of Virginia*, p. 16, describes the belief of the Indians in a future life similarly: "They believe that they go to *Mohomony* that lives beyond the Sun, if they have not been wicked, nor like Dogs nor Wolves, that is, not unchaste, then they believe that *Mohomony* sends them to a plentiful Country abounding with Fish, Flesh and Fowls, the best of their kind, and easy to be caught; but if they have been naughty, then he sends them to a poor barren Country, where be many Wolves and Bears, with a few nimble Deer, swift Fish and Fowls, difficult to be taken; and when killed, being scarce anything but Skin and Bones."

(34) Beverley (*History*, III, 4) speaks only of one feather stuck into the knot of hair behind the ear.

through contempt, they are angry. I once saw one of them eating this kind of meal. Then I also took some of it, raw as it was, out of the sack, which he had carried around with him, and I tried to eat the dry, coarse meal with a little stick of wood or knife, but I could not eat it, because it was so bitter and of unpleasant taste in the mouth(35). When they have taken a mouthful, they do not open it again, until all has gone down the throat. There was at one time much laughter over one who was eating meal. He saw alongside of him a piece of a glass bottle. He thought it would be handy to put the meal into his mouth with it, he tried it, but he cut himself in two places, so that it bled. Another stepped upon a piece of glass, being barefoot. He also bled profusely and did not know what caused it.

The most wonderful thing is their dancing(36). The Governor when he was sitting at the table in the evening, with the other gentlemen, had the young queen come in, who was wearing nice clothes of a French pattern. But they were not put on right. One thing was too large, another too small, hence it did not fit. She was covered all over with her ornaments, consisting of large and small pieces, of all kinds of colors. Her crown was like those of the others, but it was much more beautiful, set with stones more artistically. She was a nice person, but timid and shy, like the others. When she entered the hall, the gentlemen took off their hats, she, the queen, bowed also. When the Indian king himself is present, the Governor gives him the right hand. Then they began to play, but the queen danced so wonderfully, yea barbarously, that everyone was astonished and laughed. It has no similarity to dancing. They make such wonderful movements with body, eyes and

(35) This meal is called "Rockahomonie," by Beverley (*History*, III, 18). "Sometimes also in their travels, each man takes with him a pint or quart of *Rockahomonie*, that is, the finest Indian-Corn, parched, and beaten to powder. When they find their Stomach empty (and cannot stay for the tedious Cookery of other things), they put about a spoonful of this into their mouths, and drink a draught of water upon it, which stays in their Stomachs, and enables them to pursue their journey without delay."

(36) For Indian dancing see also Beverley, *History*, 1725, III, 22, 53f Jones, *State of Virginia*, 1724, p. 8; and Lawson, *History of Carolina*, ed 1860, pp. 68f, 285.

mouth, as if they were with the evil one. At one time they rave as if they were angry, then they bite their arms or other parts with their teeth, or they are entirely quiet. In short, it is impossible to describe this mad and ludicrous dance.

They do not esteem silver or gold, and do not want to take it. Their money is like the material they hang around them, but small, of white and pearly color, like small corals, strung on a string (37). It is sold by the yard so to speak. They measure from the index finger to the elbow, which length costs half an English crown.

After the celebration was over, I endeavored to sell, as best I could, whatever remained of my merchandise. I intended to exchange with the Indians skins and baskets for powder and knives. A deer skin would have cost me a dollar, a basket half a dollar. But I refused to do it. My rifle was valued at twelve skins. I did wrong not to make this bargain, for in England a deerskin is valued at more than two dollars. A Frenchman and I were astonished at the baskets and that two of them could speak English. One of them looked at us and said in poor English, whether we thought that if they had been taught like we, they could not learn a thing just as well as we. I asked him, where he had learned to speak English, he answered, they were not so stupid, because they had to come every year, they could hear us speak and learnt it that way. It is certain that good talents are found among them. When I was looking at one of the skins and found that it was full of holes because of the shot, I pointed it out to him (because he knew about as much English as I did) he asked, how one could get the animals without shooting them. I said, shoot in the head. He then asked whether I could answer, whereupon he looked at me and shook his head.

After several days had elapsed and I was almost through selling my goods, except those things for which there was no market and which I did not want to give away with loss, one

(37) According to Beverley, *History*, 1725, III, p. 58, "the Indians had nothing which they reckoned riches, before the English went among them, except Peak, Roenoke, and such like trifles made out of Cunk [Conch] shell. They past with them instead of Gold and Silver, and serv'd them both for Money, and Ornament."

day a sloop passed by my lodging place to load lumber on a pink,(38) belonging to Bristol, which was then lying at anchor at Yorktown. Among the sailors who brought the sloop was a Hollander and a Swede, who talked with me. They said that next to their ship a large sloop was ready to sail to New York. This pleased me very much, for I was in the country to travel through it and, as I had heard many good reports about that country, I had a desire to visit it. The captain, whose name was West, was with a merchant named Wacker, [probably Joseph Walker of York Co. who died in 1723. His will is in the Wm. & Mary Quarterly VI, 150], not far from my dwelling place. I asked him to load my baggage on his sloop, in order to take me to the above named place, which he granted. Hence, (after taking leave of my host, who had provided me with various victuals) we left at noon, and after much rowing and pulling, because the wind was contrary, we arrived at his ship at night. I asked at once whether the New York sloop was still there. They said yes, its captain had been on their ship during the evening. Hence I stayed over night on this ship. Early in the morning I rose up to make an agreement with the skipper if possible, but, to my consternation saw the ship already under sails. Thus my plan had miscarried, as such opportunities are rare. I was, therefore, compelled to hunt a place in Yorktown, where I could stay till another opportunity offered itself. I stayed there twelve days, but I saw that there was no opportunity and that I could not trade. It was also expensive to live there, because at such a place where ships land, it is usually more expensive than elsewhere. During that time I heard many good reports about Pennsylvania and that some people from Virginia moved there. One of them from France, who was captain there, named Mr. Chariere de Cossonay, was known to me, who is said to have great wealth. Many Germans and Hollanders live there and many other advantages were related to me. As I intended to travel another year before returning to England, I handed my trunks over to a trustworthy man, upon sufficient receipt and security

(38) A pink is a vessel with a narrow stern.

and as that country [Pennsylvania] was only 700 miles (39) by land, I went to Quiquedam to find there, if possible, a sloop to take me to Philadelphia. I reached it in one day as it is only 25 miles from York. There I found a sloop, in accordance with my desire, which had brought beer from Philadelphia. But it was stopped by the warships which were then lying there and was compelled to make a trip to Carolina to fetch salted pork from there for the ships. I met the master of the sloop, who gave me a letter to his wife in Philadelphia, together with instructions as to the route I should take. The nearest way would have been to sail to Accomac, but there was no opportunity. Hence I had to return to Yorktown. The hot weather continued, so that it was pretty difficult for me to travel. Nevertheless, I was ferried over the York River, being well armed and provided with maps. Then I marched all alone for four days when I crossed a swamp called the "Dragon's Swamp"(40). There I lost my way. Finally I saw a house, where I entered to inquire about the way. There I met two men, who took me for an escaped servant. All my explanations were in vain. They led me to a justice of the peace, who lived not far away. He asked me for my passport. I told him I had recently come into the country and that its customs were unknown to me. He inquired about the ship and the name of the captain as well as about other details. I answered him as best I could, because the English language was then barely known to me. He saw that they had done me an injustice and he released me again. But he told me that I could hardly proceed without a passport. Besides, he was surprized that I undertook alone in such a hot season a long, unknown journey. But I hated to return such a long way in order to get a passport from the Governor. Hence I made up my mind firmly to go as far as possible. This man wanted to give me food, however, I would not accept anything but a drink. When he saw that he could not induce me to give up my plan,

(39) The distance is of course much overstated. The distance from Richmond to Philadelphia is not over 250 miles.

(40) The Dragon Swamp extends from the head of the Pianketank river upwards between the counties of Gloucester and King and Queen on the south, and Middlesex and Essex on the north.

he wished me good luck for the journey. The two men, who had arrested me, begged my pardon and asked me to go with them, offering to give me a dinner, but as they lived away from the road, I declined their offer. In the evening of this day, it was Saturday, I lodged with a Hollander, who received me very kindly. I stayed with him the following day, because it is not considered becoming there to travel on Sunday. He also told me that I could hardly travel through Maryland without a passport. I remembered that a certain Mr. Ladenin,(41) who upon our arrival visited us on board of ship and spoke with me and the others, was the English minister at the Rabahanak River. I inquired after him and heard with pleasure that he lived only three miles away from there. On Monday I set out to hunt him up. But I came to a branch of the large river, whose water was very high and as there was no other way, I hardly knew what to do. Finally I undressed and waded across, but the water reached up to my neck. Thence I noticed a house, which proved to be Landenin's dwelling. I asked for him. He came to see what was my desire. I related to him about my journey which I had contemplated, how I had been stopped and that according to the statement of all the people I had seen, it was not possible to travel without a passport. I, therefore, asked him to give me a recommendation to the nearest justice of the peace, who would not have refused, in that case, to give me a passport.

But he was unwilling to do it, because he did not know me well, and although he had spoken with me, yet that was of no consequence, hence he could not comply. But I showed him that there was no danger in granting my request and I asked him to give me simply a statement that he had seen me on such and such a ship, having come from England as a free passenger. Finally he could not help himself, but had to testify to the truth. He told me to go to a house, three miles from there, where a justice of the peace lived. But he had ridden away when I

(41) This is the Rev. Louis Latane, who with his wife, child and servant arrived in Virginia in the year 1700 and was till his death in 1735, rector of the South Farnham parish, in Essex County. On July 20, 1722, he became joint patentee with seven other men of 24,000 acres of land in Spotsylvania County, on the south side of the Rapidan. See Brock, *Huguenot Emigration*, p. 29.

arrived. Half an hour later Mr. Landenin also arrived there, but when he heard that the justice was away, he was unwilling to assist me further. On that day it was very hot and an accident almost befell me. I traveled in the great heat without food until noon. Then I found that my strength was giving away and it was growing dark before my eyes. When I felt this and could see no house, I hardly knew whether it would be best to lie down behind a tree or not. But I determined to walk on as long as I could. I soon saw a clearing through the woods, also a house and people working in a cornfield. I hastened to them, but I had to climb a fence, while I grew constantly weaker. I placed my rifle on the other side of the fence, but a black sack, which I was accustomed to carry on the shoulder, in which was my linen, and especially a good part of my money, I placed on the fence. Then I tried to climb over, but I fell back. The third time I fell backwards on my back and head, as I found out later. The people, who were watching me, thought that I was drunk and laughed at me. But finally they came to see who I was. I was lying there in a faint. As they saw me in such a condition, they took me up and carried me into the house, together with my rifle and bag. If they had known what was in it, there is no telling what might have happened. After I had lain there for a while, I regained consciousness. Then I took some of my balsam and orvietan (42), which I always carried with me, in a little rum or brandy, which strengthened me at once. I also ate something. Then I looked for my money. I found everything untouched, except my knife, which was of Aarau make, I could not find. Afterwards when I wanted to pay the people, they would not take anything. On the same evening I traveled four miles farther and at Pascataway(43), crossed a river. On the following day I continued my journey through large forests. In that part the land is not closely settled, because it is at the uppermost part of the Rabahanak River in Stratford County.

(42) Orvicton is here some home remedy. In French it is used of quack medicine, so named after a quack doctor from Orvicto, Italy.

(43) Pascataway Creek in the present Essex County. Michel was mistaken in thinking he had reached the upper part of Stafford on the next day. In fact he had not crossed the Rappahannock.

This day I missed the road. I traveled till noon without food in great heat through the wilderness, but did not meet a single person, the road becoming smaller and smaller, so that I feared something untoward might happen. In the middle of the road I found a large sack, which was full and tied shut. I wondered what it might be. I stepped on it with my foot. What was inside fell down and rose up again, so that the bag became stretched tight and round. I stepped on it again and it fell together as before. I could not regard is as something good. As I was alone and lost in this wild place, I had all kinds of anxious thoughts and concluded to let it alone, whatever it might be. Thus I continued my journey with apprehensive thoughts and hungry. I could see few signs that people were living near. (Otherwise it was my habit when I traveled through the country, to inquire about the way and to mark all the roads, which I was to meet, upon a paper. Then I added how far I was away from such roads, in short I noted all the accompanying circumstances and how the right way could be known.) I soon emerged from my cares, because I saw a field that had been cut and then a house. When I entered it I found good people, who showed me kindness and expressed compassion with me that I had to travel on foot in such heat. They told me that I had gone far astray. They showed me a good road. I went on a little distance, until I came to an Englishman and a Frenchman, who were keeping house together. Because of the heat I stayed a day and a half with them. I did not feel well. They asked me to stay with them. They would treat me as I desired. I thanked them for their offer and their kindness. They took me across the Rabahanak River. I went onward a day's journey when I lodged with an honest man, who lived at the Pottomac River. When he heard of my intention he dissuaded me from the journey with good reasons. He was suprized that I had come alone thus far. He said, if I passed this river, I would be in Maryland and the first man who would get a sight of me had power to demand my passport. He who does not have any, is jailed until a report has been received from the place whence he came. Whoever in such cases, he said, was strange and unknown and had none to in-

quire after him, would lose his liberty and his money, for he would have to pay half a crown a day. From this and other warnings I had received I saw the impossibility of going any farther. I thanked him for his information and turned back impatiently, having traveled half of the way in such great heat in vain. I drank much water daily, which I had to sweat out while walking.

I became so weak that I found it difficult to get back again. The country is more fruitful and has a better soil that many places in Virginia. Meanwhile rainy weather set in. Finally I reached Yorktown after I had made such a long and troublesome journey in vain. I felt afterwards, day after day, as if sleep would overcome me, which is a precursor of land-sickness. People are much inclined to sleep in this country. I have heard from people that they had seen men, overcome by the death-sleep, who had been led and wanted to sleep while walking, but nothing could keep them, until they finally passed away(44). To travel alone is not good and I do not want to undertake it again, because one is subjected thereby to many dangers. I was often made to sleep in outhouses, and when tired and sleepy had to be apprehensive of some accident that might happen to me, because I was often compelled to take lodging in remote places where there was but a single house. If they had committed an overt act against my life or property, who could have made a complaint? Otherwise I lived better while traveling than when not. I made good use of their hospitality. One must, however, be surprized when lodging with poor people, for better food is frequently met with there than among the rich. At other places where I stayed I exchanged merchandise for food, and thus supplied myself with provisions. There is little opportunity to sell eatables, except in harbors and in inns. At these places it is expensive, for a meal usually costs a shilling.

(44) This is no doubt the well known sleeping sickness, which was first known to exist on the west coast of Africa, and which later appeared in some of our Southern States. It is caused by a protozoon, called tryfonosonia, and is transmitted to both the animal and the human species by the bite of a fly.

At Yorktown I met again one of the Lerber sisters on board of ship, because she had come into the country with the same captain, who had shown them much kindness. He was also the cause that she received help from his friends. She was traveling back to England, besides other reasons, in order to buy there clothes and other things. As soon as I came on board of ship, the captain saw me. He asked me whether I had letters to send off. I said no, but I intended to return myself. He said at once, if the ship was good enough for me, it was at my service. I thanked him and accepted his offer. I ordered at once my goods to be brought to the ship. I must report that, if one does not have a passport to leave the country, and if his name has not been read in church three weeks before and has not been posted, the captain is not permitted under oath to take him out of the country. But, inasmuch as this captain had himself brought me into the country, he let it pass. No stranger would have accepted me, if he had known that I had not complied with these regulations.

(To be continued.)

MINUTES OF THE COUNCIL AND GENERAL COURT 1622-1629*.

From the Originals in the Library of Congress.

(CONTINUED.)

*All erasures in the originals are here printed in italics.

(164.)

Y^t is ordered that Capt. West shall deliver some Cloathes to the Portugall out of Capt. Jones his clothes chest of Cloathes for his present use w'ch is to be satisfied out of ye negroes labour. Y^t is ordered y^t the negro y^t cam in w'th Capt. Jones shall remaine w'th ye L'a. Yardley till further order be taken for him and that he shalbe allowed by the Lady Yardley monthly for his labor forty pound weigght of good merchantable tobacco for his labor and service so longe as he remaine with her.

(165.)

A Copie of Mr John Woodall (1) His Letter Mr Richard Wake.

Y^t so god have appoynted y^t my servante Christopher Beste be not living at your cominge into Virginia or that he before your cominge bee come for Englande, then I pray you to take into your Custodie on barrell of whet flower marked as in the margent & (W. No. 8) also one Rundlett of six gallons of aquavitae, and Also one Rundlett of like (W. No. 2) quantitie

(1) John Woodall as a surgeon of London who made business ventures in Virginia. Long afterwards he was suing to recover for other losses. See this Magazine, XI, 175, 178, 285, 287. Christopher Best was living at James City in 1623.

(2) At the Census of 1624-5, Robert Saben, aged 30, who came in the *Margaret and John* in 1622, was living at Elizabeth City.

filled with Tamarindos 36 li and to sell them for me to the best advantage you can and I will give unto you for your love [?] to me in selling of them as honest Just p'ffett, the Rundletts are marked (W. No. 4) as in the margent, and for ye Kilderkin (W. No. 5) and smale cheaste marked as in the margent I pray you desire the m'r of the shipp to bring them back again to me unop- (C. B. No. 2) ened and well Condiconed and I will paye him fraught as also all my letters I wrote to Christopher Beste. I desire you to return them sealed unto me and I pray you speak to him for them and soe God blesse your Vioage. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hande the 5th of November 1624.

By me John Woodall,

To his loving friend M^r
Wake, Chirurgeon

&

This

(166.)

A Courte held the thirde daye of October 1625, being present S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c., Capt. Francis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt. Raphe Hamer, Capt. Samuel Mathews, Mr. William Cleybourne.

Y^t is ordered y^t A warrant be sent for Robert Saben(2) and William Pryor to appeare before the Govern^r and Councill at James Cyttie uppon monday next, and y^t Pryor doe bringe up his Covenant with him.

Y^t is ordered y^t Walter Horsefort shall put in Sufficient securitie betwixt this and monday next to the Purser and ships Companie for such deft as shalbe dew unto them.

The Court hath ordered [word illegible] uppon the annext peticone of Thomas Southerne, one of the Company's tenants y^t he shall presently have his freedom, payinge his rent for the year, And putting in bond with sufficient securitie in a hundred pounds Ster. y^t he shall pay for the residue of his tyme he is to serve as any of the publique Tenants shall paye, whether he live or dye.

Y^{t} is ordered y^{t} ye master of the Elizabeth shall pay for a hogg's [hogshead] of meale, a bushell of peas, one bushell and a half of meale and one firkin of suet beinge the goodes of Jo. Peckenell, Deaceased, one hundred & fyfteen pound of Tobacco.

(167.)

Y^{t} is ordered y^{t} Mr. David Sandys, (3) minister, dying about the first of August laste, shall have the dewes paide for his ministerie as yf he had lived till the Cropp had been gathered, And that all his p'rishoners do paye their tythes to the Administrator or Executor of the said Mr. Sandys or theire lawfull Assignes.

Y^{t} is ordered y^{t} accordinge to ye great Charter of orders, the Counsell shall receave *for their moytie* the moytie of the rents of the publique Tenants, Allowing out of it to Mr. Wm. Cleybourne for his means belonging to his office of Surveyor for this year fower hundred weight of Tobacco. And to Randall Smallwood, (4), Provost Marshall two hundred pound of Tobacco and three barrells of Corne. And the other moytie to remaine in the hands of S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Governor &c., a p'te Satisfaction of his meanes dew to him.

Y^{t} is ordered ye negro caled by the name of brase shall belong to S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Governor &c., As his servant, notw'thstandinge any sale by Capt. Jonnes to Capt. Bass, or any other chaleng [?] by the ships company, And neither Capt. Bass shalbe lyable to his bill to Capt. Jones, nor Capt. Jones to his Covenant of making good the sale to Capt. Bass.

(168.)

The Oathes of Thomas Swyft (5) and William Bynks Taken before the ryght Worp'll S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c., the seventh day of October 1625.

---

(3) David Sandys, minister of James City, 1624-5, came in the *Bonaventure* in 1620.

(4) Randall Smallwood, who was for some years provost marsha at Jamestown, was living there in 1623.

(5) Thomas Swift who came in the *Tiger* in 1622, was living on George Sandys' plantation near Jamestown 1624–5. He seems to have succeeded Capt. Norton at the Glass House. In 1623 he, John Burland and William Bincks, were living at "the plantation over against Jamestown." Wm. Bincks and Ann his wife came in the *George*.

Thomas Swyft, gent., uppon his oath deposeth that he hath herde John Burland sundrie tymes demande of Mr. Therer [Treasurer] satisfactione for certen Tobacco and three barrells of Corne w'ch Capt. William Norton did owe him and sayeth that Mr. Trear. did p'mise him payment as soone as Capt. Norton's goodes were solde.

And further he sayeth y^t he hath herde it often tymes recited by divers p'sons that Thomas Wilson did worke a longe time with Capt. Norton (but how longe he doth not certenly know), and further sayeth that he hath herde Mr. Peirce Bernardo who lived in house with Capt. Norton saye that the said Willson did never receave sattisfaction of Capt. Norton for his worke.

William Bynckes sworne & deposeth that he knew that the said John Burland did remain with Capt. Norton before his death and after, A twelve month at the lest, but [what?] wages he was to have he knoweth not.

And as Concerninge Thomas Willson he deposeth as Mr. Swyft hath saide.

(169.)

A Courte held the XVIth of October 1625 beinge present Sr ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c., Capt. ffrancis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt.. Raphe Hamor, Capt. Samuell Mathews, Mr. William Cleybourne.

Y^t is ordered y^t William Davis (5) shall pay to the Assignees of Morris Thompson Imediately three hundred pounds weighs of Tobacco w'ch was dew to the Morris Thompson by bonde the ffirst of December last past as by ye bond p'duced in Courte Appeareth, And by the said Wm. Davis Acknowledged in Courte.

Yt is ordered y^t the Provost Marshall shall receeve all such depts and Tobacco as shalbe dew to Elizabeth ffox widdow and to take the charge of sendinge the same to her to England receaving a bill of lading for ye same & to pay such depts as ffox did owe in this Country.

(5) William Davis, aged 33, who came in the *William and Thomas*, in 1618, was living on the Eastern Shore 1624–5.

It is ordered y^t there be a warrant sent for Henry Geny doe appear before the Governor & Councill at James Cyttie within xxx days next after ye sight of the warrant to answer to his Contempt in goinge A Tradinge Contrary to the Act of the generall Assembly.

(170.)

The deposition of John Taylor (6) about the age of xxxviii years taken before Abraham Persie, Esquire and Capt. Wm. Tucker the xxiiii^th of June 1625.

The deponent sayeth y^t Capt. George Thorpe came unto him and demanded wh.[at?] were two of the best cowes belonging to S'r Thomas Dale biddinge of him for to appoynte him unto two of the best Cowes for he was to have them, w'ch this Examanant did do. The w'ch Cowes were delivered unto Capt. Thorpe about six dayes after, but by whose order he knoweth not, for at that Tyme Mr. Henry Watkins was overseer of the La. Dales servantes and Cattle and had the comand of them, This Examanants knowledge therof is That Mr. Watkins p'mised him a rewarde to have a care of the Cattle belonging to the La. Dale, And to this Examinants knowledge S'r George Yardley, Knight, did never give order for the lending of these two Cowes to Capt. Thorpe, for by whose order he had those Cattle he knoweth [not?], yett by all likely wise it was by order from Mr. Watkins, when this Examinant saw Capt. Thorpe & the saide Henry Watkins talke sundry tymes together about that tyme, And further this Examinant Sayeth that the names of those Cowes were to the best of his remembrance called Bellowman and the other Morgan, w'ch were also marked with S'r Thomas Dales marke uppon the hornes. And as this Exa't thinketh was about the tyme of our Lord 1620, neither doth he know of any

(6) John Taylor, aged 34, who came in the *Swan* in 1610, was living at Elizabeth City 1624–5. Rebecca Taylor, aged 22, who came in the *Margaret and John*, 1623, appears next to John Taylor in the census and was doubtless his wife. John Taylor, it is evident, had, previous to the massacre, lived at Berkeley Hundred. Henry Watkins lived on the Eastern Shore in Feb. 1623–4, and in March 1623–4, was a member of the House of Burgesses. He, too, seems to have lived at Berkeley before the Massacre.

other Cattle or goates of the said S'r Thomas Dales that were delivered to any other p'sone w'tsoever, He also affirmeth that S'r George Yardley aforesaid never spoke to him or to any other to his knowledge for the delivering of any cattle y^{t} did any way belong unto the Ladie Dale, And this is as much as this Examinant can saye unto the firste and second Interrogatories p'duced by Charles Hamar in the behalfe of the La. Dale.

William Tucker. The Marke of John X Taylor.

(171.)

Interrogatories to be imp'ted [?] to John Taylor of Elizabeth Cyttie one the p'te and behalfe of the right Worp'l the Lady Elizabeth Dale as followth

In primis. doe you know whether Capt. Thorpe late deceased had in his possession Cattle of any kinde w'tsoever belonging of ryghte to the la. Dale aforesaide

Did not S'r George Yardley Knight loan two Cowes of the said La. Dales to the saide Capt. Thorpe, what were the names and markes of the said two Cowes, and how longe tyme were they so lent unto ye saide Capt. Thorpe. do you know whether any other p'sons were presente or pryvee to the delivery of the s'd two Cowes or of any other Cowes or goates of the La Dales to the saide Capt. Thorpe or his Servants by Sr George Yardley his order, what are the names of the saide p'sons, and how many are the saide Cattle or goates or eyther of them. Declare the truth of your Knowledge according to your best remembrance unto every poynte of this Interrogatorie.

Item. do you know whether S'r George Yardley himself or any other p'son either deceased or now livinge in this land or elsewhere hath at any tyme within your remembrance possessed and employed to his owne p'pr use any of the Cattle or goates or the breede of them belonging of right to the saide La Dale, w^{t} are the names of such p'sones and how many are those Cattle and goates or their breede that were so possessed and used, how long it is since the saide p'sones had them, by what order, and of whom had the saide p'sons those Cattle, and their breede, declare ye truth of your knowledge to your remembrance.

(172.)

Whereas John Southerne (7) of Titchfield in the Countie of Southampton was divers years since sent over into Virginia for the managinge the affayres of Southampton Hundred but by the Commandments of the Governor was sent upp to the Iron Workes where he was in many places of his bodie greavously wounded, To his almost utter Undoinge and growing now old and weake havinge theere Wiefe & Children is willing to Come for Englande, We whose names are hereunder written Adventurers for the Plantacone of the same Southampton Hundred, havinge promised libertie to the saide Southerne before his goinge hither that he Should returne at his pleasure, Doe heereby Desire the Governor and Counsell of Virginia for the tyme beinge and in p'ticular S'r George Yardley to whom the principall charge of the saide Hundred is Committed, to permitt the said John Southerne to repayre Unto England whenever he shalbe willinge soe to Doe w'ch reasonable request hoping you will nott Deny, We take our Leaves and rest this ffirst of August 1624. from London, Your very lovinge friends,

H. Southampton (8)

Arthur Branfield, John Farrar.
Nicholas Farrar, Gab'l Barber.

(173.)

A Courte held the XXIth of November 1625, beinge present S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight Governor &c., Capt. ffrancis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt. Raphe Hamor, Mr. William Cleybourne.

Robert Newman (9) sworne and examined sayeth y^t

(7) John Southerne came in the *George* in 1620, and lived at James Cittie 1624–5. He was a Burgess in 1623 and 1629–30 for James City Island, so that he must have returned from England. The "iron works" were at Falling Creek. The Earl of Southampton had an estate at Tichfield, and was buried there.

(8) Henry Wriothesly, 3d, Earl of Southampton, friend and patron of Shakespeare and an eminent member of the Virginia Company. One cannot help feeling regret that a document with signatures of such interest (which was of course sent to Virginia) was not preserved.

(9) The "Muster" of William Gayne and Robert Newman at Elizabeth City in the Census of 1624–5, included eight persons, among them, Newman, himself, aged 25, who came in the *Neptune* in 1618. Edward Nevell seems to have been agent or supercargo for Thos. Weston, merchant, of London.

Mr Crispe demanded his Tobacco of Mr. Nevell and Mr. Nevell made his answere y^t he wold not deliver Mr. Crispe to the vallew of a pounde w'thout order from Mr. Weston or that Mr. Weston did come himselfe, and saide let the Tobacco rott or Spoyle he cared nott.

And further this deponent sayeth that Mr. Crispe did often tymes demand his Tobacco of Mr. Nevell but he wold not deliver it to him.

Edward Nevell beinge examined sayeth y^t Mr. Crispe did divers Tymes demande his Tobacco of him & that he told Mr. Crispe y^t unles he would bring Mr. Wetheredge to enter into bond y^t Mr. Crispe should not Truck away this Tobacco in ye Countrey he would not deliver him any *without Speciall order from Mr. Weston.* Mr. Weston gave the order not to deliver Mr. Crispe any Tobacco unles Mr. Wetheredge would enter into a bond for Mr. Crispe or some other M^r. And further he acknowledgeth y^t these denials were made before Mr. Wetheredge went away.

(174.)

A Courte held the 24th of November 1625, beinge present S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c., Capt. Roger Smith, Capt. Samuel Mathews, Mr. William Cleybourne.

Y^t is ordered y^t Capt. Tucker shall deliver to Mr. Samuell [Daniell] Gookins servants for there necessary use and Sustentatione Support Apparell Wheat and Corne for one whole yeere, According to theire Covenants, And that the same be delivered unto them presentlye, for that theire tyme of service is fully expired. And in regard y^t Capt. Tucker hath written to Mr. Gookin Concerninge the Covenante between Mr. Gookin and these men now sett free, The Court conceaves it fitt that these men may dispose of themselves for this next yeere *untill* putting in securitie to Capt. Tucker to give Mr. Gookin such Satisfactione as the law shall awarde.

And further it is ordered that John Curtis (10) shall have his Pass to goe to Englande his brother Thomas Curtis goinge bond to be answerable for such suits as by Mr. Gookin shalbe comenced against him for one Concerninge any Covenant betwixt Mr. Gookin and him.

---

(10) John Curtis, aged 22, who came in the *Flyinge Hart*, in 1621, lived at Elizabeth City 1624–5. Thos. Curtis, aged 24, who also came in the *Flyinge Hart* was then one of Daniel Gookin's servants at "Newports Newes." Gookins men had evidently came over under "covenant" or indenture to him.

(To be continued)

COUNCIL PAPERS 1698-1702

From the Originals in the Virginia State Library
(Continued)

Certificates in Regard to Rev. Samuel Gray

We the Subscribers Justices of the peace as well as Vestrymen in and for the County of Middlesex & parish of Christ church in Virginia, Do hereby Certify all & several whom these presents may or shall concern, That among us hath lived several years Samuel Gray, Clerk, a peacefull neighbour, upright & fair in his dealings & of a good conversation. Given under our hands this moneth of December in the year of our Lord God 1702 and in the first year of the Reign of our Soveraign Lady Queen Anne

Robt Daniel	Jno Grymes	Francis Weeks
Wm. Kilbee	Wm. Churchhill	Henry Thacker
Richd Kemp	Harry Beverley	Edwin Thacker
William Skipwith	Matth. Kemp	G. Corbin

To his Excellency Francis Nicholson Esqr her Maties Lieut and Governr General of Virginia

May it please Yor Excellcy

We the Subscribers Vestrymen of Copley parish in the County of Westmorland being destitute of a Minister and having the bearer Samuel Gray Clerk well recommended to us by many worthy Gent of the County where he has lived several years, Are willing with yor Excellcys Leave to entertain him as our Minr for the ensuing year as hath been usual ever since we were a parish.

Yo^{r} Ex^{cys} most humble Servants

Jno Gerard	Gerard Hutt	Richd Lee
James Westcomb	Jno Bushwood	Fra. Wright
Michll Willington	W. Allerton	Jno Sturman
	Robt Barrett	

At a Vestry held in & for
the s^{d} parish
March ye 17th 1702-3.

Arms Sent to Virginia.

Her Majesty by her order in Council of the 6th of August last having directed ye sending of Arms & Ammunition for ye service of her Matys Colony of Virginia which being laden on board the ship Cuthbert and Spranger of London, Jno Markham M^{r} bound for York River, and by bill of Lading consigned to be delivered to you or yor order in James River or to the Governor or Com^{der} in chief for the time being, We send you inclosed her Maties letter with an accompt of the Cost & charges of the said Arms and ammunition Amounting to three thousand three hundred eighty eight pounds three shillings & four pence directing payment of ye said Sum for the same out of her Maties Revenue of Quitt rents within that Colony by transmitting Bills of that value to the Treas^{r} & paym^{r} of this office, and desire on receipt of ye s^{d} arms & ammunicon you will transmitt bills for ye s^{d} Sum of £3388. s3. d4 payable to the honble Charles Bertie Esqr^{r} Treas^{r} & pay M^{r} for ye time being, and give advice thereof to this board. We are ye humble servants

J. Musgrave	J. Granville	Wm. Bridges
	J. Pulteney	

Office of Ordnance 1st February 1702
Govr of Virginia.

Arms Sent to Virginia

Lord Nottingham to the Governor of Virginia

Whitehall, Feb. 25th 1702-3

Sir

The Queen commands me to acquaint you that War having been declared in the West Indies as well as in Europe in pursuance of her Maties orders agst the Spaniards; Her Maty would have you be very vigorous & severe in preventing any Ammunition or Stores of any kind from being carried to them, and would have you use all proper methods that may be most effectual for this purpose. I am

Yor most humble Servant

Nottingham.

Whitehall, March 20th 1702-3

Sir

Her Majesty having considered the ill practice of the Merchants and planters in the West Indies during the last war in corresponding with the French not only in trading with them, but in carrying intelligence to 'em to the great prejudice and hazard of the English plantacons. I am commanded to acquaint you, that by all possible methods you must endeavor to hinder all manner of Trade & correspondence with the French whose strength in the West Indies gives very just apprehension of the mischiefs that may ensue, if the utmost care be not taken to prevent them. I am

Yor most humble Servant

Nottingham.

Both directed To Francis Nicholson Esqr
her Maties Lieut & Govr
Genl & Govr of Virginia,
&c.

ACCOUNT OF WILLIAM BYRD, AUDITOR GENERAL, 1702

Virginia es. William Byrd Auditor to her Maties Revenue of two shill^s^ p hh^d^ for every hogsh^d^ of Tobacco exported out of this Colony 15^d^ p Tunn for every Ship Lading here 6^d^ p poll for every person imported also all Rights for land sold from the 10th of July to the 25th of October 1702 following is D^r^.

hh^ds^ Tuns. passeng^rs^		£ O d
	To Ballance due her Maty as p acco^t^ sent July ye 10th..	3515. 10 .3¼
625. 405. 34.	To Coll'o Wm. Wilson Naval Officer in thelow^r^ District of James River his acco^t^ of 2'o p hh^d^ port duty and head money.....	88. 13 . 3
1884½. 424. 212.	To Coll'o Miles Cary Naval Officer in York River his hh^ds^ Tuns. passeng^rs^ acco^t^ of Ditto....	218. 5 . 0
401. 50. 2890. 879. 246.	To Mr Hancock Custis Naval officer on the Eastern shore his acco^t^ of Ditto to ye 25th of October	43. 4 . 6
		3865. 13 . 0¼

No acco^t^ from Potomack, Rappahannock, the upper District of James River.

To Rights for Land Sold to this date.....£3892. 18 . ¼

CONTRA C^r^

To paid his Excell^cy^ ½ a year sallary, ending ye 25th Octo^r^ by order of his Excell^cy^.....	1000. 0 . 0
By p^d^ his Excell^cy^ ½ a years house rent ending ye same time by ord^r^ as above.....	75. 0 . 0
By paid the Gentlemen of the Council ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time by ord^r^ as above	175. 0 . 0

By paid William Blathwait Esqr ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time by ord^{r} as above	50. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson ½ a years Sallary as Clerk of the Council ending ye same time by ord^{r} as before	25. 0 . 0
By paid the Sollicitor of Virginia affairs ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time by ord^{r} as before	50. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Harrison as Attorney Genll ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time by ord^{r} as before	20. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson for so much paid the Ministers for one Genll Court	10. 0 . 0
By paid Edward Ross Gunner of James City ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time	5. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson for so much paid by him for sevll charges about the Indians & other Contingencies by order of his Excell^{cy}	89. 10 . 0
By paid ye same for Messengers to New York, Maryland, &c by order as above	94. 16 . 8
By the Collectors Sallary of £350. 2. 9 at 10 p C^{t} is	35. . 3
By the Auditors Sallary for £315 rec^{d} of the Coll^{r} & for £27. 5 rec^{d} for Rights makes £342. 7. 6 at 7½ p Cent	25. 13 . 6¼
	1655. 0 . 5¼
So that there remains due to her Majesty from this accomptant the sum of Two thousand two hundred thirty seven pounds seventeen shillings & seven pence Sterling	2237. 17 . 7
	3892. 18 . ¼

William Byrd, Audito^{r}

VIRGINIA ss.

William Byrd Auditor of her Maties Revenue of two shillings p hogshead for every hogshead of Tobacco exported out of this Colony 15^{d} p Tun for every Ship lading here, and six pence p pole for every person imported, also for Rights for Land sold since the 25th of October 1702 till the 25th of April 1703 is D^{r} £ O d

Hogs^{d}. Tuns. pass^{rs}.

To Ballance due to her Majesty by acco^{t} 25th of October past ..... 2237. 17 . 7

2148. 1115. 104.

To Coll'o Miles Cary Naval Officer of York River District his acco^{t} of 2'o p hh^{d} port dutys, head money ..... 288. 19 . 3

1539½. 450. 34.

To Capt Natll Harrison Naval Officer in the Upper District of James River his acco^{t} of 2° p hh^{d} port dutys &c 652. 501.
To Collo Wm Wilson Naval Officer in the Lower District of James River his acco^{t} of 2° p hh^{d} and port dutys..... 96. 10 . 3

882. 435. 28.

To Coll'o Garvin Corbin Naval Officer of Rappahannock River District his acco^{t} of 2'o p hh^{d} port dutys and head money..... 116. 1 . 9

898. 161.

To Collo Richd Lee Naval Officer of Potomack District his acco^{t} of 2° p hh^{d} & port dutys..... 99. 18 . 3

3022. 5 . 7

To several Rights for Land sold amounting to..... 101 5 . 0

£3123. 10 . 7

CONTRA Cr

By paid his Excellency ½ years Sallary ending ye 25th April by order of his Excellcy	1000. 0 . 0
By paid his Excellcy ½ years house rent ending ye same time by order of his Excellcy	75. 0 . 0
By paid the Gentlemen of the Council ½ year Sallary ending ye same time by order as above	175. 0 . 0
By paid Wm Blathwayt Esqr ½ a years Sallary ending ye same time by order as above	50. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson ½ a years Sallary as Clerk of the Council ending &c	25. 0 . 0
By paid the Sollicitor of Virginia affairs ½ a years Sallary ending &c	50. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson for so much paid ye Ministers for one Court & Assembly	10. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Harrison as Attorney Genll ½ years Sallary ending &c	20. 0 . 0
By paid Edward Ross Gunner of James City ½ a years Sallary	5. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson for so much paid Mr John ffreeman for his Journey to New York and back again by order as above	30. 0 . 0
By paid Mr Robertson for sevll messages & other Contingencies by ordr as above	98. 15 . 0
By paid the same for charges about Indians & sevll extraordinary Expresses	87. 8 . 0
By the Collectors Sallary for £784. 8. at 10 p Ct	78. 16 . 9½
By the Auditors Sallary for £806. 16. 2½ at 7½ p Ct	60. 10 . 2½
	£1765. 10 . 0
So that there remains due from this accot to her Majesty the sume of One thousand three hundred fifty eight pounds and seven pence to Ballance	1358. 0 . 7
	£3123. 10 . 7

William Byrd Auditor

(To be continued.)

VIRGINIA GLEANINGS IN ENGLAND.

(Contributed by Leo Culleton, 92 Piccadilly, London, W., and the late Lathrop Withington.)

(continued)

Sir Sampson Darell, Knight. Will 21 May 1635; proved 1 July 1635. To each of my children £1000 each except my eldest son. Sir John Parsons to have the ordering of my part in the Cole farm for my wife. Executors-my wife and Sir John Parsons. Witnesses: Buchan Robert Lesley, Barth: Cressener. Proved first by Elizabeth Darrell, relict. and 14 June 1642 by Marmaduke Darrell son of deceased on death of Elizabeth. *Sadler*, 84.

[Sir Sampson Darrell probably had descendants in Virginia as the name Sampson was frequently borne by members of a Darrell family here. See this Magazine XVII, 115.]

Robert Filmer of East Sutton, county Kent, gentleman. Will 11 April 1629; proved 4 May 1629. Body to upper Chancel of Church of East Sutton. To the poor 40s. To the lady Filmer my sister £10. To my brother Henry Filmer my gold ring and three suites of apparel two of cloth and one of pink sattin. Two hats and two pairs of silk stockings. To my neece, Mrs. Mary Knatchbull, to Sir Robert Filmer, Mr. Edward Filmer, Mr. John Filmer, Reynold Filmer and Henry Filmer gent, my nephews 40s. apeece. To my neeces Mrs. Elizabeth Faulkner, Mrs. Katherine Barram and Mrs. Sarah Filmer 40s. each for rings. To Edward Filmer my brother Anthonie's son £20 at 22 years. To his brother Henry £10 at 23. To his sister Mrs. Francis Filmer my neece £10. To my daughter in law Penelope Bellinger her mother's wedding ring. To Mrs. Elizab. Faulkner my neece a black taffeta gown. To my Lady Filmer my sister a pair of gloves wrought with pearls. Residue to my brother Sir Edward Filmer Knight, sole executor. Witnesses: Laurence Foxe, Thos. Gateley. *Ridley*, 49.

Sir Edward Filmer of East Sutton, county Kent, Knight (aged 63, 17th January last.) Will 20 October Vth Chas. I; proved 5 December 1629. To my daughter Elizabeth wife of William Faulkner Citizen and Draper of London, if she survive her husband £500. If said husband survive said Elizabeth then to her children £300 equally divided. If she die without issue then to her husband £20. Executors to find meat drink and apparel to said Elizabeth to the value of £40 yearly. To my three sons Edward, John and Henry Filmer £10 each. And because my son Reynald's estate consists in trading beyond the seas I forgive him all debts (£550). To said Reynold £50. To my son Henry if he commence M. A. in University of Cambridge £40 and furthur £100. To my daughters Mary Knatchbull and Catherine Barham £20 each. To Edward Knatchbull my godson £5. To his sister Mary £20. To his brother John £2. To Edward Barham my godson. To Elizabeth Barham my wive's goddaughter £5. To other grandchildren, Robert, Thomas, Charles, and Richard Barham 40s. each. To Dame Ann wife of my son Sir Robert Filmer lb20 for a ring. To my daughter Sara £1000 further £500 annuity of £10 to my brother Henry. To Dorothy daughter of my brother Anthony Filmer £10. To Dame Elizabeth my wife £120 and all her chains and jewels and all my household stuff in Colledghouse in Maidstone, a third part of linen and silver. My lease of Rectory of East Sutton towards payment of my debts. The other two parts of linen, silver, etc., to my son Sir Robert Filmer. My wife shall have the leases of certain houses in Knightrider Street lately given me by my brother Robert Filmer, esq., Dame Elizabeth and Sir Robert my son executors. Witnesses: Wm Davy, Wm Gregory, Richd Clowgh. For disposing my land in county Kent and elsewhere. Lands called Nicholls in Chartham, my lands in Otterden and lands in Romney Marsh shall stand according to Indentures made. To my son John £15 yearly out of houses in Darrant. To said son John also my houses and lands in Yalding and to his heirs. For default to my eldest son Sir Robert and heirs. For default to Edward Filmer my second

son and heirs. For default to Reynold my fourth son and heirs. For default to Henry my fifth son and heirs. To my son Edward after my wife's decease all houses and lands in Darrant. For default to Sir Robert my eldest son. For default to John my third son. For default to Reynold. For default to Henry. To Henry my 5th son and heirs after my wife's decease tenement and land in Warren Street parish of Lenham and one in parish of Charing. For default to Sir Robert. For default to Edward. For default to John. For default to Reynold. To my wife Dame Elizabeth for life all my houses and lands in Darrant, Lenham, Charing and Sutton Valence, one tenement in parish of Borden. After her decease the lands in Sutton Valence shall be sold by Sir Robert if need be. If not needed lands to Sir Robert and heirs. Witnesses: Wm. Gregory, Wm. Davy, Richd Clough. *Ridley*, 110.

[Robert Filmer, whose will was proved in 1629, was a brother of Sir Edward Filmer, whose will (also proved in 1629) follows. Sir Edward was the father of Henry Filmer, who emigrated to Virginia. See this Magazine, XV, 181, 182; XXI, 153, 154. Edward Filmer, grocer, was no doubt a descendant of some younger son of the family. These wills add considerably to the pedigree in Berry.]

Edward Fillmer of Cittingborne, county Kent, grocer Will 3 March 1646 (-7); proved 1st July 1653. I give unto the poor of the parish 40s., to be distributed among them at the discretion of the churchwardens. To my cousin Thomas Fillmer, son of my brother Robert Fillmer, in recompense of the title which the said Thomas hath, or henceafter may claim, in certain land in Ottenden, county Kent, now in my occupation, £60 at his age of 21, provided he then release all such right or title to my daughter Elizabeth Fillmer. To my cousin Jane Fillmer, daughter to my said brother Robert £5 at 21. To my cousins John and Anne Fillmer, son and daughter of my brother William Fillmer, £20 apiece at 21. To my brothers Henry and William Fillmer, 20s. apiece to buy them rings. To my apprentice Thomas Leshington, all the wares in my shop and warehouse, and all debts due unto me by my books, on condition he discharge all such debts as I shall owe at the time of my decease in the city of London.

To my friend William Allen of Cittingborne, gent., £5. I will that the said Thomas Lessington shall during the term of his life enjoy my shop, with the workhouse and warehouse, and one half part of my dwelling house with the half of the backside thereunto belonging, with the garden called the White Heart garden, which is in my occupation, and also the house and garden that Roger Pannell now dwelleth in in Cittingborne aforesaid, on condition he pay to my daughter for rent of the premises £20 a year. My wife Eleanor shall, during her life, hold the other part of my said dwelling-house rent free; and if she be not minded to continue her dwelling there, the said Thomas Leshington shall have the whole of the said house, paying yearly to my wife for her half part £4. I give to my wife all the bed, bedding and furniture belonging to it, which is in my best chamber; also (in lieu of her dower in all my freehold lands,) an annuity, of £20. I bequeath all my freehold lands and tenements where soever to my daughter Elizabeth Fillmer and her heirs; for default of issue to her, I give the house and land where Roger Pannell dwelleth to the said Thomas Leshington, and my said cousins Thomas and John Fillmer in bail successively, and for the rest, in case of my said daughter dying without issue, I give them to the said Thomas and John. All the residue of my goods I give to my daughter; and I make the said William Allen and Thomas Leshington my executors, earnestly entreating them to be careful of my daughter. (signed) Edward Fillmer. Witnesses: John Wheately, scr., Willm Goddard. My will is that my executors shall deliver my estate to my daughter at her age of 21. 7 February 1651 (-2) I, the said Edward Fillmer, of Sittingborne, mercer, will that my former will and testament shall stand in full force, except that whereas I appointed Mr. William Allen one of my executors, my mind now is that the said William Allen shall not any ways intermeddle therein, but that the other executor by me named shall by my sole executor; and I give to the said William Allen 10s. To my brother William Fillmer, an annuity of £5. My mind is that my faithful servant Thomas Lushington shall have my cherry garden commonly called Butts garden in Sittingborne, until

my daughter Elizabeth accomplish her age of 19 years, and for a term of 20 years after, if he will, at a rent of £20, payable half to my wife Ellen, half to my daughter. And my wife, and daughter shall yearly have delivered to them 3 bushels of cherries of the choicest of the fruit, and shall have free liberty with their friends to walk in the said ground, and take and eat of the fruit upon the trees there growing at their will and pleasures. I devise to my daughter my messuage or inn called The Adam and Eve in Sittingborne, immediately after she accomplishes her age of 19. (signed) Edward Fillmer. Witnesses: John Hurlstone his mark; Willm. Bowell. Proved by Thomas Lesington the executor named. *Brent*, 216.

VIRGINIA IN 1678-1679.

(Abstracts by W. N. SAINSBURY, and copies in the McDonald and De Jarnette Papers, Virginia State Library.)
(Continued)

Whitehall, Dec. 17, 1678

THE KING TO THOS. LORD CULPEPER. Governor Herbert Jeffreys, Lieut. Governor and the Council of Virginia. To permit and suffer Ralph Williamson or his assigns to land and dispose of fifty-two convicted persons of Scotland, sentenced to be banished, and transported to our English Plantations and such others as shall be convicted in Scotland and sentenced to be transported and delivered into Williamson's custody, without any hindrance or molestation, any law, order or custom of Virginia to the contrary notwithstanding.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 95. p. 166.)

Whitehall, Dec. 20, 1678

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. In reference to a report to be presented to his Majesty upon the several heads of Lord Culpeper's paper about the establishment in Virginia "it being a Colony of greater extent (than Jamaica) and of more advantage in point of the customs and yearly revenue to the Crown;" the Quitrents of Virginia; the settlement of Towns upon each great River; the laws agreed to be immediately transmitted to Virginia; the payment of soldiers; the patents granted to Lords Arlington & Culpeper and the departure of ships from Virginia. 3 pp.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 283-285.)

Whitehall, Dec. 20, 1678

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL for the Earl of Danby Lord High Treasurer of England forthwith to take care that an establishment be made for the Lord Culpeper and others employ-

ed in the Gov[t] of Virginia as also for the two foot Companies in the like manner and proportion as is already setled for Jamaica and that his Lordship do provide a fund for the same.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. p. 263.)

Whitehall, Dec. 21, 1678

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. That Lord Culpeper propose to the Committee such heads as he shall think fit to be inserted in his Commission and Instructions. And that in the meantime a draught of such Commission and Instructions be prepared for their Lordships view and the Commission and Instructions formerly given to the Governors of Virginia as also those to the Earl of Carlisle be made use of as far as it is proper herein.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105, p. 286-287.)

PETITION OF LIEUTENANT EDWARD ROUS TO THE KING. Has long and faithfully served his Majesty and particularly in Virginia where during the sickness of the late Colonel Jeffreys (died Dec. 1678) and the disability of Sir William Berkeley, he had the chief care of the forces sent thither—but on his return another was made (contrary to the usual practise) Captain of the Company whereof he was Lieutenant. The Captain of his present Company being dangerously ill, prays for the command as soon as it shall become void.

(Colonial Papers, 1 p.)

1678.

PETITION OF EDWARD ROUS TO THE KING. Has served ten years as Ensign in His Maj. own regiment of foot guards and being amongst other Officers commanded to Virginia to suppress the insurrection of Bacon, the greatest trouble of that business devolved upon him thro' the continual indisdisposition of Col. Jeffreys. Since his return a Captain's place in said Regiment has been given from him, prays for the company whereof Captain Langley was late Captain.

Whitehall, Jan. 24, 1678-9

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS.

in reference to an examination (continued from 18 Dec. 1677) of the Grievances presented to his Maj. late Commiss^{rs} by the people of Virginia; report agreed to be presented to his Maj. thereon. Draught of Commission for Lord Culpeper to be Governor of Virginia read; several amendments agreed upon; five to be a quorum of Councillors instead of three, unless upon extraordinary occasions.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 192-194.)

Whitehall, Feb. 6, 1678-9

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. The first personal Grievance of Virginia, proved by oath before his Maj. late Comm^{rs} is read, also letter from said Comm^{rs} to Sir W. Berkeley protesting against the illegal seizures made by him; their Lordships think fit to report the injustice of the seizure of the goods belonging to the petit^{r} Alex. Walker & that restitution be made by Berkeley's executors if the same were seized after 16 Jan. 1676-7 on the surrender of West Point which put an end to the Rebellion. Draught of Instructions to be delivered to Lord Culpeper who is to attend on Monday next with his Proposals. The latter part of his Lordship's paper presented 14 Dec. last is considered in reference to the impost of tobacco, presents for the Indian Princes, a mace* & sword for Virginia & furniture for a chappel, furniture for 200 Dragoons & 50 horse with tents, an Auditor and writs to be issued in the King's name. On reading Order in Council of 30 Oct. last (which see) their Lordships looking upon this Declaration to be seditious & even tending to Rebellion think fit that

(*) The mace seems not to have been sent at this time; but on Dec. 7, 1700, Governor Nicholson presented the House of Burgesses with a mace, and John Chiles was appointed messenger and mace bearer. The mace was doubtless used from the beginning as it is in the English House of Commons; but there are no entries in the journals of the Burgess as to this use until Feb. 1, 1727, when the house was organized and a speaker chosen. Then "the mace was brought in and laid under the table." When the Governor had confirmed the choice the mace was no doubt placed on the table, though there is no entry in regard to this. On August 16, 1736, Sir John Randolph was elected Speaker and with the members went to the Governor for his confirmation. When they returned to their chamber "the mace was laid on the table." The mace continued in use until the Revolution, and an account of how it was disposed of by the fanatical legislators of that day and its later history can be found in this Magazine XIX, 305-306.

Lord Culpeper at his arrival in Virginia do signify his Maj. high resentment thereof & inquire, with the assistance of the Council who were the authors & abettors of this presumption. 3 pp.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 298-301.)

Whitehall, Feb. 10, 1678-9.

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. On Order of Council of 26 July last (which see) on petition of Morris, Pryn & Conset; that his Maj. grant them double the sum expended by them in extraordinary charges & their names lodged in the Admiralty as deserving persons to serve his Maj. Answer of Sir John Berry & Col. Moryson concerning the present Council† in Virginia read. Names of persons to be proposed as fit to serve his Maj. in that trust. Of Col. Francis Willis & Col. Jos. Bridger their Lordp^s will make further inquiry concerning their ability and deserts. Col. Ballard, Col. Philip Ludwell and Col. Bray to be excluded out of the Council; Major Robt. Beverley & Col. Edward Hill "of evil fame & behaviour" to be put out of all employment & declared unfit to serve his Maj. Consideration of Grievances from several Counties; also of petition of Elizabeth Dudley, her tobacco or the value thereof forced from pet^r by Sir Wm. Berkeley for her husband's pardon, to be restored to her. Agreed that all injuries committed since 16 Jany. 1676-7 be redressed & for those complaints of injuries done by Sir Wm. Berkeley or his order during the Rebellion unto such as continued loyal, their Lordships will take them into consideration as they shall offer; & will recommend the case of Wm. Carver for restitution of his estate unto Lord Culpeper. 3 pp.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 304-7.)

(†) Biographical sketches of all these Councellors have been published in former volumes of this magazine.

Council Chamber, Feb. 10, 1678-9

DRAFT OF REPORT FROM (THE LORDS OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS) to the King. On petition of Elizabeth Dudley relict of Wm. Dudley, senior, late of Middlesex County, Virginia, complaining of the seizure of Sir Wm. Berkeley of fifteen hogsheads of tobacco for the Governor's clemency to her deceased husband in giving him his pardon. That such seizure was in dervgation of his Maj. pardon, signified by Proclamation of 20 Oct. 1676 and therefore restitution sh^{d} be made of the said tobacco by the executors of said Berkeley so that petitioner be not deprived of the full benefit of his Maj. pardon.

Draft unsigned, full of corrections.

(Colonial Papers. 3 pp.)

(To be Continued)

THE VIRGINIA FRONTIER IN HISTORY—1778

By David I. Bushnell, Jr.

V. The Treaty of Fort Pitt.

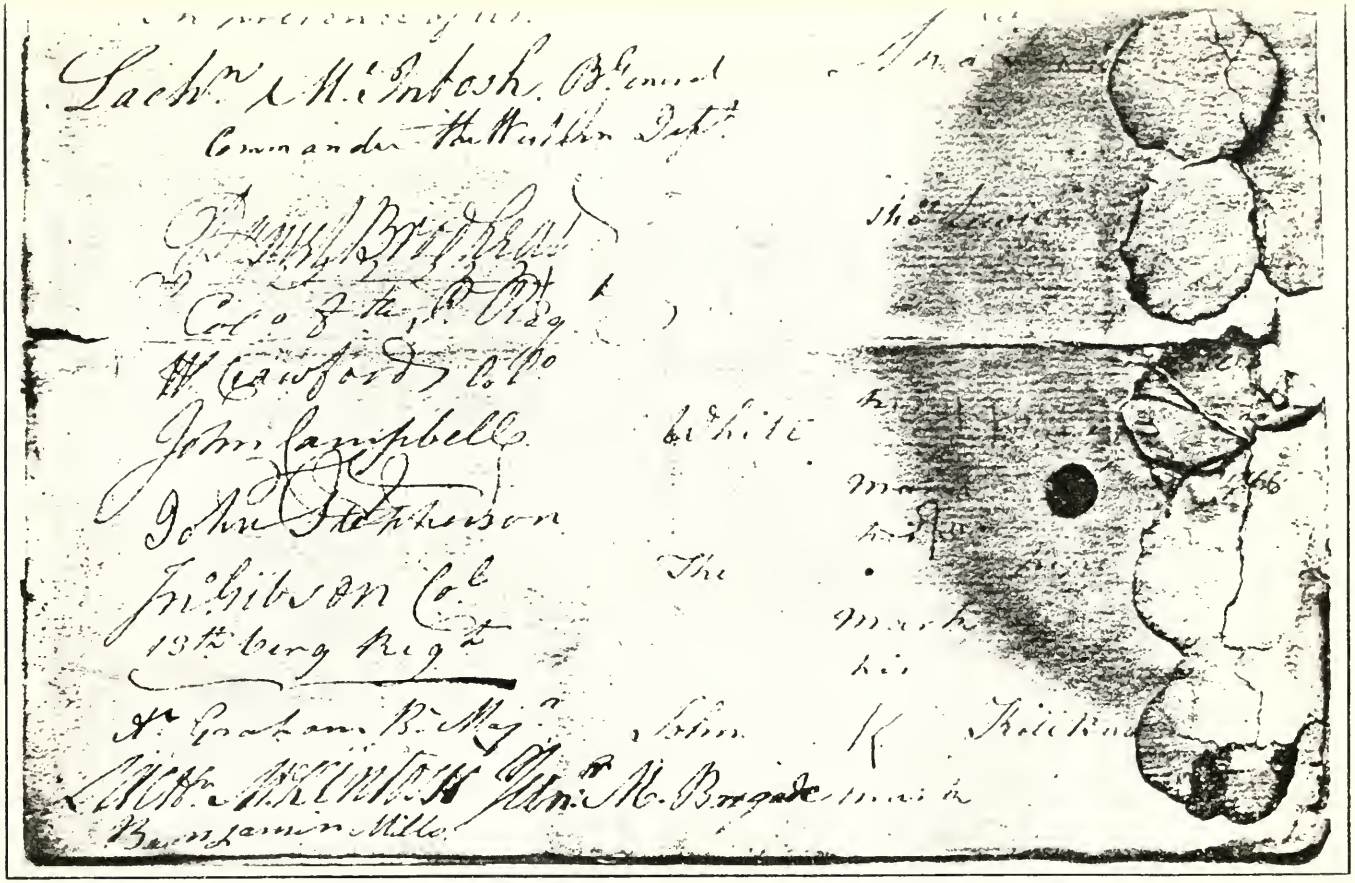
On September 10, 1778, Col. Daniel Brodhead with the Eighth Pennsylvania regiment reached Fort Pitt. The Virginia Commissioners, Andrew and Thomas Lewis, and the three Delaware chiefs, White Eyes, Captain Pipe, and John Killbuck, were awaiting the arrival of the troops, and two days later, September 12, met in council. The fort had, ever since the winter of 1753, been the most important of the frontier posts. Erected by the French, though begun by the Virginians, it was named DuQuesne after the Governor of New France. Before the close of the French and Indian war it had been taken by the British, when its name was changed, later it was occupied by troops of the United States. Here, within the inclosure of the historic post, gathered the commissioners of the newly formed government, and the Chiefs of the Delawares from beyond the Ohio, for the purpose of formulating a treaty of peace and friendship.

Preserved among the miscellaneous papers of the Continental Congress, in the Library of Congress, is a document of the greatest interest: an account of the conferences which resulted in the making and signing of the treaty on September 17. The document is here given in full:

Fort Pitt, Sept. 12th. 1778.

In Council present

The Honourable Andrew Lewis and Thomas Lewis	Esqrs Commissioners the United States
White Eyes Pipe John Killbuck	Chiefs of the Delawares



SIGNATURES TO THE TREATY OF FORT PITT, SEPT. 17, 1778
(From the original in the Library of Congress)

The Honourable Brigadier General MacIntosh, Colns. Brodhead, Gibson, Bayard, Crambray; Majors MacIntosh, Vernon, Amberson, Honoured the Council with their presence(1).

1–Referring briefly to the commissioners, and others mentioned, in this document. Thomas and Andrew Lewis of Virginia, (see notes 13 and 11 of the preceding article of this series).

White Eyes, or *Koquethagechton* was a friend of the whites, and did much to encourage the Moravians in their work among his people. In the spring of 1778 he was presented a silver medal "in the name of Congress." He died of smallpox at Fort Pitt in November 1778.

Pipe, or *Hopocan* ('tobacco pipe') was an hereditary chief of the Wolf division of the Delawares, and was war chief of the tribe. At the close of the French and Indian war he settled with his people on the upper reaches of the Muskingum river, in the present state of Ohio. He was ever influential among his people, and never firm in his friendship for the whites.

Killbuck, or *Gelelemend* ('leader'), was born about 1722, and on the death of White Eyes was chosen acting chief to serve during the minority of the heredity head of the Turtle, or Unami division of the tribe. He showed great friendship for the whites and joined the Moravian settlement, being baptized *William Henry*. He died in January, 1811.

Gen. Lachlan MacIntosh (see note 3 in the second article of this series, July 1915).

Col. Daniel Brodhead, was appointed in command of the Eighth Pennsylvania regiment March 12, 1777. On October 27, 1779, he was voted the thanks of Congress "for executing (under direction of General Washington) the important expedition against the Mingo and Munsey Indians, and the part of the Senecas on the Allegheny River." Died November 15, 1809.

John Gibson, Lieutenant Colonel Thirteenth Virginia regiment November 12, 1776; Colonel Sixth Virginia regiment October 25, 1777. Transferred to the Ninth Virginia September 14, 1778, and to the Seventh Virginia February 12, 1781. Retired January 1, 1783. Died April 10, 1822.

Stephen Bayard, appointed Major in Eighth Pennsylvania regiment March 12, 1777. Wounded at Brandywine, September 11, 1777, and transferred to the Third Pennsylvania January 1, 1783. Died September 13, 1815.

Chevalier du Crambray, arrived in America with de Carmichael during the month of June 1778. Later he was commander of the artillery in the Department of the West. At the close of the war he was appointed Major in the provincial troops.

Lachlan MacIntosh, Jr., son of Gen. MacIntosh, was appointed first Lieutenant in the First Georgia regiment January 7, 1776. October of the same year he was made Brigade-Inspector.

Frederick Vernon, appointed Major in Eighth Pennsylvania regiment June 7, 1777, and was transferred to the Fourth Pennsylvania January 17, 1871.

William Amberson, of the Eighth Pennsylvania regiment, was wounded at Brandywine, September 11, 1777. He served as aid-de-camp to General Lafayette in 1778 and 1779.

The Commissioners addressed the Chiefs as follows:

Brothers.

The Chief and Wise men of the Delaware Nation.

The Wise men of the United States have sent us to offer you their friendship. You are a Wise people, Listen to what we have to say to you, and that it may sink deep into your hearts, and that you may do so with more attention, we present you with this String.

A String of White Wampum(2).

Brothers.

You know as well as we, that many Treaties that have been held at this and at many other places, with the Six Nations, and Western Indians in order to engage their friendship and peaceable Conduct. These Treaties, however Solemnly Entered into, were no sooner Concluded, but the Indians or some of them Began to Break the peace by Stealing from and Robbing our people. Killing our Women and Children and Committing other Outrageous Acts against the faith of the said Stipulations. You alone of all the Western Indians(3) seem inclined to hold fast the Chain of friendship and even in this instance it has Contracted some Rust, of a very Dangerous Nature. The paths between us are grown up with Bushes, so that they can scarce be seen. They are Bloody, your and our peoples Bones are scattered thro' the Woods, our people Stumble over them. Black Heavy Clouds hang over our heads.

2–True Wampum (the abbreviated form of the New England Algonquian term *wampumpeak*), was made for the most part from the shells of the Venus mercenaria. The beads made of this shell were of two colors, white and purple, the latter often shading from violet to almost black. The beads were cylindrical in form, averaging about ⅛ inch in diameter and ¼ inch in length. These were formed into bands resembling belts, often with figures represented in the contrasting color; again they were strung on a single cord. When used ceremonially white expressed peace, friendship, and the like, while the dark beads signified war, hatred, or sorrow. The most famous of all Wampum belts is that which was presented by the Delawares to William Penn in 1682. It is interesting to see how important was wampum in the treaty with the same people nearly a century later. (For an account of Wampum see the article in Handbook of American Indians, Bulletin 30, Bureau of American Ethnology.)

3–The term Western Indians was used in referring to those who lived b ond the Ohio.

Under these unhappy Circumstances we Bid you Welcome to this Council fire; and to Convince you on our parts how desirous we are of Removing these from you and transferring to your and our Enemies, We present you with this Belt of Wampum, by which we open the path between us, once more, and wash away the Blood that has been Spilt on it, we Bury the scattered Bones of our Deceased Relations, and Dispel the Black Clouds, and wipe the tears from your Eyes, we remove all sorrow from your hearts, that joy and the Bright Sun of friendship may shine on you with greater Lustre than ever.

A Road Belt of White Wampum, with a Road and the Thirteen United States and Delaware Nation, Decyphered on each side with Black Wampum.

Brothers.

We told you before that the United States has sent us to you to Offer you their friendship, if you accept the offer, they will Consider you as their own people; they will give you hold of that Bright and Extensive Chain that Unites them to the Great and Powerful King of France, by whose friendship and assistance we hope in a little time to trample all our Enemies under our feet. In Entering into Engagements with the United States nothing will be Required of you but what will be for mutual Good and Happiness, on such principles that if faithfully adhered to, will secure our future peace whilst the Sun or the Earth endures. Influenced by such Motives that the United States stretch out their hands to you—Consider well the offer. It is of great Importance, not only to yourselves, But to your Children and Grand Children. Take time and give your Answer like wise men. We have laid our hearts open to you without Reserve. We expect you will Act with the like Candour and openess of hearts and that you may do so, we present you with this Belt of Wampum.

A Belt of White Wampum with the Thirteen United States and the Delaware Nation lying hold of the same with their hands Decyphered in Black Wampum.

Brothers.

You may Remember that in our letters sent to your Towns(4) (which we presume was the means of the pleasure we now have in Conversing and Consulting with you) we told you that we were Extremely anxious to have such an Opportunity in order to Establish a Mode in the prosecution of the present Expedition against our Common Enemy, as would prove the more Effectual in securing and protecting our wise and good friends amongst you, from the hostile Attempts of those who wish the Destruction of you as well as us. You cannot forget the many threats that have been thrown out against you. We are happy in the present prospect we have not only of Checking, But Chastising our heartless Enemies. In order to Effect this Valuable purpose, evidently Calculated for your immediate protection, Genl. McIntosh, who has the Interest and good of your Nation much at heart, Cannot Reach your and our Enemy, otherwise than by marching his Army thro' your Country, to which (when we consider you as our friends and Allies we presume you can have no Objection, But on the Contrary that you will give him the most evident proofs of your great attachment to our Mutual Interest and that he will not have it to say that he and his men stood in the Gap of Danger, covering your heads without some of you Being Witnesses of his Exertions in Establishing peace and tranquility in this seat of Tyranny, Murder and Rapine(5). We Beg you take under your most serious Consideration this very important matter, and that you will in a friendly, open, and Candid manner, without the least Tincture of Artifice or Disguise give us your Sentiments and that as soon as you can make it Convenient.

A Belt of White Wampum.

Capt. White Eyes, Rose up and made the following Answer.

Brothers.

I am greatly Rejoiced to hear what you have now told the few of your Brethren which you now see come for that purpose.

4–George Clymer wrote from Fort Pitt March 7, 1778, and said in part: "I shall of my own Authority send off a Messenger to the Delawares tomorrow, to make known to them the friendly disposition of Congress, to communicate the prosperous Situation of our Affairs, and to invite their principal Men to Fort Pitt * * *." (See the preceding section of this series.)

5–This refers to the British Post at Detroit.

You may Depend on it we shall Consider well what you have said to us and return you an [answer] this Afternoon, as we see you are desirous of proceeding on the Intended Expedition, which we hope will be the means of our living in peace.

Sept. 13th.

In Council.

Capt. White Eyes informed the Commissioners that the Arrival of Nimwha, a Shawnese Chief(6), Capt. Wingeund(7) and some other Delawares, had prevented them from attending yesterday Agreeable to promise, But that they were now Ready, he then addressed the Commissioners in the following Words:

Brothers.

We are greatly Rejoiced to hear the many good things you have said to us; we return you our hearty thanks that you have Renewed and Strengthened the Chain of Friendship which our Wise Forefathers made. We also return you our thanks that you have taken pity on us and have wiped the Tears from our Eyes, that you have set our hearts at Ease, After having in a Brotherly manner Buried the Bones of our Deceased Relations and Removed the Cause of our Grief. Brothers, you desired us to consider well what had been said to us. We now inform you we have done so, as far as we are Capable of judging. But as you are wiser, we hope you will Consider well for us. By so doing it will be for the Advantage of us Both.

A Belt of White Wampum.

Brothers.

It is Customary, when Brethren who Consult the Mutual Interests of their young men, their Women and Children do undertake anything, that Both should join in the work. Yes-

6–The name of Nimwha does not appear on any treaty, nor can it be traced. He appears to have been a man of importance and was probably known by another name.

7–Capt. Wingenund, a War Chief of the Delawares, signed the treaty of Fort McIntosh, January 21, 1785, as Wingenum. His name was also attached to the treaty of Fort Harmar, January 9, 1789, where it appears as Wingenoud. He was a friend of Col. Crawford, and when this officer was about to be burned at the stake he called for the chief, but the latter was unable to obtain his release.

terday you informed us You intended to Clear the path Between us and you. We now inform you that we join you most heartily in the work and nothing shall be wanting on our parts. But should our young men fail in their Attempts we desire you not to Blame us. We have not Concealed any thing from you. The Bad people who have stopped the path Between us shall see us Both hand in hand Repairing it.

A Belt of White Wampum, with a Road
Decyphered in it with Black Wampum.

Brothers.

Yesterday you desired us to take fast hold and join in the Chain of Friendship, which you informed us was Strengthened by the King of France having joined it. Brothers we now inform [you] that we and our Grand Children, the Shawnese(8) of the Maquegea tribe who are Settled with us and Become the same people, have taken fast hold of it, and are determined never to part the hold, tho' we should loose our Lives. We hope while we keep fast hold of it, our Young Men, our Women and Children, will be happy. We have now spoke the Sentiments of our hearts, without Deceit.

A Belt of White Wampum.

The Commissioners then informed the Chiefs that they would Frame the Articles of Confederation, and as soon as they were Ready they would Acquaint them.

Capt. White Eyes then Addressed the Commissioners.

We now are become one people, the Enemy Indians as soon as they hear it will strike us, we desire that our Brethren would Build some place for our Old Men, Women and Children to Remain in Safety whilst our Warriors go with you.

8–The Delaware referred to the other Algonquian tribes as Grandchildren, while the Delaware, "By virtue of admitted priority of political rank and of occupying the central home territory, from which most of the cognate tribes had diverged, they were accorded by all the Algonquian tribes the respectful title of 'grandfather,' a recognition accorded by courtesy also by the Huron. The Nanticoke, Conoy, Shawnee, and Mahican claimed close connection with the Delawares and preserved the tradition of a common origin." (Handbook of American Indians, Bulletin 30, Bureau of American Ethnology.) "Maquegea tribe" refers to one of the five general divisions of the Shawnee, usually designated Mequachake ('red earth.'—Hewitt). Their villages stood on the headwaters of Mad river, in the present Logan county, Ohio, and were destroyed by United States troops in 1791.

14th. Sept.

The Commissioners and Chiefs met, when the Articles of Confederation and Union were Read and Explained to them the Commissioners desired them to Consider them well, if any thing was wanting which they might think of, they would Add it and that when they were Ready they would Return an Answer.

15th. Sept.

The Badness of the Weather prevented a meeting.

16th.

The Commissioners and Chiefs met in Council when Capt. White Eyes addressed the Commissioners.

Brothers.

We have Considered well every thing mentioned in the Confederation, we like them well and we are Ready to join you in every thing therein mentioned. We now inform you that as many of our Warriors as can possibly be spared shall join you and go with you. We are at a loss to express our thoughts. But we hope soon to Convince you by our acts of the Sincerity of our hearts. We desire you not to think any of our people will have any Objection to your Marching thro' our Country, on the Contrary they will Rejoice to see you. We are well pleased to hear that part which Relates to our foolish young Men, in future doing any Mischief to one another. We heartily join in it, and shall fully Comply with it, and should our own Sons offend we shall secure them to be Dealt with Agreeable to the Confederation. We now desire that our Young Men may be made Acquainted with one another and that there may be no Distinction between them.

A String of White Wampum.

Brothers:

You desired us in the speech which you made to us yesterday that if we could think of any thing that might be for the Advantage of Both of us, that we would mention it. We now Request that our Wise Brethren in Congress may be informed that it is our particular Request that Colo. Jno. Gibson may be Appointed to have the Charge of all Matters Between you and us. We esteem him as one of ourselves, he has always acted

an honest part by us and we are Convinced he will make our Common good his chief Study, and not think only how he may Get Rich. We desire also that he may have the Charge and take care of the Warriors of our people who may join you on the present Expedition. When we were last in Philadelphia our Wise Brethren in Congress may Remember we desired them to send Schoolmasters to our Towns to instruct our Children as we think it will be for our Mutual Interest, we Request it may be Complied with.

A Belt of White Wampum.

17th.

The Commissioners and Chiefs met in Council when the Articles of Confederation and Union were again Read and Interpreted, when they were then Asked if they approved of them, to which they Returned for Answer they did and were now come to sign them. A Triplicate then of the Articles of Confederation and Union was signed by the Commissioners and the Chiefs in presence of the Subscribing Evidences, one of which copies was kept by the Commissioners to be sent to the Honble. the Congress, another given to the Chiefs, and a third given to Genl. McIntosh.

The Commissioners then informed the Chiefs that they had a present, which was sent by the Honble. Congress to them as a Testimony of their Regard for them(9) which they should Deliver the next Day to them.

Brigadier General MacIntosh informed the Chiefs that as the Articles of Confederation and Union were now signed by the Commissioners and them he intended to Celebrate the Happy Occassion with a *Feu de joye*. The Troops would parade for that purpose and that he should speak to them.

12 O'Clock A. M.

The Troops prepared on the Common near the Fort and two Field pieces were drawn out on the Occasion, the Genl. and the

9–Congress had, on June 4, "*Resolved* That the Committee of Commerce be directed to procure goods, and such other articles as are proper for presents to the western Indian nations, to the amount of ten thousand dollars, and transmit the same to Fort Pitt, to the commissioners, who are to treat with the Indians there on the 23 day of July next." (See preceding article of this series.)

Commissioners, and the Indian Chiefs on the Green near the Fort, when Capt. White Eyes addressed the General.

Brothers:

I acquainted you some time ago, that the Bad people at Detroit had sent me a Tomhawk desiring me to Strike you with it. As soon as I received it I immediately Acquainted you of it and have Wrapped it up, so that none of my Young Men or my Counsellors have seen it. I now have Brought it here and you may make what use you please of it.

He then threw down on the Ground the two Belts, the one a plain one, the other painted Red with a Tomhawk Decyphered on it(10). Genl. MacIntosh then took up the Belts and informed the Chiefs that he should use them against their Common enemy. The Genl. then Addressed the Chiefs as follows:

Brothers:

I dont love many words, or long and formal talks. We have been too often Cheated by them. The time is now come that Actions alone must declare who are our Friends and who are our Enemies. I have told you already our Fathers the Wise Men of the United States in the great Council Assembled in Congress, have sent me here to protect those whom I find, and will Shew themselves our true and real Friends; and punish those that are our Enemies. And I will not be put off, or deceived by their Offers, or pretences when they see just Vengeance ready to overwhelm them for their wickedness, unless they give Substantial Satisfaction and proofs of their Repentance. We have great patience with those Red Men who were bought like Slaves with a few paultry Goods by the English to strike us. Still wishing them to become wiser; and earnestly desiring that as we grew from the same Ground, so we might be one people, without Regarding Colour. You are a small people. Not a handfull, We wanted to take care of you; and Nurse you, as Women nurse their Children; until you become a great people as we are. You know we are in Number like the

10–It is quite probable the painted belt was sent by the British, together with a tomahawk. The white belt was added by the Delaware Chiefs to show they did not accept the former; that they were the friends of the Americans and repudiated the mission from their enemies. The reference to the tomahawk having been wrapped up, is purely figurative.

stones upon the Ground. And grow every Day more and more. You have heard we have beat the English every where, and almost killed and drove them all off of our land which they wanted to take from us. That the French and Spaniards have now joined us, and beat them on the great Water also, so that they are in Danger of losing their own little Island. Therefore every wise man among you will see as Clear as the sun Shines; that the English cannot keep Detroit, Niagara, and other little places they hold upon the Great Lakes long, nor supply you long with Goods. What then will become of these foolish people who have made us their Enemies without Cause?

Brothers and fellow Warriors of Cochocking(11).

We are at last Angery. You know we have great Reason to be so. I am going soon to your Country with my Warriors. I find your few Towns alone among all the Red people have been wise. Now is the Time to Shew it, by taking up this Hatchet like men determined to be free with us, against all our Enemies and your Enemies. And this Belt to Confirm it, expecting when I go over this River your Warriors will join me, that we may grow great together, and be as one people (as you have declared this Day) Whilst the Sun and Moon Shines or the Waters Run. And I cannot answer for the Conduct of my Warriors towards any who Refuse it.

[End of the Document.]

Attached to the preceding document is a copy of the treaty, which, as stated, was signed in triplicate, one copy being sent to Congress, the second remaining with General McIntosh, and the third being taken by the Delaware chiefs. It is quite evident the copy in question has always been attached to the document, this is shown by many stains which penetrate all the pages. These were probably the papers sent to Congress, and mentioned in the Journal of Congress, October 6, 1778, as follows:

"A letter, of 24 September, from Andrew Lewis and Thomas Lewis, Esqrs, commissioners at Fort Pitt, was read, together with their proceedings at a treaty held with

11–Coshocton, on the site of the present Coshocton, Coshocton county, Ohio, was the most important settlement of the Turtle tribe of the Delawares. It was destroyed by the whites in 1781.

chiefs of the Delaware nation, and an agreement or confederation entered into between them and the said chiefs."

The signatures of the two commissioners, and of the witnesses, likewise the marks of the three Delaware chiefs, as they appear on the copy of the treaty now in the Library of Congress, are shown in the accompanying plate(12). Another copy of the treaty, probably the one retained by General McIntosh, is now preserved in the State Department, Washington. The copy in the Library of Congress is written on both sides of several sheets of paper, but the State Department copy is on one side of large sheets which were joined together so as to present a single surface for the writing. Attached to this copy are the signatures of Joseph L. Finley and John Finley, both captains in the Eighth Pennsylvania regiment who signed as witnesses. Their names do not appear on the Library of Congress copy. The text of the treaty has been given in several official publications, and will not be quoted here.

12–The majority of the names have been included in note 1 of this article, the others may be referred to here:

William Crawford was appointed Lieutenant Colonel of the Fifth Virginia regiment February 13, 1776. Colonel of the Seventh Virginia regiment, August 14, 1776. Resigned March 22, 1777. Later he served on the western frontier and commanded an expedition against the Indians. He was captured, and burned at the stake, in the present Wyandotte county, Ohio, June 11, 1782. (see note 7 above.)

John Campbell, probably the second lieutenant in the Pennsylvania Militia, who was killed in action with the Indians west of the Ohio, June 4, 1782.

John Stephenson, an influential citizen of western Pennsylvania.

Alexander Graham, appointed ensign in the Fifth Pennsylvania Battalion, August 9, 1776. Second lieutenant in Eighth Pennsylvania regiment, July 13, 1777.

Benjamin Mills, First lieutenant Eighth North Carolina regiment, November 28, 1776, Resigned July 12, 1777. Recorded in the Journal of Congress, June 27, 1778, is the recommendation of the Board of War, to Congress, that Benjamin Mills, Lieutenant of the first troop, be granted a commission "in the Corps of North Carolina Light Dragoons," to date from July 16, 1777. The following reference to North Carolina troops at Fort Pitt, appearing in the Journal of Congress, December 5, 1778, is of interest in this connection: "The Board of War being applied to by Captain Medici of the North Carolina dragoons, for direction for his future government, beg leave to state the case of the said troops:

"That from an impracticability to provide for them, they have been hitherto unemployed in the field, except about forty, who were lately compleatly fitted out and sent to Brigadier M'Intosh under Captain Ashe, in expectation that the men whose terms of service were near expiring, would agree to stay two months beyond their time; but on or soon after their arrival at Fort Pitt, their times being expired, all but 14 quitted the service and went home."

TITHABLES OF PITTSYLVANIA COUNTY, 1767.

(Contributed by Mrs. N. E. Clement, Chatham, Va.)

(Continued from p. 304.)

	Tithes	Land
Capt. John Wards (17) Tithes	17	
John Cleveland, Thos. Hardy, Peter Lee, Harry, Jack, Abram, Bess, Tom, Ben, Nant, Jack, Dick, Matt, Tom, John, Thomas & Nant	17	
John Nichols	1	100
Samuel Smith, Jack, Tom, Will, Hannah, & Bess,	6	150
Edward Polley, Jr.,	1	
John Adams, John Adams, Jr.,	2	894
Allan Adams,	1	200
Charles Beasley,	1	
William Pigg,	1	200

(17.) John Ward came to Pittsylvania from Albemarle about 1763. (Book of Surveys, Pittsylvania Records). He built his home on the north side of Staunton River, now Campbell, which he called the "Mansion," for its elegance in those pioneer days. It is standing to-day, a quaint old homestead, with its corner fire places and cabinets either side the mantel. There are three stories and the third story was the ball room, covering the entire house, and here the daughters of the house were married. John Ward married 1st Anne Chiles, daughter of Henry Chiles of Amelia (Va. Mag. Hist. Vol. 20), by this marriage there was issue:

1. William Ward, married Mildred Adams, daughter of Robert Adams and Penelope Lynch.
2. Agatha Ward, married Col. John Calloway.
3. Anne Ward, married Christopher Lynch, son of Major Chas. Lynch and Sarah Clark Lynch.
4. Thomas Ward married Mildred Walden.
5. Jeremiah Ward moved to Texas.
6. John Ward, settled "Sulphur Springs" home.
7. Henry Ward, born Ap. 5, 1751, died Ap. 12, 1823 (taken from tomb at the "Mansion.") Married Martha Barbour.

John Ward married secondly Mrs Sarah Clark Lynch, widow of Major Charles Lynch, Dec. 17, 1766 (Bedford County Records).

During the Revolutionary War, John Ward was appointed Major of the Bedford Militia. His will is recorded in Campbell County, 1817.

A List of Tithables Taken by John Hanley (18), Gent for year 1767.

	Tithes	Land
William Hinton,	2	
John Panill,	1	
John Condaman,	1	
Wm. Huntsman,	1	
James Lyon,	4	200
John Bollin,	1	
Wm. Bollin,	1	
Wm. Stevens,	3	
James Anderson,	1	
Daniel Wells,	2	
Joshua Bewclett,	2	
Jac. McPais (?)	1	
Abraham Brend,	1	
William Brend,	1	
Beni Sanders,	1	
John Hall,	1	
Nathan Bewclett,	3	
Daniel Con,	1	
John McGown,	4	
Bedford Jinkins,	1	
Eliphes Shalton,	2	
George Cowton,	4	
———— Shelton	2	
George Carrail, (?)	1	
John Williams,	1	
Ralph Shelton, Sen.,	4	200
John Hanby,	4	

A List of Tythables Taken July 17, 1767 by Peter Copland (19) Gent

John Kendricks,	1	
James Roberts,	1	

(18.) John Hanbey was one of the first Justices of the Peace for Pittsylvania County, and lived in that portion which later was known as Patrick County. In 1775, was appointed Captain of the Militia.

(19.) Peter Copland, one of the first Justices of Peace for Pittsylvania, and lived in that portion of the county which later became Henry.

	Tithes.	Land
Dauzwell Rogers,	1	
Thom. Nunn,	3	
Rich White,	1	
John Rowland, John Palfery, Jack & Pegg,	4	
Capt. William Blevins, Dawl & Peter,	3	
Daniel Newman Jun,	1	
Dennis Bryan,	1	
Thomas Wright,	1	
John Rice,	1	
Neel Roberts,	1	
James Wallen,	1	
Charles Scaggs	1	
Edwd Callaham,	1	
D'o. Baker,	1	
Harry Dillen,	1	
Wm. Young,	1	
Wm. Baily Jun,	1	
Rich. Baker,	1	
Little William Blevins,	1	
Frederick D. O. Daniel,	1	
William Bailey, Senr,	1	
Wm. Ashart,	1	
David Shadwell & Bob,	2	150
John Handy,	1	
Jacob Cooger & son Henry,	2	
James Filley,	1	
Wm. Reed,	1	
David Hailey,	1	
Robt McVatta	1	
Wm. McVatta	1	
John Barker	1	
Jeremiah Claimck, Jun	1	
John Newman	1	
Kave Bailey	1	
Thomas Cooper, Sen	1	
Wm. Reeding	1	
Thomas Shanam & David Cazey	2	

	Tithes	Land
Jessey Bound & Pompey	2	
Enguim Nunn	1	
Joseph Nunn & Nan	2	
Thomas Gazaway	1	
Joseph Wallen	1	
Elisha Wallen Senr	1	
Thomas Cooper, Jr., Terence Daniel, negroes George & Winney	4	300
William Bass	1	
Elisha Harbour	1	150
Elijah Harbour & negro Hannah	2	310
Fosyth Bradberry	1	
James Merrydeth	1	
Barclay Merrydeth	1	
William Merrydeth, Constable	1	
Thomas Webb	1	
John Wells	1	
William Thomas, John Davis, Benj Davis & Charles Mitchell	4	
Waters Dunn, Waters Dunn, Jr., Richd Dunn, Richd Bradberry, negroes Tom, Moll & Lilly	7	
Peter Copland, Richd Copland, Dan'l McBride & negro Hannah	4	
Ambrose Jones, negroes Dinah & Judy	3	
Thomas Cooper, jr	1	
Philip Ryan	1	
John Talbot	1	765
James Calk	1	
John Cox, Sr., John Cox, Jr., Neg^{s} Lucy	3	
Nemian Prater, Nemiah Prater	2	
Charles Semple	1	
Matthew Small	1	
	99	

The above List of Tithables taken by me.

Peter Copeland.

	Tithes	Land
A List of Tithables & Land taken by.....Gordon, Pittyslvania County, 1767.		
John Wimbsih, James Mitchell, negro Cyrus, Orange, Sall, Pegg, in all	6	627
John Martin, Joseph Cox	2	
William Candler, Arestripes Baghan, negro Chester	3	
William Stanley, John Stanley, Wm. Stanley, Jr	3	
William Pain	1	
Thomas Stone	1	
John Stone, jun^{r}	1	
James Stone	1	100
Thomas Justice	1	
Israel Justice	1	300
Simeon Justice	1	
Samuel Gordon	Torn	
Archibald Gordon (20), negros Dick, Kildare, Lucy, Sarah	5	(torn)
John Hickey (21)		(torn)

A List of Tithables taken by Hamon Critz (22), Gent., for the year 1767.

Thomas Walling	1	125

(20.) Archibald Gordon, one of the first Justices of the Peace. Was appointed Lieutenant of the Militia in 1767. In 1774 was made Col. of of the County. Elected Sheriff in 1771. "He was Scotch by birth, and lived and died without marrying" (Va. Mag. Hist. Vol. 7).

(21.) John Hicky, very probably the Mr. Hikki mentioned in the Moravian Diary, 1753. (Va. Mag. Hist. Vol. XIII). When passing through what is now Henry County, they say, "Mr. Hikki who lives half a mile from here and keeps a store (which is nearest house at which we can buy salt), came to us and showed himself very friendly. We had a miserable road to his house. Here we bought some provisions." In the earliest records of the county we find mention of "Hicky's old road." It traverses the county from Staunton River on the north straight to the Court house, and then turns due west into Henry County, and this same road is to-day called Hicky's road.

(22.) Hamon Critz, one of the first Justices of the County. He lived in that part of the county later known as Patrick. At a meeting of the Vestry of Camden Parish at Pittsylvania Courthouse, July 22, 1769, "a chappel of ease" was ordered to be built near Captain Haman Crites of a size 20 by 24 feet, Round loggs for the body, a clapboard Roof and Benches, & etc."

	Tithes	Land
William Hays	2	
Cillis Ratlift	1	
Arch'l Hughes	1	
Geo. Allan		
Henry France		
David Gowing	3	272
Nicholas Langford	2	
James Fee	1	
Geo. Poor	2	
Robt Crump, Junr		
Robt Crump, Senr		
Frederick Fulkerson		
Alexr Deputy		
Adam Loving (23)	2	
William Loving	1	
Joseph Cameron	1	400
John Pluk	3	
Zacheriah Cook	1	
Thos. Harbour	4	790
David Witt	1	
Paletiah Shelton	1	144
Geo. Gibson	1	
John Wildrich Bender		402
John Parr	2	400
William Denson	1	
William Tirpin	1	
Geo. Gray	1	
William Harrald	1	
John Jinings	1	
Peter Rentfro	2	
John Koger	1	
John France	3	
John Camron	1	

(23.) Adam Loving is mentioned in the Moravian Diaries, 1753. They were passing through what is now Henry County and write "we drove four miles further and ate dinner at Adam Loving's plantation. They were very friendly to us. The man showed us the ford across the first branch of Mayo River." (Va. Mag. Hist. Vol. 13.)

	Tithes	Land
David Lyler	1	
Miles Jinings	2	185
Lambath Dodson	1	
Phillip Buzzard	1	
Thom. Murry	1	
Solomon Smith	1	
John Spain	1	
John Gooch	1	
James Pritchard	2	
Haman Critz	2	200

A List of Tithables taken for Pittsylvania in 1767 by John Dix (24).

John Armstrong Annica	2	210
Thomas Ayers	1	
Daniel Ayers	1	
Moses Ayers	1	
John Bynum	1	200
Arthur Bynum	1	
Lawrence Barker	1	
William Barker	1	
Edward Burges	1	
John Bynam Jr	1	
Moses Cornelius	1	
Thomas Colley	1	
William Cornelius	1	
William Colley	1	
John Chipman, Constable	1	
James Collie	1	
Thomas Dudley	1	
Henry Dixon, Jas. Durough, Jas. Borough	3	
John Dix, Ephraim Dismunkes, James Evalto, Will, Joe, Minkes, Ben, Lett, Old Janney & Janney and 1 chair, deduct 2 tithes being ferrymen	10	307

(24.) John Dix, established a ferry across Dan River in 1766, which was used constantly in Southern Campaign of Revolution (see Pitts Records). Was one of the first Justices of the County. Appointed Captain of the Militia in 1775.

	Tithes	Land
William Durrett, Peter	2	
Edward Floyde		180
Lewis Green, William Green	2	100
John Hamilton		400
Samuel Harris (25), Bob. Honeyball, York, Pompey, Janney, Sally, Lucy	8	757
James Hogan, William Hogan	2	100
John Hensley	1	
Thomas Pistole	1	
Samuel Pruett	1	590
Hugh Mahone	1	165
John McClane	1	
Thomas Merriwether, William Meriwether, Jason Bowcock, Paul, Frank, Southsea Betty, Nann, Hannah, Nann, Nedd, Sue, Judy, Creshea, Joe, Paul, Jacob, Cate, Peter & Judy	20	545
William McDaniel, Tom, Dick, Daniel, Lovoney, Milley, Liddy & Janney	9	960
Daniel Ober	1	
William Owen	1	100
John Roberts, Jas. Roberts & Jas. Roberts, Jr.	3	383
Gabriel Richards	1	200
David Ross		640
Geo. Southerland	2	175
John Southerland	1	
Jacob Stillwell	1	
Philip Southerland	1	

(25.) Samuel Harris was a pioneer Baptist Minister of Virginia. He was also an early settler of this county, having many surveys made Ap. 2, 1748. An old book entitled "Pioneer Baptist Preachers of Virginia" says of him that "he was born 1724. in Hanover County. When young he moved to the County of Pittsylvania. As he advanced in age he became a favorite of the people. He was appointed church warden, sheriff, a justice of the peace, burgess for the county, Colonel of the Militia, Captain of Mayo Fort, and Commissary for the Fort and Army. On one of his visits to the fort in his official character he called at the home of William and Joseph Murphy, dressed in his uniform * * * * Was converted and was baptized in 1758 by the Reverend Daniel Marshall During the war when it was extremely difficult to procure salt, kept two wagons running to Petersburg to bring up salt for his neighbors."

	Tithes	Land
John Stamps	1	
Timothy Stamps	1	
James Terry		3065
William Travis	1	
William Thomas, Arthur & Janny	3	1005
William Tredwell	1	
William Wynne, Prince, Peter, Nedd, Cale & Judy	6	400
Thomas Wynne & Lucy	2	165
Robert Wright	1	
William Wynne, jr., Saunders Southerland & Prince	3	500
John Worsham & Sirus	2	
Joshua Worsham, Will, Frank, Abram, Lucy, Judy & Pegg	7	300
Robert Wynne	1	
Thomas Wynne, jr	1	400
John Wheler	1	

Signed John Dix.

List of Tithables taken by Peter Perkins (26) for the year 1767.

	White	Blacks	Acres	Wheels
George Chadwell Land			125 ac	
Dutton Lain tith, Land	1		83 ac	
David Terrill Land			275	
Edward Sweeton (?) tithe	1			
John Morton tithe, land	1		450	
James Burnett tithe	1			

(26.) Peter Perkins was the son of Constant Perkins and owned a large plantation "Oak Hill," in southern part of the county, on Dan River. He took an active part in the life of the county, being one of the first Justices of the Peace. Was a Vestryman, member of the County Committee of Safety. & in 1775, appointed Captain of the Militia. Commanded a Pittsylvania Company of Minute Men in Cherokee Expedition of 1776. By the close of the Revolution, had been promoted to Colonel and commanded a regiment in battle of Guilford (Pittsylvania Pension Papers). In the spring of 1781, a Continental Hospital was established at his home for three months, as the Book of Claims, for Pittsylvania shows.

	White	Black	Acres	Wheels
Davie Fields tithe	1			
George Russell Land			180	
George Young, 1 negro woman, 1 Land	1	1	520	
Christopher Bowlin, son William	2			
Joseph Bowlin, 1 tithe	1			
James Bowlin, 1 tithe	1			
Ephram McGoff	1			
George Thompson	1			
Richard Churchwell, tithe	1			
John Rich tithe	1			
.....Conoway, 1 tithe	1			
Archibald Thompson	1			
Rodden Thompson	1			
Randolph Gipson, tithe, negro Bomber. Land	1	1	100	
Thomas Calaway, sons Charles and Richard's land	3		100	
John Court & soninlaw Jas. Coursey Peterson	2			
John Frederick Richel, 1 tithe Land	1		190	
William Rice Sadler	1			
Patrick Stiel, 1 tithe	1			
Thomas Smith, son Thomas, Land	2		400	
Edward Smith, negro Will, Land	1	1	150	
John Fulton, 1 tithe Land	1		300	
John Smith, negro Dinah Land	1	1	355	
Henry Lansford, negro Judy, Land	1	1	377	
Ralph Elkins Jun	1			
Richard Elkins, 1 tithe	1			
Nathaniel Elkins, son Jessey	2			
John Rukey, son James	2			
Thom. Gresham	1			
Christopher Bowling Jun	1			
John Gresham son of Phil Gresham	1			
Edward Perogog, tithe	1			
James Elkin on leather wood	1			
Samuel Shields, Land	1		130	

	White	Black	Acres	Wheels
John Gresham son of Thom Gresham	1			
Jesse Elkins, 1 tithe	1			
John Cox	1			
John Givins	1			
William Shields	1			
George Button	1			
Henry Burnett	1			
Thom. Cunningham Jun	1			
James Shields, 1 tithe, Land	1		210	
James Strong	1			
Benjamine Croley, negro Peter, Land	1	1	48	
Thomas Strong	1			
Charles Cloke, tithe	1			
Benjamine Croly, 1 tithe land	1		210	
John Strong, Joseph Martin	2		100	
Jeremiah Walker, negro	1	1		
Joseph Cunningham 1 tithe land	1		370	
Joseph Morton, 1 tithe, negro Dinah Land	1	1	400	
Abraham Passley 1 tithe	1			
Martain Dunkin	1			
John Scags	1			
James Edwards 1 tithe land	1		90	
Thom. Bullock	1			
Richard Bullock	1			
John Lankford 1 tithe Land	1		360	
Joseph Cotton	1			
James Presnall son James, negro Jane	2	1		
George Hide 1 tithe	1			
Owen Wait	1			
Joel Certain 1 tithe	1			
Shadrack Turner sons John & Josiah	3		256	
Thomas Watson, 1 tithe land	1		100	
John Watson Jun, Land	1		220	
James Gravely Jun'r	1			
John Watson, sen tithe & Land	1		104	
John Warring	1			

	Whites	Blacks	Acres	Wheels
Thom. Gravely	1			
James Garner 1 tithe	1			
Thomas Garner 1 tithe	1			
Thomas Horgeth tithes	1	2		
John Morton tithes Negroes dogery & seftis	1	2		
Arthur Fuller	1			
Daniel Hankins negroes frank, Nan & patt and Land	1	3	1780	
Nicholas Perkins 1 tithe negro moll	1	1		
Joseph Harris	1			
David Harris	1			
John Harris Constable				
Benjamine Neal Constable				
John Roach 1 tithe	1			
John Oaks	1			
John Rice	1			
Henry Dunlop	1			
John Gwin	1			
John Sams	1			
William Bean & son Wm. Land	2		1083	
John Harchman son Thomas Land	2		100	
Constant Perkins negro Jacob	1	1		
John Chadwell negro Farmer & Tiller, Land	1	2	748	
Zacheriah McCubbins	1			
John Been Jun	1			
John Jones, 1 tithe Land	1		200	
John Join Land			525	
Wm. Edwards son Thom. Land	2		293	
Robt Perriman	1			
Thomas Billings	1			
William Murphy	1			
Thom. Edwards, negro Andrew Land	1	1	91	
William McCubbin	1			
Henry Rice Land	1		200	
Nathan Carter	1			

A List of Land & Tithes taken by Hugh Innes (27) for Pittsylvania County Anno. Dom. 1767.

	Tithes	Land
Samuel Collins	1	
Rowland Judd & Nathaniel Judd	2	
James Keith	1	
Charles Atkinman	1	
Morris Atkinson	1	
Abner Cochrum	1	
John Law John Law jr. negroes Jeany & Keat	4	400
Henry Atkinson jr	1	
Thomas Hall	1	
William Hall & Lansford Hall	2	
Jesse Hall	1	
William Hall jr	1	
William Hill	1	400
Isom Hall	1	200
Thomas Dunkin Jr	1	
Thomas Jones	1	536
Thomas Anderson & James Anderson	2	130
William Griffith	1	
Joseph Clements, Gabriel Clements & Vardiman Clements	3	
Francis Easom & Wm Hungett, John Hungett & Chas. Hungett	4	135
Christopher Shot & Christopher Shot Jr	2	
Benjamine Barten	1	
John Ferguson & negro Dinah	2	130
John Savory Jr	1	
William Bramby	1	
Samuel Walker & negro Judd	2	
William Davis	1	
Joseph Bird	1	400
Reuben Kieff	1	
Robert Hill, Swinfield Hill & Thomas Hill	3	250

(27.) Hugh Innes was a Justice of Peace, Vestryman & member of County Committee of Safety. He, with John Donelson, represented Pittsylvania in Convention of August 1774.

NOTES AND QUERIES.

Captain Cuthbert Harrison.

Cuthbert Harrison, who was Captain of Virginia Light Dragoons the Revolution, is shown by the Virginia Revolutionary records not to be of the family in which the name appears so often; but to be a Brunswick Co. man. He was probably a descendant of William Harrison, an early sheriff of Prince George Co.

The land bounty warrant is as follows:

"No. 6660, 2000 acres; 6661, 2000 acres,

In Council Nov. 26, 1824.

It is advised that Cuthbert Harrison be allowed Land bounty as a Captain of Dragoons in the Continental Line for service during the War.

James Pleasants.

Two warrants for 2000 acres each, 6660 and 6661, issued on the 3d of December 1824 to Cuthbert Harrison and delivered to S. H. Sanders, attorney of Gabriel Harrison."

"Warrant 9883 additional land to the heirs of Cuthbert Harrison for 1 year, 6 months and 12 days, as Captain Continental Line."

"Exchange warrant 668, to Joel Hale, administrator de bonis non with will annexed of Cuthbert Harrison, deceased, Captain of Dragoons, Continental Line."

"Power of attorney from Gabriel Harrison, son and executor of the estate of Cuthbert Harrison, deceased, of Brunswick Co., to S. H. Sanders."

Certain Advantages of Book Learning.

Why have there been three Randolphs governors of Virginia, and a fourth acting governor for about a week? The explanation must be in part that the Randolphs were well instructed in their youth, and it is of interest to make certain who any of the teachers of the three governors Randolph were, or for that matter who any of the teachers in their fathers' families were.

The Dictionary of National Biography *sub* Sir John Leslie [1766-1832], the celebrated physicist and mathematician, has the statement that "the year 1789, Leslie spent in America as tutor to two young Americans

named Randolph." In the circumstances this is not at all precise. But who the two young Americans were is pretty clear by reference to Hanna's *Memoirs of Dr. Chalmers* (New York, 1850) Vol. I, p. 465. Two letters are there quoted from the young Leslie to the young Chalmers [James Chalmers, brother of Thomas], the one dated Edinburgh, February 1788, and the other Richmond, Virginia, January 1789. Leslie and Chalmers had been fellow students at St. Andrew's. In his first letter Leslie says he is to sail for America in March, and is enthusiastic to see the new country. "I consider myself as a citizen of the world—*ubi libertas, ibi patria.*" The second letter runs—"My dear James: My stay in the country has been too short for my giving any account of it. At my first arrival I was extremely struck with the peculiarities, and had I written you at that time my letter would have been full of remarks. The novelty is now over, and I am inclined to make cool reflections. I must confess that Virginia has fallen below my expectations. I reckon Mr. Randolph's the best family, and Tuckahoe the best land. My republican notions are now completely sobered. If any person be discontented at home, let him be acquainted with other countries. I am afraid my schemes in America will not succeed." Leslie was back in Edinburgh by February 5, 1790.

Hence it is very reasonable to affirm that Sir John Leslie was tutor for parts of two years in the family of the Randolphs of "Tuckahoe." And it is likely that offer of the post was made by Thomas Mann Randolph (later governor) when he was a student at Edinburgh in 1788.

A. J. Morrison.

[Dr. William E. Channing was tutor in the family of David Meade Randolph 1798.-1800, thus adding another famous man to the list of Randolph tutors.]

Andrews—On page 182 of the current volume of your Magazine, in the April number, there is a note in reference to Robert Andrews, at one time Professor in William & Mary College, in which it is stated that he married ——————, and had issue, etc.

His wife's name was Elizabeth Ballard. The marriage is recorded in Norfolk County, date January 3, 1775.

B. L. Ancell,
Yangchow, China.

Notes on Robinson Family, Eastern Shore.

The will of Elizabeth Robinson, of Shadwell in the parish of Stebenheath als Stepney, Middlesex, England, was dated Dec. 3, 1667, and proved June 29, 1668 (recorded Accomac Co., Vol. 8, p. 66). She makes bequests to her sons William, John and Benjamin Robinson, daughter

Ann Robinson, to grandson John Custis a red stone ring. Her daughter Anna, executrix, and John and Alicia Custis proved the will (T. T. Upshur stated that Major-General John Custis married, Alicia, daughter of the testatrix. He did not marry Alicia until about 1657 and his eldest son John was born in 1653, so there was a former wife).

It appears from the Accomac records (Vol. 15, Order Book 1710-16, p. 239) that Col. Tully Robinson heir-at-law of Benjamin Robinson, deceased, whose widow was Elizabeth Robinson objected to the probate of Benjamin Robinson's will because there were not three witnesses, and in the will the decedant had willed him only a part of the land, while he claimed to be entitled to all. The court decided that the part of the will bequeathing the land was null and void; but ordered the will to be probated March 20, 1715-16.

Col. Tully Robinson (born Oct. 31, 1658, died Nov. 30, 1723—tomb at Onancock) made his will Nov. 21, 1723. It was proved August 8, 1724, and includes bequests to his children Ann Robinson, Mary Robinson, Wm. Robinson, West Smith, Scarburgh Wise, Sarah Smith, Susan McLanahan, Elizabeth wife of John Smith, grandson Wm. Robinson Smith, youngest daughter Anna Robinson to be under her mother's care. Item: "I give my daughter Scarburgh Wise six of my best silver spoons and the oval table in the hall." Wife Sarah executrix. She qualified (Vol. 1715-29, pp. 7,8. (Sarah Robinson was the daughter of Lt. Col. John and Matilda (Scarburgh) West).

Col. Tully Robinson was son of William Robinson.

Claiborne.

Letitia White Clark, daughter of Howson Clark of Pittsylvania County was born Nov. 11, 1800, and married Dec. 5, 1818, Col. Leonard Claiborne of Danville, Va. and had issue: 1. William, married Miss Haden. He was a colonel in the Confederate army (Issue: Letitia, Richard, William, Ella and John); 2. James, died of yellow fever in Galveston; 3. David Augustine, married Elvira, daughter of Col. Wm. Clark, of Halifax Co. (and had issue); 4. Mary Jane, married Sterling Edmunds, of Halifax Co. (Issue: Lilly, Ethel, and Sterling); 5. John Ferdinand, of Danville, Va., married Jane Augustine, daughter of Samuel Stone, and died Nov. 25, 1856, no issue; 6. Letitia, married John Smith; 7. Bettie, married Dr. John Drury; 8. Thomas, Colonel C. S. A.; badly wounded in the leg and died after amputation; 9. Grandy, served in C. S. A., married Miss Palmer of Richmond, Va.; 10. Langston, married Miss Hairston, of Henry Co., Va.; living in Winston, N. C.; 11. Ellen, married Col. Carrington of Louisville, Ky.; 12. Letitia White Clark, died in Danville, Va., May 12, 1868.

Wyatt.

Edmond Wyatt buys land of Morgan Jones, Westmoreland Co., Sept. 22, 1673. This land Edmond Wyatt devises to his sons James and William Wyatt and their heirs by his last will and testament in writing. "James and William Wyatt of the Parish of Copely, in the county of Westmoreland, planters of the one part," sell to Thomas Browning, two hundred and six acres in the forest of Nominy, Feb. 23, 1707. Court Certificate on deed states "and Eliz. Moon wife of John Moon, and mother of said Wyatts voluntarily relinquishes her right of dower" etc.

James Wyatt's inventory returned to Court in Westmoreland in 1734 by Kathrine his widow and adm'r.

William Wyatt died 1727 or 8, in Westmoreland. His wife Martha was appointed adm'r. Wanted to know the connection between Edmond Wyatt of Westmoreland and his sons William and James, and other early Wyatts in Virginia. The records indicate that the descendants of the above later lived in Stafford and Prince William. Correspondence solicited by inquirer who has much data about Wyatts.

Mrs. A. E. W.,
81 Peachtree Circle,
Atlanta, Ga.

Bolling Hall, Bradford, England.

The people of England and of the United States are now interested in the alliance of two families of North of England Stock—(See an article in "the Yorkshire Observer Budget" published Oct. 30th, 1915, in Bradford) the City has lately received a Deed of Bolling Hall the time honr'd home of the Bollings & have employed the most skillful Architects to restore & prepare it for use as an Historical Museum, they have torn out partitions of brick-masonry-lath & plaster-removed paint of Oak Panell, exposed & restored fine carved oak beams, old fire places & their fixtures-the old ghost room, ancient furnishings, The old Norman Tower of the time Scott writes of in "Ivanhoe," Elizabethian additions & masonry up to the present time will undoubtedly be of great interest to English & American people—Virginians particularly. After the Bollings left for Virginia—& probably the Washingtons & others left about the same time for they in those days had peculiar troubles & cares, old feudal days passing away a new Era beginning as now—it was a beautiful country well timbered which was cut down and & did service in ships of war as Steel does today, after coal was found on the estate, then iron. Then John Sturges founded the Bowling Iron Co. & the toughest iron on earth was manufactured. Then James Watt perfected his condensing steam engine & the Bowling Iron Company constructed them

before he got his patent papers properly made out, he charged them with piracy £2000., settled it. There has been no improovement to those engines since except governers & Corlis valves. The oldest steam boilers in the world were there a few years ago. The Corlis Turbine is our modern engine. The first two railroads were started to run coal & iron from mines to foundry and coal to Bradford. Fixed engine and wire cable was the motive power. The first locomotive tyres were manufactured there and at Low Moor. Big guns for forts & navy in 1857. Those guns were on fortress at Quebec, at entrance to Mersey, Liverpool and at forts all over the globe, & the iron was in the sugar kettles of Jamaica & Cuba, &c. The second Naysmith steam vertical hammer. & Joshua Pollard & John Burch & my father had a struggle with Henry Bessmer as to who had the best right to manufacture steel. My father was an employe of the Bowling Iron Co. for 20 years & over. I was born on that estate in 1836. I still am interested in the history of the Bollings and would like to know more of their Virginia Estates and their experiences. There are two president Harrisons from that stock & two Mayor Harrisons of Chicago & the former mentioned Virginia lady destined to be the first lady of our land. I think it is our duty to try to bring about peace & good will all over the English speaking world & Historical Societies are going to take a hand in it. I hope I as one individual may be able to give & receive instruction.

Yours Sincerely
Wm. L. Hill

November 16th, 1915. Central City, Iowa.

Edward Washington.

Information is desired concerning the ancestry of Edward Washington of Fairfax County. His will is on record at Fairfax C. H., as is that of his son Edward. In the will of the second Edward he refers to his son John. Both wills are printed in Welles "History of the Washington Family." In the expense account his name is given as John A. Minnie Washington, daughter of the last named, married William Alder, Jan. 25, 1865, and is still living. John Augustine Washington was fifteen years of age when his guardian was appointed. Welles states that the first Edward was born in 1745. The Pohick Parish register shows that in 1737 Edward Washington was collector of levies. Later, in 1765, he was a vestryman of Pohick. Lund Washington, who wrote an account of his own Washington family, says that he saw Edward Washington Sr., then a very old man in 1788; but that they could trace no relationship.

C. J.

Indian Medal.

In XXIII, 197, I inserted a query in the "Virginia magazine of history and biography" regarding a Virginia Indian medal now in possession of the Bangor Historical Society, and apparently unknown to Virginia historians and antiquarians.

This brought a reply from Mr. E. E. Wright of New Orleans who called our attention to certain authorities where this medal is described: "American journal of numismatics" April, 1868 (vol. II, pages 110–111) and same periodical April 1873 (vol. VII, pages 89–90), and "American colonial history illustrated by contemporary medals" by C. W. Betts, page 261-262.

In each of these citations allusion is made to another Indian medal, evidently struck by New York in 1764; the reverse of each and the loop for attaching at top, being practically identical. This latter medal is also described on page 79 of vol. I of "Historical and statistical information respecting the history, condition and prospects of the Indian tribes," by H. R. Schoolcraft (illustration in Plate 20).

No information is forthcoming in regard to the origin or history of the medal. It would seem that some peace or treaty by Virginia with the Indians was commemorated by it. Mr. Howland Wood of the American Numismatic Society of New York writes usthat it is one of a number of medals given to Indians in colonial times, regarding which next to nothing is known.

Chas. A. Flagg
Bangor Public Library
Bangor, Maine.

Notes from the Records of Sussex County.

Will of James Mason, dated Jan. 1784, proved March 1784. Legatees: wife Rebecca, sons John and George, daughter Jane Mason, Seth Hays 150 acres, William Adams 50 acres, Thomas Jones, sons John, Edmund and Robert, father and mother still alive, "aged parents" John and Elizabeth Mason, brothers William and John Mason.

Will of Elizabeth Wager, dated Sept. 1784, proved Dec. 1784. Legatees: Rebecca Clack, Mary Mooring eldest daughter of Henry Smith, Elizabeth Judkins daughter of George Cryer, Mary Smith daughter of Samuel Magot, Nicholas Cryer, Rebecca daughter of William Waller, Sally daughter of John Barnes, Elizabeth daughter of Ann Ross, Benjamin Chapman, Samuel Cryer.

Will of Nathaniel (X) Harrison (in a low state of health), dated Feb. 17, 1782, proved May 26, 1785. Legatees: son Miles, wife Dolly, sons Hubbard and William Batt. Peterson and brother Richard Harrison, executors.

Will of Mary Wynne, dated Dec. 1786, proved Oct. 1787. Legatees: son Robert Powell, grandson, son of Edward Powell, deceased; granddaughter Mary wife of James Lee, grandson Isaac son of Thomas Collier, granddaughter Tabitha Tuell Powell daughter of Edward Powell, daughter Mary wife of Robert Powell, son John Powell, &c.

Will of Jacob (X) Lanier, dated Sept. 1788, proved Nov. 1788, Legatees: brothers Thomas and Benjamin Lanier.

Will of William Batte, dated March 1789, proved April 1789. Legatees: wife, sons William, James, Lewis, and Alexander Watson Batte, daughter Sarah Parham Batte, daughter Mary Batte, daughter Elizabeth Parham Batte, daughter Frances Beverley Batte.

Will of Lewis Batte, dated June 1789, proved March 1790. Legatees: Brother James Batte, mother Sarah Batte, sister Sarah Batte, sisters Mary, Elizabeth Parham and Frances Beverley Batte, brother Alexander W. Batte.

Will of Edward Goodrich, Sr., 1790, daughter Sarah Thornton, &c.

Will of Robert Rives, Sr., proved May 24, 1792.

Will of John Mason, dated April 1793, proved Aug. 1793. Legatees: brother Edmunds Mason, all his slaves, uncle William Harrison, brother-in-law Isaac [?] Maclin.

Will of James Maclin, proved Dec. 1794.

Notes from Goochland County Records.

Deed Oct. 8, 1734, from John Carter of Goochland to Thomas Carter, of same, conveying 200 acres.

Will of John Peter Bondurant, dated Spt.e 21, 1734, proved Jan. 21, 1734 (5), son John, land where said John lives, sons Peter and Joseph, daughter Ann Ford, wife Ann.

Deed March 18, 1734, to Thomas Ballew of Goochland.

Inventory of Joseph Watkins, deceased, March 1, 1734.

Deed from Arthur Hopkins of Goochland and Elizabeth his wife, May 16, 1735, to Charles Lewis, of Goochland, gent.

Deed, May 19, 1735, from John Cobb, of Goochland. Signed "John Cobbs."

Deed from Thomas Carter to his son Edward, June 10, 1735.

Deed, June 17, 1735, from James Nevill, of Goochland, to Michael Thomas, conveying land patented by said Nevill in 1729.

Deed March 14, 1734, from Josias Payne to George Payne. Witnesses: Robert Payne, George Payne, Jr., John Payne.

Deed June 10, 1735, from Thomas Carter and Susannah his wife.

Deed, 1735, from Henry Hudson of Henrico to his brother-in-law Thomas Russell of Henrico.

Deed, July 14, 1735, from Capt. James Holman of Goochland.

Inventory of estate of Judith Johns, dated July 15, 1735, 25 head of cattle, &c., valued at £21. 10. 8.

Deed, Feb. 14, 1735, from John Woodson of Goochland to Stephen Bedford, late of Gloucester Co., conveying 350 acres on James River and Deep Creek.

Deed from John (X) Price and Hannah his wife of Henrico, conveying 800 acres in Goochland, April 5, 1736.

Deed from Richard Parker of Goochland, Nov. 18, 1735.

Deed (1735) from James Nevill of Goochland to James Daniel of Middlesex, conveying land on the south side of Fluvanna River in Goochland.

Payne Portraits.

In reference to my promise to furnish you, for publication, the descendants of Archer Payne, of "New Market," Goochland, and his wife Martha Dandridge [which will be printed later].

By the by, there are extant oil portraits of Archer Payne and his wife and all of their children. They were painted by an artist, who was said to have considerable talent as a painter, but it was hard to keep him sober enough to do his work.

Archer Payne is depicted with one hand holding a sample of wheat and the other resting on the handle of a plow.

His wife wears on her head what the ladies of the present day call a "Crazy Jane." She has a waiter of peaches.

Their oldest son Archer (who died without issue & unmarried) has a gun & dog & squirrel, which he has just killed.

Their oldest daughter Anne Spotswood (Mrs. Fleming) is dressed in the fashion of the day and with a hooped skirt. She has a little dog.

Dorothea (Mrs. Edward Bolling) is quite beautiful in the picture. She has a red bird perched on her finger and tied with a black cord.

Martha (Mrs. Strother) has a cat in her picture.

Jane—Mrs. Bolling and second Mrs. Ferguson—has a basket of fruit.

There is a large picture appearing—my grandfather dressed in the fashion of the day—a boy of some 10 or 12 who has been out with his bow and arrow and shot a woodpecker which he hands to his little brother (John Robert Dandridge Payne) who is dressed in his shirt only, while a negro nurse dressed in homemade clothes, cut very simple & with a necklace of blue beads around her neck, is watching the little boy as he reaches for the bird.

Then there is another large picture of two little girls with baskets of roses and two lambs with them. One of these little girls was Catharine, who married Archibald Bolling, and the other died young.

Only three of these portraits are in my possession, but I think it would be easy to have them all photographed.

As for the descendants of Philip Payne and Elizabeth Dandridge, I will try to get that done by one of their descendants who will fill out more completely, what I have already.

Jno. M. Payne.

Garden of Prince Edward County.

In the year 1773 died the Reverend James Garden, minister of St. Patrick's parish in Prince Edward County. From Mr. Garden's will [Pr. Edward W. B. I., 156] it appears that he left a very good estate—four plantations (in Charlotte and Cumberland counties) and twenty-five negroes. His wife was named Sarah, and by her he had five children: Alexander, James, John, Ann and Sarah. In his will Mr. Garden was careful to direct his executors "that they narrowly look into the education of my sons." He further specified—"as to my library my will is that none of my books be sold, but kept for a present to be given to that son of mine who inclines to be a minister of the Church of England, to be directed in his studies by the Reverend Mr. James Craig." Executors named in the will were the Rev. Mr. Craig and Mr. Robert Lawson, a few years later General Lawson of the Virginia line. Bishop Meade [Vol. I, p. 484] mentions Mr. Craig, who 'united the practice of medicine with the duties of the ministry; his glebe was larger and better than most of those in the state and he was a better manager. He had a mill of his own, which Tarleton, knowing Mr. Craig to be a true American, took in his route and destroyed.' Mr. Craig was minister of Cumberland parish, Lunenburg County, and perhaps served for a time at Cornwall parish, Charlotte County.

So far as is known, none of Mr. Garden's sons became a minister. It was perhaps his son Alexander who was long a physician in Charlotte county. There was a bias towards medicine in the family, if the local tradition was according to the fact—that James Garden, minister of St. Patrick's, was a brother or near relation of the celebrated physician and botanist Alexander Garden of Charleston in South Carolina, who, born in Scotland, was a royalist during the Revolution, left the country for England, and was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society.

A descendant of the Rev. Mr. Garden married into the family of Woodson of Prince Edward County, who were skilled in the management of land and in the care of fruit trees and vines. The Spring Hill Nurseries, under the direction first of Woodsons and then of Gardens, were pretty well known in this region before the Civil War, and even after the war.

A. J. Morrison,
Prince Edward County.

European Travellers in Virginia 1769-1802.

From November 1908 to January 1909, the undersigned ran a series of twelve articles in the Sunday *Times-Dispatch*, under the caption "Travels in Virginia in Revolutionary Times." The books, some account of the Virginia chapters of which was given, were those by John F. D. Smyth [1769–1776]; Thomas Anburey [1778–1779]; the Marquis of Chastellux [1782]; Dr. Johann David Schoepf [1783]; Count Luigi Castiglioni [1786]; Dr. Thomas Coke, the great missionary [1785-1791]; Captain F. M. Bayard, late of the French army [1791]; Isaac Weld, a clever Irishman [1796]; the Duke of La Rochefoucauld-Liancourt [1796]; John Davis of Salisbury, a man of letters professionally [1801–1802].

It may be as well to file a note regarding a few other travellers in Virginia of this period:—The Abbe Robin (translation by Philip Freneau, Philadelphia 1783) was with the French troops, and gives some particulars of the road from Maryland to Yorktown—Dr. Thomas Cooper's *Some Information Respecting America* [Dublin 1794] contains at p. 95 ff, a list of prices current at Norfolk recorded by the Rev. Mr. Toulmin. [This list has been published in part, Magazine XVII, 95.]—Brissot de Warville [2nd ed. London 1794], was at Alexandria and Mount Vernon—Henry Wansey [Journal of an Excursion the Summer of 1794, Salisbury 1796] was at the Federal City—Francis Bailey [London 1856] was at Norfolk in 1796, finding prices there already higher than those listed by Dr. Cooper. *Bailey*, a very young man (later an eminent astronomer) went from Norfolk to Baltimore by packet boat, and thence to the Mississippi country—Volney in his *Tableau du Climat et du Sol des Etats-Unis* (Paris 1803), mentions that he was at Richmond, Vol. I, p. 7, and at Staunton, Vol. II, p. 384. From the nature of his work Volney gives little of the anecdotal or parochial. His attempt to interpret West Virginia literally gives nomenclature, like Ouarm-Sprigne [Warm Spring], Agrine-Braiar, Chinando [a further variant of Shenandoah]. Why Volney should call Washington, "Gen. Ouachinton," it is difficult to imagine. Perhaps it was because the administration, as he hints, was severe with him.

Somebody who has the money to spend could amuse himself very much to the purpose by making a collection of all these extremely interesting books, and then have published a thick volume made up of the Virginia items set down by these observers from abroad.

Hampden-Sidney, Va. A. J. Morrison.

The King Family.

Mrs. Edward Feldhauser (Goode King Feldhauser) of St. Paul, Minnesota, is compiling a genealogy of the King family in general. Space will be given to the Clifton, Grymes, Nicholas and Wiles families.

Robert King (son of Francis King who came to Virginia headrights of Giles Brent 1653) married Elizabeth Brooke, daughter of Robert Brooke, of Maryland. Robert King owned land in Stafford county 1668. He had many sons, among whom were, Robert, William, George, Joseph, Benjamin and John.

William King (Robert Francis) married Judith Peyton. Issue: four daughters. Sons: 1. Thomas; 2. William Alfred, who married Sophia Burgess and had: Valentine; George; William; John; Walter; Cyrus; Josiah; Elias; Daniel; Anne and Judith.

William King (Alfred, William, Robert), married Elizabeth Edwards in Stafford co. 1738. Issue: John; Valentine, b. 1739, who died in Nelson co. Ky leaving a will; 3. William, born Stafford co. 1745, who married Letitia Bland. He was a distinguished man in Nelson co. Ky. and was the founder of a notable line in Kentucky and Louisiana; 4. Withers, who married Sarah ———? in Stafford county, and died in Nelson co. Ky. leaving a will, and left a long line of descendants, one of whom was Yelverton Peyton King, born Nelson co. 1794. 5. Nimrod, of whom nothing is known save that he fought in the Revolution. Information much desired regarding him. 6. Elizabeth who married an Owens. 7. Judith, who probably married a Brent. 8. John Edwards King, b. 1757, of whom so much has been written. He fought in the Revolution, was a general at Battle of the Thames, 1812. Married Sarah Clifton, daughter of Burdette Clifton.

There were several Yelverton Peyton Kings, all born between years 1794 and 1797, in Kentucky, Virginia, Alabama. Information desired from descendants of each. Address Goode King Feldhauser, The Aberdeen Hotel, St. Paul, Minnesota.

NORVELL.

1. William Norvell of James City County, Va. died 22nd of November, 1802, in the 77th year of his age. (Poulsons Advertiser (Phila.) 8th of Dec. 1802.)

2. Captain William Norvell, Sr., marries Anne, dau. of Col. John Wyatt. (Sketches and Recollections of Lynchburg.)

What relation were the above to each other; and can any one give information as to the names of the parents of either or both? The first above was a Member of the House of Burgesses 1775-1776. The second William Norvell was from the County of Amherst and President of the Bank of Virginia in Lynchburg.

GENEALOGY.

The Blackwell Family.

(By Miss Stella Pickett Hardy, Batesville, Ark.)
(Continued)

7-9. Davenport Lee Blackwell, b. 1874.
7-10. Eleanor Foote Blackwell, b. 1875.
7-11. Edith Sumpter Blackwell, b. 1876.
7-12. Karl Sigismund Blackwell, b. 1879.
6-4. Benjamin Blackwell, b. 1825.
6-5. Ann Eustace Blackwell, b. 1826.
6-6. Rebecca Blackwell, b. 1828; d. 1832.
6-7. George William Blackwell, b. 1831; d. 1833.

5-4. Agatha Blackwell, b. 1792; m. Major Enoch Jeffries, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-5. Lucy Blackwell, b. 1793; d. 1879; m. 1809, Col. William Rowley Smith, of Fauquier Co., b. 1781; d. 1857; son of William & Elizabeth (Doniphan) Smith; Col. Smith commanded a Co. of Cav. in War of 1812: Col. of Fauquier Militia, 1815; Member of Virginia Legislature three terms; had issue 19 children.

5-6. William Blackwell, b. 1800; m. 1819, Anne Spark Gordon, daughter of Churchill & Anne (Sparke) Gorgon, of Culpeper Co., Va., Issue.

6-1. Ann Eliza Blackwell, b. 1822; d. 1854; m. 1837, John Marshall, b. 1811; d. 1854; son of Thomas & Margaret (Lewis) Marshall, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

6-2. Joseph Eustace Blackwell, b. 1824; m. Amanda Hudson, and had issue,

7-1. Joseph Eustace Blackwell.
7-2. Anne Eliza Blackwell.

6-3. James Gordon Blackwell, b. 1826.

6-4. Harriet Eustace Blackwell, b. 1828; m. Dr. Douglas Moxley, and had issue.

6-5. Lucy Harrison Gordon Blackwell, b. 1830; m. Dr. John Daniel Payne, and had issue.

6-6. William Sparkes Blackwell, C. S. A., of Prince William Co., Va., b. 1832; m. 1855, Julia Travers Nutt, b. 1836; daughter of Moncure Conway & Anne Eustace (Smith) Nutt; and had issue,

7-1. William Moncure Blackwell.
7-2. Ann Conway Blackwell, m. Rev. Robert B. White.

7-3. Churchill Gordon Blackwell, m. Lucy Douglas Moxley, daughter of Dr. Douglas & Harriet Eustace (Blackwell) Moxley, and had issue.

7-4. Leroy Moncure Blackwell.

7-5. Richard Smith Blackwell.

6-7. Sarah Agnes Blackwell, m. Isham Keith, C. S. A., of Fauquier Co., Va., son of Isham & Juliet (Chilton) Keith, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-7. James Blackwell, of "The Meadows" Fauquier Co., Va., b. 1805; d. 1864; m. 1831, Elizabeth Carter, b. 1808; d. 1884; daughter of Moore Fauntleroy & Judith Lee (Edmonds) Carter, Issue.

6-1. Joseph Hancock Blackwell, b. 1832; d. 1905; m. (first) 1856, Roberta Edmond, b. 1837; d. 1884; (second) Mollie Saunders, and had issue by 1st m.

7-1. Helen Madge Blackwell, b. 1858; m. 1879, Charles Perry, and had issue 1. Vivian Perry; 2. Maud Perry; 3. Edna Perry; 4. Mamie Perry; 5. Edith Perry; 6. Charles Perry; 7. Ernest Perry.

7-2. Edward Claxton Blackwell, b. 1863.

7-3. Josephine Moore Blackwell, b. 1865; m. William Garth, and had issue 1. Robert Garth; 2. Mary Garth; 3. William Garth; 4. Lewis Garth; 5. Woods Garth; 6. Hugh Garth; 7. Daisy Garth.

7-4. Ernest Evor Blackwell, b. 1868;

Issue by 2nd m.

7-5. William Carter Blackwell, b. 1885.

7-6. Paulina Carter Blackwell, b. 1887.

6-2. Moore Carter Blackwell, C. S. A., of Fauquier Co., Va., b. 1833; living; m. 1854, Sarah Alexander Foote, b. 1831; daughter of Richard H. & Frances (Grayson) Foote, of Fauquier Co., Va., Issue,

7-1. James Eustace Blackwell, b. 1855; m. (first) 1880, Lula McLean (second) Eleanor Riggs; Issue by 1st m.

8-1. Wilmer Carter Blackwell, b. 1880.

8-2. Fannie Grayson Blackwell, b. 1882.

Issue by 2nd m.

8-3. Lewis Riggs Blackwell, b. 1892.

7-2. Elizabeth Moore Blackwell, b. 1857; unm.,

7-3. Fanny Grayson Blackwell, b. 1858; m. 1882, Elias Edmonds Blackwell, b. 1852; son of James DeRughter & Judith Emma (Edmonds) Blackwell. Issue

8-1. Estell Foote Blackwell, b. 1883; m. 1903, Brooks Johnson, and had issue 1. Brooks Johnson, Jr., b. 1905; 2. Virginia Blackwell Johnson, b. 1908.

8-1. Elizabeth Blackwell, b. 1885.

7-4. Mary James Blackwell, b. 1861; m. 1885, Dr. Thomas W. Smith, son of Anderson Doniphan & Susan (Norman) Smith, and had issue.

7-5. Edward Maurice Blackwell, M. D., Surgeon U. S. Navy, b. 1865; Volunteered his services to the U. S., at the beginning of the Spanish American War; was appointed Assistant Surgeon U. S. Navy, Apr. 25, 1898; served through the war in the West Indies, on the U. S. S. Vulcan; promoted 1908 to Surgeon, with rank of Lieut.-Commander; m. 1897, Mary Bowen; no issue.

7-6. Lucian Alexander Blackwell, b. 1866; unm.

7-7. Richardetta Henry Blackwell, b. 1868; m. 1898; Willis Carter.

7-8. Eva Ashton Blackwell, b. 1872.

7-9. Mildred Chancellor Blackwell, b. 1874; m. 1897, William Stanley Hinman, and had issue.

6-3. Elizabeth Carter Blackwell, b. 1837; m. 1858, Maj. Albert Gallatin Smith, C. S. A., son of Col. William Rowley & Lucy (Blackwell) Smith, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

6-4. Agnes Eustace Blackwell, b. 1840; m. (first) 1866, Isaac Eustace Smith, C. S. A., b. 1837; d. 1874; son of Col. William Rowley & Lucy (Blackwell) Smith, (second) 1887, Washington Tazewell Capps, of Lambert Point, Va., and had issue.

6-5. Lucy Steptoe Blackwell, b. 1845; m. 1879, Alexander Fontain Rose, b. 1843; and had issue.

6-6. Mary James Blackwell, b. 1847; d. 1860.

5-8. Elizabeth Blackwell, b. 1807; d. young.

5-9. Samuel Blackwell, b. 1809; d. young.

4-7. George Steptoe Blackwell, of Fauquier Co., Va., b. 1753; d. after 1787; m. unknown, and had issue,

(To be Concluded)

The Ancestors and Descendants of John Rolfe with Notes on some Connected Families.

The Fleming Family.

(Continued)

10. Thomas[3] Fleming; b. ——, d. 1777; was never married. Thomas Fleming, resided in Goochland County, where he owned two plantations, "Dover," and another on Little Lickinghole Creek. He was commissioned a lieutenant in the Virginia Regulars, May 26, 1757, and for several years served in the French and Indian War. In June 1759, when his will was written, he describes himself as "Captain in the frontier battallion of Virginia forces." In August 1758, he was included in a return, as a captain in Byrd's regiment, then stationed at Fort Cumberland (*Campbell's History of Va., 500*). There are also on record in the Virginia Land Office, several bounty warrants to men who were privates in his company, in one instance described as "Captain Thomas Fleming's Company, first Virginia regiment," and in another, as in Byrd's regiment.

Captain Fleming doubtless served to the end of the War, and then returned to Goochland; where he served as high sheriff in 1769. Like all of his family he took an active part in favor of American rights against England, and was a member of the Goochland County Committee of Safety in 1775 (Wm. and Mary Quarterly, V, 254) At the first call to arms he re-entered the military service, and in July 1775 was in command of a company of minute men from his county, stationed at Williamsburg (Document in Rd. Standard). His record as an officer in the French and Indian War must have been a good one, for on January 12th, 1776, the Virginia Convention elected him Colonel of the Ninth Virginia regiment (*Journal of Convention*). His commission was dated March 2d, 1776 (*Journal of Committee of Safety*). He had been assigned to the command of a regiment to be stationed on the Eastern Shore, for on Feb. 14, 1776, the Committee had ordered that Col. Fleming, of the Eastern Shore regiment, be called into duty immediately. Col. Fleming at once repaired to his post, and remained in command in that section through the remainder of the year. A return of his regiment dated May 31st was laid before Congress June 19, and on June 21, that body directed powder to be sent to Col. Thos. Fleming's regiment on the Eastern Shore of Virginia (*Forces Archives*) John Page, President of the Virginia Council, in a letter dated July 12, 1776, states that shortly before, there had been an uprising of Tories on the Eastern Shore of Maryland, and that Col. Thomas Fleming had marched with a force of 120 men, and suppressed it (*Force*). On Dec. 6th, Col. Fleming issued an order that the officers and men of the 9th regiment who were absent on leave should return at once, or join on the march to Philadelphia, the regiment being ordered to reinforce General Washington (*Force*). A letter in the Virginia Gazette, from Philadelphia, January 2d, 1777, says "This week the 9th Virginia regiment, Col. Thomas Fleming, arrived in the city." Col. Fleming died not long after this, but whether in action, or of disease, neither the records in the U. S. War Department, nor the Virginia Land Office show. Most probably, however, it was the latter. On March 16, 1784, the State of Virginia granted the representatives of Thomas Fleming, Esq., 6666⅔ acres of land for his services as a colonel in the Continental Line. These representatives, as appears by a certificate of their uncle Wm. Fleming, were Mary, wife of Warner Lewis, Esq. and Susanna, wife of Addison Lewis, Esq., only surviving daughters of John Fleming, deceased, eldest brother of the said Col. Thomas Fleming (*Records of Va. Land Office*).

The will of Thomas Fleming, "Captain in the frontier Battalion of Virginia forces," was dated June 7th, 1759, and proved in Goochland July 21, 1777. He left his brother William £500, current money; brother Richard £150 current; brother Charles £150 current. Gave £100, in trust, to purchase slaves for his sister Mary Bernard, and £100 in trust for the same purpose, for his sister Caroline Deans. Brother John residuary legatee. Brothers John and William, executors.

11. CHARLES[3] FLEMING; b.—; d. about 1793 (date of will), never married.

At the beginning of the Revolution, Charles Fleming commanded a company of minute men raised in Cumberland County. On Feb. 5, 1776, the Committee of Safety of that county elected him captain of the company of regulars to be raised in the county, and he is stated to have been at the time of this election, captain of a minute company (*Journal of Cumb. Committee*). On March 4th, 1775, a return of his company was received by the general Committee of Safety, and he had leave to suspend the march of his company one week after his return from Williamsburg to Cumberland, to give him time to furnish them with arms and necessaries; at the same time warrants were issued for the pay of himself and company, described as of the 7th regiment, and it was directed that commissions should be issued to him and his subalterns, to be dated Feb. 29, 1776. A statement of his services from the records of the U. S. War Department is as follows "It is shown by the records that Charles Fleming served as a captain in the 7th Virginia regiment of foot, commanded by Colonel Alexander McClenahan, and also by Lieutenant Colonel Holt Richeson, Revolutionary War. His name appears on the rolls of that regiment from June 1777, to May 1778. He is also borne as a captain on the rolls of the 3d and 7th Virginia regiments, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Heth, for the months of July and August, 1778. He is reported as having been comissmoned February 29, 1776.

It is also shown by the records that Charles Fleming served as lieutenant-colonel of the 8th Virginia regiment, commanded by Colonel James Wood. His name appears on the rolls of that regiment to September 1779. The records shown him commissioned lieutenant-colonel June 28, 1778, and resigned December 15, 1778."

Heitman states that he was major 4th Va.; Lieutenant-Colonel 3d, Va. 28th June, 1778, and transferred to 8th. Va., 14th Sept., 1778.

After he retired from the regular army Colonel Fleming was frequently in service with the Virignia militia. Several letters, which have been printed in Vol. I, Calendar of Virginia State Papers, show something in regard to this service.

The letters are as follows:

"Chas. Fleming to the Governor"

"Tuckahoe, Jan. 1st. 1781.

Sir

I left the enemies lines at Westham yesterday evening a little before sunset. Their proceedings there you are no doubt well acquainted with. There will be a very considerable Body of Militia will be collected between this & Westham, in the course of the day—It appears to be wish of all parties, that Colo. Nicholas & my self shall take command of them as field officers & as I am informed by Mr. Webb, it is your determination with the advice of Council that the Militia, on the present alarming occasion, will be officered as before, with respect to the field officers—

I am ready and will at all times Sir, to render any and every service to my Country in my power. As I have no commission of any sort, dont doubt but you will think with me, that it is necessary I should have a commission, or some writing under your signature for my taking command with propriety. I am, Sir, Yr: most obt. hble Servt"

"Quarters near Manakin-town Ferry, January 8th, 1781, Colo. Chas. Fleming to Col: Davies, at Briton's Ferry—sending the Governor's letter to Genl. Steuben, with a wagon load of Ammunition from the other side to be forwarded by Col: Davies—has just sent a load to Richmond also for Genl. Nelson—has with him two hundred and twenty men, arming by companies, who will march to Westham in due order as soon as ready."

"Manchester January 10th, 1781.

Col: Charles Fleming to Col: Davies—

'We arrived here last night, & in consequence of the want of house-room for the men, they had a very disagreeable night, seven of them taken sick. I shall proceed on my march as soon as they are got comfortably dried, and get their breakfast.' Is much in want of wagons and Camp Kettles. Concludes 'the Governor lodged on this side last night, whom I have seen. He informs me the enemy were yesterday lying still at & about Colo. Harrison's Mills, that they surprised & routed abt. 100 foot & 25 horse, at Charles City, the night before—he hadn't heard what loss they sustained. There is a report that they are intrenching, but by no means authentick. Col: Nicholas is at Mr. James Cocke's at Malburn Hills with between 3 & 400 men.' He is informed there are forty-five Beeves at Richmond, and a large quantity of flour in Mayo's Mills in Manchester."

"Col. Chas. Fleming to Gov: Jefferson

Camp, Holts Forge, January 17, 1781.

Sir

I am now with the Troops under my Command at this place by order of Genl. Nelson. I have to inform your Excellency, that there is not a fourth part of the Regt. supplied with Ammunition & as I am ordered by the Genl: to join the Baron & begin my march early tomorrow, unless ammunition is sent me, or ordered to follow me, I shall find myself in rather an awkward situation. Your Excellency will no doubt consider this matter & inform me by Mr. Bates, who I have dispatched with this, & who will join me on my march. The situation of the Regt. being composed of Goochland & Hanover Militia, it may not be amiss to acquaint you with. The numerous applications for leave of absence are not uncommon; but when I reflect that there is scarce a man left in those Counties, that a considerable number have just returned from their tour of duty & many have now substitutes in actual service, that not

more than half having been first called out, the rest were hurried precipitately from home, totally unprovided for a Campaign of any continuance, I cannot think their complaints entirely groundless. Your Excellency may rest assured I do my utmost endeavors to silence their murmers & to impress them with a sence of the necessity of their continuing in service, but still I can by no means continue a Stranger to their complaints. Might I have liberty to observe on this occasion, it should be, that I fear the Militia of these two Counties, will, on any future emergency, be with infinite difficulty drawn out, unless (as they wish for) those who did their tour of duty in the last invasion, might be discharged, as soon as the situation of affairs will admit & from what I can gather in Wmsburg, there are nearly Militia enough to oppose the Enemies designs, already in service, and more expected from the back countries.

Your Excellency will consider if it may not be necessary to give them some kind of promise this on head. Every exertion, in my power, shall be used to quiet their minds, & I hope I may stand excused in making you acquainted with these circumstances.

I have the honour to be with very great respect.

Your Excellency's mo. Obt. svt.,

Chas. Fleming
Lt Colo. Commdg."

These letters were written during Arnold's invasion of Virginia. From the words "officered as before," included in the first letter it is probable that Col. Fleming held command in the large force of militia called out to resist the attack made in 1780. Too little is known in regard to the 7000 militia under General Nelson, who were at Yorktown, to speak positively; but there can be but little doubt that Chas. Fleming also commanded a regiment there.

During the latter part of his life Col. Fleming lived at "Summerville," Chesterfield County, the home of his brother, Judge Wm. Fleming. His will, dated Oct. 8, 1793, was recorded in Chesterfield. He gave his real estate in Kentucky to his brother Wm. Fleming, and nephews John and Richard Bernard, in trust, for his creditors and to pay legacies. This real estate consisted of 18,000 acres in the county of Mason on the waters of the Ohio River; another of 20,000 acres, in the same county and on the same waters, and another of 16,191 acres in the same county, at the mouth of Glen's Creek, about four miles from Frankfort. Only one half of these tracts of land belonged to him, however. Of his share he gave one fifth to his nieces Mary and Susanna Lewis; two fifths to the same trustees for his sister Mary Bernard and her children and the remaining two fifths to his brother Wm. Fleming.

(To be Continued)

The Harrison Family of Northern Virginia.
(Continued)

Corrections and Additions.

Mr. H. T. Harrison, author of "A Brief History of the First Harrisons of Virginia" states in reference to the review published in January, that his book does not claim that the descendants of Cuthbert Harrison were the first Harrisons in Virginia and that the reference to the parish register and Chappawamsic does not refer to the English register but to that of Dettingen parish in Virginia.

We are indebted to Dr. H. J. Berkeley, Baltimore, for the following additional entries in the register of the parish of St. Margarets, Westminster: Jany 11th 1607, baptised Cuthbert son of Cuthbert Harrison, and Alexander Harrison son of Cuthbert and Susan Harrison was baptized at St. Margarets, Westminster 1644.

The first entry evidently gives the birth of the father of Cuthbert who came to Virginia, and the last gives the birth of a younger brother of the emigrant, and also (probably) the Christian name of his mother.

Dr. Berkely also states that Susanna, daughter of Thos. Harrison, Jr., of Chappawamsic, married (1) Moses Linton, gent., of Prince William Co. and (2) John Berkely.

A lady writing from Florida states that she has a copy of an old record, written by a granddaughter of Burr Harrison (named in the following extract), which states that "Thomas Harrison from England [an error, of course] settled in Fauquier Co., Va., and had the following children: 1. Thomas, moved to Ky. "and Harrison Co. was named for him, and Cynthiana, the county seat for his two daughters." He had one son Benjamin and probably other sons; 2. Benjamin; 3. William, who was killed by his negroes in Virginia; 4. Burr, born 1738, died 1822 in Chester District, S. C., served in the Revolution under General La Fayette, at Yorktown; married Elizabeth Dargan, of Sumter District, S. C.; 5. Nancy, married Mr. Quartie (?) of Va.; 6. Molly married Mr. Gillison of Va.; 7. Susan married Mr. Gibson of Va.; 8. ——, married Mr. Faulke [Fowke] of Va. This account, though containing some errors as to names, confirms the conjecture that Burr Harrison, of South Carolina, was a son of 6. Thomas[4] Harrison (XXIII, 332).

From another lady in the South, the following (derived from the War Department) as to the Revolutionary service of Burr Harrison; served as a corporal in Capt. Richard Lee's company and in Capt. Francis Mercer's company, 3d Va. Regiment, commanded at various times by Col. Thomas Marshall and Lt.-Col. William Heth. He enlisted Feb. 15, 1776 and his name appears last on June 11, 1778, and from the same source a list of the children of Burr and Elizabeth (Dargan) Harrison; 1. Burr, married Nancy Hart, and lived in Columbia, S. C.; 2. Mary married Benjamin May; 3. Jonathan married Sally Tyler; 4. Kate married Samuel Johnson;

5. Elizabeth died single; 6. Rebecca married Nathaniel Cocknell; 7. Susan married William Head; 8. Sophy married Christopher Thompson; 9. Dorean married (1st) James Runnell and (2) Hartwell Macon; 10. Narcissa, married James Ragsdale; 11. Mordecai married Susan Alston; 12. Anne, Mr. McLelland, of Charleston, S. C.

Corrections: P. 98, l. 8, for "Lion" read "Leon"; p. 99, l. 19, for "Freeman" read "Green"; p. 97, 2d l. from bottom, Elizabeth Harrison married Benjamin Bullitt. Benjamin Bullitt (son of Joseph and Elizabeth Brandt Bullitt) was born April 28, 1693 (see record of births, Charles Co., Md., Liber P, No. 1, folio 212, in the Land Office at Annapolis, Md.) and instead of dying in 1757, died in 1766, as is shown by the fact that his will (See Fauquier Co., Va. Will Book I, 108, and Minute Book 1764–68, p. 227) was dated May 3, 1766, and proved Oct. 27, 1766. His children by Elizabeth Harrison were: Joseph, Capt. Thomas, Cuthbert, Seth (who married Combs) and Benjamin, killed in the French and Indian War. Mrs. Elizabeth (Harrison) Bullitt died in 1742. We are indebted to Mr. William M. Bullitt, of Louisville, for the correction.

39. Rev. Thomas[6] Harrison (Thomas[5]), was born Oct. 2, 1750, and died June 21, 1814. He was ordained by the Bishop of London, Aug. 24, 1774, and licensed for Trinity Parish, Maryland. He was minister of Bloomfield Parish, Culpeper Co.,and Dettingen Parish, Prince William Co., in Va., and was appointed a Justice of Prince William. He married Dec. 9, 1775, Sarah (born July 26, 1754, died Dec. 16, 1842) daughter of Cuthbert Harrison.

Issue: 87. Cuthbert[7]; 88. Thomas[7]; 89. Frances, born March 12, 1779, married Philip Alexander; 90. Philip[7]; 91. Ann Barnes, born Feb. 8, 1783, died single; 92. Sythia (or Seth?) born April 9, 1785, died unmarried; 93. Burr[7]; 94. James[7]; 95. John[7]; 96. Walter[7]; 97. Elizabeth, born April 8, 1797, married Lawrence Alexander; 98. Sarah, born Jan. 23, 1799, died Dec. 20, 1870, married March 7, 1826, Gabriel D. Freeman.

57. Matthew[6] Harrison (Burr[5]), born Sept. 19, 1763; married Catherine Elzey. Member of the House of Delegates for Loudoun Co., 1840–47. For descendants see "A Brief History of the First Harrisons of Virginia," by H. T. Harrison.

71. Gustavus[6] Harrison (Matthew[5]) married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. A. B. Magruder, of Georgetown, D. C., and died in 1848, aged 57 years.

Issue: 99. George William[7]; 100. Gustavus[7]; 101. Frederick Lloyd[7]; 102. Colin[7]; 103. Eleanor[7]; 104. Ann Matilda[7]; 105. Virginia[7].

72. William Alexander[6] (Matthew[5]), born Aug. 29, 1795, of Clarksburg (now West Va.), represented Harrison County in the House of Delegates 1835–37, U. S. District Attorney for the Western District of Virginia 1829, and afterwards a judge. He married, Nov. 19, 1828, Anna Mayberry.

Issue: 106. Frederick[7], died young; 107. Thomas W.[8], married Mary Robertson of New York; 108. Matthew Waite[8], married Eliza Hoffman,

of Lewis County; 109. Charles Tyler[8]; 110. William Gustavus[8]; 111. Mayberry[8]; 112. Susan Ellen; 113. Elizabeth; 114. Ann Rebecca; 115. Llewellyn Cuthbert[8].

(To be Continued)

Taylor of Southampton &c.

(Concluded)

35. Bennett[4] Taylor (John[3]), inherited considerable property from his father and his brother Charles. There is on record in Southampton a deed dated Feb. 1810, from Bennett Taylor to Robert Adams, conveying 130 acres called Seacock on Seacock Swamp, which was purchased by Etheldred Taylor from Matthew Revell, and by him devised to Etheldred Taylor his son, and also a deed May 20, 1811 from Bennett Taylor to John C. Gray conveying 230 acres called Howells, which had been devised by Etheldred Taylor the elder to his son Etheldred. Bennett Taylor was educated at Wm. & Mary College 1790-95. He removed first to the neighborhood of Berryville and later to Jefferson County where he lived at his seat "Avon Hill," when he died in 1816. He married Susan Beverley, daughter of Governor Edmund Randolph. Issue: 47. Charlotte Randolph, married Feb. 2, 1835, Moncure Robinson, of Richmond, afterwards of Philadelphia; 48. John Charles Randolph[5].

39. William[5] Taylor (John[4]). Of him the compiler has no further information except that, about 1810, he, with Angelina his wife, made a deed in Southampton, conveying to Thomas Fitzhugh, 320 acres which were allotted to said William at the division of the lands of John Taylor, deceased.

40. Henry[5] Taylor (John[4]), of Southampton Co.; born ——, died 1815. His will was dated Aug. 22, 1814, and proved Jan. 1815. Legatees: wife Jane W. Taylor, for life, 7 negroes &c &c; provision for unborn child; to nephew Wm. Taylor, one negro; to nephew Henry Taylor, one negro; to nephew Drury Fitzhugh, two negroes. Friend Thomas Fitzhugh, executor.

There are probably many descendants of this family of whom the compiler is not informed and any additions will be welcome.

48. John Charles Randolph[5] Taylor (Bennett[4]) of Albemarle County; died Jan. 6, 1875, married, in 1838, Martha Jefferson, daughter of Thomas Jefferson Randolph, of "Edgehill," Albemarle County.

Issue: 49. Bennett[6], born Jefferson Co., Va., 1836, educated at University of Virginia. Captain Co. F 19th Va. Infantry C. S. A.; wounded at Williamsburg and Gettysburg, at Johnsons Island until 1865, promoted to Lt. Colonel; married Lucy daughter of Edward Colston (and had six children); 50. Jane Randolph; 51. Susan Beverley, married John Black-

burn; 52. Rev. Jefferson Randolph[6], C. S. A., private in Southall's Artillery and Ordnance Sergeant in Jackson's Corps; 53. Margaret Randolph; 54. Charlotte, died in infancy; 55. Stephen Mason[6], C. S. A., private Rockbridge Artillery 1864-5; 56. Cornelia Jefferson; 57. Edmond Randolph[6], married Julia, daughter of Edmund Pendleton Kennedy; 58. (and had issue: a. John Paca[7], born Jan. 31, 1894; b. Elizabeth Gray, born June 10, 1895; c. Edmond Randolph[7], born Oct. 8, 1845; d. Margaret Beverley, born Jan. 1908); 58. John Charles Randolph[7]; 59. Sidney W.[7]; 60. Moncure Robinson[7].

The Gorsuch and Lovelace Families.
(Continued)

Children of the Rev. John[3] Gorsuch (Daniel[2], William[1]) and his wife, Anne (Lovelace).

1. Daniel Gorsuch[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born in 1628 or 1629, as he was "aged four years" in 1633. Recorded in the Visitation. There is no reason to believe that he ever went to the Colonies. He and all of his brothers and sisters were left an interest in sundry leaseholds in Weston, Herts., by their grandfather, Daniel Gorsuch[2]. He was living in England in 1652, when he was made administrator of his mother's estate, and in 1662 when he was made residuary legatee and executor under the will of his grandmother, Alice Gorsuch. He was married some time prior to 1662, as his grandmother leaves a legacy to his daughter Ann. Nothing further is known in regard to him or his descendants.

2. John Gorsuch[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born about 1630. Recorded in the Visitation. His grandfather, Daniel Gorsuch[2], leaves to him individually certain freeholds in Weston. No later mention of him has been found in the English or Colonial Records, nor is it known whether he went to Virginia with his mother.

3. William Gorsuch[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born in 1631 or 1632. Recorded in the Visitation. There is no reason to believe that he was ever in Virginia. He was doubtless the "Wm. Gorsuch of Weston Herts, Gent., Bach'r. ab't. 25 [who married] Catherine Morgan of St. Margaret's Westminster, Sp'r. ab't. 25; at Marybone, Middx.—12 Oct. 1660." (Marriage Licenses, Westminster & Vicar General—Harleian Society Vol. 26, p. 53). His grandmother Alice Gorsuch in 1662 leaves a legacy to John, the son of her grandson, William Gorsuch. Mr. Wm. Onslow Times of Hitchin, England, in a recent letter to the writer (1913), states that he is a descendant of this William Gorsuch, and adds "William who did not leave England, and who died in 1698, left a son Daniel, whose daughter Christiana Gorsuch, married a Sheppard, and was the mother of my great grandmother, Mrs. Lawrence Times." No attempt has been made to trace the descendants of William Gorsuch[4].

4. KATHERINE GORSUCH[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Recorded in the Visitation. Baptised at Walkern Nov. 26, 1633. She is one of the 4 brothers and sisters for whose transportation land was granted to Theo. Hone, Feb. 22, 1652, on the Rappahannock. She married, in Virginia, it would appear from the above, William Whitby, a prominent citizen of Warwick County. The earliest reference to William Whitby is an extract from the lost Warwick County records, showing that he was a justice in 1647. He was speaker of the House of Burgesses in 1653. From an order of the Virginia Assembly dated December 1st, 1656 in a suit decided in her favor, it appears that Mrs. Whitby, who had been a widow at least since October 9th, 1655, was apparently then living in Virginia (Va. Mag. Vol. XVII, p. 129–130). As previously stated, the Lancaster Co. Court was petitioned April 1st, 1657 by Richard, Robert and Charles Gorsuch to appoint their sister, Katherine Whitby, widd. guardian for their estate in England (see ante p. 91). It therefore seems certain that she had returned to England with her children or was just about to return. The will of her grandmother, Alice Gorsuch, 1662, mentions "William and Elizabeth Whittby, son and daughter of my granddaughter Katherine Whittby," but leaves us uncertain as to whether Katherine, the mother, was then living. In the letter already referred to from her uncle, Governor Francis Lovelace of New York, to Governor Berkeley of Virginia, dated December 6th, 1669, Lovelace informs Berkeley that "Mr. Thos. Todd of Mockjack bay" has been appointed "Guardian of will Whitbey's son by my niece Mrs. Kath. Gorsuch," that this lad which he (Lovelace) has brought over [from England] is "the recitable child and heare to Mr. Whitby," and that "he is now an orphant." The letter goes on to request Berkeley to do what he can for the boy's interests (Va. Mag. Vol. XVII, p. 288–9.) As has been already explained an error occurred in the text of this letter as previously published, due to a mistake of the copyist in deciphering the name KATH: GORSUCH, making it read RUTH GORSUCH, thus confusing the Gorsuch pedigree, until the error was discovered (see ante pp. 90–1). Mr. Tho. Todd referred to by the writer was Captain Thomas Todd of Mobjack bay, Gloucester Co., Va., and later of Baltimore Co., Maryland, who had married Anna Gorsuch," sister of Katherine Whitby, and who was another niece of Lovelace. After his return to Virginia, William Whitby[5], Jr., son of William and Katherine Whitby, lived on the Pyanketank River, Middlesex Co., Va., and died unmarried. An abstract of his will dated July 15, 1676, and proved July 26th, 1677, has been previously published (Va. Mag. Vol. XVII pp. 290–1). Among several legacies left by him is one of £200 "out of rent due me out of Kent, in England" to "my brother Joseph Summers," and a bequest to Thomas Todd. He leaves £100 to Major Robert Beverley, and £100 to Mrs. Mary Kibble [Keeble]. He leaves land on Moratico Creek to John Cocking and John Wright, and land on Potomac Creek to be divided between Joseph Summers and Mrs. Mary

Kibble. From this will it would appear that Elizabeth Whitby, the testator's sister, may have married Joseph Summers. The editor of the Magazine writes me that it appears from the Middlesex records that Major Robert Beverley married first Mary, the widow of George Keeble, and that MRS. MARY KIBBLE may actually have been MISS MARY KEEBLE, a step-daughter of Beverley. Beverley's second wife was the widow of Theophilus Hone. It will be recalled that it was Theo:Hone who Feb. 22, 1652, received land on the Rappahannock for transporting Katherine Gorsuch and three of her younger brothers and sisters to Virginia (see ante p. 89.) Hone lived at Jamestown, and was a man of prominence in Virginia. It is by no means improbable that the Gorsuches were in some way related to Theophilus Hone or his wife.

5. ROBERT GORSUCH[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Baptised Nov. 19' 1635, at Walkern. His name does not appear with the names of his two younger brothers and his two sisters brought to Virginia by Theo. Hone. It seems possible that he, his brother Richard, his sister Anna and his mother, may have come to Virginia at a somewhat earlier date. He joined his brothers Richard[4] and Charles[4] April 1st, 1657, in petitioning the Lancaster County Court for the appointment of a guardian for their interests in Virginia and England. This seems strange as Robert[4], according to the above date of baptism, was then of age. At the December term of the same court, 1657, however, we find an order appointing Robert Gorsuch guardian for his brother Charles Gorsuch, then aged 14. (Va. Mag. Vol. III, p. 85). We next hear of him in Maryland when July 28, 1659, a tract of 500 A. called "Gorsuch" was surveyed for "Robert Gorsuch, of this province, planter" on the north side of the Patapsco River "respecting" the land of Hugh Kensey (i. e., opposite a tract called Kensey, situated on the south side of the river, about nine miles from its mouth, surveyed the same date), and the patent for the tract was issued Feb. 13th, 1659-60 (Md. Patents Vol. IV, fol. 228 & 322). This tract "Gorsuch" was located at what is now known as Canton, its water front including Gorsuch Point or Lazaretto Point, a district now occupied by some of Baltimore's most important industrial and shipping activities. The little that is known in regard to Robert Gorsuch and his heirs is learned in tracing the subsequent history of this tract. Robert Gorsuch[4] married either before or soon after his arrival on the Patapsco. His wife's name is not known, but we learn from the early archives that she was murdered by the Indians April 11th, 1661. At a meeting of the Council of Maryland held at Spesutia, Baltimore Co., May 13th, 1661, to inquire into the sundry murders by Minqua or Sinego Indians on the Gunpowder and Patapsco Rivers, the following testimony was given by Robert Gorsuch: "that upon the 11th of Aprill there came to his howse some Indians in blew and some in red Matchcoates whoe killed his wife and plundered his howse" etc. (Arch. Md. Vol. III, p. 413). It would seem from the will of his

brother-in-law, Thomas Todd, dated Feb. 21st, 1675-6 that Robert Gorsuch had left the province and was then living in England—"I likewise bequeath to my sayd wife one hundred seaventie six poundes sterling being in the hands of Robert Gorsedge and my parsell of land lying on old England which the said Robert Gorsedge is now possessed of." (Baltimore County Wills Vol. I, fol. 1.) In the light of the following facts the statement previously made (ante p. 92), that Robert Gorsuch[4] did not reappear in the colonies, must be qualified.

The name of a Robert Gorsuch does not again appear in the Maryland records until twenty-five years later. The list of taxables of Baltimore County for 1695 does not reveal anyone bearing this name then living in the county. The Baltimore County Rent Roll bearing the date 1700, but probably compiled a year or two earlier, shows that the tract "Gorsuch," 500 A. surveyed July 28th, 1659, for Robt. Gorsuch, was then "possessed by Charles Gorsuch, on behalf of sd. Robert" (Balto. Co. Rent Roll 1700, Md. Hist. Soc. small unbound MSS). This would seem to indicate that Charles Gorsuch[4] held the land and paid the quit rent for his brother Robert[4] who was not at the time resident in Maryland, or for the latter's successor of the same name who was either absent or a minor. About this time a Robert Gorsuch, either the original patentee or his heir of the same name, reappears in Baltimore County, for July 11th, 1700, a special warrant for the resurvey of this tract is filed in the Land Office which reads that "Robert Gorsuch of Baltimore County, by his humble petition—has set forth that he is seized in fee simple—of a tract of land called Gorsuch, originally laid out for 500 A. the 28th day of July, 1659." The petition requests a resurvey on the ground that there is some confusion in regard to one of the bounds and also for the purpose of adding certain adjacent vacant land (Md. Land Office Warrants Liber A. fol. 230). Under date of Nov. 22nd, 1700, a certificate of resurvey of the tract "Gorsuch" under the name "Rockford," 500 acres, was issued (Land Office—Unpatented Certificates Balto. Co. No. 1406). A new patent for this resurvey was never issued, a caveat apparently having been entered by Benjamin Tasker, agent of Lord Baltimore, to prevent the inclusion of the adjacent vacant land, and Robert Gorsuch continued to hold the tract under the original patent of 1659-60. A somewhat later Rent Roll, covering the period from about 1700 to 1720, shows that the tract "Gorsuch [which had been] possessed by Charles Gorsuch on behalf of the said Robert [was] now possessed by Robert Gorsuch himself" (Annapolis—Balto. Co. Rent Roll Vol. II, No. 2). Although referred to in the petition for resurvey dated 1700, as of Baltimore County, the name of Robert Gorsuch does not appear among the taxables of Baltimore County in the lists from 1699 to 1705, which are supposed to include the names of all males 16 years and over. In the year 1706 however his name appears on the list of the taxables of the North-Side Patapsco Hundred, bracketed with John Gorsuch and Jonathan Mur-

therritt, which probably indicates that the three were then living on the same plantation (Balto. Co. Taxables 1699–1706: Md. Hist. Soc. MSS). Aug. 3, 1709, he appears as the principal creditor of Tobias Stansbury of Baltimore County (Test. Proc. 29: 408). Nov. 1710 he was appointed by the Court surveyor of highways from Hurst's Falls to Back River (Court Proc. I. S. No. B.: 183). The will of Robert Gorsuch[4] of Baltimore County dated June 25, 1714, was probated June 14, 1720. To his son Daniel he leaves 5 shillings; to his son Robert he leaves the "plantation whereon I now dwell containing 500 acres [tract "Gorsuch"[, to him and his heirs," as well as a fourth part of his personal estate. To his daughter Dorothy he leaves certain live stock to be delivered to her at 16 years of age or at marriage. To his wife Johanna he leaves the remainder of his estate and appoints her executrix. The witnesses are Nicholas Rogers, John Thomas and Jon Gay. When the will was probated, the widow renounced her rights as executrix in favor of "my near kinsman John Gorsuch" (Annapolis Wills; 16; 28). The inventory filed by John Gorsuch, Sept. 12, 1720, was signed not only by the appraisers, but by Thomas Gorsuch, Chas. Gorsuch and Elizabeth Gorsuch (Annap. Inv. & Accts. 4; 177). An account filed by John Gorsuch Aug. 4, 1721, shows that the stock to be given Dorothy at 16 years or marriage had already been transferred to her (Annap. Accts. 3: 502). The final account was not filed until May 22, 1728 (Test. Proc. 28; 213). The widow Johanna Gorsuch died in 1728 and her estate was administered upon May 22, 1728, by Wm. Green, with Thomas Broad and John Miller his sureties. The inventory of her estate, appraised by John Willmot and John Moore at £40–6–2, dated Aug. 1, 1728, gives Geo. Walker, as creditor and adds "no other creditor, nor no relations to deceased." Her administrator in filing his account Mar. 6, 1730, adds "the orphans at age this summer" (Annap. Inv. & Accts. 11: 8). Robert Gorsuch the son and heir to the tract "Gorsuch" died Mar. 19, 1733 (St. Paul's Church Balto. Register). His estate was administered upon Aug. 2, 1733, by John Gorsuch with Wm. Rogers and John Ensor sureties (Test. Proc. 29: 298). Administration *de bonis non* upon the same estate was issued Sept. 10, 1733, to Thomas Gorsuch of Baltimore County with Wm. Rogers and John Edwards sureties (idem. 29: 307), indicating that John Gorsuch in the interval had probably died. The inventory dated Aug. 1, 1733, was signed by Charles Gorsuch as principal creditor and by Lovelace Gorsuch as next of kin (Balto. Inv. 3: 180). At the June Court 1737, Thomas Gorsuch, the administrator d. b. n. was released from giving further security because "the representative of the sd. Robert is at full age." (Balto. Co. Court Proc. 1736–8; 43). About two months after Robert Gorsuch's death, a deed dated May 25, 1733, was recorded from John Gorsuch of Baltimore Co., planter, to Walter Dallas conveying the tract ["Gorsuch,"] 500 acres, for £100 sterling (Annap. Prov. Court Deeds P. L. no. 8; 164). May 28, 1733, Dallas conveys the same tract to Ben-

jamin Tasker, Charles Carroll, Daniel Dulany and others, later known as the Baltimore Company (Balto. Co. Deeds I. S. no. L; 373). In this latter deed it is recited that "Robert Gorsuch late of Baltimore County, dec'd. planter, by his will—devised to his son Robert, his heir, all that tract and plantation whereon he dwelt containing 500 acres and thereafter died—and that Robert, the devisee entered into possession and died intestate and without issue, whereby the said land descended unto John Gorsuch, the cousen and heir at law of Robert the devisee," and that John Gorsuch then conveyed the land to Walter Dallas etc.

All the data bearing upon this line of Robert Gorsuch[4] has been given, because the evidence would seem to be susceptable of at least three different interpretations. Robert Gorsuch who appears in Baltimore County about 1700 in possession of "Gorsuch" may have been: (1) Identical with Robert[4], born 1635 and the patentee of 1659–60; (2) The son of Robert[4], the patentee; (3) A nephew of the patentee Robert[4], and a son of Charles[4] of Baltimore County. If the *first* hypothesis is correct Robert Gorsuch who was born in 1635, living in Baltimore County in 1661, and living in England in 1675, returned to Baltimore County when 65 years old, became the father of a daughter Dorothy when between 65 and 70 years of age, was appointed a road surveyor at 75, and died in 1725 at 85, leaving a widow and three children, at least one of whom was under 16, and two other children who were probably older. While this is all perfectly possible, the dates and ages throw some doubt upon its probability. The *second* hypothesis assumes that Robert, who appears in Baltimore County about 1700, had inherited the tract "Gorsuch" from his father, the patentee of 1659–60, and dying in 1720, left "Gorsuch" to his son Robert, the third of this name. Neither of these two theories are supported by the inheritance of the land by John Gorsuch[5], "cousen and heir at law" of the younger Robert, who died intestate and without issue in 1733. As a matter of fact Robert Gorsuch[4] the patentee of 1659–60 had three brothers Richard[4], Charles[4], and Lovelace[4], who lived in Maryland. All three were dead before 1733. Richard[4], who was older than Charles[4], is believed to have had male descendants then living on the Eastern Shore of Maryland (see Richard Gorsuch[4], post). But John Gorsuch[5], the eldest son of one of the younger brothers, Charles[4], inherited "Gorsuch" as the heir at law. This fact weakens the theory that Robert who died in 1733 was of the direct line of Robert the patentee. Yet if "*cousen*" is given its modern meaning, and the words of the deed are to be taken at their face value, no other explanation seems possible, and for some reason the heirs of the elder brother Richard[4] were passed over. The *third* hypothesis that Robert who possessed "Gorsuch" in 1700 was a son of Charles[4] is only tenable if we assume that "*cousen*" in the deed means *uncle*, a sense in which it was occasionally used. John Gorsuch[5] who inherited from Robert, the younger, as "cousen and heir at law," was unquestionably the eldest son of Charles[4]. There is no reason why Charles[4] may not

have also had a son Robert, although there is no proof of the fact (see Charles Gorsuch[4], post). If so the latter may have inherited "Gorsuch" under a will of his uncle Robert[4] proved in England or elsewhere. There is no deed on record in Maryland from Robert[4], the patentee, to his nephew or to anyone else, but the property may have been conveyed to him in some less formal way. Certainly Charles Gorsuch[4] held the land "in behalf of" Robert for some years, which means that he paid the quit rent for him. There was certainly a very intimate connection between this Robert and the family of Charles[4]. He was living in 1706 with John[5], the eldest son of Charles[4]. This John Gorsuch[5] acted as his executor, and John's wife Elizabeth, together with John's two younger brothers Thomas[5] and Charles[5] Gorsuch signed his inventory, apparently as relations. John[5] and Thomas[5] Gorsuch later appear successively as administrators in 1733 of the younger Robert Gorsuch's estate. It is interesting to note that a Lovelace Gorsuch signs the younger Robert's inventory as next of kin. This Lovelace cannot be certainly placed; it is possible that Charles[4] had a son of this name; or he may have been Lovelace[6], son of that Thomas[5] (Charles[4]) who became administrator d. b. n. of Robert in 1733, although as Thomas[5] was not married until Aug. 19, 1714, his son could not have been of full age Mar. 6, 1734–5.

While it seems impossible to draw any absolutely definite conclusion from the above evidence as to the paternity of Robert Gorsuch who had three children living in 1714 and who died in 1720, certain definite facts are known in regard to his descendants. The maiden name of his wife Johanna is not known. That her estate was administered upon by William Green in 1728 and not by any of her husband's relations may have some significance. The statement in her inventory that there were "no relations," of course does not necessarily refer to any minor children she may have left, or to her husband's relations. While Robert Gorsuch had three children, Daniel, Robert and Dorothy, living in 1714, it is not certain that any or all of these were the children of his wife Johanna, but the statement of her administrator in 1730 "the orphans of age this summer" rather indicates that she was probably the mother of at least two of the children, that the youngest child was then of age, and that at least one of the three children was born nearly as late as 1710. Of the three children of Robert, Daniel, who was cut off with 5 shillings, disappears from the records and probably died, or he would doubtless have appeared as the heir of his brother Robert to "Gorsuch." Robert, we know, died intestate and without issue, March 19, 1733. It seems unlikely that he married. Of Dorothy, who was living in 1721, and who was then over 16 years old or married, as she in that year received her portion, nothing further is definitely known. That she did not inherit "Gorsuch" from her brother Robert in 1733 does not indicate that she was then dead, as the land followed the male line. It seems quite possible that she may have married and left issue, for it has been shown that in June, 1737, there

is a Court entry by the administrator of the personal property of Robert Gorsuch (died 1733) that the "representative of the said Robert had then come to full age." Whether this *representative* was of the line of Dorothy or of the line of John Gorsuch[5] (Charles[4]), the "cousen" who inherited the land and who appears to have died soon after, is at present a matter of uncertainty (see Charles Gorsuch[1], post). It seems quite possible, however, that Dorothy, who may have died prior to receiving her share of her brother Robert's personal property, left a child who came of age 1737, and then became entitled to receive it. It is also just possible that Dorothy had a younger sister born after her father made his will in 1714, although this would appear to conflict with the statement of Johanna Gorsuch's administrator in 1730, that the orphans were then of age.

(To be Continued)

DESCENDANTS OF ARCHER PAYNE OF "NEW MARKET."

(Contributed by John M. Payne.)

Goochland County, Virginia, and his wife Martha daughter of Nathanial West Dandridge and Dorathea daughter of Governor Alexander Spotswood.

Mr. Payne was born in 1748 and married in 1769. He was a son of Colonel John Payne of "White Hall" who represented Goochland in the House of Burgesses from 1752 to 1768.

Their children, omitting those who died in infancy, were:

2 Annie Spotswood Payne, born April 19, 1772, married Thos. Mann Fleming;

3 Martha Payne, born Nov. 8, 1773, married Jeremiah Strother;

Archer Payne, born Nov. 20, 1775, died unmarried;

4 Dorathea Dandridge Payne, born July 10, 1777, married Edward Bolling;

5 Jane Payne, married 1st Robert Bolling; 2nd James B. Ferguson;

6 Alexander Spotswood, born Oct. 20, 1780, married Charlotte Bryce;

7 Catherine Payne, married Archibald Bolling;

8 John Robert Dandridge, married Susan Bryce.

2

Anne Spotswood Payne, married Thomas Mann Fleming, son of Tarlton Fleming, and Mary Randolph of Tuckahoe.

They had:

Tarleton Fleming, who married Rebecca, daughter of Walter Coles of Albemarle.

The issue of Tarleton & Rebecca Coles Fleming were:

I Thos. Mann Fleming, married Virginia Hobson—issue.

II Elizabeth Anne Fleming, married Capt. Wm. Webb, C. S. Navy—issue;

III Sarah Eleanor Fleming married Jesse Heath—Issue;

IV William Randolph Fleming, married Mrs Lelia Wynn, widow of Robert E. Wynn and daughter of Wm. H. Shields of Yorktown—issue.

3

Martha Payne, married Jeremiah Strother and they had:

I Dr---------- Strother, married ---------- died in Monroe Co.:

II Martha Strother, died unmarried.

Note—

Mrs Martha Payne Strother died and her husband married 2nd, a Miss Clayton and were the parents of Sarah Strother who married James Logan of Dungeness, Goochland.

4

Dorathea Dandridge Payne married Edward Bolling (see "Descendants of Pocahontas" by Gov'r Robertson) and ided early leaving one son.

I Powhatan Bolling who died unmarried.

5

Jane Payne married 1st Robert Bolling, no issue; 2nd James B. Furguson. She died in 1806 leaving one daughter a few months old: to-wit; Jane Elvira Ferguson, born April 6th, 1806, and married Peachy R. Grattan in 1827. She died Sept. 8, 1988.

Mr. Grattan, the well known Reporter of the Court of Appeals of Virginia, was born November 7th, 1801 and died September 8th, 1881.

The children of Mr. and Mrs Grattan, omitting those who died in infancy, are:

I Elizabeth Gilmer, born April 11th, 1837, unmarried;

II Sally Gay, born Aug. 10, 1838, married Otho H. Kean and had issue;

III Lucy Gilmer, born Aug. 10, 1838, married Mr.------ Alexander and died Oct. 14, 1899, leaving issue;

IV James Ferguson, born July 11, 1840, married Miss ---------- Morris, died in 1879 without issue;

V George Gilmer, born Oct. 12, 1844, killed at Battle of Seven Pines.

6

Alexander Spotswood Payne, born Oct. 20, 1780, married Sept. 6th, 1804—Charlotte Bryce, daughter of Archibald Bryce and Mary Michel. They inherited "New Market" in Goochland and lived there until 1840, when they removed to a farm on Ivy Creek near Lynchburg where they lived the remainder of their lives, Mr. Payne dying in 1859 and Mrs. Payne in 1870.

(To be Continued)

BOOK REVIEWS.

EMPIRE AND ARMAMENT, By Jennings C. Wise, New York and London, 1916. G. P. Putnam's Sons, pp. 365.

"It is a very valuable addition to our military historical literature and indicates most intelligent and comprehensive research. It will be of great use to all who wish to make a study of our past policy with a view to forming an opinion as to what should be done in the way of preparedness for national defence. The subject of preparation is approached in a systematic and logical manner and the reader takes up this chapter of the work with a very good understanding of the reasons for a most careful consideration of this vital subject.

"The author's study of the subject of national defense must bring to all who understand that true democracies are founded upon manhood suffrage, an appreciation of the fact that with it goes, hand in hand, manhood obligation for service.

"There is not a dull sentence in the volume, so clear and simple is the style, and so well arranged and thoroughly digested is the matter. It is reasoned out with the utmost clarity, and most logically and convincingly. Nothing could be more timely than this book, and I feel sure that it will exercise a strong influence on public sentiment. It expresses the soundest common sense, and breathes the most ardent, yet most rational, patriotism."

A BIBLIOGRAPHY OF VIRGINIA, PART I. Containing the Titles of Books in the Virginia State Library Which Relate to Virginia and Virginians, the Titles of Those Books Written by Virginians and of Those Printed in Virginia. But not including the Titles of the Official Editions of the Laws, of the Journals of the Legislative Bodies, of the Reports of the Administrative Officers and Other Published Official Documents. By Earl G. Swem, Assistant Librarian, Bulletin Va. State Library, April-October 1915, Richmond 1916, pp. 767.

It would be difficult to exaggerate the importance of this book to students of any phase of Virginia life or history. The author states that it is not complete. This is a matter of course, but all interested will feel sure that in the able hands of Dr. McIlwaine the Librarian, and of Mr. Swem, it will ultimately be brought to completion. The book covers meor ground than ever its comprehensive title would indicate, for, in addition to books, many magazine articles and several publications are catalogued. In order to economize space, subject titles are, as a rule, shown only in the index, the various works appearing under authors in the text.

JOURNALS OF THE HOUSE OF BURGESSES OF VIRGINIA 1619-1658-59. Edited by H. R. McIlwaine, Va. State Library, Richmond, Va., MCMXV, pp. 283.

This, the 13th volume, completes the most important historical publication ever begun in Virginia, the journals of the colonial House of Burgesses so far as they remain. During the period covered by this volume the records of the Assembly are very defective, but Dr. McIlwaine has brought together all that remain and has added a number of valuable illustrative documents. Dr. McIlwaine's prefaces and notes are, as usual, most valuable. This volume also contains a general index to the whole thirteen.

A MAN'S REACH. By Sally Nelson Robins. Philadelphia and London, J. B. Lippincott Co., 1916, pp. 333.

This department does not review works of fiction; but we acknowledge the receipt of this story laid in Virginia; almost at the present time, by a lady who was long the very efficient Assistant Librarian of this Society.

SOME EMIGRANTS TO VIRGINIA. Memoranda in regard to Several Hundred Emigrants to Virginia During the Colonial Period whose Parentage is shown or former Residence indicated by Authentic Records. By W. G. Stanard, Second Edition Enlarged 1915, Bell Book & Stationery Company, Richmond, Va., pp. 94.

KENTUCKY IN THE WAR OF 1812. By A. C. Quisenberry. Ky. Historical Society, Frankfort 1915.

This valuable book gives in minute detail the services of Kentuckians in the last war with England. Among the hundreds of names mentioned and, of course, many natives of Virginia and sons of Virginians.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Virginia Historical Society

AT ITS

ANNUAL MEETING

HELD IN THE

HOUSE OF THE SOCIETY

ON

March 20, 1916

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS
PRINTERS TO THE SOCIETY
RICHMOND, VA.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Virginia Historical Society

IN

Annual Meeting Held March 20, 1916.

The Annual Meeting was held in the Society's House, 707 East Franklin Street, on March 20th, at 4 P. M., with President W. Gordon McCabe in the chair.

The first business was the reading of President McCabe's Annual Report as follows:

Annual Report of the President of the Virginia Historical Society for 1915.

To the Members of the Virginia Historical Society:

I have the honor to submit the following Report, giving a summary of the work of the Society and presenting a detailed statement of its finances, membership and property for the year ending November 30th, 1915—which Report has been duly examined, minutely verified, and unanimously approved by your Executive Committee.

While it is true that little of special significance has occurred since our last Report, it is yet a source of no small satisfaction to record that much solid achievement has marked the history of the Society during this time and that our finances, notwithstanding the increased expenditures incident to the broadening of the scope of our work, were never in a sounder condition.

Despite the "hard times" which prevailed during the greater portion of the year, we have more than held our own, adding, indeed, no insignificant sum to our "Permanent Fund," which,

while still far below what our aims demand, is yet the largest as to amount in the annals of the Society

Collections of annual dues have been far more satisfactory than for the past two or three years, owing, no doubt, to the drastic purging of our rolls by order of the Executive Committee. There are, however, still left some few of these delinquents, who turn a deaf ear to the "gentle reminders" of our "collector," and others, who, like the debtors in King Henry IV, "pay some and promise infinitely." If these members could, in any way, be brought to realize to what extent their failure to pay their just debts not seldom embarrasses the Society (which scrupulously pays its own), perhaps for very shame's sake they would cease their cynical indifference or (to employ a more euphemistic phrase) their inexcusable negligence, and by prompt payment enable your Executive Committee to broaden still further the scope of our Magazine.

Further appeal to the consciences of these delinquents seems futile. To paraphrase Shakespeare a trifle, some men are born honest, some achieve honesty (as a sort of "best policy"), but our records prove beyond cavil that there are others who stubbornly refuse to have it even thrust upon them. We have been not only considerate, but most indulgent, and now "where the offense is, let the great axe fall."

In spite, however, of "hard times" and of these recalcitrant debtors, who, from time to time, were dropped after repeated warnings, our rolls show a membership of 757, an increase of 7 over last year.

That our finances continue in a thoroughly sound and satisfactory condition, is evidenced by the subjoined

TREASURER'S REPORT:

Balance in Bank December 1, 1914		$210.50
Receipts.		
Annual Dues	$2,939.05	
Life Members	100.00	
Sale of Magazines	291.90	
Sale of Publications	37.50	
Interest	637.45	
Advertising	44.50	
Rent	150.00	$4,200.40
		$4,410.90

Disbursements.

Salaries	$1,521.00	
Wages	300.00	
Books, Binding, etc	79.15	
Sundry Bills	241.97	
Postage and Express	121.18	
Checks returned	15.10	
Miscellaneous Printing	63.50	
Repairs	43.43	
Printing Magazines	1,349.47	
To Permanent Fund	300.00	
Insurance	6.00	
Discount	.56	4,041.16
Balance in Bank November 30, 1915		369.74
		$4,410.90

Permanent Fund.

3% Savings Deposit	$1,100.00
Mortgage 6%	1,000.00
Mortgage 6%	5,500.00
Twenty-five (25) Shares of Stock in the Citizen's Bank of Norfolk, Va., paying 10% dividends, estimated value	5,000.00
	$12,600.00

In accordance with an order of the Executive Committee, the Treasurer presents the following tabulated statement showing the sources from which the Permanent Fund is derived. What is termed the "Society's Fund" comprises the amount the Committee has been able to save from year to year out of the ordinary revenues of the Society.

The Virginia Sturdivant McCabe Fund, given by the President of the Society in loving memory of his grand-daughter Virginia Sturdivant McCabe, born February 1, 1906, died August 11, 1909	$500.00
The Jane Pleasants Harrison Osborne McCabe Fund given by the President of the Society in loving memory of his wife, Jane Pleasants Harrison Osborne McCabe, who died November 22, 1912	500.00
Daughters of the American Revolution Fund	100.00
Byam K. Stevens Fund	650.00
Edward Wilson James Fund	4,500.00
Society's Fund	6,350.00
	$12,600.00

It should be observed that while the report of current receipts and disbursements is for the fiscal year ending November 30th, the statement of the amount of the Permanent Fund is brought up to the date of the Annual Meeting.

Though our total receipts from regular sources are less by $25.24 than last year (on account of the very unusual sale of sets of the magazine during 1914) it is very gratifying to see that the receipts from annual dues are $174.20 more than last year. Excluding the large expenditure

for repairs in 1914 (for which the means were derived from the Permanent Fund) our expenditures this year are less than last. The best indication that we have had a prosperous year from the financial standpoint is that though we have promptly met every obligation and conducted the affairs of the Society with all necessary liberality, we have this year a balance of $369.74 against $210.50 last year, and that, though there have been no gifts to the Permanent Fund this year, we have been able from our regular income to add $400.00 to it, making the amount $200.00 more than it has ever been before. $100.00 of this addition was made before the date of the last annual meeting, February 1915, so the net increase of the Permanent Fund over the last report is $300.00. In addition to these facts it may be stated that within a week after the end of the fiscal year the Society did not owe a dollar.

Respectfully submitted,
ROBERT A. LANCASTER, Jr.,
Treasurer.

Additions to the Library.

The addition to the library in books and pamphlets total 840, an increase of 235 over last year. Thedonors to whom is due grateful acknowledgement are: Hon. Armistead C. Gordon, Col. Jennings C. Wise, Judge George L. Christian, Major William A. Anderson, Sir Gilbert Parker, Bart., Judge Norris S. Barratt, W. Gordon McCabe, Douglas H. Thomas, R. A. Lancaster, Jr., James Branch Cabell, Marshall D. Haywood, J. G. Hankins, Auditor C. Lee Moore, Gideon M. Harris, Henry A. Sampson, M. A. Shiree, David I. Bushnell, Jr., A. P. Wilmer, W. K. Chisholm, R. H. North, W. W. Harrison, Frank A. Owen, Lindsay Russell, H. T. Ezekiel, Albert Matthews, A. W. Alderson, E. D. Millette, G. E. Dwelley, Fisk Kimball, Edwin J. Sellers, Henry T. Harrison, John T. Trezvant, James Sprunt, Robert B. Munford, Jr., Bauman L. Belder, E. F. Pratt, Thos. B. Rowland, H. A. Statenburgh, Chas. G. Bosher, Fred'k B. Hyde, H. E. Deats; Rev. A. H. Hord, D. D., Rev. W. J. Hinke, D. D.; Professors Lyon G. Tyler, Charles A Graves, J. W. Wayland, Ulrich B. Phillips, and A. J. Morrison; Doctors J. B. Earnest, Emory Jordan, McGuire Newton, H. L. E. Johnson; Mesdames Sally Nelson Robins, Lipscombe Norvell, Chas. R. Hyde, James M. Lawton, John W. Holcombe, Wells Thompson; Misses M. M. Pleasants, Jane S. Stanard, E. L. Stanard; Smithsonian Institution, Royal Society of Canada, Carnegie Endowment for Universal Peace, Rockefeller Foundation, Rockefeller Sanitary Commission, Library of Congress,

Virginia State Library, Yale University Library, Columbia University Press, University of California, Apprentices Library (Philadelphia), Newberry Library (Chicago), Indian Rights Commission, Virginia Society of Colonial Dames, New York Society of Colonial Dames, Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, the Paris (France) Chamber of Commerce, Richmond (Va.) Chamber of Commerce, California Society S. A. R., National Society S. A. R., Alliance Francaise, American Bar Association, Virginia Bar Association, Japan Society of America, Hispania Society of America, Swedish Historical Society, Georgia Historical Society, Trustees of Philadelphia Museum, Adjutant-General of Kentucky, and Gettysburg National Park Commission.

A very large number of newspapers, periodicals, and pamphlets (beyond the usual 8vo. size) have been substantially bound, while our "binders" now number 351, containing about three thousand five hundred pamphlets. We are also preserving in "binders" numerous local imprints and clippings, which cannot fail to prove most helpful to future historians of Richmond.

Gifts and Bequests.

1. A full length portrait in oils of the late Joseph Bryan, so long the beloved President and benefactor of this Society, presented by his sons.

2. Five large photographs (framed, and almost of the same size as the originals) of: (1) Robert Bolling (1646-1709); (2) Robert Bolling (1682-1749); (3) Robert Bolling (1730-1775); (4) Robert Bolling (1759-1839—of "the Petersburg Bollings" branch of the family); and (5) Colonel William Heth of the "Continental Line"—all presented by their lineal descendant, Heth Lorton, esq., formerly of Virginia, now of "Matoa," Garden City, Long Island.

3. The original official appointment (Dec. 6, 1752) of John Maury as surveyor of lands in Prince William County, Virginia, signed by Colonel William Fairfax (cousin and agent of Thomas Lord Fairfax), who was Lieutenant of the County of

Fairfax and President of the Virginia Council—given to President McCabe by the late Charles H. Conover of Chicago, well known as an ardent "collector" and antiquarian, and presented by the former to the Society.

4. An old "whipping-strap," used in early Colonial days in legal whippings at Gloucester, C. H., (Va.)—presented by W. B. Cridlin, esq., of this city

5. (1) A copy of the famous correspondence that passed between John Randolph of Roanoke and Mrs. Gouverneur Morris (Anne Cary Randolph), in which that sprightly and sarcastic dame got decidedly the better of her acrid kinsman; (2) a "broad-side" advertising Miss Hunneywell's gallery of cuts and needlework; (3) a silhouette cut by Miss Hunneywell—presented by Miss Lucie P. Stone, Hollins, Virginia.

6. A framed photograph of the miniature of Patrick Henry painted by Laurence Sully in 1793—presented by the former owner of the miniature, John Syme Fleming, esq., of Richmond, together with various interesting documents relating to the original.

7. A photogravure of Trumbull's portrait of Washington (now in Yale University), presented by the Secretary, William G. Stanard.

8. A steel engraving of Hon. Jefferson Davis, when Secretary of War of the United States—presented by Arthur L. Stearns, esq., of New York City.

9. A steel engraving (very rare) of General Robert E. Lee, executed by John Sartain—presented by Arthur L. Stearns, esq., of New York City.

10. An engraving of "Bathurst," a very ancient residence in Essex County, Virginia—presented by Judge L. H. Jones, Louisville, Ky.

11. A large number of copies of "The National Intelligencer" (Washington, D. C.)—presented by R. L. Peyton, Esq., The Plains, Virginia.

Publications.

1. Volume XXIII of our (Quarterly) *Magazine* was published during the year, and, it is needless to add, was conducted

on the same high plane that historical students at home and abroad confidently look for in it, its accomplished editor steadily adhering to his settled purpose of printing (save in very rare instances) only original documents dealing with Virginia Colonial history.

2. The "*Minutes of the Council and General Court*" (*1622-1627*), transcribed from the originals in the Library of Congress by Mr. Lothrop Withington of London, have run through the year, but the untimely death of this generous friend and keen antiquarian (who perished in the dastardly and stupid destruction of the "Lusitania") rendered it necessary that provision should be promptly made for the uninterrupted continuation of this valuable series of documents, which, for the first time, have given historical students a detailed account of the intimate every-day life of the Colony. Under direction of the President of the Society, the Corresponding Secretary went to Washington, and, through the courteous permission of the Chief Librarian, had "photostat" copies made of a large portion of the original MS. This he is now transcribing and annotating, and the first instalment of his work is already in type for the January (1916) number of the Magazine. We may repeat here, without fear of successful contradiction, what was asserted in our Report of two years ago—that no printed document whatever dealing with early Colonial industrial and social life is of more solid and illumining value than these "Minutes."

3. The series of "*Abstracts*," by the late W. N. Sainsbury, as well as the "*Complete Transcripts*" from the originals in the British "Public Records Office" (now in the Virginia State Library and commonly known as the "DeJarnette," "Winder," and "McDonald" Papers) have regularly appeared in each number of the Magazine, covering the years 1677 and 1678. These latter instalments, it may here be noted, offer minute details of the very troublous period immediately following "Bacon's Rebellion."

4. The "*Council Papers*" (*1698-1701*), transcribed by our own copyist from the rare and long-forgotten MS volume, so entitled, in the Virginia State Library (which bears on the flyleaf the inscription, "This Book begun by Mr. Benjamin Har-

rison, Clerk of ye Council in 1698") have also run through the year to the increasing delight of both the historical student and the idlest general reader. These "Papers," never before in print until published in our pages, constitute, in truth, a veritable "human document," containing, as they do, not only formal official communications, "instructions" and proclamations, but a wealth of personal letters vividly portraying the social and economic life of the Colonists.

5. We have also drawn largely during the year from the manuscript treasures of our own collections:

As worthy of especial note among the papers so published, we may mention: (1) Letters of Thomas Adams (brother of Col. Richard Adams, some of whose letters we published last year in our Magazine), which, dealing, as they do, with the trade between Virginia and the mother-country in the years immediately preceding the Revolution (1768-1775), must prove of distinct interest to economic students; (2) a series of "Letters and other Papers," which embrace as wide a range in subject-matter as they cover in time (1705-1829); chief among them being the letters from Edward Athawes, London Merchant, to "the Hon'ble John, Charles and Landon Carter, Esquires, in Rappahannock River, Virginia," relating to the consignments of tobacco, made to him from the estate of their nephew and ward, Robert Carter of "Nominy," at that time a minor, who was, later on, to be known as that "Councillor Carter," who has been so graphically portrayed for us by Philip Fithian in his delightful "Diary." The special value of these Athawes letters lies in the minute details they give as to the conditions at that time (1735) of the Virginia tobacco trade, then (as for many years before and after) the chief commercial business of the Colony. These are followed by a number of letters of considerable moment to Revolutionary students written to Col. Theodorick Bland (commanding the regiment guarding British prisoners in Albemarle Co., Va., 1779) by John Allen, Captain and Quartermaster; then (going back chronologically) a series of letters from Nathaniel Blackiston (formerly a Governor of Maryland, but, at the time, "Agent of Virginia and Maryland" in England) to Philip Ludwell (Second) of "Green-

spring," James City County, Va. (the uncompromising enemy of quarrelsome Governor Nicholson), mainly taken up with the political gossip "at home." More attractive still to the general reader, who finds his interest in social life and manners rather than in political or economic discussions, will prove the intimate family letters of Mrs. Lucy Ambler of "Morven," Fauquier Co., to her cousin, Mrs. Sallie Massie of Nelson Co., which portray in artless and lively fashion the busy life of the mistress of a Virginia plantation in the early part of the last century, and which, incidentally, give most abundant proof of the kindly, nay, affectionate, relations, that existed between master and servants (they were never called "slaves" by gentle-folk) in those brave old days. Their charm is no whit impaired by a variegated, not to say picturesque, orthography, which the most radical "Spelling Reformer" has never rivalled in his most daring aberrations from the norm. Nor do these eccentricities of orthography, even in a more exaggerated degree, detract from our keen interest in the letters of Mistress Elizabeth Beverley of "Blandfield," Essex Co. (sister of the Revolutionary statesman, Richard Bland of "Jordan's Point," Prince George County), evidently a "Colonial Dame" of masterful mind, who did not hesitate to score relentlessly her "grate relations" for not succoring her "Sis'r Munford" left in straitened circumstances. Other letters under this general title, treating of Colonial and Revolutionary matters, are equally readable.

6. Of special value is a series of papers entitled "*The Virginia Frontier in History, 1778*", contributed by Mr. David I. Bushnell, Jr. (a member of the Society), who has achieved high reputation as an expert in Indian history in the "Bureau of American Ethnology." It is the work of a trained specialist and contains many highly important documents transcribed by the writer from the archives of the Virginia State Library and the Library of Congress, that deal with the history of our frontier in 1778 and our relations with "the wily red-skins." Three instalments of this most valuable paper have been published (beginning with the April number of the Magazine) and the series is to be continued. It is admirably annotated throughout, and, when completed, should be presented in book

form as constituting a solid contribution to the early history of this commonwealth.

7. To the long list of historical "finds" that stand to our credit during recent and past years, we have added yet another of prime importance, which appeared in our July number under the title "*Acts, Orders and Resolutions of the General Assembly of Virginia, At Sessions of 1643-1646.*" These Acts and other "proceedings" (not printed in Hening, it is to be noted) are contained in a manuscript volume, which Mr. Charles F. McIntosh (an indefatigable antiquarian and member of this Society) discovered a short time ago while making researches in the Clerk's Office at Portsmouth, Virginia. Apprized of the "find", Dr. Henry R. McIlwaine, our alert and accomplished State Librarian (who is as keen in running down an old Virginia manuscript as ever was Sir Francis Drake in his roving quest of the treasure-ships of "Old Spain")went at once to Portsmouth in person, examined the precious, long-forgotten, volume and, having secured from the proper custodians permission to do so, brought back the book to Richmond, and had it copied by one of the trained scribes of the Library Staff, with the view of incorporating these "Acts" in any future collection of Virginia laws. But, as there seemed no prospect of publishing such a collection for some time to come, he most generously handed over his copy to our Editor for publication in the Magazine.

The Acts of the Session of March 1643, deal especially with the Second Indian War, an episode in our Colonial history of which very little has been, heretofore, known. There are also other "Acts" of no small importance, among them one (printed it is true, in Hening, but erroneously dated) entitled, "A Declaration concerning the Dutch War, 1647," which (pp. 244-246 of the Magazine) contains a very vigorous statement of Colonial rights in the matter "granted unto us by ancient charter."

Your Committee takes this occasion to make grateful knowledgement of Dr. McIlwaine's courtesy, which affords additional evidence of his constant readiness to serve the interests of the Society, which in this instance are identical with "the good of the State."

8. Of noteworthy value to determined historical students may be also mentioned: (1) "Index to Brunswick County (Va.) Wills" (Letter H), which we owe to the industry of Mr. W. B. Cridlin of this city (a member of the Society) and which is to be continued by that painstaking antiquarian; (2) the continuation of "Animadversions on a Paper Entitulated Virginia Addresses, Printed in Philadelphia," a document prepared by the House of Burgesses during their quarrel with Governor Spotswood (1719), which we dealt with at length in our last Report; (3) "County Court Proceedings in Virginia, 1734," which contains some very amusing reading to the "layman," whatever its worth to the legal profession; (4) "Lists of Tithables of Pittsylvania County, year 1767," for which we are indebted to Mrs. N. E. Clement of Chatham, Virginia (a member of the Society), for whose valuable contributions to our Magazine we have often had occasion to express profound gratitude. These "Lists" give the number of acres of land owned by each resident in the county together with the names of the "tithables." It is greatly to be regretted that we have not similar lists for all the counties in this commonwealth, which, through close comparative study, would enable us to solve not a few vexed problems of our economic history;

(5) "Abstracts of Lists of Wills and Administrations from British Probate Courts," which have been published in our Magazine during the past twelve years (beginning January, 1903) under the title "Virginia Gleanings in England."

It would be idle for us to dwell again on the illumining sidelights shed on the social and economic life of our early Col. onial era by these "Gleanings," so generously "compiled and presented" to the Society by our staunch friend, Mr. Lothrop Withington, of London. Repeatedly, year after year, have we made grateful acknowledgement to him of his unwearied labors. This alphabetical reference list to the entire series (which will prove a boon to all students of Virginia history) was also "compiled and presented" by Mr. Withington, and alas! is to be the last of the many kind services that he so ungrudingly rendered the Society. *Finis opus coronat!*; (6) an artless, yet shrewd, and, we doubt not, veracious, description of Virginia

as it was in 1785, contained in a lengthy letter written by a young Irishman, John Joyce, to his uncle, the Rev. Robert Dickson, of Narrow Water near Newry, County Armagh. This most interesting letter was given to the Society many years ago by Governor John Letcher (Virginia's "War Governor") and according to tradition was found in Norfolk, Virginia, during the war of 1812. From certain allusions in this letter, Joyce was probably tutor in the family of Thomas Lomax of "Portobago Bay," on the Rappahannock. The letter has been admirably annotated by our Editor and forms most agreeable reading. It is amusing to see that the groans of the farmers over "unjust taxes" were as deep and dismal in 1785 as they are now, and, no doubt, will continue to be till the crack o'doom.

The Departments of "Notes and Queries," "Book-Reviews" and "Genealogy," have been conducted on the usual high plane. As regards the last-named department, it is pertinent to mention here that the general reader, who may care little for genealogy in itself, will find, on even a cursory glance, that many of these "genealogies" (comprising, as they do, wills, inventories and domestic letters) throw unexpected light on the social and economic history of the time, while affording most delightful and instructive reading. It is gratifying to recall that not a few men and women, who originally joined the Society for only a single year in order to receive the Magazine during the publication of some particular genealogy, have gradually become deeply interested in general Virginia history and are now reckoned among our most dependable subscribers. It seems, indeed, safe to say that a large proportion of our present membership had this origin.

1916.

Our Editor has already mapped out a most attractive programme for 1916.

The "*Minutes of the Council and General Court*" will continue through the whole year, as will also the "*Sainsbury Abstracts*" and "*Complete Transcripts*" from the originals in the

British Public Records Office, from 1677 on (known as the "DeJarnette," "Winder" and "McDonald" Papers.)

The "*Council Papers*" will be continued (and probably concluded) during the year.

Mr. David I. Bushnell, Jr., has kindly promised to contribute at least two more instalments of his most valuable monograph on "*The Virginia Frontier in History, 1778,*" the previous sections of which have already excited wide-spread interest and commendation. Mrs. Clement's "*Pittsylvania Tithables*" and Mr. W. B. Cridlin's "*Index to Sussex County Wills*" (the last instalment of which appeared in 1913, Vol. XXI, pp. 269-276) will, both, be resumed and carried through to completion.

Most of our readers, no doubt, still cherish delightful recollections of the "Moravian Diaries of Travel through Virginia," translated from the German originals in the archives of the Moravian church at Bethlehem, Penn., by Rev. William J. Hinke, Ph. D., assisted by Mr. Charles E. Kemper of Washington, D. C. These "Diaries," minutely annotated by these two able scholars and acute antiquarians, of the brave and pious Moravian Missionaries, who came from Pennsylvania to the Western portion of this Colony about the middle of the eighteenth century (1748 on), contain vivid pictures of the rude settlers among whom they labored, and, when presented to the reading public in our pages (where they appeared for the first time in English), were, everywhere and at once, recognized as a contribution of prime import to a more precise knowledge of the influence of the German element in the settlement of many Virginia counties, notably in the settlement of "the Valley."

Dr. Hinke has now translated (from a copy of the original in the "City Library" of Berne), the "Report of the Journey of Francis Louis Michel from Berne, Switzerland, to Virginia, Oct. 2nd, 1701—Dec. 1st, 1792." This "Report," carefully annotated by the translator, will appear for the first time in English guise in the pages of our Magazine for the coming year. The first instalment will be printed in our January (1916) number, accompanied by a very curious map (on a reduced scale) drawn by Michel himself. The traveller also left a series of sketches of such ancient historic buildings as the first

College of William and Mary, the Virginia State House, Old Bruton Church, of the Indians and their houses etc., all of which will appear as illustrative of the text, as it appears in successive instalments.

A close investigation recently made by our Corresponding Secretary and Editor, disclosed the fact that only about twenty-nine of the one hundred and forty letters contained in the "Letter-Book" (1683-1691) of Captain William Byrd (father of the more celebrated Col. William Byrd of Westover) had been printed in Maxwell's "Historical Register" (I, 60, 114; II, 78, 203). Mr. Maxwell (*nomen venerabile!*) appears to have selected at random those that he decided to print from the little MS volume that has been for so many years in our possession. However, some of the "curious" may recall that those that he did print excited at the time very lively attention, and our Editor, finding these unpublished ones no whit inferior in interest to those already given to the public, has decided to print (beginning, probably, with our April number) the entire collection until completed.

While our lamented friend, Mr. Lothrop Withington, left unfinished much of the work which he had proposed doing for the Society in the matter of "Abstracts" from British Wills relating to Virginia and Virginians, he yet left with us (on the eve of his faring on his last fateful voyage) a very considerable number of completed abstracts, which will enable us to carry on the series of "Virginia Gleanings in England" for some time to come. As repeatedly dwelt on by us in Report after Report (and as touched upon above), these abstracts throw such light (direct and indirect) on the character of Virginia immigrants and on their social and industrial life, that it is earnestly to be hoped that some enthusiastic antiquarian over seas may still be found to continue this part, at least, of Mr. Withington's manifold activities in furthering the aims of this Society.

The publication of letters and documents relating to our Revolutionary soldiers and to Virginia matters during, and immediately subsequent to, that momentous struggle, will be continued.

The "Book-Reviews," "Notes and Queries" and "Genealogy" will, of course, be carried on with the same conscientious care as heretofore. For this last department, we have been fortunate enough to secure from Dr. J. Hall Pleasants of Baltimore, Md. (a member of the Society) a series of contributions that we are confident will be found of special historical value, as well as of marked interest to the general reader. Taking as his text (so to speak) the children (immigrants to Virginia) of the Rev. John Gorsuch, an aggressive and fearless "Royalist" parson, and of Anne, his wife, daughter of Sir William Lovelace and sister of Richard Lovelace, prince of "Cavalier Poets," Dr. Pleasants has through painstaking investigations, both here and in England, established kinship of these children with a group of famous Kentish "Worthies," who exercised a commanding influence on early Virginia colonization. Included in this group are names that still stir the blood of Virginians "to the manner born"—Sir Edwin Sandys, George Sandys, Sir Francis Wyatt, and of an earlier date, Christopher Carlisle, Sir Humphrey Gilbert, Sidney, Walsingham, and the Earl of Essex. The inherent value of Dr. Pleasants' printed pages will be still further enhanced by the insertion in the text of a number of illustrations—photographs of family portraits, old churches, monuments etc.—which this delightful antiquarian secured during his various pilgrimages to England.

It is pertinent to suggest here that a "General Index" to our Magazine is greatly needed. The demand for it comes again and again to us from busy historical students, but such an undertaking is at present beyond the means of the Society.

If a sufficient number of subscribers to such a volume could be secured beforehand, it would be feasible at the close of 1917 to publish a general index covering the twenty-five volumes of our Magazine. Subscriptions may be sent to our Secretary.

Your Committee, while recording here, as is only just, its high sense of the industry and fidelity of the whole working staff of the Society, desires to mark in an especial manner its deep appreciation of the unwearied labors of our Corresponding Secretary, who by his learning, critical acumen and literary skill has achieved for our Magazine an assured position among

the foremost of like historical publications at home and abroad—steadily maintaining its prestige, as the years go by, until today it is everywhere quoted as definitive "authority" by all students who deal with Virginia history.

It is pleasant to record in this connection that the ancient foundation of "William and Mary" has during the year, in recognition of his learning and devotion to letters, conferred upon him her highest (and rarely accorded) degree of "Doctor of Laws."

NECROLOGY.

LIFE MEMBERS.

JUDGE THEODORE S. GARNETT, Norfolk, Virginia.

ANNUAL MEMBERS.

MAJOR JOHN P. BRANCH, Richmond, Virginia.
JAMES N. BOYD, Richmond, Virginia.
LUCAS BRODHEAD, Versailles, Kentucky.
MRS. F. M. BOYKIN, Richmond, Virginia.
COMMANDER M. B. BUFORD, U. S. N., Paris, France.
C. B. BRYANT, Martinsville, Virginia.
ALEXANDER CAMERON, Richmond, Virginia.
BRIG.-GENERAL C. C. C. CARR, U. S. A., Chicago, Illinois.
HON. HOLMES CONRAD, Winchester, Virginia.
JACOB HEFFLEFINGER, Hampton, Virginia.
ROBERT L. PARRISH, JR., Covington, Virginia.
L. R. WARREN, Richmond, Virginia.
HON. JOSEPH E. WASHINGTON, Wessyngton, Tennessee.
DR. JOHN F. WINN, Richmond, Virginia.
LOTHROP WITHINGTON, London, England.

This is next to the longest "Necrology" that we have ever had to record in the history of the Society.

Not a few of the names embraced in the sad roll are of those who were not only men of distinction in their respective communities and states, but conspicuous for their talents and high personal and civic virtues throughout the whole country.

During recent years, it has been usual for the President to sketch in outline the careers of our deceased members, but so long is the present mournful roll that it is manifestly impossible,

within the limits at his command, for him to do this in every case for the current year. In not a few cases, indeed, lack of intimate personal knowledge would alone forbid such an attempt, for the mere conventional notice always rings false and not only defeats its well-meant purpose, but, oftentimes, does grave injustice to the dead.

Yet, surely, it is only becoming that in the "Minutes" of the Society there should be some record, however halting, of those who were not only knit to us by ties of long and intimate friendship, but whose loyalty to this association never wavered when our skies were not so bright as they are to-day

Foremost among these is Judge Theodore S. Garnett of Norfolk, the only name, indeed, stricken from the roll of Life Membership, yet a loss of such grievous import to the community and commonwealth, to the profession and to the ancient communion to which he belonged, as well as to a large circle of kinsmen, comrades, and friends, that it is difficult to speak of this daring soldier, learned jurist and humble-minded christian, this most lovable and most loyal of friends, save in terms which to those who did not enjoy the privilege of his intimate friendship must savor of rhetorical extravagance.

But in this presence, at least, where so many of you knew him as he was, one need not fear that imputation. The misgiving is, rather, that you will deem the outline blurred by excess of caution and repression.

Living slightly beyond the Psalmist's limit of three score years and ten, his career was a busy and beneficient one to the end, and though, speaking with rigorous exactness, it was in the main uneventful, yet not a few honors came to him as the years went by, and, as he himself loved most to remember, in "the May of youth and bloom of lustihood" he had known many a "crowded hour of glorious life," and had, on field of battle, won the plaudits of grizzled veterans ere the down was on his cheek. So strenuous indeed was his life from early boyhood, that it is not possible to set down here more than a mere outline of its varied activities.

Briefly then, Theodore Stanford Garnett, Jr., was born in Richmond, Virginia, on October 28th, 1844, son and namesake

of Theodore S. Garnett, an able civil engineer, and of his wife, Florentina Isidora Moreno of Pensacola, daughter of Francisco Moreno and grand-daughter of Fernando Moreno, of an ancient Spanish family, who had migrated from Malaga to Florida, and settled there, while as yet it was a province of "Old Spain."

As a lad of ten, his parents, at the time, living in the county of Hanover, he entered the famous "Episcopal High School" near Alexandria (of which he was destined in after years to become one of the "Trustees") and there remained until the outbreak of the "War Between the States."

Virginia having seceded on April 17th, 1861, young Garnett (true to the instincts of his martial blood on both sides of his house) hastened back to his country home and at once enlisted as a private soldier in the light battery that was then being formed by that gallant old soldier, Captain (afterwards Colonel) William Nelson—a battery that was destined in the impending struggle to win great glory under the name of the "Hanover Artillery."

The necessary quota of men was rapidly made up and the company, forthwith, marched to Richmond to be mustered in. There the lad's military ardor met an unexpected check. He was but sixteen and a half years old and looked much younger, so, despite his almost passionate pleading, the enrolling officer refused to accept him. In desperation, and much aggrieved, "The." (as he was always affectionately called by his intimates), along with two other youthful companions who had been similarly rejected, sought out General Robert E. Lee, who, as "Military Adviser" to President Davis, was occupying at the time as his head-quarters a small one-story building that had been hastily constructed within the "Capitol Square." General Lee, always kindly and accessible to young folk, and who, besides, knew Garnett's "people", listened patiently to the boyish trio, but proved as inexorable as the hard-hearted mustering-officer: "Go back to your homes, my boys, and wait a little. We shall need you later on," was his answer to their eager pleas—almost identical, as to words, with his firm refusal to his own son, Robert (exactly a year older than "The."), who was

"wild" to enlist in the early days of '61. So, Garnett sadly went his way, and, in default of anything better, accepted gladly a clerkship in the "Navy Department," offered him by the Hon. Stephen R. Mallory, who was Secretary of the Navy in Mr. Davis's Cabinet and who had married a sister of "The.'s" mother. With this he had to be content for over eighteen months, but the longed-for chance was close at hand, and he owed it to the fact that he wrote a fine and fast and flowing hand. Stuart having asked the Secretary if he could recommend to him as clerk at his headquarters some trustworthy young man, who wrote a "rapid and distinct hand" (the latter he especially insisted on), the kind uncle, who had watched the lad fretting over "being in a bomb-proof" and who sympathized with his longing to be with his brother and other near kinsmen yonder at the front, recommended his nephew for the coveted billet, and "The.," having promptly enlisted (in June, 1863) in the "Essex Troop (Co. F, 9th Va. Cavalry), was straightway detailed by Stuart as a clerk at his headquarters. At last he had his heart's desire, nay, even more than that, for he had never dreamed of such luck as serving under the immediate eye of the great cavalry leader.

Stuart from the first took a great fancy to the handsome youngster, who was modest and anxious to please, while his penmanship, even at that early age, was distinguished for its beauty and legibility, as one may see who cares to examine the original of one of Stuart's "Official Reports" now on file in the Archives of the "Confederate Museum" in this city, which is entirely in Garnett's handwriting.

But better things were to come. In that vigorous campaign of '63, the headquarters of the Cavalry Corps, except for rare intervals, was "in the saddle," and Stuart who saw everything, observing with an approving eye the eager valor of his young scribe, who seemed to be quite as ready with sword as with pen when occasion demanded, soon began to count on his alert intelligence and cool courage in carrying orders, and Garnett speedily became one of his most trusted "couriers."

You will find his name in the small list of "couriers" mentioned for gallantry by Stuart in his "Official Report of the

Gettysburg Campaign." This eager valor in the *mêlée* and ready efficiency in office-work were, in no long time, to be still further rewarded, for in February of '64, Stuart recommended that he be commissioned first-lieutenant of cavalry, and on March 11th announced him in "General Orders" as his personal aide-de-camp.

From that time on, Garnett was always to be found riding hard by the bridle-rein of our "Rupert of the South," whom it is no exaggeration to declare he fairly worshipped with all the intensity of his generous boyish heart.

But alas! he was not destined long so to ride, for exactly sixty days from the time when he had been officially announced as his "A. D. C.," came that fateful May-evening yonder at "Yellow Tavern," when Stuart received his mortal wound, while barring the way to the Confederate capital with a mere handful of his veteran horsemen, who, inspired, as it were, by their youthful leader's splendid audacity, hurled back (though the odds were easily four to one) the desperate onslaught of Sheridan's bold troopers seeking to pierce the "inner lines" of the "Richmond Defences."

The city was, indeed, saved, but at a cost second only to the price paid for victory at "Chancellorsville," where (one year before almost to the day) Jackson had fallen, and Stuart had been chosen by Lee as fittest to take his place in the tumult of the wavering combat.

As his aide-de-camp, Garnett was one of the three staff-officers who bore their stricken chief to this city, where he quietly passed away the next evening.

To the day of his death, though fifty years and more had passed, Garnett could never speak, without a sob in his voice, of that last scene, when his brilliant young chief (he was but thirty-one) breathed out his heroic soul The same was true of Major Andrew Reid Venable, another of the staff-officers who bore him from the field, though Venable had stayed with him but a few brief moments and had then galloped back to the front.

It may interest some of you to know that this scene, so feelingly portrayed by our Virginia novelist, John Esten Cooke,

in his "Mohun," is based entirely on a long letter written to Cooke (who was also on the Cavalry Head-quarter Staff, but not present) by Garnett in 1868. Garnett's letter, the original of which Cooke returned to him and which, later on, he gave to his life-long friend, Joseph Bryan, President of this Society, is even more touching in its boyish grief, than the page from the "practiced" pen of the accomplished man-of-letters. "Every-one of us," he ends, "was in tears. We had lost our father, our brother, our friend, our beloved General."

On Stuart's death, Garnett's commission as "A. D. C." lapsed, but he was immediately re-commissioned first-lieutenant of cavalry in the "Provisional Army of the Confederate States" and assigned to the staff of Major-General William H. F. Lee, with whom he served during the rest of that wondrous campaign of '64, reckoned by competent military critics as the greatest that Lee ever waged.

Early in the brief, but tragic, campaign of '65, he was promoted Captain and transferred, as "Assistant-Adjutant-General," to the Staff of Brigadier William P. Roberts of North Carolina, an enterprising and daring young cavalry officer, under whom he served until the "Surrender" at Appomattox C. H.

This ended his active career as a soldier, but a soldier in heart and in outward bearing he remained to the end. His martial port, his rather swarthy complexion, inherited, no doubt, from his Spanish ancestry, his firm-set jaw, which not even the heavy beard could conceal, his quick, decisive, tread and ringing voice, all proclaimed him a veteran even to the most careless eye. In truth, t'was in the blood. His mother's Castilian ancestors had been soldiers in Spain, while on his father's side his kinsmen had won distinction in every war waged since the settlement of the Colony—in the French and Indian wars, in the Revolution, in the War of 1812, and in Mexico. Above all, he was proud to remember that in the great struggle in which he himself had borne honorable part, the name of these kinsmen had been legion—all capable and valorous soldiers—not least among them, his close cousins, General Robert Selden Garnett, who yielded up his life in the

very first year of the war at Carrick's Ford, and General Richard Brooke Garnett, who fell at the head of his brigade in Pickett's immortal charge on the third day at "Gettysburg."

Yet, however martial in outward seeming, Garnett himself was, in reality, one of the gentlest, the most gracious, and most lovable of men, and though God had given him the heart of a lion, He had also given him the heart of a little child.

In the autumn of 1865, scraping together such meagre funds as his immediate family could give him, he entered the Law School of the University of Virginia. Sprung as well from a long line of jurists and statesmen, as of soldiers, it was only natural that he should turn to the law as a profession. But, beyond that, it is certain that he was influenced in his choice by the advice of his brother, between whom and himself there existed a singularly deep devotion. This brother, James Mercer Garnett, who had taken a brilliant M. A. degree at the University, had at the outbreak of the war, enlisted as a private soldier in the famous "Rockbridge Battery," and, rising to the grade of Captain of Artillery in '62, had served gallantly as Divisional Ordnance Officer on the staff of the lamented Rodes, and, after the heroic death of that officer at Winchester in September '64, on the staff of Major-General Bryan Grimes to the end. James Garnett, in obedience to his scholarly instincts, having resolved in '65 to make teaching his life-work, had decided to re-enter the University (in which, later on, he was destined to become full professor) as a simple "Licentiate in Ancient Languages," and we may be sure that this decision had much to do with solving "The".'s knotty problem as to his own future profession.

And, just here, it is not only pertinent, but, indeed, necessary, even in so slight a sketch as this, that we should pause and consider the unique conditions that existed at the University during the two sessions ('65-'66 and '66-'67), when Garnett was attending lectures there in the Law School

To essay this may seem to some an irrelevant excursus, but this is far from true We must know something of his environment during those years that ushered in his formal manhood, if we would know the man himself.

As the conditions that existed were unique, equally unique was the "atmosphere" they created—an "atmosphere" which the youthful student drank in with full lungs and which inspired in him those lofty ideals as to the conduct of life that were to inform well-nigh every act and utterance of his maturer years. Never before and never since have there been two such sessions in the history of the great institution, which is the pride of the commonwealth and of the whole South. It was a veritable era of "plain living and high thinking." The state, harried by four years of devastating war, lay prostrate and could extend but meagre help to "the child of Jefferson's old age." Everywhere were the outward signs of what is called "poverty," but it was the "poverty," which the great Greek tragedian, in a well-known fragment, calls "the stern parent who breeds the more strenuous sons, better fitted for the strife of life." Beside such "poverty"—the "*pauperies nitida*" of the Roman poet—the smug luxury of the rich foundations of this commercial age seems mean and tawdry.

Never was there gathered within "the well-remembered gates of Alma Mater" such a band of determined students, a very large proportion of them, though young in years, veterans of Lee's army, who every day went to class in their faded old uniforms, making merry over the silly order of the military satrap who at the time reigned over "District No. 1" (as "the Mother of Presidents" was then designated), requiring them (and all other old soldiers) to cover carefully the military buttons on their "fighting jackets." Richard Coeur de Lion was still "in every bush!" No doubt, the "District Commander" (they soliloquized) was an ass, to descend to such pettiness—but let it go!—as for themselves, they had no time to give to him and his covering of buttons.

The perils and privations they had undergone had sobered them beyond their years, yet, withal, they were a cheerful set, full of health and vigor (save in a few cases) and touched with a natural exaltation at the thought that they had done their duty as good soldiers (as was attested by the many honorable wounds they could count among them), that they had stuck to "Ole Mars' Robert" to the last and "seen the thing through;"

and now here they were, safe and sound, with still a fighting chance to retrieve, in some measure, the educational sacrifices that they had cheerfully made for hearth and home and country.

Optimism disdained to "consider too curiously" the very palpable "*res angusta.*" They wanted so little, that they felt that they still had much. Even if things were ill to-day, it should not be so to-morrow. Hadn't Horace said the identical, thing nearly two thousand years ago?

* * * Non, si male nunc, et olim
Sic erit.

And, so, they buckled afresh to their tasks with hearts as high as when they charged with Stuart at Aldie or went up the slopes of "Cemetery Ridge."

Never before was the tie so close between professors and students, for it was the tie of comradeship, than which none on earth is stronger. The professorial staff was, indeed, small, but it was of the first order. Many of its members had been trained in the best universities at home and abroad, and, fired by unselfish devotion to their state and a proper pride in their calling, they gave without stint the best that was in them to their pupils, quite content to share the common lack and to labor for the most meagre stipend.

Some changes had, indeed, come about in the personnel of the Faculty since the University had practically closed its doors in '62 and been turned into a hospital, but they were not many.

Albert Taylor Bledsoe, Professor of Mathematics (who had been at West Point with Jefferson Davis and been appointed by him, at the outbreak of hostilities, Assistant Secretary of War) had, it is true, resigned his chair and gone his way to Baltimore to edit the "Southern Review" and to write his famous book, "Is Davis a Traitor?," which carried consternation into the ranks of Radical demagogues, who had been clamoring for President Davis's blood, and which, by its inexorable logic and wealth of constitutional learning, drove the reluctant law-officers of the Government to advise the dismissal of the indictments against the Confederate Executive. Mr. Davis was never tried, because the Federal Government was afraid to try him.

But Bledsoe's chair had been taken by Colonel Charles Scott Venable, a brilliant mathematician trained in Germany, whose martial face and figure were familiar on every battle-field to old soldiers, who knew him as one of Lee's most alert and daring staff-officers.

Lewis Minor Coleman, Professor of Latin (the gentle scholar, whom some of us (the lingering few) still hold fast in our "heart of heart") had fallen mortally wounded amid his blackened guns in the moment of victory on the snow-clad heights of "Fredericksburg," lieutenant-colonel of the "First Virginia Artillery"—but in his place came in '66 William E. Peters (also trained in Germany), who, as colonel of the 21st Virginia Cavalry, had fallen desperately wounded in the fierce cavalry combat at "Moorefield" and been left for dead on that sanguinary field.

Yet another there is of these "fighting professors," who should find mention here—Basil L. Gildersleeve, now of the "Johns Hopkins University," the greatest "Grecian" of our time and one of the greatest scholars of any time—long since so recognized both in Germany and in England—who, still limping heavily from the grievous wound, received in "the Valley" while serving on John B. Gordon's staff, might be seen daily making his way to his lecture-room, where he expounded more brilliantly than ever to his eager class, out of his own experiences in the field, the varying fortunes of the Peloponnesian War, as set down in the matchless pages of Thucydides, elucidating many a puzzling bit of strategy by apt illustrations drawn from the recent contest, in which professor and pupils had alike borne honorable part as tried comrades. Not seldom, too, would this great scholar relax for a brief space his inexorable syntactical "grilling" and enliven the close of the lecture-hour by reading aloud (the reading punctured by tumultuous applause) his own exquisite and inspiriting translations of the marching-songs of Tyrtaeus, the rush of whose swift anapests recalled to his delighted hearers the lilt of their own war-songs, which they had sung it seemed but yesterday to the rhythmic beat of tramping feet, as they swung down the "Valley Pike" under "Old Stonewall."

Others among the instructors had also served their state in arms, but we may not pause longer to make mention of them.

In the law-class with Garnett, what a bede-roll, had we but time to call it!

John W. Daniel, still on his crutches (as he was to the last day of his brilliant career) from the frightful wound he had received at the "Wilderness" in '64, and Thomas S. Martin, who, too young to enter the army until the last year of the war, had yet seen active service in the Cadet Corps of the "Virginia Military Institute," sat beside him on the rude wooden benches—both of them destined to represent Virginia for many years in the Senate of the United States. There too, of scarcely less note in after years, sat the brilliant Upshur Dennis of Maryland, Lunsford Lomax Lewis of Rockingham (afterwards on the Bench of the Supreme Court of Virginia), and Edward Christian Minor, who had lost his arm in a Cavalry skirmish at Luray in "the Valley"—all destined to become judges of note, who did honor to the ermine.

Other future judges there were among these class-mates of Garnett's (who himself became judge), and, in addition, a surprising number of men who in after years attained notable distinction in their profession-among them—William H. White, who, be it noted, had taken part as a "V. M. I." cadet in the thrice-glorious battle of "Newmarket") and who became, later on, Garnett's law-partner in a firm whose high reputation extended far beyond the boundaries of their native state.

One cannot resist the temptation to set down here that his most intimate friend (not however in the Law School) was the late Joseph Bryan (so long the beloved President of this Society), his old chum at the "Episcopal High School," who had been twice wounded while serving as a simple trooper under the dashing Mosby. Another of these intimates (also in the "Academic Department") was the lovable and talented Frank Preston of Lexington, who, like Minor, had lost an arm in battle ("brave old Frank with the empty sleeve!") and who, after a brilliant record for headlong valor in the field, and an equally brilliant record for exquisite scholarship in the universities at home and in Germany, was struck down by fell disease in the full flush of his young manhood.

Was there ever a nobler, a more inspiring, chapter in the educational history of any people! It is a chapter unwritten before, so far as is known to us, and written here only in part. But, such as it is, we hold that it finds a fitting place in the proceedings of this Society, whose aim and purpose it is to preserve and transmit to posterity the veracious record of Virginia's glory, not alone in Colonial and Revolutionary times, but down through all the centuries, culminating in those heroic days of '61-'65, when our Mother attained what future ages will haply hold the supreme height of her great renown.

In 1867, Garnett took his B. L. degree and "offered for practice," as the saying used to be, in Warrenton, Virginia, meanwhile supporting himself, until the coveted clients should come, by "taking classes" in a private school. As nearly the whole adult population of Warrenton, at the time, consisted of lawyers, and as there was but a limited number of clients, Garnett in 1869 left that charming town (which has preserved more of the fine old distinctive traditions of ante-bellum days than any place known to us) and moved to Norfolk, but in the same year began practice in the near-by town of Suffolk. His practice was good and remunerative from the start, and his personal popularity such, that in 1870 he was elected "County Judge" of Nansemond. This office he held for three years, when he voluntarily relinquished it in 1873 and returned to Norfolk, where he formed a partnership with the brilliant William H. White, now "President of the Richmond, Fredricksburg & Potomac Railroad." There he continued in active practice until his death.

Inadequate as is this sketch, it would be still more imperfect, did we fail to make mention of the absorbing interest that he took in all "Confederate activities." As is well known, the prime purposes of these Confederate organizations were (and are) to render substantial help to such old comrades as, incapacitated by disease or wounds, were unable to "make a living;" next, to "keep the record straight" by driving out of the public-schools the text-books dealing with the war, which at that time were crammed with the most brazen perversions of historical truth; and, lastly, to foster old ties of comradeship by monthly meetings of the local "camps" (as they are called)

and by "Grand Reunions," annually, of a certain number of delegates from these local organizations.

To a man of his warm and generous temperament, who, in addition, disdained to the last to be "reconstructed," these activities appealed irresistibly, and he threw himself into them with an ardor characteristic of the man. At all the great "Reunions", both of the "Grand Camp of Virginia" and of the "United Confederate Veterans," his was always a prominent figure. He especially delighted in the "Re-Unions of the Cavalry Corps of the Army of Northern Virginia," and would lay aside his business and travel many miles to attend them. As a staff-officer of Stuart's, he knew personally all the officers and well-nigh all the men of that immortal band of "Rough Riders." And if he delighted to come, his comrades of all arms of the service were ten-fold more delighted to welcome him. He had a gracious heartiness of manner, with never a touch of condescension to the humblest of them, that made them "swear by him." He was always "Captain The.," or, oftener, "Old The.", to them, while his own affectionate greeting of these old comrades leapt from his eyes ere the lips could form the words. Not only was he one of the simplest and most genial of men, but he was possessed of a marvelous memory as to intimate incidents of the past events in which they had all shared. Besides, he was an admirable *raconteur*, modest as to the part that he himself had played, but ever enthusiastic in his generous praise of those—no matter whether officer or private—who had proved themselves good soldiers in the brave old days they had met to recall.

In the great organization, known as the "United Confederate Veterans" (which, let us thank God, unlike certain other organizations elsewhere, has kept itself, thus far, uncontaminated by politics), honor after honor came to him—unsolicited, we need not say. In 1900, he was placed in command of the first Brigade of the "Virginia Division," with the rank of Brigadier-General; in 1906, he was promoted to the command of the "Virginia Division," with the rank of Major-General; and in 1912, was still further promoted to command the "Department of Virginia," with the rank of Lieutenant-General. It may have

been, as some of us old soldiers have always thought, ill-advised on the part of the organization to have created such high-sounding military titles, but, in any event, that such posts of dignity and responsibility should have been accorded him, evidences the great regard and affection in which he was held by these old comrades, who had seen him tested in the actual dust and sweat of battle.

Other honors of a different kind also came to him as the years went by. He was made Trustee (as we have seen) of his old school, and also of the "Virginia Theological Seminary"; a member of the (Virginia) "State Library Board," and was elected into the "Alpha Chapter" (at William and Mary College) of "Phi Beta Kappa."

So busy was his life as a lawyer in active practice, that the literary output he has left behind him is meagre, but he was an eloquent and persuasive speaker and his oration pronounced at the unveiling of the equestrian statue of his great chief at Richmond was of very high order of merit both from a military and literary point of view. This was expanded later into a more elaborate monograph and published in New York in 1907.

He was, of course, a member of the "Virginia" and also of the "American" "Bar Associations."

On April 27th, 1915, he passed away in the midst of his family, who simply adored him, mourned in no common measure by his community, his state that he loved so passionately, and by countless friends and comrades throughout the whole country.

By right of birth, he had inherited the highest and best traditions of Virginia's "Golden Age," and he never once, from youth to gracious old age, forgot the "*noblesse oblige*" of his blood.

Three great influences shaped his career—his experiences in the field—the high and heroic "atmosphere" of his college life, and, above all, his unquestioning Christian faith. Of the first two of these have we spoken. Of the third, abashed in spirit, we dare not speak at all.

But fortunately there is one—his old comrade, his old pastor, his loyal kinsman—who can on this point speak with "authority."

In a notice of his death, which appeared anonymously in the "Southern Churchman" of June 19, 1915, though known to be written by his life-long friend, Bishop Beverley Dandridge Tucker, of the Diocese of Southern Virginia—a notice of singular beauty and power—occur these closing words, which may fitly form the conclusion of this halting tribute to this noble gentleman:

"Back of all that he was and all that he did was the strength and the inspiration which come only from communion with God. He served the Lord Christ with the same simplicity and the same whole-heartedness with which he had served his State. He walked humbly with God—and he is not (that is, not here on earth), because God took him. His memory and the example of his life abide, and are a part of the heritage which comes to Virginia from a long line of true and chivalric sons."

Turning to the death-roll of our "Annual Members," those of us who are citizens of Richmond, cannot fail to mark with poignant sorrow how many of our towns-people, knit to us by ties of long personal association, are included in the dread list—of three of whom we can make but bare mention for lack of specific information: Mrs. F. M. Boykin, a gracious woman of high intelligence, well-known both in society and in the humbler circle of the hapless poor, who will keenly miss the generous largess of her silent benefactions; the amiable and engaging L. R. Warren; and the learned and accomplished specialist, Dr. John F. Winn.

Three others there are in the list, who to the very end of their strenuous careers held so commanding a position in the financial, industrial, and social life of the city, and who were ever such potent factors in its moral and economic development, that, even if no printed memorial were left of them, a great tradition of their forceful personalities and of their splendid services would be certain to endure long after most of us shall resolve into a mere handful of dust.

But, as you all know, such printed memorials do exist, and that too in great volume, written by sympathetic and competent hands, and it would be, indeed, like gilding refined gold or painting the lily for us to attempt to add aught to the just

eulogies pronounced by them upon these dear friends in the first poignancy of the city's grief.

Yet, passing over, as being thus familiar to most of you, the details of their varied activities, it may, perhaps, be allowed us to set down in these "Minutes" a few bald facts in their respective careers and to add some not impertinent reminiscences drawn from long and intimate friendship with these illustrious citizens.

First, in order of their "passing," is our old friend, MAJOR JOHN PATTESON BRANCH.

He was born in Petersburg, Virginia, December 9th, 1830, son of Thomas Branch and of Sarah Pride Read, his wife, and seventh in descent from Christopher Branch and Mary, his wife, who migrated to Virginia in the good ship, "London Merchant," in 1619-20. You will find the story of his thrifty, God-fearing, forebears for well-nigh three centuries all set down in the delightful pages of the volume entitled "*Branchiana*," compiled by his great-nephew, James Branch Cabell, who enjoys the distinction, well-nigh unique in letters, of being at once a brilliant novelist and an accurate, painstaking, genealogist.

He received a sound education from a sound old schoolmaster (who would have been horrified, if designated by the hideous name of "*educator*"), but he had always been a delicate lad, and, suffering a "break-down" just at the time when he should have entered Randolph-Macon College (of which institution he was, in after years, to become a "Trustee," LL.D., and most munificent benefactor), he entered the counting-house of his father, who was both commission-merchant and banker, besides being Mayor of the staunch little town on the Appomattox.

There he remained until the storm of war broke in April, 1861, when he at once enlisted in the "44th Virginia Battalion" of infantry, commanded by the gallant Fletcher Archer, who had won laurels in Mexico as a valorous youth, and who was again to prove himself an admirable soldier despite his years.

In this command, young Branch rose to be first-lieutenant, but it was not long before his characteristic energy, native shrewdness and fine administrative ability attracted the favor-

able notice of his superiors, and he was soon transferred, with added rank, to the Quarter-Master Department, where he rendered most valuable and efficient service to the end.

At the close of the war, he rejoined his father in business and in banking in Petersburg, and in 1871 accompanied him to this city, whither the elder Branch had determined to transfer his rapidly expanding mercantile and banking interests. In that year, Thomas Branch established here the "Merchants' National Bank," and, on his death in 1881, the son succeeded him.

Of his commercial and financial successes, solid and brilliant as they were, we do not propose to speak, nor yet of his religious and philanthropic activities. As already indicated, these have been set down at length elsewhere by those better equipped for the pious task than we can pretend to be. They have told us in specific detail of his splendid benefactions to the poor, to the church, to education, and of his equally splendid achievements in finance—and, as well, of his commanding energy and unerring sagacity in shaping and guiding to full fruition numberless activities looking to the social betterment of his fellow-men.

For ourselves, we love best to think of him (and, in the main, to speak of him) simply as of an old friend, whom we knew long and well, in days of sunshine and of storm—one who is forever associated in heart and brain with others of his time, whose forms and faces we shall see no more save in happy dreams.

Of the few personal recollections here offered, some of them, perchance, may seem so trivial as to border on flippancy, but they are none the less characteristic, and find their place in any veracious picture of the man as he moved among us.

What struck one as especially distinctive of the man was his immense capacity for mastering the details of any subject that interested him. Like all "born financiers," he possessed quick imagination and, after mastering the details, he intuitively saw the meaning hidden beneath the mass of minutiae, and acted promptly, while other men, seeing nothing, dallied and doubted. He not only had this capacity, but he had a distinct fondness for details, and that, too, quite as much in matters of purely personal import as in financial problems. He thought with Pope that "the proper study of mankind is man," and often

in conversation he would propound about men and about incidents innumerable questions that betokened, no doubt, to many merely an idle curiosity. He was quite aware of what was thought. Some of us, who knew him well enough to "chaff" him, would sometimes laughingly say to him that his inquisitiveness was as great as his acquisitiveness, and he would laugh back and accept the friendly quip with great good humor. But, in truth, it was no idle curiosity. Oftener than not, he was weighing in his mind whether some plausible appeal made to his generosity was really a deserving one, and he was thus seeking by what old Polonius calls "assays of bias" to resolve his doubt.

In matters of opinion he was one of the most tolerant of men. Yet he held most decided views on all "burning questions" that arose in community, state or nation, and had a most original and incisive manner of stating what he held to be the truth in the matter. Nor was he ever backward in giving utterance to his convictions. He practiced with fearless vigor what Archbishop Whately preached: "It is not enough to believe what you maintain. You must maintain what you believe, and maintain it because you believe it."

But opposition excited not a scintilla of resentment in his bosom, and, if the arguments adduced by those who held different views seemed sound to him, he was never ashamed to change his mind.

Yet, in the main, like most men who "do their own thinking," as the homely phrase hath it, he was tenacious of opinion. He was absolutely independent of judgement in the bestowal of his charities, great and small. He gave, not because other people gave, or because other people thought that he ought to give. He investigated personally the cases of his smaller charities, whenever possible, and his munificent benefactions were the result of most careful pondering. But it must be added that, nine times out of ten, he decided that he ought to give, and he gave, then, with a lavish hand.

Like most men of original mind, he cared little for "precedent" or any so-called "authority"—always excepting in matters of religion. There, as has already been set down, he held the Bible, from cover to cover, to be the inspired word of God

and he accepted it, from first line to last, with the meek submission of a little child and a simple faith that knew no turning.

In social life, he was one of the most genial and kindly and companionable of men. He belonged to all the clubs, but he very rarely went to them. He was at his best in his own home, where he constantly dispensed a gracious and profuse hospitality. He was an admirable talker, his conversation being marked by great shrewdness of observation dashed with humor. He had travelled extensively in Europe at various times—his family, indeed, lived in Paris for several years—and his original observations on the life of the "old world" were both instructive and amusing.

Of his domestic life, this is not the place to speak beyond the barest allusion. In 1863, in the midst of the war, he had married Miss Mary Louise Kerr in Petersburg. It was in all respects an ideal union, and the death of this accomlished woman in 1896, after thirty-three years of unclouded happiness to both, was a blow from which he never altogether recovered. It was in her memory that, in after years, he erected a magnificent "dormitory" at Randolph-Macon College. Another one he, later on, erected in memory of his father, whom he greatly revered.

To his children he was the fondest, the most indulgent, of fathers, and these children, in turn, encompassed him, in the long widowed years, with such sweet previsions, born of responsive devotion, as made his old age an unusually bright and happy one.

On the evening of February 2nd, 1915, surrounded by these sorrowing children (all save one, who was far away overseas) and by others of his immediate family, in the eighty-fifth year of his age, yet with the fresh, unquestioning, faith of a little child, he "crossed the bar" and, with no shadow of misgiving, went to "meet his Pilot face to face."

On the evening following the death of Major Branch, Richmond was again called upon to mourn the "passing" of a man, whose exceptional abilities had long assured him high place among the foremost of her "captains of industry," while his

delightful personality had caused him to be universally regarded as one of the chief ornaments of her society.

Like Major Branch, he had passed the limit of four-score, and, like him, he had preserved unimpaired, long after he had passed that limit, the vigor of his intellect and a freshness of feeling that we rarely associate with old age.

This man was ALEXANDER CAMERON, who died on the evening of February 3rd, 1915, in the 83rd year of his age.

Of him, it is but seemly that some mention should be found in the "Minutes" of this Society, prefacing that we shall, in the main, speak only of his personal characteristics, touching but in briefest fashion on the phenomenal industry, capacity and boldness in business affairs, which enabled him, with no adventitious aids, to achieve a great fortune that ran into the millions.

Briefly:

Alexander Cameron, son of Alexander Cameron, was born November 1st, 1832, at Granton, a small Highland village of Invernesshire, on the pleasant river Spey. All his life he was proud of being "an Inverness man," and, had he lived but a few months longer, he had been made prouder still, because of the splendid exploits of the men of Inverness at Ypres and Loos.

On the death of his father, he, then but thirteen years of age, came to Virginia with his mother, who settled in Petersburg. After brief schooling, he began his business life with Mr. David Dunlop; later on, securing a position with Mr. Edmund Harrison Osborne. These two, at the time, ranked chief among the "tobacco magnates" of the "Cockade City," and under them he acquired minute and thorough knowledge of the mysteries attending the manipulation of the "divine weed" before it was ready for the marts of the old world.

Had either of these conservative old "manufacturers" been told that their young assistant, always so pleasant-tempered, alert, and dependable, would one day establish (in conjunction with his two brothers) a business destined to send its "output" to the four quarters of the globe, and that, in time, he would think in millions where they had thought in thousands, they would have deemed the prophet daft. Yet that was just what

fortune (who "truckles to the bold alone") had in store for these three keen-eyed and quick-witted young "Inverness men," each one of whom was endowed with the "grit," enterprise and "hard Scotch sense," so signally characteristic of the race from which they sprung. It is pleasant to add that one of these old-fashioned "magnates" lived to see it, and, without a scintilla of envy, was tremendously proud of his pupil's dazzling achievements.

From the very start, the business established by the three brothers prospered, and, the war coming on, they, in addition, engaged in "blockade-running" and there, too, scored an enormous success. You must go to the voluminous notices, that appeared in the press throughout the whole country at the time of Alexander Cameron's death, if you care to follow the history and titles of the firms established in various cities in this country and in Australia by these brothers, as their business expanded in magnitude.

For the present purpose, it is enough to say that in 1868, Alexander Cameron left Petersburg, came to Richmond (just as Major Branch was to do three years later), and established here branch factories, under the title of "Alexander Cameron & Co." (All of these businesses were, some ten or twelve years ago, sold to the "British-American Tobacco Company.")

He was then a little over five-and-thirty years old, and, as some of you, no doubt, remember, a singularly handsome man, as he was, indeed, to the day of his death. From the first, he scored quite as marked a success in society, as he had done in business. Small wonder, for he was possessed of all the qualities that make a man popular alike with men and women. He was young, handsome, rich, was absolutely "independent" and despised a snob, while his whole face and bearing were instinct with the "*joie de vivre.*"

Then came the sudden crowning happiness of his life, which gave society a distinct "sensation." Perhaps (we speak with caution for obvious reasons), the "reigning belle" of Richmond at that time was Miss Mary Haxall, daughter of R. Barton Haxall, esq., of this city. She had great beauty, high birth, brilliant wit, and would some day have a comfortable fortune. Suitors were many, but she seemed in no hurry to choose.

Then, suddenly, in rode our handsome Scot, like another bold "Young Lochinvar," and carried off the brilliant maid, while many an amazed swain stood "dangling his bonnet and plume." Later on, her equally brilliant and beautiful sister married Captain Robert E. Lee, youngest son of our great Confederate chieftain.

It was a happy union, blessed with numerous children, and their home here, to the day of his death (which preceeded hers by but little over half a year), was a recognized social centre, where the cleverest men and most accomplished women of the day gathered around the witty hostess and hospitable master of the house with delightful informality, everybody feeling sure of hearty and gracious welcome.

One pauses, from time to time, to consider whether one is merely a "*temporis acti laudator*," when he finds, or fancies that he finds, lacking in the society of to-day the indefinable charm that permeated that simple and kindly society of some thirty or forty years ago. At any rate, if memory may be counted on at all, the society that gathered so often in the drawing-rooms of the Camerons at the time, and that kept the ball flying to and fro with nimble wit and flashing repartee, was in no wise akin to the "Society" satirized by Byron in "Don Juan" as "a polished horde" composed of "bores and bored."

In these gatherings, the brilliant hostess reigned supreme, and we were all proud to acknowledge her undisputed sovereignty.

But there were other gatherings under that hospitable roof-tree, when the master of the house was the central figure, as a sort of "*Epularum arbiter*," and when all of us, for a single night, at least, resolved ourselves into a band of "brither Scots" and joined him, in song and in impromptu speech, in celebrating the historic glories of the "Land o' Cakes."

We have already adverted to the fact that he was intensely proud (always in his modest way) of being an "Inverness man." He was equally proud that he belonged to the clan of which "Lochiel" was the head, and a portrait of this chief (then Colonel Donald Cameron of Achnacarry), Lieutenant-Colonel of the "Cameron Highlanders," always hung in the hall of his town-house.

Devoted son as he was of the state of his adoption and ever ready by purse and brain to further her interests, like Burns, his "heart" was "in the Highlands," and he loved every inch of "Auld Scotia's" bonnie heather "frae Maidenkirk to Johnie Groat's."

Now, in the years we are speaking of, some of his Scotch friends never failed to send him annually a munificent present of Scotch pheasants, and thus every year occurred what was reckoned *the* social event of the season (so far as "mere man" was concerned), known in society as "Cameron's Pheasant Supper." The Governor, judges of the Supreme Court, lawyers, doctors, bankers, business men, were all hospitably bidden, and no man was ever known to decline.

Cameron, always the soul of hospitality, was in his element. His genial temper that shone in his face and sounded in the deepening burr of his voice (which distinctive mark of a Hie'-lander, by the way, he never lost), his manifest eagerness to make everyone happy—all combined to render these gatherings the delight of his guests.

The pheasants (which in good old Scotch fashion were always brought in "in their feathers") were "high" and "a morsel fit for the gods" while the "Wickham Madeira of '30" (which had "doubled the Cape") was worthy accompaniment, and there was great jollity and many a merry quip and much harmless laughter. It was not so far back in the past, as men count time, and yet, it sometimes seems a thousand years ago. It was, at any rate, a time when gentlemen had not been reduced to the pass of having their "daily walk" *mapp-ed* out for them by legislative enactment and when such phrases as "moral uplift," "service," "self-consecration," and "a quickening of the public conscience" ("soiled with all ignoble use," as Tennyson sang of the "name of gentleman") had not yet attained their rubricated pre-eminence in the Liturgy of Cant.

Mark you, there was no sort of excess. Gentlemen simply clung to their old-fashioned notions as to the liberty of the individual and did not think that a man was necessarily going straight to perdition if he offered a gentleman a glass of wine at his board—just as Washington and the Lees and John Mar-

shall and all the other great Virginians had been wont to do, when Virginia guided the destinies of the nation.

Even so slight a sketch as this would fall far short of truthful delineation, if it did not emphasize the fearless candor, simplicity and modesty of the man. He despised shams of every sort and could be very direct of speech whenever they came into evidence, no matter how plausible the guise. On the other hand, his unaffected modesty touching his own achievements was immensely attractive. He had started at the foot of the ladder, and by sheer "grit," intelligence and industry had mounted to the top, and when, in time, he had reached what to so many others has proved a dizzy height that made them "lose their heads," he lost neither head nor balance, but remained the same quiet, kindly, unostentatious gentleman that he had ever been.

Still another trait that made him most lovable was his great kindness to young men, who were striving to "make their way in the world." This man, rich in experience, was never too busy to listen to their troubles or perplexities, to give them freely of his counsel, and, if needs be, of material help.

He and his wife were keen travellers—in Europe and in the East—had,both,been "presented at Court" in England, and had made many delightful friends all over the world. Even after he was four-score, he preserved, as has been hinted above, to a most remarkable degree a fresh and eager interest in men and in events, and his virile bearing and conversation no whit suggested the veteran lagging superfluous on the stage.

But the lethal stroke was destined soon to fall.

In June of last year, at his beautiful country-place in Orange County, "Cameron Lodge," whither he had gone, as usual, for the summer months, he suffered his first stroke of paralysis. He recovered somewhat and took up again, to a certain extent, his interests in life. But, in reality, he was never the same man again.

He was brought to his town-house in Richmond early in the autumn, where he later suffered a second stroke, and his family gathered about him knew that the end was not far off. Yet so vigorous was his constitution, that he lived on for several months. In January of this year, he suffered the third and fatal stroke,

which rendered him an easy prey to pneumonia, which fell disease carried him off on the evening of February 3rd. It is no mean consolation to his old friends to know that the end was absolutely free of pain.

In the contemplation of a life so rich in achievement, so manly, candid and modest, so rooted in the precepts of the "Golden Rule," and, withal, so kindly and beneficent to his fellows, one can surely say of him, as Carlyle said of Walter Scott, "When he departed, he took a Man's life with him."

Of this notable trio of "Captains of industry" and of finance—three of the greatest that have ever adorned the annals of Richmond—by far the youngest was JAMES N. BOYD. Indeed, he was not yet born when Branch and Cameron were young men, who had already begun their successful careers.

As his most salient characteristic was innate sincerity, it is specially seemly that the events of his busy life should be set down with like simplicity.

JAMES NALLE BOYD, son of John W. Boyd and of his wife, Virginia Nalle, also grandson of the Rev'd John H. Boyd, of Scotch ancestry, was born in this city, May 28th, 1850. He was, thus, not quite eleven years old when the great "War Between the States" began. Yet, his was the marvellous good fortune, through an alert and daring spirit, to share, in some measure, in the great events that constitute Virginia's paramount claim to be counted among the heroic peoples of the earth.

In May, 1864, when Sheridan's enterprising horsemen sought to force the inner line of fortifications of this city on the "Brook Road," the high-spirited lad quietly slipped away from home and stood in the trenches, shoulder to shoulder, musket in hand, with the local battalion that behaved with great firmness under attack and finally balked the ambitious attempt of Grant's alert chief of cavalry.

When Richmond was evacuated, April 2nd, 1865, not yet fifteen years of age, he slipped away again, and, joining a veteran infantry regiment, shared with it the hardships, and participated in the actions in which it was engaged, during the tragic "Retreat," which culminated in "the Surrender" at Appomattox C. H.

It was foreign to his modest nature to be proud of anything, but this was the one thing in his life of which he was unquestionably proud in his quiet fashion, and he remained an ardent "Confederate" down to the day of his death.

When, after "the Surrender," he made his toilsome way (afoot and in casual freight-cars) back to Richmond, he found the city (at least, the business portion of it) a mass of smouldering ashes and, at the same time, found himself, as most of us did, without a single penny in his pocket.

But he was a sturdy, well-set-up, lad, older than his years, with frank, open, manners (as he was to the last), had been well grounded in "the rudiments" by a thorough school-master of the fine, old-fashioned, type, and, above all, was endowed with the traditional Scotch common-sense and indomitable "grit," which came to him by inheritance.

To all such, the wide world over, poverty is a stimulus and no handicap.

He almost at once secured a subordinate position with the famous firm of Thomas & Oliver, at that time the recognized heads of the leaf-tobacco trade, and under them learned thoroughly the details of the business. In later years, thanks to this training, it was said of him by men who were "experts" themselves that he was the finest judge of leaf tobacco on "the Exchange."

It is not our purpose to follow minutely the successive stages of his wonderful business career. In the elaborate notices that appeared in the public press at the time of his death, you will find it all set out in detail—how, as this lad grew to manhood, he became, in time, head of a great "leaf-tobacco" house—President of one of the leading banks, not only of Richmond, but of the whole South—President of a powerful Trust Company—President of the "Tobacco Exchange"—recognized leader in the "Chamber of Commerce"—Director in many Corporations. All this, while a testimony to his thrift and sagacity, will inevitably, in time, sink into oblivion.

But there is one great tradition of him that shall endure.

Richmond is by no means a big city, as cities are rated in this twentieth century. Yet as Zaragossa (far smaller in popula-

tion than our own town) is reckoned "great" by lofty souls, who count self-abnegation and constancy and antique valor above multitudinous aggregations of brick and mortar, so, for the same reason, is Richmond's place assured among the "great" cities of the world. But her proud, defiant, port during four years of war, when she stood girdled by steel and fire—the antique patriotism that made her strong, at the last, to meet with unshaken front the very stroke of fate—this, noble and splendid as it is, is not her only claim to be reckoned "great."

When she fell well-nigh in throes of annihilation, another tragic blow was yet to smite her.

At the "Evacuation," a devastating conflagration swept over the proud capital and left the whole business section in hapless desolation.

As poets and historians will continue to celebrate her glories in war, so, we may rest sure, shall one day be told in all its noble austerity the wondrous story of her rehabilitation—her resurrection from the ashes of what seemed to the outside world irretrievable disaster.

It was done, not in a day nor in a year, nor was it done by any alien help. It took many days—nay, not a few years—but it was done, and supremely done, through the dogged industry and indomitable spirit of the very men who had hedged her round with stubborn steel during the driving storm of war.

Whenever that story is written, you will find the name of James Nalle Boyd conspicuous on every page.

This, we repeat, is the tradition of him that shall longest abide. It is not too much to say that from that pinched beginning until Richmond flowered out into a beauty and solid opulence that eclipsed all her former material glories, there was no undertaking, however large or small, looking to the moral or material advancement of his native town, in which this devoted son of hers did not do his full part in manly, wise and generous fashion.

There is no need to dwell in this presence on his engaging personality. Long shall we miss on our streets his handsome, leonine, face, his hearty, gracious, greeting, the engaging simplicity of his manner to gentle and simple alike. In all sorts

of charities and benevolent organizations, he ever took a most active and intelligent part. There was not one of them that did not lean on his wise counsels, and all men recognized that his was the open eye to discern clearly where aid should be promptly rendered, the open heart to sympathize, the open hand to give. Especially will he be long missed by the "Police" and the "Firemen's" "Benevolent Associations," to both of which he gave freely of his time and money.

He was equally generous and active in all Confederate organizations, and he literally fell "in harness" working for the success of the "Grand Re-union of United Confederate Veterans," that took place here last June. Night and day, though the mortal disease already held him in its fell grip, he remained at "Reunion Head-Quarters" arranging, as "Chairman of the Finance Committee," countless details for the comfort and entertainment of the coming veterans. But, alas! when the longed-for gala days came, and his old comrades marched with drum-corps and band and tattered, grimy, battle-flags within a stone's throw of his house, the shadow of death was hovering over him, and he could only send them (as he did) the blessing of a soldier, who was slowly passing over the river to the great bivouac "Beyond."

Of his religious life, we can only say simply that from boyhood on, through all the years of strenuous and varied activities, his whole being was saturated with unaffected piety. For twenty-six years he was a Vestryman of "All Saints' Church," and the "Resolutions" passed at his death by his colleagues portray with touching eloquence the beauty and steadfastness of his Christian faith.

After several months of suffering, which he bore with serene constancy and courage, came the fateful day, September 6th, 1915, when Death's bright angel placed within his dying hand (as Milton finely says in "Comus")

> That golden key,
> That opes the palace of Eternity.

'Tis a far cry, indeed, from the imperious activities of these three great capitalists to the scholarly investigations of the

expert genealogist and antiquarian, MR. LOTHROP WITHINGTON, whose tragic fate will long be mourned, not alone by members of this Society, but by many historical specialists both at home and abroad.

As he had lived most of his life in London since reaching manhood, most people conversant with his work thought him an Englishman; but such was not the fact. He was of pure, unhyphenated, American strain on both sides of his house and never gave up his American citizenship, though, as years went by, his devotion to his adopted home became well-nigh as intense as that of any Londoner "born within the sound of Bow bells."

Briefly, he was born January 31st, 1856, in the little village of Newbury, which lies contiguous to the ancient "home of the whalers," Newburyport, Massachusetts, and, as we have indicated above, came of undiluted New England stock. The love of letters was in his blood. His father, Nathan Noyes Withington, was a clever journalist, well-known through New England for his incisive editorials, while his grandfather, the Rev'd Leonard Withington, D. D., a graduate of Yale in the early years of the nineteenth century, was a scholarly divine of the old-fashioned type, who, in his long span of ninety-six years, wrote not a few books, chiefly polemic theology, which were, indeed, highly praised in the pages of the "*North American Review*," though it may well be doubted whether his "unorthodox" grandson ever found time to glance through any of them.

As a lad, young Withington went in and out of the offices of the "*Newburyport Herald*," which his father edited, learned to set type while still a school-boy, and, shortly after graduating from the "Putnam High School," secured, to his great delight, a position in the "Government Printing Office" at Washington. Here he worked hard, thriftily saving his salary, while living the life of a young Spartan, and was thus enabled, within a twelve month, to realize his dream of seeing the wonders of the Old World. He first went to Paris, where he seems to have lived for a full year, revelling in the galleries, libraries and theatres of that fascinating capital, meanwhile practicing his "prentice hand" in writing trenchant criticisms of all that he saw for the columns of the local paper in his native town.

From Paris, he, not unnaturally, drifted over to London, and though, for a time, he came back to his New England home, "the world's capital" (for so it is) had laid its nameless spell upon him, and in the early '80's back he went to what was practically his home to the last.

Apparently, the purpose had gradually been shaping itself in his mind to devote himself to specialistic historical study, and settling down in "Little Russell Street," under the very shadow of the British Museum, delving daily deeper and deeper into the only-partially explored mines of its incomparable MS. riches, that purpose soon became fixed, and it may be truly said that, at last, he had "found himself." His industry was prodigious, his *flair* in picking up obscure clues was almost unerring, and it was not long before he became known to a small band of fellow-craftsmen as a man who "knew his business." From specialistic historical study to genealogy it is but a step—indeed, the two are often so closely interwoven as to blend—and it was finally as an expert genealogist that he achieved what is likely to prove his most lasting claim to remembrance.

The historical work that he did was, it is true, recognized as admirable of its kind—an edition of the "*Chronicles*" that go under the name of "*Holinshed*"—and one or two Elizabethan monographs—but they were really never widely known and brought him no great reputation, and even less money, from the outside world.

But, on the other hand, he had won an assured place among the "elect" genealogists, who find their "happy hunting-ground" in "the Museum" and "Public Records Office" and "Somerset House," and, as his reputation grew, there came to him a numerous *clientèle* of well-to-do Americans of good family, who were very properly eager to have a trained expert fix with definitive exactness the degree of their kinship to traditional ancestors overseas. The work was to his taste and the fees highly remunerative.

Such was his position and the happy tenor of his life, when some twelve years ago, happening on a copy of our Magazine either in the British Museum or elsewhere, he was attracted by the careful work done by our Editor, and at once wrote,

offering to contribute to its pages. We could offer him no remuneration, but, like the true scholar that he was, he cared nothing for money, and from that time until his untimely end there is scarcely a number of our Magazine that is not enriched by some contribution from his generous pen.

Not only did he contribute during these years his delightful "*Gleanings from English Wills*," which have proved so attractive to our readers, but he transcribed with laborious exactness from the originals in the British Museum and elsewhere historical documents of grave import, of which some of the best-known historians had previously possessed but imperfect knowledge.

It would be idle for us to reiterate here what we have said in Report after Report during the past ten or twelve years touching the significant value of these "*Gleanings*." Not only do they shed instructive side-lights on the social life and economic development of the Colony, but they abound in precise biographical details that clear up many obscurities in the public and private lives of some of our foremost "Worthies" of the Seventeenth and Eighteenth centuries.

To recall to you but a few instances out of many—in the cases of the Royal governors, Captain Francis West, Sir John Harvey, Kemp, Digges, Nott and Dinwiddie—of "pious Mr. Whitaker," and that staunch Royalist, Rev'd Philip Mallory, "very diligent in the advancement of religion in this country" (to quote from the resolutions of the Assembly of 1660-61)—of the Virginia historical writers, William Strachey and William Bullock—of the barely-known "Councillors," George Minifie and William Tucker—of the dauntless "Physician-General of Virginia," Lawrence Bohune, whose dying utterances, as he fell mortally wounded on the deck of Captain Chester's ship in her action against two Spanish men-of-war in the West Indies (March, 1621), are fit match for those of that valorous old "sea-dog," Sir Richard Grenville of "the little *Revenge*," immortalized by Tennyson—of that "compleat sparkish Gentleman" (as Mr. Commissary Blair sneeringly called him) and dashing soldier, Colonel Daniel Parke, Jr., who for his headlong valor at "Blenheim" was singled out by Marlborough

(on whose staff he was a volunteer) to bear tidings of the "famous victory" to Her Majesty, Queen Anne, the latter, in recognition of the joyful news, giving him her portrait set in diamonds—in all of these instances (and we could multiply them), we are enabled through the precise details given in these "*Gleanings*" to fill-in with an assured hand much that was vague or blurred in the traditional portraiture of these "Worthies" and, in not a few cases, to reconcile apparent contradictions in their respective careers.

Of the "historical documents of grave import" which he transcribed for us, from time to time, and to which we have briefly adverted above, perhaps, the most significant was the "Report of the Surrender of Virginia to the Parliamentary Commissioners, March, 1651-52." Until it appeared in the pages of our Magazine (Vol. XI, pp. 32-41), it had never before been printed, except in "*Mercurius Politicus*" (No. 103, May 13th —May 20th, 1652), a contemporary news-sheet (now in the British Museum), which latter was evidently as unknown to historians as was the original in the State Paper Office. The consequence has been that they have written vaguely, when not altogether erroneously, of an event of prime importance in the history of the Colony. A careful reading of it proves, beyond peradventure, that not only has our own delightful old "*Beverley*" (London: 1705) blundered badly as to important details of the "Surrender," but that a greater than Beverley, Samuel R. Gardiner, in his well-known "*Commonwealth and Protectorate*," has gone still further astray.

Time would, indeed, fail us to enumerate fully and fairly all the kind and generous offices we owe to this most disinterested friend. But there is a special service of his, which, though mention of it has been made in previous Reports, should again be dwelt on in this slight memorial, as illustrating, perhaps, beyond his other services the almost unique generosity of the man.

In 1911, he ascertained in some way that this Society was most anxious to have transcribed by an expert, with view to publication in the Magazine, the "*Minutes of the Council and General Court*" of Virginia, the originals of which, as you all know, are in the "Congressional Library" at Washington.

As some few of you also know, the crabbed hand-writing and bewildering abbreviations employed by the various scribes who recorded these "*Minutes*," render them almost undecipherable except by a trained and highly intelligent expert. The employment of such an expert (as Mr. Withington well knew) was far beyond the reach of the slender purse of our association. At once, he volunteered to do the work himself, expressly stipulating that he was to receive no sort of remuneration. Nay, more than this did he do, later on. In the midst of this "labor of love," his own imperious engagements in London forbade his making his usual annual visit to America, at which time it was his custom to work hard over his self-imposed task. But not for a moment did he turn from his voluntary promise. He at once caused "photostatic" copies of large portions of the "*Minutes*" to be made at his own expense by experts in the "Congressional Library" and sent over to him. These he found time to decipher and forthwith despatched them to our Secretary. Even for this outlay out of his own pocket, he declined to be re-imbursed, laughingly putting aside the insistence of our Secretary and pretending with rare delicacy that it was a matter of trivial moment, which we knew that it was not.

In order to appreciate the full extent of this large-hearted generosity, you must bear in mind that he was, in the language of his craft, a "high-priced man," who could readily transmute every moment of his precious time into minted "coin of the realm."

His generosity was, indeed, so ready and persistent, that our Secretary, in a sort of comic dismay, was finally driven to confess that he was afraid to mention to him any rare historical document, of which he specially wished a copy, lest Withington should at once insist on sending it to the Society.

There can be no doubt, in truth, that this enthusiastic antiquarian, whose whole soul was in his chosen field, entertained a peculiar affection for the Society in whose behalf he had labored so long and so unselfishly. In fact, he came, in time, to consider himself a member of our regular staff.

Whenever he ran across the seas to have a glimpse of old scenes and old friends and near kinsmen, he always came to Richmond for a flying visit, spending nearly every moment of his time at the "Society House," where he was ever sure of cordial welcome. Small wonder, for he was a man of what our ancestors were wont to term "engaging manners," an "original" and incisive talker, who possessed the happy "Art of Putting Things," and might, in consequence, count on welcome wherever men of "light and leading" gathered for social converse.

He paid his last visit to us towards the end of April of this year, and was never in better spirits nor more enthusiastic as to his work (then in hand or already planned) for the coming years. He was carrying back to London with him a large portfolio of the "photostatic reproductions," already mentioned, which he was to decipher and soon send back to us. Other things of a like kind he characteristically proposed to do for the Society.

At the beginning of the next month, he set sail for England in the ill-fated "*Lusitania*," and on May 7th, he, along with other non-combatants, with helpless women and still more helpless children, was done to death by the stealthy hand of a miscreant, "whom 'twere gross flattery to name a coward." Whoever he may be, he and his fellow-miscreant, von Bissing, who murdered Edith Cavell, may for a few brief years flaunt upon their breast the "Iron Cross," bestowed by an approving Kaiser, but on the forehead of each stupid malefactor God Himself has stamped the "mark of Cain."

The last seen of Withington (according to a letter written by a fellow-passenger, Mr. Harold Boulton of London) was that, not taking time to secure a life-belt for himself, he was cheerily helping to put the women and children into the few boats that could be lowered. To alter Hamlet but a trifle, "Look here upon *this* picture, and on *that*!"

As men count years, Mr. Withington was not a young man, and yet, when we contemplate his amazing physical vitality, his intense alertness of mind, and the undimmed flame of his enthusiasm for his chosen work, we cannot choose but think of him as another "Lycidas" "dead ere his prime," whose un-

toward fate, closely akin to Withington's own, has been commemorated in one of the noblest threnodies of our English tongue. And while it is not vouchsafed to us to attain the lofty note that has immortalized that more famous Lycidas, "floating upon his watery bier, and weltering to the parching wind," it may yet be allowed us to attest here in humblest fashion and in homeliest sincerity, that, outside his immediate family and the small circle of his intimates, Lothrop Withington will nowhere be mourned more deeply and unaffectedly in death than in this "Old Dominion," for the perpetuation of whose historic glories he had in the fulness of life wrought so long and well.

Although this Report has already far transcended in volume the limits proposed, duty bids us pause to make mention, even though it must be in briefest fashion, of one, who for more than five-and-twenty years was an enthusiatic member of this Society—the distinguished Kentuckian, Lucas Brodhead, who was not only a "man of mark" in "the blue-grass region," but widely known throughout the Eastern states as "the prince of gentlemen horsemen."

He came of a long line of gallant men and high-bred women and, had he so minded, could, of right, have taken as his own the proud, yet homely, legend inscribed upon the family-vault of the Lords of Colchester—"All the men were brave, and all the women virtuous."

Lucas Brodhead, son of Lucas Brodhead and of his wife, Mary Cordelia Upshaw Price, was sixth in descent from Captain Daniel Brodhead (of the family of that ilk, created by James II Lords of the Manor of Monk Britton in Yorkshire), who came to America in 1664, as a "Captain of Musketeers," in Colonel Nickoll's expedition against the New Netherlands (See Mr. A. A. Bowmar's admirable article in the "*New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*," April, 1915).

Lucas Brodhead, the father of the subject of this sketch, migrated from Ulster County, New York, to Kentucky in 1820, and, settling at Frankfort, the capital, became, in time, one of the leading lawyers in the state.

Through his mother, Miss Price, young Brodhead was allied by blood to many of the oldest Virginia families, "gentry-folk," as they used to be called in the old days—for her mother was Hannah Upshaw of Essex County, daughter of that John Upshaw, whose name occurs so frequently in the "Journals of the House of Burgesses", and who was also one of the Signatories of the famous "Articles of the Westmoreland Association, drawn by Richard Henry Lee and presented by him to a meeting of restive patriots held at "Leedstown" in Westmoreland County, February 27th, 1766—the first public defiance in the Colonies of the odious "Stamp Act" and the first (scarcely-veiled) threat of separation from the mother-country—promulgated (you will observe) more than nine years before the apocryphal "Mecklenburg Declaration" in North Carolina, and more than ten years before the historic "Declaration of Independence" in Philadelphia. Well might Bancroft declare, without a shadow of exaggeration, "Virginia rang the alarm bell for the continent."

For the long line of Mr. Brodheads forebears, "officers and gentlemen" for generations, we must refer you to Mr. Bowmar's delightful article mentioned above, which is well worth careful reading.

Young Brodhead was fortunate in receiving, as a lad, a very thorough classical training, but, after a brief college-course, he entered upon a business career, in which he scored a very notable success. But, within a few years, he gave up "business" as we commonly understand the term, and undertook the more congenial task (indeed, the most congenial task to a true Kentuckian) of managing the large estates, including the celebrated stud-farm, of his kinsmen, the Alexander brothers. This remained his life-work until he retired.

He was a man of marked executive ability, a shrewd financier, and, as might be expected, had been from boyhood passionately fond of horses. His knowledge of both the English and American "stud-books" was unrivalled, and in any dispute as to equine pedigrees that arose, East or West (and they were many), his decision was accepted as final. Famous as the "Woodburn Farm" became under the elder Alexander, it became more

famous still under Mr. Brodhead's management, and was universally conceded by expert "horsemen" to be the "foremost breeding-farm" in America, if not in the world.

It was said of that fine old Virginian, "Jack" Roane of "Upponac," in King William County, who represented Virginia for so many years with marked distinction in the Congress of the United States (and who, by the way, was a kinsman of Brodhead's, for his mother was Sally Upshaw), that he was "a living encyclopaedia of Virginia pedigrees of men and horses."

The same (*mutatis mutandis*) could be said with perfect truth of Mr. Brodhead. According to Mr. Bowmar's lists, he possessed a collection, unrivalled outside of great public libraries, of family-letters, military commissions of his ancestors, land-grants, deeds, family-muniments of all sorts, running back for over three centuries. If the scientific breeding of "thoroughbreds" was the pursuit in life he most preferred, genealogy was scarcely less a passion with him, and, when he retired from active management of the stud-farm some twelve or fourteen years ago, the absorbing occupation of his busy brain was in arranging and annotating this great mass of family documents. In this engrossing task (which was really no "task," but a veritable "labor of love"), he was fortunate in having the keen sympathy and active assistance of a congenial helpmate, whose distinguished ancestry matched his own, and we trust that it is no impertinence on our part to express the hope that, now that he is gone, this accomplished lady will see fit to edit and to publish to the reading world this intimate family record of her husband's gallant forebears, who served king and republic alike with distinction for over three hundred years.

Mr. Brodhead never entered "public life," as that term is commonly accepted, but he was, nevertheless, immensely interested in all public questions, and, as he was a man of wide acquaintance and universal popularity, the politicians had always to reckon with his disinterested, yet potent, influence.

In appearance, he was the *beau-ideal* of the "gallant Kentuckian"—of commanding presence and gracious manners, possessing the indescribable "*bel air*" of the born aristocrat,

yet, withal, what is commonly known in these latter days as "a good mixer" with all sorts and conditions of men.

He had little more than rounded out his "three score years and ten," when he fell quietly asleep at "Okalee," his country home in Woodford County, Kentucky, Oct. 1st, 1914 (though the announcement of his death did not reach us until the spring of the current year).

He was universally lamented throughout his native state, and widely elsewhere, while this Society will long miss the active support and keen sympathy with its aims which he ungrudgingly accorded it for over a quarter of a century.

In conclusion, we must emphasize once more our poignant regret that, for reasons already stated, we are debarred from paying even a passing tribute to others in this mournful roll—especially to three old friends:—MAJOR HOLMES CONRAD, of Winchester, the daring soldier, learned jurist and brilliant orator—JACOB HEFFLEFINGER, the modest and erudite antiquarian of Hampton, whose "*Kecoughtan, Old and New*" gave him high rank among our local historians—and last, but by no means least, the witty and genial ROBERT L. PARRISH, JR., of Covington, who, but for the untimely fate which snatched him from us in the full flush of his young manhood, had surely achieved high reputation as an expert in rare "*Virginiana.*"

Yet, after all, words are, at best, but idle things, and, mayhap, even in the land beyond the stars, these three old friends, divining the wistful tenderness and regret that underlie our hushed "*requiescat*", may, like Browning's dead "Evelyn Hope," "remember and—understand."

All of which is respectfully submitted.

W. GORDON McCABE,
President.

At the conclusion of the Annual Report, Mr. J. Alston Cabell was called to the chair.

The next business was the election of officers and members of the Executive Committee. On motion, a nominating com-

mittee consisting of Mr. W. Clayton Torrence, Col. Jennings C. West and Mr. Charles C. Anderson was appointed.

When the committee retired a motion was made and adopted thanking President McCabe for his services to the Society during the past year. Mr. Cabell gracefully tendered the thanks of the Society to President McCabe.

The nominating committee returned and recommended that the following be elected:

President—W. Gordon McCabe, Richmond, Va.

Vice-Presidents—Archer Anderson, Richmond, Va., Edward V. Valentine, Richmond, Va. and Lyon G. Tyler, Williamsburg, Va.

Corresponding Secretary and Librarian—William G. Stanard, Richmond, Va.

Recording Secretary—D. C. Richardson, Richmond, Va.

Treasurer—Robert A. Lancaster, Jr., Richmond, Va.

Executive Committee—C. V. Meredith, Richmond, Va., Charles W. Kent, University of Virginia, J. Stewart Bryan, Richmond, Va., A. C. Gordon, Staunton, Va., S. S. P. Patteson, Richmond, Va., S. H. Yonge, Richmond, Va., William H. Palmer, Richmond, Va., Rt. Rev. A. M. Randolph, Norfolk, Va., Daniel Grinnan, Richmond, Va., J. P. McGuire, Jr., Richmond, Va., Wm. A. Anderson, Lexington, Va., Morgan P. Robinson, Richmond. Va.

On motion the officers and members named were unanimously elected.

President Mc Cabe resumed the chair, and there being no further business, on motion, the meeting adjourned.

5.00 per Annum Single No. $1.50

THE VIRGINIA MAGAZINE OF HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE
VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,
RICHMOND, VA.

VOL. XXIV—No. 3. JULY, 1916.

Entered at the Postoffice at Richmond, Va., as Second-class Matter.

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS, PRINTERS TO THE SOCIETY
6-8-10 North Eighth Street

CONTENTS.

THE
VIRGINIA MAGAZINE
OF
HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

VOL. XXIV. JUNE, 1916. No. 3

LETTERS OF WILLIAM BYRD, FIRST.

[Many years ago a letter book of William Byrd, first of that family in Virginia, was presented to this Society. Thirty-two of the letters were printed in the Va. Historical Register I, 60-66, 114-119; II, 78-83, 203-209; but the selections seem to have been made with no especial reason. The numerous unpublished letters throw light on trade between England and Virginia and conditions in the Colony as it has been determined to print them. The writer needs only a brief notice here. He came to Va. as a young man to inherit the very considerable landed estate of his maternal uncle, Thomas Stegg, who was Auditor General of Virginia 1664-70. Wm. Byrd lived first at Belvidere on the present site of Richmond and near the close of hsi life bought "Westover." He was an extensive planter, trader in tobacco, furs, etc., owned stores in Virginia and was interested in the Indian trade and in exploration of the West. He was a member of the House of Burgesses and Council and was Auditor and Receiver General of Va. 1687-1704. He married Mary, daughter of Warham Horsmanden, a Royalist refugee. His son William was educated in England, and the daughter Ursula or Nutty (as was his pet name for her, doubtless on account of her complection) was also sent to England.

On her return she married Robert Beverley, the historian. The will of Thos. Grendon (referred to in several letters) is in Waters' **Gleanings,** 429-431].

To Mr. North.

Virg'a ffeb'ry the 25, 1683.

Sr

Yors by Ruds & Wynne lately came to my hands with most of the Goods you Sent mee by the latter, but have not yet opened any, being but last night return'd from Gloster where I have been to wait on our new Governr & where Pate & my Selfe did not forgett yors & Dick Johnsons good health. I wrote to you formerly by Paggen by whom I sent you fiftyHds. Tobo. wch I hope ere this time is come Safe to your hands. I have now nothing to adde, but could not misse this oppertunity by So good a Conveyance as my Coz. Grendon by whom have Sent a small token to be spent amongst our friends. Yors is not yet come to hand, but care is taken for it, our onely misfortune is my Coz. Tom will loose his Share of it.

You shall hear farther by Wynne, who I believe (if any) will get his Ladeing though at low rates, by him I shall send you Some Tobacco & I hope other goods. Mine & my wives best respects & Service to yor Selfe & Lady from

Sr

Yor humble Servant

Will. Byrd.

To Mr North pr Culpeper.

To Mr. Coe.

Virg'a ffeb'ry the 25, 1683.

Dear Sr

Yors by Capt Ruds & Wynne lately recd, as allso what things sent to my wife wch I suppose shee hath given yor Lady an accot of & wee must ever acknowledge our Selves infinitely oblidged to you both, for your many favors both to us & ours, & wish it lay in my power any way to testify my acknowledgemts of yor kindnesses; this I hope will come Safe to you by my Coz. Tom by whom I have Sent a Small token to bee Shared

amongst our friends. I give you thanks for yo^{rs} though not yet come to hand, but care is taken for it, & though Coz'n Grendon will not tast it, wee shall not faile to drink yor & his good health with it at Capt Randolphs, where wee Order^{d} it to been put on Shoar. Pray give my best respected & Service to all where its due, Especially to yor Lady & accept the Same yor Selfe from Dear S^{r}.

Yo^{r} oblidg'd fe^{d} & Servant
W. B.

To Mr Coe p^{r} Culpeper.

To Mr. Gower.

Virg'a ffeb'ry 26th 1683.

S^{r}

I ree^{d} one from you this year p^{r} Capt Bradly, wherein you promise mee I shall hear more at large by Wynne, & tell mee of roots & seeds, but Wunne being arrived, I cannot hear of so much as a letter from you w:^{h} would make mee doubt yor wellfare, did not others tell me that all our friends were well, in w:^{h} catalogue, you ever had our Especiall place, in my Esteem & therefore I could not but Salute you with a line or two by so good a friend as brings this, to assure you I shall ever acknowledge the many favo^{rs} I have So frequently ree^{d} from you; Wee Seldome meet but remember yor good health; & Shall Suddenly when wee dispose of yor kind token, w:^{h} I doubt not but you have a share in. All our friends here in health & give you their best respects & Service, pray present mine to all at yor House, & elsewhere its due, assureing you I shall ever remain

Yo^{r} Oblidg's fr^{d} & Servt.
W. B.

P. S. I wrote last year 2 letters to my bro. Robinson, Sister Rich^{ds} & Godmother but have not had one tittle from any of y'm this year.

To Mr Gower in ye Culpeper.

To Perry and Lane.

Virginia. ffeb'y 26th. 1683.

Gent.

I wrote to you yesterday pr the Culpeper & have little now to adde, this Serveing only to accompany Capt Bradly with 101 Hds Tobo. as pr bill of Ladeing & Invoice inclosed will appear P the next I hope to Send you some ffurres, shall not trouble you farther at present, but take Leave

Gent

Yor wall frd & Servt

W. B.

To mr Perry & Lane P Bradly.

To Perry and Lane.

James City in Virga. Apr'll ye 25th 1684.

Gent

My last to you by the Culpeper & Bradly I hope ere this are Safely come to yor Hands with what I sent therewith, have little now to adde onely acquaint you with our wellfare, I could have wishd you had been more particular in yor letters of ye markett of furrs & Skins, I haeing ingaged for a considerable quantity before my rect of yor last at I fear too great a price. You shall (god willing) receive some by Capt Tibbett who Saith hee shall Saile about the 20th of next month. I have had many complaints about my stockings this year as allso of Hats, threds & Some of ye Linnen iron worke & nails ye worst ever saw, which I hope will hereafter bee mended.

Wee are in likelyhood of forward Crops this year, & dout not God saying amen, to bee as forward as any of ye Marylanders. I have inclosed Sent for some additional things wch were bespoke Since my last, wch pray lett mee have as soon as may bee, & let mee not faile of all my Indian Trucke betimes, the want of Beads, or Some other trifles being oftentimes a great prejudice, shall not trouble you farther, but acquaint you I have charged bills of Exed to mr Peter Perry on you for

56 £.19s.02d., allso some others w:h please to pay accordingly, I must confesse I was Surprized to find my Selfe So far behind Expectation but hope for better times; w:h that we may all find is the hearty desire of

Gent

Yor reall friend & Servant

What you wrote about English Servants I had anticipated by the Culpeper, & therefore shall say no more of it, for ye negro's (if they come), I shall take some if they prove well.

To mr Perry & Lane P Tailor.

To Mr. North.

James City in Virga. Apr'll ye 26th 1684

My last to you was by my Coz. Grendon, w:h I hope with him came safe to you, Since w:h have little to adde, onely I have recd yors by Colo. Ludwell & Prim, allso all those goods you Sent mee by Wynne & can find no fault with them, onely I find many things as Duffeilds Cotton, Brandy, nails &c much dearer than I paid p L, but the different Seasons they were bought in may bee some reason for it. ye french Hats I sent for extraordinary for my Selfe, were worse than those I had from others for the Store. In closed I have sent a note for some Indian Goods, that you may take the advantage of a more timely market, & designe to send for some English goods by Wynne, by whom & designe you about 90 Hds of Tobo. & other Goods. hee reckons to saile about the last of next Moneth, by whom I shall write more at large. My Service to all our friends, & accept the Same yor selfe from

Sr

Yor friend & Servant

W. B.

I have charged a bill of Exchange on you payable to Jno. Herbert for 25 £. 16s.0d. & inclosed sent you one of my Coz. Grendons for 34 £.0s.0d.

To Mr North P. Zach Tailor.

To Thomas Byrd.

Virginia May 20 '84.

Dear Bro.

I was glad by yor letter to hear of yor wellfare as allso of all our friends. My wife & little ones are very well & desire to bee remembered to you, pray give my best respects to yor Master, & remember mee to my Bro. & Sister Robinson & Sister Richards & tell them I take it very unkindly that (though Iwrote twice to each of them last year) I have not recd one line from Either of them this year. Pray remember mee to my Grand Mother; I shall not doubt yor diligence to improve yor time. Assuring you none more desires yor benefit then

Yo^r affectionate Bro

To T B p Wynne

To Perry and Lane.

Virginia May the 20th 1684.

Gen^t

This accompany Capt Wynne with four Hds of ffurres as p bill of Ladeing & Invoice inclosed may appear. Capt Tibbett promised mee to fetch them, but I hear he designes to excuse it, wherefore I was forced to persuade Wynne to take them in; There is little of news the Assembly not yett broke up; great likelyhood of forward Crops being abundance of raine lately. Wee are in great anxiety for ye Quaker Ketch, & very desirous to hear where abt the market may bee, I hope the Dolphin got well home, though here is a report of a very hard winter you have had in England; with a continued E wind for many weeks. I shall not trouble you farther at prsent but with best respects & Service take leave

Gent

Yo^t reall friend & Servt

W. B.

Since my last to you I have charged 36£ to m^r Hartwell 5£0s.0d. money to m^r Place & 8 to Ben Harrison, pay pass accordingly.

To m^r P by Wynne.

To Perry and Lane.

Virga. Hb^{r} the 30th 1784.

Gen^{t}

I wrote to you lately by a Yorke Ship, & hopee then Capt Hall would have been ready to have Saild with this, & so might have been, had others indeavor'd his dispatch as I have done, haveing now 81 Hds on board, when Shee will Saile I know nott, but Shall Ship no more on board her this year, hope others will make it up. Shee had a tedious passage heither, & by all report is no runner, Capt Hall thinks if shee were lengthned, the increase of her Burthen would soon answer the Charge, & shee would Saile much better, but that shall leave wholly to yor discretion, I could have wished wee had bought or built a new one, rather then to have been at so much charge with this w:^{h} had like to have ruined us, Butt of this too much: What you propose as touching the Cargoe sent P Dolphin, I am willing to goe my part (of whatsoever on her Acco^{t}) proportionable to my part of the ship; What you mentioned about the Pinke for the Barbados have answered in my last & Shall expect her, else shall provide other way's, Wee here desire not to be Concern'd w:^{h} too many, & therefore if wee find her Concern'd all over the River, wee shall have nothing to doe wth her; for the Cargoe P Hall, I find itt reasonably well, onely Cottons, w:^{h} you say are Cheaper & better, I find much dearer, as formerly, you sent y'm at 16½d. p Goad, you now Charge 20d. & not onely so but have (by mistake I suppose) Charged mee just ten pounds too much in that Article in yor Invoice Viz^{t}.

422½ Goads of Cotton Chargd—451:4s:02d at 20d. P Goade	
w:^{h} comes to but just	351:4s:02d
	101:0s:00d

I am Sorry that Scarce once in a year I can recieve any Acco^{t} of the markett of ffurres or skins, by w:^{h} being in the darke, I have been a Considerable looser within this twelfe moneth; for the Erroe in the of Col^{d} plletting I shall keep them, since 'twill bee scarce worth while to send it to Capt Hall for the bed ticke you mention I have it not mine being barely 4l. as allso

Capt Randolphs w:^{h} is the Same wth mine, I must confesse I am now under great dissatisfaction about the damage in the Culpeper, Especially since by no indeavo^{rs} of mine I can learne how faire I am concern'd therein, & truely were not the year so untoward that few Shipes (& them with difficulty) will get their ladeing. I Could almost forever deny shipping one H^{de} on board her whilst I live, but Shall venture once more; I am under an unhappy disapointment for want of Severall things I sent for, Especially for the Bresse Wire, the Pattorn wherof, I put in the Letter wth my owne Hands; Servants at the rates you mention, at the latter Season of the year, Cannot bee worth while, others had much Cheaper & forward; Ships will bee generally very latter this year no Seasons, to Ship Tobo. & the planter who hath twice or thrice (it may bee) allready sold his Tobacco is in no Hast to Strip itt, Shall not trouble you farther at present but tak leave

I am Gen^{t}
Yo^{r} fr^{d} & Servt
W. B.

If you send ye Pinke to Barbadoes on our acco^{t} I would have by her 506 Negros between 12 & 24 years old about 1000 Gall'ns Rum 3024000 l. of Sug^{r} (muscovado) & abou 200 l. Ginger To P p Booth.

To Mr. North.

Virga. Xb^{r} the 29th 1684.

S^{r}

I lately wrote to you by way of Yorke, by w:^{h} I gave you a acco^{t} of my Coz Grendons death, & design'd to have sent you by this a Copy of his will &: but this ship Sailing Sooner then I expected & the Badnesse of the weather prevented mee, this I hope will come Safe to yor Hands by the Booth wth 40 Hds of Tobacco as P bill of Ladeing & invoice may appear, if Scarcity will ever make Tobo. a Commodity, it will bee this year, I am Sure it Serace & dear enough, & wth worse generally very bad. m^{r} Grendons death hath put mee to Some trouble, that I can

Scarce give you any acco^{t} of ye Goods rec^{d}, onely one p^{r} lac'^{d} ruffles you sent mee, I suppose the lace had been tramp^{ed} in ye kennell before it was made (the Wrist Bands not being Soild), & are I fear not worth a farthing, so ye Saddle you Sent mee for my Selfe, I find the Stirrup of a Side Saddle w:^{h} I suppose was Sent instead of a Curb bitt, w:^{h} I find Wanting. You shall have it again P Bradly. You shall hear farther ere long, in the mean time accept of mine wth my wives best respects & Service to yor Selfe & Lady, m^{r} Coe & his & all the rest of our friends from

S^{r} Yo^{r} fri'd & Servt
W. B.

To m^{r} North P Booth.

To Perry and Lane.

Virga. ffeb'ny the 2^{d} 1684.

Gen^{t}

I wrote to you about a moneth eine P the Booth. Since w:^{h} I have not reed one letter from you, nor can hear any certainty of Winne or Tibbets, this (I hope) will come Safe to yor Hands by Capt Hall, w:^{h} 81 Hds of Tobacco. Wee have left her to yor discretion whether for London or Rotterdam.

There hath been now a good Season, most Tobacco is Strip'd & I'll assure you I never knew so little made in these parts in my life, nor I think So bad; I have inclosed Sent for the iron worke of a Saw Mill, w:^{h} I desire may bee Sent by the first Ship, & that the Cranke may bee made exactly according to ye inclosed patterne. If it is cast (without flaws) it may doe best; the Racke & Nutt must fitt; I am told it may bee best & cheapest had out of Holland, but I thinke wrought iron is prohibited, therefore must leave it to you, onely earnestly desire that great care may bee taken (in ye Cranke especially) that the iron worke bee well & Exactly according to ye dimensions inclosed, for I hope my timber worke will bee finished before ye End of 7 b^{e} next: Inclosed is allso a note for Some Indian Goods w:^{h} I allso desire by the first oppertunity. I had some complaints of my Duffeilds & Cottons this year, by my next I shall give you

a fuller acco^{t} my Clo: w'td Plains & Cottons very bad & indeed all the Cottons very dear, Dr Bullard Sent much better both Duffeilds & Cottons, w:^{h} are Sold as cheap as possibly I can afford mine. pray Speake to the Gun Smith that the Dogs of all the Gun locks have good Hold otherwise the Indians will not buy them; I shall not trouble you farther at present but with best respects & Service take leave

Gen^{t}

Yo^{r} friend & Servant

W. B.

To m^{r} Perry & Lane P Hall.

To M.

Virga. ffeb'ry 2^{d} 1684.

S^{r}

I wrote to you about 5 weeks since by the Booth by whom I sent you 40 H^{ds} of Tobo. w:^{h} I hope will long ere this come Safe to your Hands, have little now to adde, onely inclosed have Sent our Invoice for some Indian trade, & hope you will mend your Hand, the Duffeilds Herbert brought in much exceeds yo^{rs} the cloth cold plains you Sent is not So good by a groat a yard as some I had w:^{h} did not cost So much by 2½d. a yde, by Ruds Idesigne you Some Tobo. & other Goods & by him Shall Send my Invoice for what Goods I designe, but would willingly first See my Acco^{t} Pray give my best respects & Service where its due, & accept the Same yor Selfe from

S^{r}

Yo^{r} reall fr^{d} & Servt

W. B.

To M. P Hall.

Speake to ye Gunsmith that the Dogs of the Locks have good hold, otherwise the Indians will not buy them.

To His Brother and Sister Robinson.

Virga. Mo. March 1685 (4?).

Dear Bro: & Sister

Yo^{rs} of ye 29th of July came Safe to hand, though ye unhappy

Bearer dyed at Sea, I will assure you twas great Satisfaccon to mee to hear of your wellfare, & notwithstanding the distance of place nothing can bee more to my Content then to hear of the prosperity of my (So near) relations, therefore you will omitt no oppertunity to lett mee hear from you by letters, wth (Since heaven hath placed us at that distance) is the onely way wee have to communicate our thoughts, therefore hope I shall hear from you oftener, My little daughter Ursula comes herewith, to whom I shall not doubt your kindnesse, Pray give my kind love to our Sister Mary & all our friends, & Accept of mine wth my wives to your selves heartily wishing us a merry meeting in England I remain

Yo^{r} affectionate Bro
W. B.

To Bro: Robinson P Culpeper

Virga. 31st March 1684

Dear Sister

Yo^{rs} of ye 29th of July came to my Hands & was glad to hear from you, though Sorry to understand you were in So Sickly a Condition Pray God if it bee his blessed Will restore you to your former health w:^{h} would bee very wellcome news to mee. My poor Coz. Grendon dyed att Sea in Octob^{r} last, My wife & little daughters are well. One of y'm (Ursula) comes herewith pray God Send her a good Voyage. My wife gives you her kind love & Service, Pray give mine to all where its due, especially to my Sister Mary & accept ye Same yor selfe wth my prayers to God for your health & wellfare I remain

Dear Sister
Yo^{r} ever loveing Bro:
W. B.

To Sister Rich^{ds} P Culpeper.

To Thomas Byrd.

Virga. Ulto. March 1684.

Dear Bro:

Yo^{rs} of ye 7th of August came to my Hand, though my friend by whom twas Sent dyed att Sea; I am heartily glad to hear of your wellfare, & doubt not but you will So well improve yor

selfe that when you come to bee out of yor time, you will bee able to manage yor buisinesse to ye best advantage, wherein I shall bee ever ready to assist you. One of my little Daughters comes herewith. My wife desires to be remembered to you. Pray give my best respects to my Sister Mary & all where its due & accept the same yor selfe from

Yo^{r} affectionate Bro:
W. B.

To Bro: Tom P Culpeper

To His Brother Rand.

Virga March 31st 1685

Dear S^{r}

Yo^{rs} by Capt Dell came Safe to my Hands & was heartily wellcome, bringing us the good news of your Wellfare & my Sisters Safe delivery of a Son, of whom I wish you both much Joy. My wife & 2 Girls are I thanke God in health. Little Nutty comes herewith, if Shee calls on you by the way, I doubt not your kindnesse I should have been heartily glad to have Seen you in England this year, had not my affairs here (most of w:^{h} I am Sure bring more trouble then profit or pleasure) hindred mee, but it may not bee long first. My Coz Grendon (in ye flower of his Age) dyed ye 10 of 8 b^{r} last at Sea & the Old Woman (not indureing to lye alone) Marryed abt ye latter end of Jan'ry to one m^{r} Edwd Brain a Stranger here. My best respects & Service to yor selfe, Lady, Sister Dudly, m^{r} Knowles, wth all the rest of our friends in yor parts from

Dear S^{r}
Yo^{r} affectionate Bro: & Servt
W. B.

To Bro: Rand P Culpeper

To Daniel Horsmanden.

Virga. March ye 31st 1685

Dear Bro:

Yo^rs of ye 6th of July last come to my Hands, by w:^h was glad to hear of yor wellfare, for one letter a year is the most I have recd from you, therefore wonder you should blame mee in that who have allways doubled, & most commonly trebled y^t number. My wife & girls are in health, little Nutty comes herewith, God Send her well to you, & I shall not doubt your kindnesse to her. Poor Coz Grendon dyed at Sea in Octob^r last & ye old woman finding itt not convenient to bee alone hath marryed one m^r Edwd Brain (a Stranger) in Jan'ry last. Capt Randolph & m^r Banister, present their Service to you, whom wee allways remember when wee meet. Pray give my blessing to my Children when you See them, wth best respects & Service to all where its due, & accept ye Same yor selfe from

Dear Bro.

Yo^r affectionate Bro: & Servant

W. B.

To Bro: Dan'll P Culpeper

(To be Continued)

MINUTES OF THE COUNCIL AND GENERAL COURT 1622-1629*.

From the Originals in the Library of Congress.

(CONTINUED.)

*All erasures in the originals are here printed in italics.

(175.)

Edward Nevell sworne & examined sayeth yt Mr Crispe did promise *to give* Mr. Weston (1) *securitie yt he would he would not Truck any of his Tobacco* at Canada & yt before he had his goodes ashore he wold putt him in good securitie not to Truck away any of his Tobacco, except some hundred weyght to buy him apparell and some other necessaries.

(1) Thomas Weston, a London merchant, was one of the associates of John Pierce, to whom a grant of land was made by the Virginia Company Jan. 12, 1619-20. He was closely associated with the emigration of the Pilgrims; but later, differences arose between him and them. Weston owned a number of ships and was actively engaged in trading to America and in fishing. He decided to attempt a settlement in New England, and is the summer of 1622, his ships the *Charity* and *Swan*, and, probably, the *Sparrow*, brought fifty or sixty men for a settlement at Wassagusset (now Weymouth). The *Charity* also carried thirty passengers on to Virginia. This settlement seems to have been very objectionable to the Plymouth people, who accused the new-comers, generally, of much bad conduct, though stealing corn is the worst specific charge. Robert Cushman wrote from England to his brother Pilgrims in regard to Weston's men "I pray you therefore signify to Squanto [the Indian interpreter] that they are a distinct body from us, and we have nothing to do with them, nor must be blamed for their faults, much less can warrant their fidelity." The savage mind could draw but one inference from this Christian message, and promptly made plans to extirpate the Weston colony. It is, of course, not intended to imply that Cushman instigated an attack on the new settlement; but he should have known the danger of such a message. The Weston colony was soon abandoned, most of its members returning to England while a few went to Plymouth and Virginia.

Weston continued for a number of years his trading and fishing ventures. Alexander Brown states that later he owned land in Virginia and Maryland. He was for a time a resident in Virginia and was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1628. It should be noted here that the present Maine was then called Canada. Thomas Weston is said to have died in Bristol during the Civil War.

Yt is ordered yt Mr. Weston shall pay to Mr. Newman for ye service of Arthur Avelince six barrells of sheeld corne and two firkins of butter or the valew therof in Comodities, as ye said butter and Comodities cost in Englande.

And for the fraught of Certen goods purchased [?] at one town, yt he take for the fraught therof after ye rate of fower pownde to be paid in Tobacco at the rate of three shillings p. pownd accordinge to the agreement.

Thomas Cryspe, gent., sworne & examined sayeth that he was witness to A Covenant when Edward Nevell did Covenant to deliver one hundred pound weight of Tobacco to Robert Newman uppon theire arivall at Canada, in consideracon yt the said Edward Nevell had a bill signed [?] over to him by John Warde (2) for the repayment of ye said hundred waight of Tobacco at this Cropp.

And fourther sayeth yt when they arived at Canada Robert Newman demanded ye Tobacco of Mr. Nevell at damarells Cove(3), and Mr. Nevell Answered peradventure it is at Massicusis [?] yt you shall have, And sayeth yt after this Mr. Newman made a second demand of it and he refused to pay it, saying yt it was at his choyse *whe* for ther *he wold* pay *it or no at Canada* was noe day or place appointed for the payment therof so it was paid in Canada.

(176.)

Yt is ordered yt Mr. Nevell shall paye to Robert Newman(4) and John Warde ffyftie pownde waight of good merchantable Tobacco, And to deliver upp to them one Bill wherin they

(2) Captain John Ward, who made a number of voyages to Virginia settled a plantation in the Colony at Ward's Creek, and with his Lieutenant, John Gibbs, represented it in the Assembly of 1619.

(3) The Damarells-Damaris-, Damarinscove Islands, are five or six in number and lie off the coast of Maine, between the Kennebec and Penobscot. They were early resorted to by fishing ships and occupied for fishing stages.

(4) The "Muster" of William Gayne and Robert Newman, appears in the Census of 1624-5. Robert Newman, aged 25, came in the *Neptune* in 1618, and the "muster" also included John Coker, aged 20, and Arthur Avelon, aged 26, the latter having come in the *Elizabeth* in 1620.

stand bound to him for ye payment of one hundred pounds waight of Tobacco

Yt is ordered yt Mr Weston shall pay Robert Thresher one hundred and fower score pownd waight of good merchantable Tobacco presently, In consideracon of that Tobacco w'ch he laid owte of Robert Threshers at Canada for his owne comodities And two hundred and ffiftie pound waight more for his not bringing a servant for ye said Robert Thresher according to agreement and twenty pounde of ye like Tobacco a weeke for John Coker his servant from ye fourteenth of June to the eigth of October *next following* last past.

Killibett Hitchcock(5), gent., sworne & examined sayeth That he was over to Archers Hope with the wyddow Bush and was present when she did make an absolute bargaine with Mr Thomas Farley for the land he was then seated one, for six yeeres, And that Mr Farley did tender her payment of a hundred waight at that present, but beinge late and the weather doubtful she would not then take it with her but did defer the payment therof until Mr Farlow had his leafe sold.

(177.)

John Elysone(6) sworne & Examined sayeth, that he was present when the widdow Bushe did grant a lease to Mr ffarley of the lande he was then seated one for six yeares. And that Mr ffarley was to pay therin present a hundred waight of Tobacco, And that she offered to have made Mr ffarley a lease therof at that tyme yf there had been candle length in the house and yt Mr ffarley was to paye to the widdow Bush sixtie pound of Tobacco yearly rent for the place.

(5) Kilibett Hichcocke, was living at James City in 1623; but was out of the county or omitted in the Census of 1624-5.

(6) John Ellyson who came in the *Prosperous* and his wife Ellin, who came in the *Charitie* were living at Archers Hope 1624-5. At the same time, Susan Bush aged 20, who came in the *George*, 1617, widow of John Bush, who died in 1624, was living, together with Sarah Spence, aged four, born in Virginia, and five servants, at Elizabeth City. Sarah Spence was daughter of Ensign William Spence, who had been a burgess for James City in the Assembly of 1619 and who, with his wife, was returned in the list of dead Feb. 16, 1623, as "Lost," doubtless killed by the Indians. Sarah Spence seems in some way to have been the heir of Susan Bush, who must have died not long after the Census of 1624-5.

In regarde of the greate charge yt Thomas Bennett(7) hath uppon his hands and other considerations The Court doth condescend yt he shall have two barrells of Corne abated him of his rent for this year.

Yt is orderd yt gardians of Sara Spence shall make satysfactione to Thomas ffarley for the cost & charges he hath been at in Clearinge and building uppon the lande he now is seated one, w'ch he hath p'formed since the widdow Bush made him grante of a lease.

Yt is ordered w'th ye Consent of ye Governor yt six hundred waight of Tobacco dew Mr Cleybourne as by a former order apeareth and one hundred waight to Clarence Maye [?], one hundred waight to Wm Julyan, And sixtie waight to John Powell, being dew to them from the Company shalbe paid to them owt of the Companys rent of *their rent* this yeeres rent, W'ch the Governor was formerly ordered to receave in sattisfacon of this Deft.

(178.)

A Courte held the xxviiith of November 1625 beinge present S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor, Capt ffrancis West, Capt Roger Smith, Capt Samuell Mathewes, Mr William Cleybourne

Yt is ordered yt the p'vost marshall shall give a discharge to the purser of the Elizabeth for the receipt of those goodes w'ch he hath receaved of John ffox and John Pickemell who died at sea, And to take the Charge of sendinge of the Tobacco made of those goodes into England

Wheras Thomas Thackthorpe [or Shackthorpe] and Robert Burrows beinge brought over as servants for Richard Page, m'r of the Elizabeth, who by order of Court dated ye 19th of September 1625 weere delivered the one to Mr Abraham Persie

(7) In the muster of Thomas Bennett (at the census of 1624-5) at Basses Choice, appear Thomas Bennett, aged 38, who came in the *Neptune* in 1618, Mary Bennett, aged 18, came in the *Southampton*, 1622, Roger Heford, and Benjamin Simes, aged 33. The last was no doubt the Benjamin Symes, later of Elizabeth City, who by his will in 1634, founded a school in that county, still represented by the Symes-Eaton Academy at Hampton, the oldest endowed school in the United States. Thomas Bennett was probably a brother of Edward Bennett who had a great plantation not far away at Warrosquoiacke.

and the other to Mr John Woolrich for 2 servants of theirs who went away after they were shipt by neckligence The Court refers it to be tried in England betwixt the owner and the wyddow Page who shall stand to the loss of those two Servants

Yt is ordered yt the purser of the Elizabeth shall pay to Caleb Page for the use of the widdow of Richard Page late m'r of the Elizabeth 600 pounds waight of good merchantable Tobacco and that the purser shall ship the said Tobacco aboarde the Elizabeth and give ye bill of lodinge for the same into this Court to be recorded

And yt Caleb Page shall take the charge of receavinge upp the rest of the Tobacco and other depts due to his brother Richard Page, and to be accountable for the same to this Courte to ye use of ye wydow Page when he shalbe therunto caled.

(179.)

Thomas Weekes sworne and Examined sayeth yt A boye shipt by Thomas Page aboarde the Elizabeth did doe all such Busines and labour duringe the voiage as the Boatswain did Comand him to Doe

Yt is ordered yt Caleb Page shall prefer in Court A trew and iuste accoupt of all such depts and Tobacco as he shall receave in Virginia for depts dew his Brother Thomas Page

Yt is ordered yt Capt Tucker shall deliver such goodes as he hath in his handes of Mr Vincent Barber's unto Mr Marmaduke Rayner(8), or otherwyse that he appeare heere before ye Governo: and Councell at James Cyttie one mondye next come sennight beinge the twelf d'ye of December next to show cause too the Contraire

John Snode [?] sworne *and Examined sayeth* deposeth that the Inventorie by him p'duced in Court was A trewe Inventory of the goodes of Thomas Clarke, deceased.

Yt is ordered yt a warrant be sent to Lt Barry yt yf the Controversie depending between him and Henry Geny cannot [be

(8) Marmaduke Rayner was a member of the Virginia Company and as mate and master made several voyages to Virginia. In the summer of 1620 he made an exploring expedition from Virginia to Roanoke.

settled?] at ye Court at Elizabeth Cyttie yt then Lieut Barry do appeare heere one this daye three weeks to answer to said Henry Geny to his duite.

Wheras John Utie, gent., deposeth in Courte yt certain things Demanded in Courte by Mr Harwood, were received by him of Mr Harwood for the [use?] of Southampton hundred Company. A note of ye p'ticulars 19 shirtes, 8 payer of shewes, 18 payer of fish firkins [?], 4 felling Axes.

(180.)

John Utie, gent., deposeth yt the bond wheron John Sheppard(9), Doctoris Christmas, & Mr Jonas Stogden stand bound to Mr John Pountis late Thresurer of Southampton Hundred was for the discharge of said John Shepparde and Doctoris Christmas from the service of Southampton Company

Yt is ordered yt John Shepparde and Doctoris Christmas havinge discharged their bonde to Mr Pountis shal have their ffredom accordinge to agreement as other tenants have had.

Yt is ordered yt a warrant to Christopher Lee (10) to deliver the fortie fower boushels of Corne of the pursers now in his hands of Mr Peirsie to any of the ships Company or else to appeare here one Monday next to show cause to ye Contrary.

Yt is ordered yt notw'thstandinge the Covenant made betweene Mr David Sandys, minister, and the parishoners of Martins Hundred, That they shall paye the full dews as other parishes doe, nottw'thstandinge his not p'forming his covenant by reason of his Death.

(181.)

A Courte held the 5th D'ye of December 1625, beinge present Sr ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor, Capt. ffrancis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Mr Wm Cleybourne

(9) Doctoris and Elizabeth Christmas were living at Elizabeth City in 1623, and he was in Virginia in November 1625; but is not included in the Census of 1624-5. It is evident that this census is not complete. See this Magazine XIX, 385 for note on Doctoris Christmas. John Sheppard was probably the "Lieutenant Sheppard," living at Elizabeth City in 1623; but not named in the Census of 1624-5.

(10) In the Census of 1624-5, Christopher Lee, aged 30, who came in the *Southampton* in 1623, appears as a servant of Abraham Persey at James City.

Nicholas Roe(11) sworne and Examined sayeth yt he remembreth at Canada yt Mr Weston gave order to Mr Nevell not to deliver Mr Crispe his Tobacco unless he brought Mr Wetheridge to give securitie yt Mr Crisp should not Truck away any of his Tobacco in ye Country, but wether Mr Weston did absolutely demande Mr Wetheridge should give his bonde or to deliver it uppon his word this deponent doth not well remember

And further he sayeth that being at Damerells Cove Jeffry Cornish came abourde the ship caled the Swan and demanded this deponent the cause of his brothers execution, sayinge yt hath been told his brother was put to death wrongfully and that he wold be revenged of them that were ye occasion of it.

And further sayeth yt whilst Jeffry Cornish and this deponent were in talke Mr Nevell cam in place and told ye said Jeffry Cornish yt he was at the triall of his brother and at his execution and that he could say more concerninge his execution than this deponent could doe, after w'ch this deponent was caled down into ye hold, so yt wt other Conversation was betwixt them concerninge that, he knoweth not The said Cornish and Nevell remayninge uppon the deck talkinge together, and further he cannot depose.

John Giles sworne and examined sayeth yt he heard Jeffry Cornish sware and saie that he wold be the cause of the death of those yt were ye cause of putting his brother to death, This deponent beinge abourde their owne shipp caled the Swann, And coming abourd another shipp riding hard by, but yt Edward Nevell or another told said deponent he was put to death wrongfully, he cannot say.

(182.)

Christopher Knollinge sworne and examined sayeth that being a shore at Damarells Cove in Canada Jeffery Cornish cam unto him and demanded of him w't he could say concerning

(11) Nicholas Rowe, who came in the *Elizabeth* in 1621, and Mary Rowe who came in the *London Merchant*, 1620, were living at Elizabeth City 1624-5.

his brother being putt to death, sayinge that some of ye Swan should tell him yt his brother was put to death wrongfully & said yt he would spend his blood for his brother to be revenged on them yt did it, but this deponent askinge *him Deponent* the said Cornish who told him so, he refused to tell him, and more he cannot say.

Nicholas Hodges sworne and examined sayeth he herd Mr Weston say to Nicholas Roe at Canada yt unles he would signe a release unto him he would putt his two men ashore, and would not bring them to Virginia

It is ordered yt A warrant be made to cause Mr Weston to appeare [before] ye Governor and Councell at James Cyttie one mond'ye the 12th of December and to bring up his pynnace w'th him yf winde and weather will serve, yf not yt he do p'sonally apeare him self, and his pynnace to come upp after, and yt Mr Crispe, Mr Newman, Mr Nevell, Thomas Godbie and all others who have ought against or for Mr Weston do appear heere the same D'ye Concerninge the business of ye Swan and yt Mr Weston bring upp Mr Nevells goodes in ye barke

Yt is orderd yt Robert baring shall pay eight barrells of Corne to Mr William Harwood for ye Companyes dept w'ch is dew unto him.

Yt is ordered yt Mr Procter shall paye to Mr Perry(12) in recompense of his boat w'ch was splitt by Mr Procters meanes, the some of fiftie pound weight of good merchantable tobacco, present payment.

Peter Busbey [or Bayley] sworne and examined saith yt cominge down in Mr Procters shallopp w'th passengers [and?] Tobacco Edward ffysh [Fysher?] espeied a duck ahead and spake to ye Company to take her upp, and ye duck flew away, but ye shallop at that tyme shipt noe water

(12) William Perry came to Virginia in 1611 and died Aug. 6, 1637. The epitaph on his tomb at Westover is now illegible, but was copied by Charles Campbell, the Virginia historian, who also states that the tomb bore a shield with armorial bearings too worn to be identified. Perry was appointed to the Council 1632-3. See this Magazine II, 151.

(183.)

Caleb Page sworne and examined sayeth ye he herde John Pickenell say yt he did owe William Webster, purser of the Elizabeth, fyftie pounds waight of Tobacco, wherupon it is ordered yt the purser shalbe paid this sum out of the Tobacco w'ch by order of Courte he is to pay to the provost marshall for Peckemells goodes

And where it doth appear by Richard Page's books that he doth owe William Brewere for five gallons of Aquavitae, and two barrells of greene ginger yt is orderd yt Caleb Page shall paye him for ye same, twenty-fower pounds of Tobacco

Yt is ordered that Thomas Dowethorne(13) shall pay to Sergeant John Harris for a dept of William Gantlett, deceased, the quantitie of three barrells of Indyan Corne presently, The bill of Gauntletts p'duced in Court affirminge ye same to be dew dept.

Yt is ordered yt Caleb Page shall receave the goodes of Thomas Page his brother and to receave Tobacco for the sum, And to bring in a perfect Accoumpt therof unto this Courte, & shipping ye *goodes*. Tobacco for Englande deliver into ye Courte a bill of ladinge for the same.

(184.)

A Courte held the xiith daye of December 1625, being present Sr ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c, Capt Roger Smith, Raphe Hamor, Mr William Cleybourne

At the humble desire of Captayne Thomas Willowby(14) ye Courte hath assented he shall have two hundred acres of land scituate aboute two myles w'thin the mouth of Pamunkey river

(13) The muster of Thomas Dunthorne, of Elizabeth City, at the Census of 1624-5, included himself aged 27, who came in the *Margaret & John*, 1620, Elizabeth Dunthorne, aged 38, who came in the *Tryall*, 1610, and six servants. Dunthorne's wife was eleven years older than he, and had been in the colony ten years longer; but marriage with an experienced and thoroughly acclimated widow had its compensations.

John Harris owned 200 acres in Charles City in 1626. William Gauntlett, curiously, is entered in both the lists of living and dead in 1623; but the latter was probably correct.

(14) Notices of Thomas Willoughby, William Claiborne, Roger Smith, and Ralph Hamor and their families have appeared in former numbers of this Magazine. For a note on John Jefferson see XXIII, 19.

and abuttinge westerlye on to Creeke and thence extending one hundred pole along ye banke of ye river and ye southerlye side of the said River, provided, that he plant and seate uppon the saide lande, or some parte of the saide lande, w'thin seaven years next after the date herof ensueinge or else ye s'd land to be free any other to make choyse & yn[then] ye saide Thomas Willowbie to take his said devident in some other playce.

Mr William Cleybourne, Counsellor of Estate, *doth likewise* desireth of the Courte to have two hundred and ffyftie acres of land granted unto him sytuate Aboute Archer's Hope and abuttinge westerly uppon the lande of Joakin Androos & esterly uppon the land of Lieut. John Jeffersone, Southerlie uppon the maine river & northerly uppon the maine lande unto w'ch his request, The Courte doth willinglie consent Provided yt he ymploy plant or seate uppon the said land w'thin seaven yeres after the date therof

Capt Roger Smith Counsellor of estate *doth likewise* desireth of the Courte to have one hundred acres of lande for his own p'sonall adventure he beinge an old planter, fower Acres of the said lande beinge w'thin the precincts of James Cyttie & the other nyntie six sytuat uppon a Creeke w'thin the mouth of the back river w'thin ye Corporation of James Cyttie, deviding it westerly from the gleabe land, and thence extendinge along the banck of the river fortie eight pole sutherly uppon the mouth of the said back river, and westerly uppon ye maine land, unto w'ch his request the Courte do willinglie consent he having alreadie seated and planted upon the said lande.

(185.)

Capt. Raphe Hamor Counsellor of estate *doth like* desireth of the Courte to have five hundred acres of land sytuate one the northe side of Blunt poynt river, about three miles upp the saide river & abuttinge *northe* westerlie uppon A Creek deviding it from the land of John Baynum(15), gent., & thence extend-

(15) The Muster of Mr. John Banum and Robert Sweet, at Elizabeth City, at the Census of 1624-5, includes John Banum aged 51, who came in the *Swan* in 1616, Elizabeth Banum, aged 43, who came in the *Bona Nova* in 1620, Robert Sweet, aged 42, who came in the *Neptune* in 1618, and seven servants.

inge Easterlie two hundred and ffyftie pole along the banke of the said Blunt poynt river, sutherly uppon the maine lande, unto w'ch his request the Courte doth willingly assent, provided that the saide Capt. Hamor doth seat & plant uppon the said lande or some parte of ye saide lande w'thin seaven yeeres next ensuinge after the date herof.

Randall Smallwood sworne and examined sayeth that ffrancis Michell(16) did buye of Joseph Charde two houses and six Acres of land at Charles Hundred for a hundred and ffyftie pound of tobacco *and three bushells* of Indyan Corne w'ch Tobacco *and corne* was to be paid to the said Joseph Charde when he did deliver ye writtings and the possessione of the said houses and lande to the said ffrancis Michell, And further saieth That w'thin three or fower D'yes after The massacre happeninge, and the said Joseph Charde being in possession of the said houses was forced by the Emergencie w'th others to quitt ye saide houses, by reason wheras shortly after it was burnt by the Indyans, And the said ffrancis Michell never possest therof

The Courte findinge by witness, and by the bill itselfe yt the said Tobacco was to be paid for the said houses and land wherof he was never possest, do not conceave in equitie yt ffrancis Michell should be compelled to paye the said Dept.

(186.)

John Sutherne sworne and examined sayeth, That he was p'fecting some Accompts for Mr Rowsley, (17) at w'ch tyme he was very sicke, And among other writings Anthony West his indenture cam to his hande, w'ch Indenture Mrs Rowsley willed this deponent to give her, sayinge I will laye it by, for I will give him his Indentures & sett him free

(16) Francis Michell lived at Elizabeth City Feb. 1623, and Josuah Chard, aged 36, who came in the *Seaventine*, May 1607, and Ann his wife, aged 33, who came in the *Bonny Bess*, August 1623, were living at the Neck of Land in Charles City 1624-5.

(17) William and Elizabeth Rowsley and a maid of theirs died at James City between Feb. 1622 and Feb. 1623. Anthony West, who came in the *James*, 1622, lived on the Treasurer's Plantation, James City, 1624-5

Henry Menefie [?], Marchant, sworne and examined sayeth yt he was in place at Mr Rowsleys house with Capt. Sampson Mr Rich. Bass when Mrs Rowsley did sett Anthony West free and delivered his Indentures to Capt Sampson to Cary into England to his ffriends

Uppon the Testimonys above recorded the Courte doth order that Anthony West shall have his ffreedom, and his passe for England.

(To be continued)

VIRGINIA IN 1678-1679.

(Abstracts by W. N. Sainsbury, and copies in the McDonald and De Jarnette Papers, Virginia State Library.)
(Continued)

Whitehall Feb. 18, 1678-9.

Minutes of a Committee of Trade and Plantations. Several heads of Instructions for Lord Culpeper are read and approved; such as relate unto the Church being put off 'till Thursday next. To move his Maj. that some men of War be appointed to cruize off the Channel to protect a considerable fleet of homeward bound ships from the Algerines. On reading petition of Col. Augustine Warner to except Capt. Bird(1), one of the late rebels in Virginia out of the Act of Indemnity which is preparing, by reason of petitioner having obtained a judgment of £1000 against him, it is referred to the Attorney General.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. p. 311.)

Whitehall, Feb. 24, 1678-9.

Minutes of a Committee of Trade and Plantations. Draught of an Act of Indemnity for Virginia being presented to the Committee their Lordships think ft to refer it to Mr Attorney General.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 103. p. 314.)

Feb. 26, 1678-9.

Lords of the Committee of Trade and Plantations. to [the Attorney General?] For his report upon a Draught of an Act of Indemnity for Virginia prepared by his Maj. Order in Council, whether it be agreeable to same and in a legal form and desiring him to make such alterations as he shall find necessary. Draft.

(Colonial Papers.)

(1) William Byrd the first of Henrico Co. and of "Westover."

Feb. 26, 1678-9.

DEPOSITION ON OATH OF MAJOR ROBERT BRISTOW(2) late of Virginia but now of London, Merchant: that upon delivery up of West's Point the Rebels laid down their arms and dispersed themselves—that Sir Wm. Berkeley & his party then came ashore and went to Green Spring, and afterwards caused several persons estates to be seized including a parcel of tobacco belonging to Alexander Walker of Virginia.

(Colonial Papers, 1. p.)

Whitehall, Feb. 28, 1678-9.

WARRANT BY THE KING TO THE ATTORNEY OR SOLICITOR GENERAL to prepare a Bill for his Maj. signature containing a Grant of the office of Secretary of Virginia to Nicholas Spencer(3) from the date of the death of Thomas Ludwell late Secretary: with power to execute the same by Deputy.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p. see 12 May 1675.)

Whitehall, March 4, 1678-9.

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. Report prepared by order of the Committee for the disptach of Lord Culpeper is read and approved, whereupon the Earl of Sunderland delivers a paper containing an Instruction to Lord Culpeper for disposal of the Revenue in Virginia approved by his Majesty & to be added to his Lordship's Instructions. Paper read from the Bishop of London concerning the Church in Virginia, Lord Culpeper to confer with the Bishop and to agree upon heads fit to be inserted in his Instructions. Petition of Robert Ayleway read touching his Patent of the Auditor's Place of Virginia, to be postponed until Sec. Coventry be present.

(Colonial Entry Bk No. 105. pp. 317-318.)

---

(2) Robert Bristow, second son of Robert Bristow, Esg. of Ayot St. Lawrence, Hertfordshire, was born in 1643, and settled in Virginia about 1660. He returned to England soon after Bacon's Rebellion and at his death in 1707 was "of the parish of St. Gabriel Fenchurch, London, merchant." He owned large landed estates in Virginia, which were possessed by his descendants (not residents in Virginia) for several generations. See this Magazine XIII, 59-62.

(3) Nicholas Spencer, 2d son of Nicholas Spencer, Esq. of Cople, Bedfordshire, came to Virginia about 1659. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, Secretary of State, President of the Council and Acting Governor. See this Magazine I, 33, 34.

Virginia March 10, 1678-9

MISTRESS SUSAN JEFFREYS(4) TO SECRETARY COVENTRY. Her most deplorable condition caused by Col. Spencer, Lord Culpeper's attorney, who lays claim against her for all perquisites since her husband's arrival, notwithstanding the wording of the King's letter. Has offered to give security, but that will not satisfy therefore 'tis plain they seek her life in malice. Begs his intercession with the King on her behalf.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. pp. 305-306.)

Whitehall, March 14, 1678-9

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL ON REPORT OF COMMITTEE FOR TRADE AND PLANTATIONS of 18 February last touching Lord Culpeper's Commission and Instructions as Governor of Virginia, recommending that his Maj. revoke the Grants(5) to the Earls of St. Alban and Arlington, Lord Culpeper & others according to his gracious promise made to the Country satisfying the patentees for their interests: that the Quit rents be applied to building one considerable Fort: that James Town be speedily rebuilt and be the Metropolis of Virginia as the most ancient & convenient place: that they cannot advise that displaced Councillors should be incapable of being chosen into the Assembly as in Jamaica: that all persons of what degree or quality soever be obliged to take the Oath of Allegiance: that furniture be sent for 200 Dragoons with tents to enable the Govr to mount foot soldiers to prevent incursions from the Indians: that after Lord Culpeper's departure a mace & a sword be sent to Virginia with furniture for his Lordships' chappel also that the presents to the Indian Princes be forthwith delivered to his Lo'p: that all writs be issued in his Maj. name only: that Sir Hen. Chicheley, Colonels Nath. Bacon, Wm. Cole, Daniel Parks, Tho. Swann, Robt. Smith, Nich. Spencer, Rowland Place, Ralph Wormley, Augustine Warner, Jos. Bridger, Major Richard Lee, Major General Custis, and Francis Leigh be continued in the Council: that Colonels Ballard Bray and Philip Ludwell, for their unworthy behaviour and

(4) The widow of Governor Herbert Jeffreys.
(5) The grant for the Northern Neck of Virginia.

demerits be deprived of that honor & trust: and that Col. Robt. Beverley, Clerk of the Assembly and Col. Edward Hill, President of Charles City County who "have appeared unto us under a character of evil fame and behaviour in their respective offices," be put out of all employment & not admitted to any place of trust until his Maj. pleasure be further known: and that Lord Culpeper be ordered, on his arrival in Virginia to signify his Maj. high resentment of the disloyal and seditious declaration of the Assembly about his Maj. Commiss^rs calling for their Original Journals &c. and find out the authors & abettors thereof that they may receive the marks of his Maj. displeasure for this their great presumption; approving said Report and that Lord Culpeper's Commission and Instructions be prepared accordingly and Henry Meere [Meese] added to the List of Councillors for Virginia. 7 pp.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. pp. 266-273.)

Whitehall, March 19, 1678-9

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL ON REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE FOR TRADE AND PLANTATIONS of 10 February last [see abstract] on petition of Elizabeth Dudley, widow, approving same and directing Governor Lord Culpeper, on his arrival in Virginia to cause restitution to be made to the petitioner or her assigns of the fifteen hogsheads of tobacco or the true value thereof.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. pp. 276-8.)

April 1, 1679

THE KING TO THE COUNCIL OF VIRGINIA. His Majesty has received the ill news of the death of Herbert Jeffreys, Governor of Virginia and has understood by their letter to Sec. Coventry that they have received Sir Henry Chicheley as Deputy Governor according to the King's Commission under privy seal heretofore given to him. Well approves of this act of oedience. Is resolved to send Thos. Lord Culpeper, Governor, by the first ships and in the mean time his Maj: requires that all further suits relating to the late Rebellion be superseded until his arrival.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. p. 304.)

Whitehall, April 2, 1679

THE KING TO SIR HENRY CHICHELEY, DEPUTY GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA. Approves of his taking upon himself the command of the Colony as Deputy Governor since the death of Lieut. Gov. Herbert Jeffreys—Intends dispatching Thos. Lord Culpeper, Governor, by the next ships with full instructions to settle matters there and requires that in the mean time all further suits relating to the late Rebellion there be superseded till his arrival.

(Colonial Papers. 1. p.) see 12 May 1675.

Whitehall, April 14, 1679

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. Lord Culpeper's Commission prepared by the Committee is read, but being doubted whether the same being only during pleasure might not prejudice his Lord'p's former grant of the Government which is during life, Ordered that Mr Attorney General prepare such clauses and provisoes as may secure his Lordship's right. Lord Culpeper's Instructions read and approved. Their Lordships taking notice of the Complaints made in Virginia of the heaviness of taxes raised by poll order an Instruction to be prepared that his Lordship recommend to the Assembly the finding out a more equal and easy way for levying money—Sec. Coventry acquaints the Committee in reference to Robt. Ayleway's petition that the place of Auditor of Virginia had been formerly possessed by Col. Nath. Bacon & confirmed to him under his Maj. Sign Manual in 1675 & that Ayleway's Patent ought to be void as obtained without a knowledge of the right already vested in Bacon.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 325-6.)

Whitehall, April 16, 1679

MINUTES OF A COMMITTEE OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS. Acts of Oblivion, of Naturalization, and for raising a public revenue in Virginia read and approved. Several Laws made by Sir Wm. Berkeley on 20 Feb'y 1676-7 to be repealed according to an Instruction given to Lord Culpeper, viz.—Acts of Free Pardon, of Attainder, inflicting Pains, Penalties and Fines

upon great offendors, for the relief of loyal persons who have suffered loss by the late Rebels, limiting times of receipt and payment of public tobaccos, regulating Ordinaries and the prices of Liquors, disposing Amerciaments upon past actions, concerning servants who were out in Rebellion, & for laying of Parish levies: as also two Acts passed at Middle Plantation 10 Oct. 1677 viz:—for delivery of stray horses &c. and for signing executions on judgments.

Their Lordships having thus finished Lord Culpeper's Commission and Instructions & the Acts before mentioned agree to report that same be transmitted to Sec. Coventry to be dispatched with all speed: also that the Master of the Ordnance take care to change the powder now in Virginia. All which is ordered same day in Council & the papers delivered to Sec. Coventry on 20th Inst.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 105. pp. 327-328.)

Whitehall, April 16, 1679

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL. That Lord Culpeper's Commission and Instructions and the Acts of Oblivion and Naturalization be transmitted to Secretary Coventry to be dispatched with all convenient speed.

(Colonial Entry Bk. No. 80. p. 312.)

May 1, 1679

MEMORANDUM OF RECEIPT BY JA: KENVIN of papers from William Blathwayt relating to the case of the Widow Dudley of Virginia, including her petitions to the King, Sir Wm. Berkeley and the Commissioners of Virginia—together six papers.

(Colonial Papers.)

SIR HENRY CHICHELEY TO SECRETARY COVENTRY.
(Copy)
Read in Council July 25, 1679.

Virginia, May 20, 1679.

Right Hon'ble

The Inclosed is a Letter from the General Assembly of Virginia to His most Sacred Ma^{ty}, being a compendious Narrative of this Countrys sufferings and our humble supplications for such relief as to His Maties wisdom shall seem meet. Upon which I beg leave to enlarge in this Address to your worthy Self. To whose promice the affairs of this place do properly belong and of whose Justice and favour to Our low and calamitous condition myself and the whole Colony are well assured by many past instances. The present Sessions the Assembly received complaints from the Countys Isle Wight, Nanzemond, York and James City in relation to the quartering of His Maties Soldiers. The two first named by virtue of a Warrant from the late Lieuten^{t} Governor having received command to quarter and provide for Major Mutlows Company from the 14th July 1677 till the 16th January following for which they are still indebted to the said Inhabitants the full and just sum of two hundred and forty nine pounds six shillings and three pence as by account under the hand of John Tong Lieutenant of that Company dated the 26th January 1677-8 exhibited by their Burgesses doth appear. The two last mentioned have Yet had no satisfaction for twelve months Quarters and provisions allowed to His Maties Soldiers now under the Command of Captain William Morris whose pay for no part of that time is yet arrived. So that His Maties subjects and Soldiers of, and in, this Country are equally distressed; To this may be added that our late troubles and distractions with the frequent incursions of Indians for three years last past and recent murther of our frontier people hath so much impaired our Stocks that the remnant of them will barely give assistance for defence of the Country and support of our familys: I therefore humbly beg Your Honor that in consideration of the vast charge the Inhabitants of this Country have been and daily are at, for pre-

servation of this weak and depopulated place you would be pleased to further our humble motion to his Ma^{ty} for release of all Arrears of Quit Rents which having been so long due and amounting to so vast a Sum, would otherwise fall heavy upon all and especially the poorest, with this addition that, for such time as may be agreeable to His Maties Royal Compassion the Money growing due from the same may be appropriated to defray part of the Expence necessary for our safety. For these and all other Favours past and future I have nothing to offer but constant gratitude and assurance that in what I shall be capable will ever be ready to own the Honor I now assume by subscribing

Right Hon'ble
Your most [humble] servant
Hen'y Chicheley

To the Right Hon'ble
Mr Sec'y Coventry
Principal Sec^{ties}
of State.

A true Copy teste
W. Davis.

SIR HENRY CHICHELEY TO THE KING.
(Copy)
Read in Council July 25, 1679.

May it please Your most Excellent Ma^{ty}

The late intestine divisions of this Your Maties Colony of Virginia together with the Charge of a tedious War with the Indians who daily make Incursions and sometimes murthers upon us have reduced us to a poor and distressed Estate and enforced us to interrupt Your Maties most mighty affairs with this our humble supplication in behalf of Y M Soldiers and ourselves. The first of which we have out of the small remnants of our S xxx furnisht with what is necessary for a twelve month past and as in duty bound shall continue our care towards them till Your Ma^{ty} shall be pleased to commiserate

both our conditions and in regard of the great losses we have of late sustained We hope that Your Royal Goodness will pardon us our request for remission of all Arrears of Quit Rents due to Your Sacred Ma^{ty} and for the supply of the excessive charge we must necessarily undergo in defense of our Frontiers that for such time as Your Royal Wisdom shall allow the same be to that use appropriated.

That Your Ma^{ty} may be protected by the King of Kings from all Temporal and Spiritual Enemies and Reigne long in peace and prosperity are the incessant prayers of

Your Maties most humble and most obedient subjects and servants

Hen: Chicheley
Mathew Kemp Speaker
A true Copy teste
W. Davis.

At the Court at Whitehall the 25th July 1679.

Upon reading this day at the Board a Letter from Sr Hen: Chicheley and the Speaker of the Assembly of Virginia to His Ma'ty together with a Letter from Sr H. Chicheley to the Right Hon'ble Mr Sec. Coventry. It is ordered that the same be referred unto the Right Hon'ble the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations to take care therein.

John Nicholas.
A true Copy teste
Wm. Davis.

At the Council Chamber at Whitehall the sixth of August 1679.

Present

Lord Archbishop of Canterbury	Earl of Halifax
Lord President	Earl of Radnor
Earl of Bridgewater	Mr Sec. Coventry
Earl of Essex	Mr Chanc^{r} of the Excheq^{r}

Mr Powle

The Right Hon'ble the Lords of His Maties most Hon'ble Privy Council having perused a Letter from Sr H. Coventry [Chicheley] Lieuten^{t} Governor of Virginia to the Right Hon'ble Mr Sec'y Coventry dated the 20th May last as also our Address to His Ma'ty from the Great Assembly of Virginia in behalf of themselves and His Maties soldiers for the payment of the Arrears due unto the Country and them and for remission of all Arrears of Quit Rents due unto His Ma'ty as likewise for the Appropriation of such as shall hereafter become due during such term as His Ma'ty shall think fit for the defence of the Colony and their Lordships understanding that the Lords Commissioners of his Maties Treasury had taken care to provide for their full pay until the first day of Jul. last exclusively think fit to desire the Right Hon'ble Mr Sec'y Coventry to prepare a Letter for the Royal Signature unto the Right Hon'ble the Lord Culpeper His M. Governor of Virginia directing His Lordship to acquaint the Assembly upon his arrival in Virginia with the care His Ma'ty had taken at the instance of the Lord Culpeper, before the receipt of their Address for payment of their Arrears due unto the Soldiers unto the time above mentioned and for the continuance of the same for the future without any charge or other trouble unto the Colony than only to give credit for their Quarters at two shillings per week each until Money for their discharge can be from time to time remitted. And as for the Quit Rents that His Ma'ty on the Representation of the Lord Culpeper hath also had that matter long before the receipt of that Address under His Royal consideration and will shortly give such Orders as shall consist with His service and ease of the people.

And lastly, to acquaint them that he hath sent some laws to them and given the Lord Culpeper Instructions to signify His further pleasure and Command to them, to which he expects a cheerful and ready compliance assuring them on all occasions of his particular care and Kindness for that His Maties Colony. And whereas it is convenient for His Maties service that the Lord Culpepers Additional Commission dated the

be not published until some time after His Lordships arrival the Right Hon'ble Mr Sec'y Coventry is likewise desired to prepare an Instruction to the Ld Culpeper whereby his Lordship may be directed to forbear the publication of the said Additional Commission for the space of six Months after his arrival in Virginia if his Lorship shall so think fit.

A true Copy teste
W. Davis.

(To be Continued)

VIRGINIA GLEANING IN ENGLAND.

Thomas Atkins of Chard, county Somerset, being aged but of good and perfect memory. Will 10 August 1641; proved 20 July 1653. I give my body to be buried in the churchyard of Chard according to the discretion of my friends. All such implements and household stuff as my wife Elizabeth had before I married her, I wholly bequeath and redeliver to her again. Out of my own proper goods I bequeath unto Anna Sellwood, my daughter, my bedstead now standing in the parlour, with the truckle bedstead under him. To Mathew Sellwood, my grandchild and godson, my small square table board standing in the hall. To Sarah Sellwood, my grandchild, my small chest. All the rest of my own proper goods I bequeath to Thomas Sellwood and Abraham Sellwood, whom I ordain my executors, provided that all the goods and chattels that were bequeathed to me by Elizabeth Atkins, my aunt deceased, shall remain to the use of my wife, to use with her own, as formerly she hath done, without any voluntary spoil thereof, for such time as she doth remain my widow. I do appoint to be my overseers in trust for the benefit of my executors, my brother William Atkins and my cousin William Atkins the younger, desiring them of their loves, as much as in them lies, that this my will may be performed according to my true intent and meaning. Per me Thomas Atkins. Witnesses: John Boyle, Amfusten Walker. Proved by Thomas Sellwood one of the executors named, with power reserved to grant a like commission to the abovesaid Abraham Sellwood *Brent*, 166.

John Atkins, of Chard, Somerset, merchant, died in 1636. His will, published in this Magazine XI, 150, shows that he had a grandson, John Atkins, then living in Virginia. The will also names a brother Thomas Atkins, probably the testator above.]

WILLIAM BEDELL, of greate Catworth in the Countie of Hunt., Gent., Dated 27 May 1612. Proved 6 July 1612. My bodie to bee buried in the Chauncell of great Catworth aforesaid And as concerninge the disposition of my landes, Tenements, and Hereditaments. I doe devise as followeth: All the Ferme called the Brooke end Ferme in Catsworth with all landes, Tenemts, and hereditamts. thereunto belonging, nowe in the tenure of Silvester Bedell my sonne, and all those twoe Cottages in the tenure of Michaell Smith and Edward Kinge, to my sonne George Bedell. To hold the same during the life of Elizabeth my wyfe And after her decease the same to Henry Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body, and for want of such issue to George Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body, and for want of such yssue to Francis Bedell my sonne and the heires males of his body, and for want of such yssue to Silvester Bedell, my eldest sonne and the heires males of his body, and for want of such yssue to the right heires of mee the said William Bedell for ever. All the residue of my messuages, houses, landes, and Hereditaments, in the Towne parish and Feildes of great Catworth aforesd. in the Counties of Hunt, and Northampton to my wife Elizabeth during her lyfe and after her decease the same to my said sonne George Bedell and to the heires males of his body. And for default of such yssue then to Henry Bedell my sonne, and to the heires males of his body And for default of such yssue then to Francis Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body. And for default of such yssue then to Silvester Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body. And for default of such yssue to the right heires of mee forever. All that my wood and woodgrounds in the parish of Ellington and my meadowe and meadowe grounde in Waybridge meadowe in the parish of Awconburye and my Closes in the parish of Brington in the Countie of Hunt, to my said wife Elizabeth during her lyfe, and after her decease to my said Sonne George Bedell and to the heires males of his body. And for want of such yssue to Henry Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body. And for want of such yssue to Francis Bedell my sonne and to the heires males of his body. And for want of such yssue then to Silvester Bedell my sonne and to the

heires males of his body. And for default of such yssue then to the use of the right heires of mee for ever. Also to my said wife Elizabeth, my two Cottages with the landes thereunto belonging in Bythorne in the said County of Hunt, during her lyfe, and after her decease to my grandchild Willm Bedell sonne of my said sonne Sylvester Bedell and to the heires males of his body.

And whereas I have reserved certain pastures and inclosed groundes called Moldesworth olde als Moldesworth wolde in Moldesworth in the County of Hunt. for the terme of my lyfe and twelve yeares after my decease, as appeareth in the conveyance betweene my brother in lawe Mr James Pickering and me, my will is that all my stocke of Cattell going upon the said groundes shalbe sould towards the payment of my debts. And that the groundes and Closes shalbe given to Elizabeth my wife.

To my daughters Dorothy and Jane Bedell, one hundred poundes a peece. I will that all my Writings concerninge my landes in Kymbolton shalbe kept by my wife unto the use of my Executors. . . . . And my said landes, Tenements, and Hereditaments, in the towne and parish of Kymbolton, aforesaid, in the County of Hunt. to my Executors and their heires to be sold by them for the payinge of my debtes, (except that Messuage wherein widdow Carter now dwelleth, which I give to said sonne Francis Bedell and to his heires for ever upon Condicon that hee paye the some of one hundred poundes towardes the payinge of my debtes). And to my said wife Elizabeth that Tenement in Moldesworth olde wherein–Petiver nowe dwelleth and the Close there called Petivers Yarde containing by estimacon eight acres and also that other Close there called Horse Close containing by estimacon xxiiij acres.

To my Cosen Bate and his wyfe, Tenn shillings apeece.

To such Children as my sonne in lawe Mr Henry Godfrey hath by my daughter Ann, deceased, twenty marks, to be equally devided amongst them. And to my said sonne in lawe Henry Godfrey his wife that nowe is, tenne shillings. And to their lytle sonne Henry Godfrey tenn shillings.

To my daughter Bedell, the wife of my sonne Silvester Bedell, Tenn shillings. "And to my grandchild Willm Bedell,

twentie shillings and to the rest of their Children, tenne shillings apeece."

To my daughter Elizabeth Robinson twentie shillings.

To my sonne in lawe Richard Dixey and Bridgett his wyfe, my daughter Twenty shillings apeece, and to every one of their Children, tenne shillings apeece.

To my twoe sonnes Gabriell Bedell and John Bedell, Five poundes a peece.

"To Sr Thomas Bedell xxvs. and to my Nephew Capell Bedell his sonne, tenne shillings. And to every of the Children of my brother Sr John Bedell tenn shillings a peece other then to the said Sr Thomas Bedell."

My will is that George Bedell my sonne shall remaine with my wyfe and have his meate and drinke and lodgeinge free, "to the end hee may loke to her husbandry and bee a good husband for her profitt." I have in my yron Chest in great Cattworth thirty poundes and also a gold ringe having my seale of Armes uppon it, which was my fathers. I give thereof to my said wife one peece of gold beinge a "portigne," to my said sonne Silvester one other "portagne". and also the said gold ringe.

To my sonne Petitt and my daughter Petitt, twenty shillings apeece, And to every of the Children of my said daughter Petitt, tenne shillings a peece, And to every of the Children of my said daughter Pettitt tenne shillings a peece.

To my sonne Hawes and Mary my daughter his wife, twenty shillings apeece, and to my other Children George, Henry, Dorothy and Jane, twenty shillings apeece.

To my Cosen Mr Gabriell Clarke, tenn shillings. To Mr Mosley and his wyfe, Five shillings a peece. To the Towne of Hamton for the use of the poore, Five poundes. And to the towne of greate Catworth other Five poundes to the use of the poore. And to the towne of Moldesworth other Five poundes to the use of the poore. To the townes of Brington, Laighton, Stowe, Tilbroke, lytle Catworth and Covington to the uses of the poore, Five shillings apeece to every of the said townes. To my godchildren xijd a peece (other then to Willm Mosley) my godsonne to whom I give Twenty shillings. To every of my servants, Five shillings apeece. To the poore of great Cat-

worth, Twenty shillings to be distributed amongst them on the daye of my buriall.
Executors. my said wife Elizabeth Bedell and my sonnes George Bedell and Francis Bedell.

Overseers. Sr John Bedell, my brother, and my brother in lawe, Mr Thomas Wightman and my said sonne in lawe Mr Henry Godfrey.
Residuary Legatees. my said Executors.

Thomas Whitman, Thomas Emery, Gabriell Clarke, Brudenell Mosley: Witnesses.

Proved 6 July 1612 by the Executors named. *64 Fenner.*

[Dorothy, daughter of William Bedell, the testator, who, in the Huntingtonshire Visitation of 1613, is styled "of Moldsworth," married first, Edward Burwell, of Harlington, Bedfordshire (and was mother of Lewis Burwell, emigrant to Virginia) and secondly Roger Wingate, Esq. of Bedfordshire, who was Treasurer of Virginia 1639-1641. The sons Gabriel and John were probably in Virginia. Gabriel and John Beadle (a frequently used spelling of Bedell) came in the Second Supply in 1608, and Captain Smith, who soon afterwards took Gabriel on an expedition, called him "a gallant" and "a proper gentleman." John and Gabriel Bedell were members of the Virginia Company. Sr John Bedell whose will follows, was brother of William Bedell, above, and Sir John was a son of Sir John. See also Keith's *Ancestry of Benjamin Harrison*, pp. 34, 35.]

Sr John Bedell of Hamerton in the Countie of Hunt, knight. Dated 25 Feb. 1612-13. Proved 23 Apr. 1613. To my sonne Henry Bedell, All those my Messuages, Fermes, Cottages, Closes, landes, Tenements medowes and hereditaments in Steple Giddinge in the Countie of Hunt, to the said Henry Bedell and to his heires for ever. And upon Condicon that he shall not Convaie the same to any person or persons, one Annuytie of Twentie poundes to be taken out of my Mannor of Wolley wth thappurtenances in the Countie of Hunt.

To John Bedell, my sonne, All that my Mannor of Wolley, and all my messuages, Fermes, Cottages, laandes, tenements, and hereditaments in Wolley aforesaid, And all my meadowes, landes, Tenements, and hereditaments in Anconburie in the said Countie of Hunt, And the Donation, free disposicon and right of pronage of the Rectorie, pishe Churche, and psonage

of Wolley. And the donation of the Rectorie, parish Church, and parsonage of Thurning in the said Countie of Hunt. The said Annuytie of Twentie poundes given to my said sonne Henry out of the Mannor. of Wolley accepted. To the said John Bedell and to his heires for ever.

And whereas I have purchased of my sonne Sr Thomas Bedell certen landes in Cottesbroke conteyninge fyftene acres more or lesse. In Condicon my said sonne be pleased to accept the same in satisfaccon of his porcon of my goods I doe give unto him all the said fiftene acres, to hold to him and his heires for ever. To Capell Bedell, sonne of my said sonne Sr Thomas Bedell, my Bason and Ewer of Silver

To my daughter Francis Bedell, the some of foure hundred poundes, and all my howsehold stuffe in my house in Hamerton aforesaid. And whereas there is Due to me by my sonne in lawe Mr George Catesbie upon a statute the some of Threescore poundes. I doe forgive the said Debt, and will that my Eexecutor shall deliver unto him the said statute to be cancelled. And upon Condicon that my saide sonne Catesbie doe not molest or troble my Executor I doe give unto everie of the Children of my said sonne and daughter Catesbie nowe livinge wch shall accomplish the age of one and Twentie yeres. Twentie poundes a peece, to be paid unto them as they accomplish their severall ages of one and Twentie yeares.

To every of the Children of my sonne in lawe Sr Seymor Knightley and my Daughter Dorothie his wife nowe livinge wch shall accomplish the age of one and twentie yeares, Twentie poundes a peece to be paide unto them severall when they shall accomplish the ages of one and Twentie yeares.

Towardes the repaire of the Church of Hamerton, Five poundes, To the poore people in Hamerton, aforesaid, fourtie shillings. To the poore people of Buckworth, Laighton, Oldweston, Steple Gidding and Coppingford, To each Townshipp, Twentie shillings a peece, to be distributed wth the adivce of my *"Tennt (sic), *[Tenant?] Phillipp Hustwhatt of Wolley aforesaid.

To every one of my yeoman servants, that have dwelt with me two yeares, Fortie shillings a peece And to everie one of my

maide servants wch have dwelt with me one yeare. Five shillings a peece.

Residuary Legatee and Sole Executor, my said sonne John Bedell. Supervisor, my said sonne Henrie Bedell.
RO: STEVENS) Witness.

Proved 23 April 1613 by the Sole Executor named. 28 *Capell.*

SIR THOMAS BEDELL, Knighte, *of Hammerton, Hunts. Dated 5 July 1613. Administration 21 July 1613.
*Pro Act Book.

To be interred in Hammerton in the Countie of Huntingdon in the churche there at the feete of my Fathers Interment.

I commend the Tuition and guardianshipp of my sonne Capell Bedell, during his minority to Sir Arthur Capell, Knighte, his grandfather. I will that all the debtes which I owe be dulye payed: to Mr Woodrooffe at the Golden Bell in Cheapeside, twelve poundes.

To my brother Henrye Beadle, threescore poundes. "To my brother John Bedell, the debts (sic) touching which I referre my selfe to my specialties sealed to hym." I have in the handes of my cosin William Smithe a bond for the satisfying of twoe thousand poundes with the Interest which is due to me from the Companye of the Adventurers to East India.

All my goods Cattells, moveable and unmoveable reall or personall of what nature soever, to my said sonne Capell Bedell. And for the ymploying and disposing of all my sayed goods to the best benefitt of my sayd sonne during his minority, I doe appointe Sir Arthur Capell to take the Chardge. Out of which sayd goods I doe except suche parte as I shall hereafter dispose of vizt:

To my Cozen Silvester Bedell, one guilt bowle with a Cover. To my brother Harry Bedell, one hundred poundes. To my brother John Bedell, twoe hundred poundes and twoe gueldinges which I nowe have in the Citie of London. To my Sister Bridget Catesbye, one hundred pounds. To my Sister Dame Dorothie Knighteley, one hundred poundes. To my Sister Francis Bedell, one hundred poundes. To Sr Arthur Capell Knighte, one Bason and an Ewer of Silver, twoe Salts of Silver,

three Silver Bolles, twelve silver spoones, and One hundred poundes. To my Cosin Mr Henry Smithe, Doctor of phisicke, Twelve peeces of gould of twentie and twoe shillings the peece. To Mr John Bignett, Minister at Hamerton, fyve poundes. To John Baker, tenne poundes. To Thomas Else, my servant, tenne poundes. To my servant John Hill, fower poundes. To John Tall, of Woolley in Huntingdonshire, a Sorrell nagg which I have at Hammerton. To Moncke and Woodall, my twoe Sheppards at Hammerton, fyve poundes a peece. To my servant Richard Allen, fortie shillings. To my servant, Thomas Brilston, fyve poundes, whome I doe entreate Sr Arthur Capell to receyve into his service. To John Frier, my servant, fortye shillings. To my servant, Thomas Pitman, fower poundes. To my servant, Solomon Johnson, tenne poundes. To every of Sr Arthur Capells Children a peece of gould of twoe and twentie shillings. To my brother in lawe Mr Arthur Capell, a blacke Cloathe cloake lyned with plush. To the poore Inhabitants of Hammerton, fyve poundes. And to the poore Inhabitants uppon my parte of the Land in Cottesbrooke, tenne poundes. To the Reparacon and use of the Parish Churche of Hammerton, fyve poundes. To the Reparacon of the parishe churche of Cottesbroke, fyve pound To the children of both my Sisters the Ladye Knighteley and my Sister Catesbye. to every of them a peece of gould of twoe and twentie shillings. To Sr Francis Canlton [Caulton], Knighte, fyve poundes.

Sole Executor, my said sonne Capell Bedell.

Thomas Cannon, Henry Smithe, Maurice Canon, Solomon Johnson, Johane Bayhe, Witnesses.

21 July 1613. Administration of the goods etc. of the late Sr Thomas Bedell Knight, granted to Sr Arthur Capell, Knight, during the minority of Capell Bedell the Exor named. 87 *Capell.*

John Belfield of Paignton in the Countie of Devon. gent. Dated 24 Feb. 14 Jas. Proved 4 July 1617.

My bodie to be buried in the Church of Paington.

To the poore of the parish of Paington, the some of fower poundes, to bee disposed by the discreacon of David Davies, vicker of Paington and Allen Belfeilde my sonne.

To Allen Belfeild, my sonne and Amies Bickford, daughter of Gregory Bickford of Rattery whome the said Allen intendeth to take to wife, all those cloases of land called or knowne by the name of the North Kill parke. And alsoe one other Cloase of land called the plaine Close before Huckwill "Yeat" [?Yeat: that] with all and singuler thappurtenaunces "which before this tyme unto the said two Closes of land were allotted and laid out and were parcell of Goodrington parke" all wch premisses doe containe *[yt: it] by estimacon threescore and six acres of land be *yt more or lesse and are seituate within the parish of Paington aforesaid, to have and to hold unto the said Allen Belfeild and Ames Bickford and their assignes duringe the lives of John Belfeild the younger, Richard Belfeild and Suzan Belfeild Children of the said John Belfeild thelder and every of them longest livinge the said Allen Belfeild and Ames Bickford payeinge therefore all such Rentes and agreementes as the said John Belfeild and his assignes or any of them are bounde to pay and performe for the same during the said term.

I will that my sonne Allen Belfeild shall demise and lease unto John Belfeild the younger, my sonne, "Flatchers bargaine" and "Fosses Browne Parkes," for terme of two lives in reverson of the lives alreadie in possession by deed sufficiente in the lawe of which twoe lives the said John to be one. My sonne Allen shall lykewise lease unto Richard Belfield, my sonne, two lives in one Tenemente called Brownswill otherwise Browneswill lying in Holberton in revertion of the state alreadie in the same graunted by deede sufficiente in the lawe of which two lives the said Richard to be one.

To Catherin, my daughter, the some of five poundes.

To Margaret Belfeild, my daughter, one hundred poundes.

To my daughter Joane Belfeild, the some of one hundred poundes to be paide to each of them at their marriage daies.

To each of the Children of my daughters, vizt. Marie, Catherine, and Cicellie, fower Ewes and foure lambes.

To my daughter Suzan, her childe, yf she be with child, fower Ewes and fower lambes.

Residuary Legatee and Sole Executrix, Margarett my wife.

Davide Davies "Vicario de Paington," Edward Sweatland and Allen Belfeild, Jacob Emott, Witnesses.

Proved 4 July 1617 by the Sole Executrix named. 74 *Weldon*.

[In a note to Worthy's *Devonshire Wills*, there is reference to a Toby Belfield, clothier, who was a witness to the will of Wm Adam of Paignton, 1688. Worthy states that subsequently the Belfields acquired property at Paignton, known as "Primley" by marriage with Finney and the manor of Leworth in the parish of Heatherington. In Paignton Church is a memorial inscription to Allan Belfield, 1800. The latter endowed a school at Paignton with the sum of £1000. John Finney Belfield, son of Rev. Finney Belfield, succeeded to Primley and other property at Paignton in 1858. The will proved here gives much earlier information in regard to the family. The index to Devonshire wills, administrations and estate accounts in the Consistory Court of the Bishop of Exeter (Harlein Society, Vol. II) contains references to the following: Alane Belfield, of Mauldon, 1548; Allan Belfield, Paignton, 1715; Allen Belfield (reference to p. 23. but not there); Elizabeth Belfield, Paignton, 1640; John Belfield, Paignton, 1567; Margaret Belfield, Paignton, 1639; Richard Belfield, Paignton, 1589; Richard Belfield, Paignton, 1664; Thomas Belfield, Chardleigh, 1669; Tobias Belfield, Paignton, 1707; Tobias Belfield, Paignton, 1748; Tobye Belfield, Paignton, 1626; William Belfield, Paignton, 1593, and William Belfield, Paignton, 1666. The will of Thomas Belffylde or Belfield, Paignton, 1573 is also noted. Dr. Joseph Belfield emigrated from England and settled in Richmond County, Va., prior to 1707. His grandson John Belfield, born 1725, left a short account of the family in which he stated that Dr. Joseph Belfield was son of John Belfield of England. This John Belfield would have been born about 1635. Dr. Belfield was the ancestor of a well-known Virginia family. It would seem from the information here given that any one especially interested might with the aid of a competent English genealogist, probably trace the ancestry of the emigrant.]

TITHABLES OF PITTSYLVANIA COUNTY, 1767.

(Contributed by Mrs. N. E. Clement, Chatham, Va.)

(Concluded from p. 192.)

	Tithes	Land
Swinfield Hill		150
Austin Shot	1	
Thomas Shoat	1	
John Vanbibber	1	400
Henson McDonal	1	
Francis McGuier	1	
John McGuier	1	
Thomas Carter	1	
John McGuier Jr	1	
Merry McGuier	1	
Paul Henson	1	
John Henson	1	
William Henson	1	
James Standeford	1	
William Murphy	1	113
Miller Dogget	1	
Richard Hough	1	
Joshua Barton	1	107
David Barton	1	
Isaac Barton	1	
William Ferguson	1	
Thomas Miller & William Sumers	2	
Francis Bird	1	240
Andrew Ferguson	1	
Joseph Rentfro		280
Robert Jones, Thomas Jones & Henry Jones	3	520
John Jones	1	400

Robert Jones Jr.	1	220
Philip Smith	1	150
William Cook	1	610
John Fushon	1	225
James Rentfro jr	1	
James Rentfro Sen, Joseph Rentfro & Peter Rentfro	3	600
Veath Dilingham & negro Jeany	2	100
Peter Vanbibber, jr	1	200
Isaac Vanbibber	1	
Mack Foster Sen	1	
Richard Pearis's tithes are, William Lowry, negroes: Jack, Harry, Jeany, Hannah & Silviah	6	
Anthony Litle	1	170
Christopher Lackenair	1	
John Meadly	1	200
John Dilingham	1	
James Lamb	1	
William Webb	1	
John Ramsey	1	230
Joshua Weaver & Isaac Weaver	2	
Holden McGee	1	
Edward Richards	1	140
William Dilingham & Joshua Dilingham	2	93
Amos Richardson & negro Moll	2	150
Benj. Jenkins	1	300
Robert Tormet	1	
John Hall	1	200
Francis Farley	1	
Wm. Heard, George Heard & Wm. Beans	3	400
Thomas Bird	1	
Richard Shoat	1	
Jeremiah Muray	1	526
John Stevenson	1	
John Callaway, negroes Flemen, Asher, Nan & Nell	5	500
Abraham Motley & negro Peter	2	

Stephen Heard & Jesse Heard	2	460
Hugh Innes, James Parberry, negroes Juba, Keat & Peat	5	1245
John Heard	1	165
Stephen Heard jr	1	247
Lewes Jenkins & negro Jack	2	1250
John Justice Constable		100
William Henson	1	
William Witcher (28) & negro Sawney	2	100
William Keeny	1	190
James Wade	1	
Daniel McKenzie	1	
William Atkinson & Owen Atkinson	2	200
John Good jr	1	600
Joseph Deal	1	
Richard Shockley	1	50
Daniel Witcher	1	191
David Dalton & Benj. Dalton	2	650
Samuel Paterson	1	1687
John Witcher	1	190
Robt Dalton, John Dalton & Robt Dalton jr	3	30
John Dalton		45
Richard Walding, John Walding & negroes Jed, Jeffry, Greace, Phoebe & Lucy	7	500
Richard Adkinson	1	50
William Lawson	1	76
William Hodges & Thomas Neville	2	
John Hensley	1	
David Polly		150
James Dalton	1	65
Henry Atkinson	1	
Jacob Seartin	1	
James Stewart & James Stewart jr	2	
Arch Graham & negro Robin	2	750

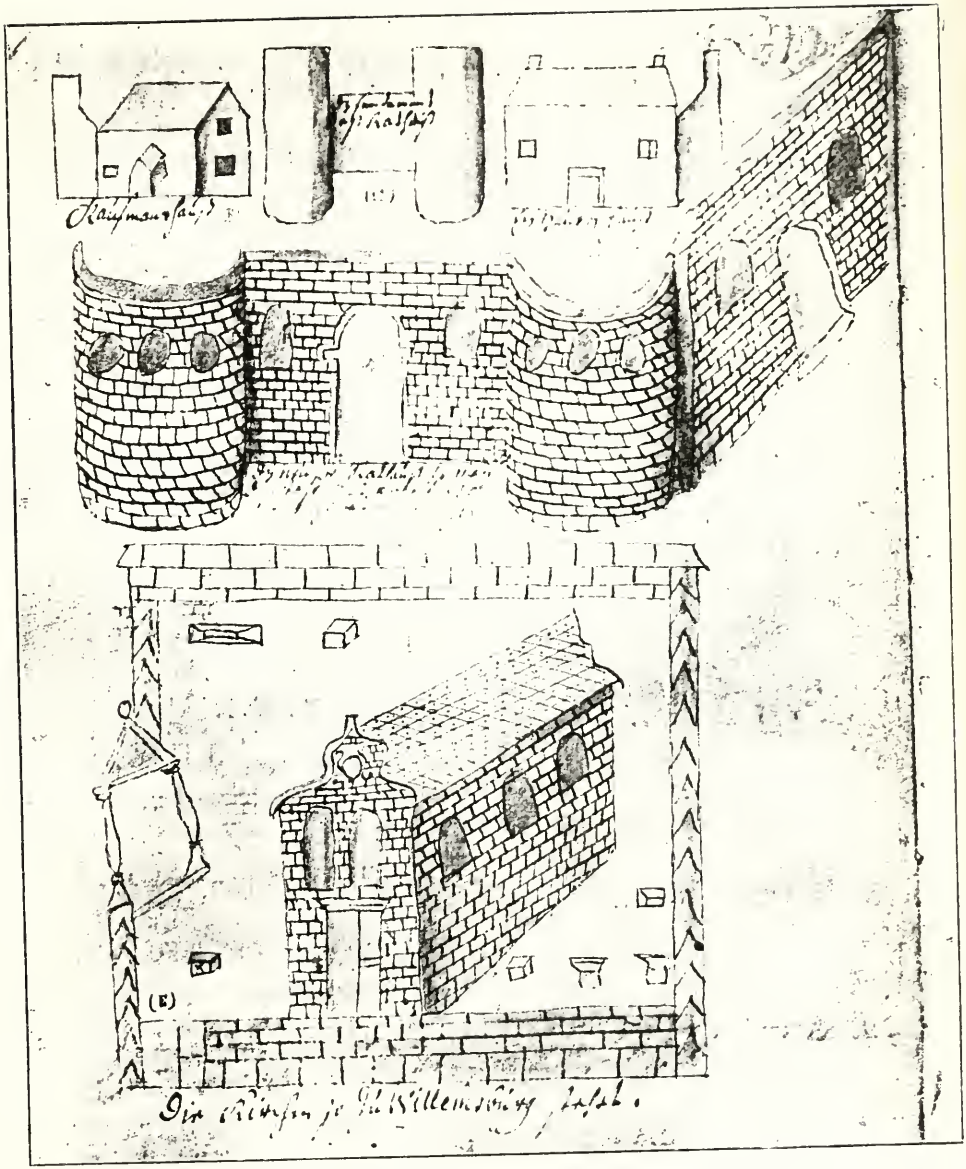
(28.) William Witcher took the oath of Vestryman 1768. Was member of County Committee of Safety. Appointed Captain of Militia in 1775. Commanded a Company of Militia in Indian Expedition of 1776. When the Regiment under Col. Christian pushed on into Tenn., a force of 200 men were left under the command of Capt. Witcher to guard Fort Patrick Henry. (Pittsylvania Pension Papers).

George Philige, Thom. Lawrence, John Blackesley, negroes Tobias, Robin, Tom, Madey, Betty	8	
John Hunsman	1	
Richard Remington	1	
John Heard	1	
William Beams	1	
William Graham		298
Nicholas Alley	1	635
John Willis	1	
Benjamine Griffith	1	130
Jonathan Davis	1	
Jacob Adkinson	1	
Edward Wade & negro Pegg	2	200
David Wade	1	326
William Tyrie	1	
Jacob Stober	1	
Jeremiah Stober	1	
William Hodges	1	
Sherwood Adkins	1	
Thomas Potter	1	400
John Simons	1	150
Bragan Prunty & Robt Prunty	2	
Benj Dunkin		
John Anderson	1	
Richard Perryman & negro Billiak	2	
John Midleton	1	
Nathaniel Evans		315
Hezekiah Pigg	1	
Adam Stilts	1	

Signed

Hugh Innes.

(29.) John Wimbish, a justice of peace & vestryman for Pittsylvania County. There is an order Calendar of State Papers that "the enemy (British) having returned from Dan River, Mr. Wm. McCaw is appointed to that station, and to keep his principal post at Wimbish's stores at Peytonsburg."



WILLIAMSBURG FROM MICHEL'S DRAWINGS.

(A) The New Council House which they began building this year 1702; (B) Home of Merchant; (C) Foundation (ground plan) of Statehouse; (D) Farmer's house; (E) The church which stands at Williamsburg.

Report of the Journey of Francis Louis Michel from Berne, Switzerland, to Virginia, October 2, 1701-December 1, 1702.

Part III

Translated and edited by Prof. Wm. J. Hinke, Ph. D.

After we had stayed there eight days in order to complete all our preparations, and had also taken water on board (namely twenty-two tons), we weighed anchor on a Sunday, at noon, while the weather was beautiful and a good but weak wind prevailed. We sailed that day a few miles down the Bay. At evening the sky was covered with very dark clouds towards the north. There was hardly time to take in the sails and drop the anchor. It is a dangerous place, because of a sand-bank which extends very far. There were only four fathoms of water where we were lying. The clouds scattered after a short rain, no dangerous storm having developed. On the following morning we came in time to the place of assembly, where we found most of the fleet together and ready to sail. We were almost the last. On our arrival we shot off six cannons, which was answered by the commander with one. It was a pleasure to see the large number of ships, namely 154 in number. After we had lain there a day and a half (about this time the wheat harvest as well as the summer fruit and peaches were past) the time appointed for the ships to assemble at Quiquedam had come, when most of the ships were riding at anchor at the mouth of the Bay. The ship Nassau, together with others, was still up the river, but one Sunday it appeared and cast anchor before Yorktown.

As the time was up and I saw no possibility of traveling farther by land or water, because of the heat, and, as I also felt weak because of the many fatigues and thought the fever was

coming upon me, I concluded, as I was compelled to return, not to let this opportunity slip by. I had myself, therefore, first of all taken to Captain Schmid's ship, who had come back from Guine and was an honest man. He offered to take me to England free of charge, if I would agree to do guard duty like the others, who are relieved every four hours. But I was so weak that I could not accept this. He then said, if I would give him 40 shillings I would not be compelled to work, the ordinary charge is 60 shillings. However, I did not accept, because it was a little ship, having every place filled with tobacco to such an extent, that there was no place of shelter in case of rain. Moreover, I rather preferred to go to my old captain [of the Nassau], who showed me much kindness at all times and all of whose sailors I knew. Besides, the doctor, a Saxon, was my friend and the ship was better supplied with provisions than any other ship in the fleet. Experience confirmed this, because the other ships frequently sent for provisions from ours. In addition to the above mentioned reasons, I was induced to take passage on the ship Nassau, because Mr. Foes,(1) who several times showed me kindness in his home, was also a passenger, intending to take a journey to England. Hence I thought, if sickness should overtake me, I would be among people who would render me assistance.

When a good wind arose, the signal was given [to start] with a cannon shot and a blue flag, divided to the middle and running out into two points, which was fastened to a yard of the small mast. Before the ships could hoist their sails fully, the wind subsided again, hence they had to ride at anchor till the following morning, the 2nd of July, when they left with a good but weak wind. But the wind fell again, so that we with many other ships had to drop anchor. Before we had lain there an hour, the wind started once more from south-west. We hoisted our sails and commenced to advance rapidly. Thus far the Governor had accompanied us on a warship, which is ordered to stay in that country. To make my story short, we sailed successfully many a day until we struck a calm which lasted two days, while it was very hot. Then we had good wind again, but we

(1) For Rev. Stephen Fouace see MAGAZINE, XXIV, 23, Note 37.

ran too far south and lost it again by and by, for the farther north one gets, the more wind is met. On the return journey [to Europe] there is mostly good wind, so that the trip is commonly made within eight to ten weeks. During that time I had several attacks of fever, but it developed only twice. Meanwhile we sailed very successfully with beautiful weather. However, a Captain West, who commanded the ship Bristol, died. He had been on our ship four days before, because he was a good friend of our captain. It is customary when a captain dies to lower the flag at half-mast and to fire off two shots, a minute apart. The carpenter came to fetch a box from our ship in order to make a coffin. On the following day he was lowered into the ocean. The flags were hoisted as usual [at half mast]. All the captains who knew him gave each a salute of four shots, every minute a shot. After a large number of shots had thus been fired, the pilot, who took over the command in the captain's absence, expressed his thanks by firing all his cannons slowly in succession.

We had always beautiful sailing weather, so that the principal men visited each other almost daily. At such times they are treated lavishly and they spare neither wine nor strong drink, especially not punch, which I have already described. Englishmen pay much attention to good eating and drinking, but especially to meat. Our captain had fresh meat every day. There were about 45 pigs, small and large, on board of ship, one calf, three sheep, more than 20 turkeys and turkey hens, 14 geese and more than 100 roosters and chickens, nearly all of which were a present to him, except what Mr. Foes, the preacher, brought with him, who had taken along many fowls and much strong drink, of which many of us had a share. They slaughtered daily, but the meat could not be kept more than 24 hours, and had to be thrown into the sea frequently. On the return trip the common people had only water to drink, but it was good and of sufficient quantity. The food was very poor, because the heat spoiled that which had been salted and was more than a year old, and made it taste badly. In addition, our biscuit was full of worms, so that the smallest particle could not be broken

off without finding them in it. This caused a general and great longing for the land.

It happened once at night that a great noise arose. Shots of distress were heard and fire signals were seen. Then the fleet was ordered to stop, which order is given from the admiral's or commander's ship by firing off a certain number of shots and by fire signals. Whatever wind may prevail (unless a storm is raging) the ships are turned against the wind, catching the wind with one sail and holding up the ship with another. As a result the ship hardly leaves its place. The ship often yields to such an extent that it rolls to and fro on its sides, as we did almost daily towards evening, when we waited for those in the rear. This is the most disagreeable thing about a fleet, because some of the ships are not well provided with sails, or otherwise sail poorly, hence there is constant waiting for them, and often the best time is lost.

Now to return to the noise. There was no ship which did not fire off several shots to signal to others. This continued throughout the night. They thought pirates had fallen upon the fleet. The war ships sailed back at once to the place of the fire signals, but they found that two ships had merely stuck to each other, being entangled in their ropes. The bowsprit, which extends forward, had become entangled, and through the action of the waves, the ships bumped together, so that they would have done great damage to each other, if others had not come to their rescue. Especially when a strong wind blows and when it is dark and stormy, there is great danger in a fleet, because the ships often come so close to each other that they frequently pass less than four feet from each other and thus cause great anxiety. Each ship has indeed from one to four lanterns, in each of which there are four or more lights. One of them they hung way up on the mast, which could be seen afar off. But the watch is often kept so poorly, that the ships run one against the other. Otherwise, during good sailing weather, none is allowed to give fire signals except the commander of the fleet, which is done every night at eight o'clock, with the firing off of a cannon. Whereupon all the bells are rung, which is pleasant to hear in quiet weather. By means of the fire the ship of

the commander can always be distinguished and the other ships can take their course accordingly. But if a ship tries to pass him, he orders a solid shot to be sent across its bow to make it stay back. These shots must be paid for as a fine. They are very expensive. But if the weather is gloomy, so that the light cannot be seen, the commander fires off a shot every minute. This could be clearly recognized by a broad, red flag, hung from the main mast, it being the highest. But if a long, blue flag could be seen, it meant to hoist more sails. Often as many as three different flags flew at the same time, each had its own meaning. The commander had a war ship of 70 pieces of cannon and wonderful sails, for he often sailed faster with half a sail than we with eight.

After we were about 1500 miles away from land, the water looked as blue and clear as the sky, so that we could often see things moving in the depth. Experienced seamen said, they were fish at a depth of perhaps a mile. In this region we amused ourselves with fishing. There are in that neighborhood a large number of flying fish which follow the ships. They have an enemy, named dolphin by the English. It is one of the best fish, often twenty pounds in weight. These fish do not swim deep in the water, but on top. When the flying fish notices that his enemy is after him, he flies up from the water, often a distance of two gun shots. This he repeats, when he does not feel secure. They often fly in shoals. It happened once that one flew against our sail and fell down on the ship. We took him and put him in vinegar and thus kept him a long time. It is a fish like a herring, with two long, pointed wings, not of feathers, but like the tail and side fins. When one throws out a line and hook, the dolphin is at once there and swallows the bait. All the ships caught many of these fish for two weeks. Most of them were speared with harpoons. These were seven foot poles, below with five hooklike points, above balanced with lead and tied to a rope. The fish swim on the surface of the water, close to the ships, so that they can be hit easily. They are like salmon, blue on top. We were surprized at some land birds, which had doubtless gone astray. They came to rest on the masts, following the ships for a great distance. Pigeons

had been taken along on the ocean. They were let go and often flew away to a great distance, but they did not fail to return to their cote. Much weed, coming up from the bottom, was swimming there on the water. We saw also a large turtle lying asleep on the water, but, as the sea was stormy, we could not take it. Thus far we sailed successfully, but did not see a single strange ship, except one that came from Barbados, laden with sugar.

We reached safely the 47th degree, where we had a favorable wind again for several days. But there were many signs of a storm. Towards midnight the sky turned all yellow and red. There were also sufficient signs in the air for the seamen. But especially the porpoises showed themselves, which were regarded as an infallible storm sign. On the 2nd of September we saw a dull sky and the wind began to blow from the south with such force that only the foresails could be used. But all this was nothing compared with what happened on the 3rd of September, old style. I cannot possibly describe our condition and the terror of death at that time. When day was breaking, the wind increased to such an extent that we all feared a disaster. The fleet at once scattered, that we might not be hurled against each other to our destruction. The weather was dreary and black. The wind took the water and drove it along like clouds and fog. The waves rose to such a height and broke down upon us with such a roar that it was terrifying to behold. The wind also howled awfully through the masts and sails. That, however, was like nothing. But when the storm tore the sail away and the helm or rudder refused to work, so that the ship was laid over on one side, and was thrown about from one side to the other, then such a quantity of water dashed over and into the ship that, when they tried to pump it out and wanted to work, it was impossible to stand upright, and they had to hold fast to the ropes, that the water and wind might not sweep them out. The greatest terror was caused by the fact that, when they measured how much water was in the ship, they found that there were already five feet in the tobacco room, as the color of the water soon showed, for when it was pumped out it was all

yellow from the tobacco. In addition, the conner(2) announced the bad news that there was a hole in the ship! Truly, hope for our rescue was small at that time, even among the most experienced. Death was depicted upon the faces. Everyone moaned so that it was pityful to hear. Whatever was not well tied or nailed down, was partly thrown into the ocean, partly broken to pieces, for nothing of such things was safe. The greatest damage was done when one of the highest waves broke down upon the ship from behind, injured the stern and knocked out the windows above and below. It dashed over the upper part of the ship, knocked down the captain and the physician, who were on the quarter deck, then it covered us on the main deck to such an extent that we could hardly bear the weight of the water and thought nothing else but that we were all drowned. At the same time the cry was raised that we should run to the cannons, fire off two shots, hoist our flag at half mast and thus signal our distress. But we saw none to help us, nor would it have been possible at such a time. When the storm had raged for four hours, it began to clear a little. The sun came out and the merciless wind subsided slightly. But then the waves began to rise still higher, that one's hair stood on end, so to speak. However, we succeeded so far that we were able to hoist half of another sail, in order to let the ship run before the wind. We also made every effort to pump out the water as best we could. We succeeded so far that it did not increase, and then we began to have some hope. The captain and Mr. Foes distributed brandy and strong ale to encourage the people. It helped not a little. We all worked till evening to hoist up the tobacco and to let down pumps with chains, which was our salvation. Afterwards four pumps could be used. Before night a ship came near to offer assistance, which we needed much. On account of the high seas we could not approach each other. But they promised through the speaking trumpet to keep us company during the night, which made us happy. During the night we had a fairly good rest, except the work of pumping out the water, as the ship was leaking very much. In the

(2) A conner, spelled "coner" in the original, is one who gives steering directions to the helmsman of a ship.

morning of the 4th [of September] we saw no fleet [at first], but soon there was a call from the mast that about 90 ships were in sight.

Shortly afterwards the fleet was seen, but not as strong as before. More than twenty ships were missing. We did not know what had become of them or whether they had been lost. At one time we saw much woodwork and many barrels floating on the water. We learned that we were not the only ones that had suffered damage, for there were four other ships ready to sink. Our captain had himself at once taken to the commander to make known his distress and ask for help. He told him that others had been with him for the same reason and that he had given up everybody whom he could spare. But he sent his carpenter along. He nailed lead, prepared for that purpose, over the hole. Nevertheless, we had to work day and night to pump out the water. Double rations were distributed from now on till we reached England, because we had to pump so hard and incessantly day and night. This fear did us more harm than death itself, for it was a slow death and we felt it for some time afterwards. At that time every one would have given all he had if he could have been on land, and I thought I would never venture into such danger again, but I soon forgot it.

After the storm was over, we were yet 900 miles from land. But following it we had for two weeks good weather till about the 18th, when we struck ground at 89 fathoms, which made us glad. After another day of sailing we met again very boisterous, stormy weather. We were not a little afraid at that time, because we were not far from land and the condition of our ship was very poor. We could not leave the pumps nor dry ourselves. We met also another ship, and passed each other so closely that we threw up our hands in fear, but we did not touch. Whoever has not experienced the terror of the water, can hardly believe what the feelings are. But finally we saw land, which was the Isle of Wight.

In this last storm one ship lost its mast. But a warship, four of which were with us, took this damaged ship in tow, but kept a great distance between them. It was towed to the land.

When we came into the Channel, we saw twelve sails or ships. We soon noticed that they were Dutch. They passed the island. The same day we arrived at Dunes [Downs], where we learned from a Dutch privateer that there was war between England, Holland and France.(3) It was said that Cadix [in Spain] was taken,(4) about which they rejoiced in vain. From there we came to Margate, and on the following day across the dangerous sandbanks, where the water was only 18 fathoms deep and the ship touched, so that the water became muddy. The captain was in fear, for if a ship strikes such a bank, the sand yields and in a short time the ship sinks. On the next day we came to Gravesend, whence I traveled by land to Poplar,(5) in order to deliver a letter to the wife of the captain. I cannot omit to make mention of the kindness which the captain showed me. He made known to me, through Mr. Foes and the physician, that, if I wanted to go to sea with him and keep book for him, he would give me daily half an English crown. I consented finally, but the constant traveling on the ocean did not suit me. Hence I thanked him and paid him, but he gave me back two crowns, because I had worked during the storms. At last he invited me to dinner and told me that he did not doubt but that I could travel safely. After I had stayed in London for several days, I handed over certain things to a Swiss, named Bornas, who was married to a woman by the name of Walther, to keep them for me till my return.

From there I went to Starwit [Harwich](6) by land, a distance of 66 miles, where I had to wait for a mail boat. I went to the commissioner, who gave me a passport, so that I could cross [the Channel] for nothing, except paying two shillings, one for the clerk, the other as a head tax. Otherwise one has to pay 14 shillings during war times. Those known to him can cross

(3) It was the war of the Spanish Succession.

(4) In 1702 a futile attack was made upon Cadiz by the British under Sir George Rooke and the Duke of Ormonde, but on October 12, 1702, a combined French-Spanish fleet was destroyed by the British at Vigo.

(5) Poplar, lying between Gravesend and London, can only be the metropolitan borough of London, bearing that name, three miles E. by S. of St. Paul's.

(6) Starwit is no doubt a misprint in the Berne Yearbook for Harwit, by which Harwich is intended, the well-known English seaport in the County of Essex, 70 miles northeast of London.

free of charge. In Briel is another commissioner, who gives passports to those who want to go to England. The Queen of England maintains six of these mail boats, which sail twice every week. They are built lightly and armed with only four to six cannons, but they are so well equipped with sails, that it is not easy to capture them.

October. We left with good wind, but when we wished to pass from the harbor into the ocean, we met the boat coming from Holland, which reported that there were enemies. Hence we stayed at a certain place till night. We were much troubled by the waves, because the ship was so small. I became sick, contrary to my expectations. We sailed very fast during the night, so that we saw land in the morning, and about ten o'clock we reached the Rhine, where we landed. The passengers and the mail were taken on land. We came to Briel, where I took some refreshments. On the same day, the 10th of October, we reached Rotterdam. From there I traveled with a Frenchman, named Jonget, whom I met at Harwitz [Harwich], to Nimwegen, hoping that we would find an opportunity there to continue our journey. We had to go by land, because the wind was too strong. We lodged on the other side of the river. We crossed over the pontoon-bridge, but we did not know how to get into the city. We tried the sentry, who asked whence we came. We answered, that we resided in the city. They let us pass. We went then to a Mr. Du Rang, a French minister, whom we asked for a certificate, which he did not refuse. We thought it was better than nothing. We then set out on the road to Wesel and from there to Duysburg. We were allowed to pass Wesel, but at the latter place we were led to the commandant. He remarked that we had no extra fine passport, but he allowed us to go on. A few days before, Rynberg [Rheinberg], which can be seen from here, had been bombarded by the Brandenburgers, but, according to their own statement, they had lost about a hundred men. Thence we proceeded to Dusseldorf. On the way, we met two Frenchmen, whom we asked whence they came. They said, they had intended to travel to Switzerland, but they had been stopped above Cologne. They had taken away their rifles and everyone wanted to harm

them, because they were not able to speak with the people. I tried to strengthen our company, hence I encouraged them to come with us, which they did. On the way to Cologne nothing happened to us, except that a soldier asked for our passports. I asked him to show us his authority for making such a demand. He finally withdrew. When we wanted to cross the Rhine at Mellen [Muelheim],(7) we had to wait there for a while. I went to an officer of the guard, who was stationed there. He told me of the double and even threefold danger of traveling, as daily unfortunate accidents were reported, on the one hand from the French, who make strong raids from Bonn, on the other hand the farmers in Bavaria and in the Spessart forest were very dangerous. Whenever they met a person, they would take his clothes and often his life. He counselled me especially not to travel with the Frenchmen, who were now much hated in that neighborhood, because during the past summer this district had been plundered by the French. This made me think. While we thus spoke together, there came twenty Switzers, among whom were several Germans from Leuk, of the Schartreuw(8). They had a passport from the English General Cut(9), as people who had left the service of the enemy. They also inquired about the way to Switzerland, which pleased me so much, that I made their acquaintance. Two of them were from the Canton of Berne. We stayed there overnight. During the night a party came into the house with great noise. We thought they were Frenchmen, but they were Hollanders. In the morning we set out on our way. It was very cold. We wanted to go to Bruggen [Brueck], a village about two hours [six miles] distant. Fortunately we lost our way. We met a driver who told us that a party was on guard

(7) In spite of the dissimilarity of the names, Muehlheim must be intended by Mellen. It is the only city between Cologne and Bonn which resembles Mellen in sound. Michel evidently spells the names phonetically.

(8) Leuk is probably Leukerbad, a famous watering place in the Canton of Valais, Switzerland, on the right bank of the Rhone. Schartreuw is probably the French word Chartreuse, the name of a Carthusian monastery.

(9) This is Baron John Cutts of Gowran, Ireland, 1661-1707, who accompanied Marlborough to Holland in 1701 and took part in the war of the Spanish Succession as lieutenant-general.

not far from Bruggen, on the great highroad. We thought we were betrayed, and turned, therefore, to the left into the forest. We wandered about till evening, when we met a farmers' guard of twenty men, provided with loaded rifles. They took us for an opposing party, aimed their rifles and waited for our arrival. We showed our passport. They demanded a sword from us, but we refused to give it. They did not dare to take it.

Then we came to Syberg [Siegburg], where an allied garrison, containing also Swiss, was stationed. The Governor did not want to allow us to stay overnight in the town. Hence we had to lodge in an inn before the gate. This place is about two hours distance from Bonn. We feared that night that they would come to take us prisoners. Some days before they had taken away a wagon with a horse at this same place. On the following day we continued our journey. We heard that four French companies were keeping guard on the great high-road in the forest. This was unwelcome news to us. We inquired whether we could not take a roundabout route. Yes, if we would make a detour of three days. The company was fearful that it would cost their life, if they should fall into the hands of the French. Hence we were shown the detour and we traveled through wild regions, already covered with snow, to Hagen, Siegen, Dillenburg, Wetzlar, where the imperial chamber meets. Thence to Freyburg, in the Breissgau(10), finally to Frankfort, where we were strictly examined. However, they did not ask for all our passports, but one was sufficient for us. The Germans stayed there and we were also offered positions. From there the rest of us, twelve in all, traveled safely to Tübingen, in Wirtemberg, where we had to pass through between the French and the Bavarians. In the center were the dragoons. Everybody told us how unsafe it was to travel and that some people had lost everything. We told them that wolves do not bite each other. We were soldiers too, who had swords and pistols. We arrived safely at Schaffhausen.

God be praised for ever! Amen.

(10) The Breisgau is now a part of the Grandduchy of Baden, comprising the valley of Freiburg and the southern part of the Black Forest. In the Middle Ages it was one of the largest districts of the Allemanni. The writer ought to have reversed the order of Freiburg and Frankfort, as Freiburg is much nearer the Swiss border than Frankfort.

In conclusion. I report some things which may not be known:

A guinea is 4 English crowns or 18 stueber.

An English crown is 5 shillings.

A shilling is 12 stueber.

A stueber is a little more than half a batzen.

A pound sterling is 4 crowns, a shilling and a half less than a guinea.

Three English miles make an hour.

N. B. I must add that I forgot something at certain places. Thus I placed New York at the Canadian boundary, while New Jersey and New England are the most extreme [provinces].(11)

Likewise with regard to the diseases, I wish to add that they consist mostly of the negro fever, which often stays with a person for a long time, especially those who live near the ocean shore. Open legs full of sores are to found with most people. The principal cause is the fever, which finds an outlet there. Another cause is because most people work without shoes and stockings in the soil, so that, especially in the new soil, the legs are all swollen and full of white pimples. It seems as if the ground was poisoned by the snakes. Doctors and surgeons are well-to-do and have a large income.

Mechanics are generally scarce and expensive. The best trades, among others, are carpenters, joiners, coopers, shipbuilders, masons, smiths, locksmiths, tailors and glassblowers. Skilled workmen are much esteemed and well paid. I have seen a common journeyman paid annually 30 lbs. sterling, including his board. But I have heard of master workmen, who received above a guinea daily. Moreover, a skilful artisan or workman can reach America with little expense, by means of an instruction from Holland to England, issued by the commissioner at Briel, so that neither the passage nor the meals cost anything, because the Queen maintains such mail-boats. In London such an artisan can go to a Virginian captain, none of whom will refuse to take him along, if not for the labor on the ship, at least for the payment promised on landing. For, when such a ship arrives, the inhabitants come in large numbers to buy or hire servants.

(11) This correction needs to be corrected again.

Everyone would be willing to pay the passage money. The debtor then belongs to the creditor till he pays it off. The wages are fixed, namely, according to law each workman must pay his master for his board and lodging annually 400 lbs. of tobacco and three barrels of corn. Whatever he can raise above that amount, he can sell, so that within a short time he can pay his passage money. Then he can hire out as a freeman or he can continue to work in the above manner until he has saved something and can himself set up an establishment.

I also forgot to refer to the allspice, which is a certain medicine planted by the Indians and is sold by them. This plant has such strength and properties that it can be used in place of every other spice, as is also implied by the name. There also grows a sort of red shells, like crab's claws, in which seeds are found which are very strong.

There are also a large number of glow-worms [fire-flies], which fly at night through the trees in large numbers, as if they were full of fire and light.

There is another kind of bugs or worms which are very harmful to the finest trees of the forest and cause the destruction of a great many of them.

In conclusion, he who will take the trouble to read this imperfect essay, will find that I have not been diligent to observe order, nor did I make a clean copy, hence it is difficult to read, full of disorder and without orthography. As I was requested to make a short report, I have drawn it up hastily, hoping that if the reader will find some mistakes, he will correct them himself; the rest will be found to be true.

Letters Regarding the Second Journey of Michel to America, February 14, 1703, to January 16, 1704, and his stay in America till 1708.

[After Francis Louis Michel had reached Berne, on December 1, 1702, he started on his second journey to America on February 14, 1703, about which the following letters give us some information. Michel had of course related his experiences in Virginia to his friends in Berne, among whom were John Rudolf Ochs and George Ritter. With them he had conceived the plan of settling a Swiss colony in America. As the next letter shows, negotiations had been begun with William Penn, in order to locate this Swiss colony, if possible, in Pennsylvania].

DIFFERENT LETTERS

which, since the departure of my brother from Berne, on February 14, 1703, have been sent from London and America, addressed to Mr. Ochs(12), his correspondent. The first letter was dated London, May 6'16, 1703.

I ask that you will not take the delay of my letter ill of me. Already in Rotterdam I have had a package ready, in which was enclosed a thorough report, together with a map of Philadelphia, from which detailed information can be gathered, in short it is a complete guide for those who want to travel there. Meanwhile I secured two other [printed] reports, but, since the post in Holland would not accept this except at a very high rate, I found it advisable to retain it until I have received an oral report and confirmation from Mr. William Penn, and can send it together with a complete report through Mr. Gaudot. Thus far I have been unable to secure an audience with him [Penn],

(12) John Rudolf Ochs, son of Samuel Ochs and Esther Koch, was baptized September 2, 1673. He was a seal and stone engraver; went to Pennsylvania in 1705, returned to England and settled in London, where he became a Quaker. He was married to Catharine Lerber, daughter of David Lerber and his wife Catharine Schmaltz, widow of the Rev. Niklaus of Affoltern. She had six children, five sons and a daughter, born 1702-1715. Ochs is the author of a book, entitled "Amerikanischer Wegweiser" i. e., "American Guide," Berne 1711, pp. 102. See *Berner Taschenbuch*, 1898, p. 127f, note.

but I have been requested to appear to-morrow morning.(13) I have handed in a memorial, in which the case has been presented in the best possible form. I am now waiting with eagerness for the outcome. I have made inquiries about that country to my satisfaction and have concluded to leave here with a Pennsylvania ship, which will sail within two months. I regretted that I had to see the fleet leave here for America, 12 days ago, and was not able to go along. But I am much surprized about the process begun here against the above named Governor Penn, which was legally instituted here.(14) I have already gotten some printed tracts, which expose him and his officials in Pennsylvania most severely and shamefully, and in which he and his people are accused of many and disgraceful actions, in the civil government as well as in church matters. Many think the so-called Quakers, together with the Governor, stand in danger of losing the freedom they enjoyed so long. I shall have to give you a sufficient report before my departure from here about one thing or another. Two weeks ago I addressed a letter to Mr. Gaudot, but he informed me yesterday that the mail-boat of the 16th, upon which the letter was, had unfortunately been taken near Harwitz [Harwich]. I herewith desire to send you a few words, otherwise, if I had the necessary time, I would make a longer and more detailed report, hoping that you will pardon the liberty I thus take. I cannot omit to make mention of what has happened on the journey from Holland hither, and how this short trip turned out to be so full of dangers and accidents.

Many must wait ten weeks for a suitable wind, I was compelled to stay three weeks in Rotterdam and Briel. Finally on Sunday the 15th, n. s. [new style] there was such stormy weather that many ships lying before Briel had to go back to Rotterdam, because they were torn from their anchor. Such a drifting ship ran against our ship with such violence that the rear [mizzen]

(13) According to the French Diary of Graffenried (*German American Annals* XII, 166) Penn appointed Michel Director General of all the mines in Pennsylvania. He also made a definite compact with the society which Michel represented. See also S. G. Fisher, *The True William Penn*, p. 380.

(14) About the trials and persecutions of Penn at this time see Fisher, *The True Wm. Penn*, pp. 364-376.

mast was torn down. In the evening we saw the distressed English fleet, consisting of about 80 ships, laden mostly with corn and cloth, being driven by the strong wind back from the sea into the Meuse river. There, 22 ships, which could not reach the mouth of the river, ran in part on the land, others stuck on the sandbanks, some were at once broken to pieces, so that the Meuse, in a few hours, was full of corn and boxes of bread and parts of ships which drifted about. On the 18th, we had some good wind and we sailed with 60 merchantmen, two convoys and a transport, into the sea. On the 20th, in the morning, the fleet from London to Rotterdam met us, about 80 ships in number. But, in the afternoon, when we were ten hours [30 miles] from land, we discovered seven ships, which were carried by the wind towards us and came with full sails. We saw at once that they were French, which alarmed us considerably. Our two convoys sailed ahead of the fleet, to wait for them. Finally they were so near that our ships realized that they were not strong enough for them, because they were four large ships and three privateers. Hence they sailed as best as they could right through the French fleet, all the rest followed. Half of the fleet was cut off.

The front part, in which I was, continued its course to Norwit [Norwich],(15) the rear ran hither and thither. The privateers took eight or ten of them. The warships also met together. They shot very rapidly upon our commander Salisbury. After a considerable battle he surrendered, and also the transport, with 30 pieces of cannon. As the weather was rainy and gloomy we did not see them any longer, but we reached England before night. Thus on this short trip more unpleasant things happened to me than lately on my whole journey. Mr. Gaudot shows me much kindness because of his respect for you and your recommendation. In return I would like to show him corresponding gratitude. He asked me for [certain] stones, for he knew that you had given them to me to take along. However, I did not have full confidence in the matter. As soon as there will be an opportunity I shall send one thing or another through

(15) By Norwit the writer evidently meant Norwich (cf. Harwit= Harwich) a city in the county of Norfolk, 98 miles N. N. E. of London.

Mr. Gaudot, as the tobacco mentioned by you. I make every possible preparation for what will contribute to good progress. I buy all kinds of goods which I regard as useful. Meanwhile I shall not forget you, but will make arrangements to receive you there as best I may, the sooner the better. With the next opportunity I shall report more. Commending you to the Divine providence, I remain,

Yours ready for service
L. Michel.

Now follows the second letter, sent from Arundel County, Maryland, to Mr. Ochs, dated May 20'30, 1704.

Very Worthy Sir and Friend:—

I send you this with my friendly greeting and the hope that you will receive it in good condition as a small token of our unchangeable acquaintance and friendship.

The great distance between us does not hinder us to renew at times our old oneness of mind. Especially, since I entertain the hope that I shall soon be able to receive such a dear friend in my cabin, quickly erected, not indeed according to new fashions, but in the old simplicity. It is not my intention to write at length, although the material is not wanting, because I am still at work to fulfil my promise to send, God willing, next year an elaborate report and guide, of which I have made a good beginning. I do it with the hope that those who are willing or intend to visit this country, for the sake of profit, curiosity or settlement, will not suffer harm. It was not possible in this short time, alongside of my private business and journeys, to investigate everything thoroughly. Besides I am now equipped to undertake a new journey of discovery. I shall, therefore, as briefly as possible, give a summary of what happened to me hitherto, fearing that, if I should pass it by entirely with silence until my undertaking is completed, you would not receive it well, and believe that I had no regard for our agreement.

Regarding the journey from England, I may say that it was very unpleasant, partly because of the inconvenient winter

time. On August 20th of last year, I went on board of the "Hopewell" at Gravesend. Contrary winds kept us at Dunes [Downs], Portsmouth and other places till the beginning of October. On the 4th of that month, we lost sight of the land. For a time we had a great heat and calm, because we were so far south, namely on the 27th degree. We spent a long time making but little progress, until we came farther north, where we had such unusually long drawn-out winds for five weeks, with the exception of a few days, that the ships could not keep company together. Such distressing weather scattered our fleet in such a way that even now ships are still arriving, which, because of lack of water, loss of masts, sickness and other accidents were compelled to seek land at the Bermudas, Barbados, Carolina and other places. More than enough has already been reported about the loss of the ships. The governor of this province was on board of the commander's ship, which arrived here only four weeks ago. We were 100 sails strong, among which were four warships, but several left us and sailed to Guinea. As to our ship, it was one of the best, namely the second to reach land, on January the 16th. Such a long and dangerous passage is unusual. My daily Journal, containing all the details, will follow with the next opportunity.(16) We found such unusual cold here, even five days ago, as I have never experienced. Most of the rivers were frozen and hence I had to postpone my trip to Pennsylvania till spring and had to take a house. As my long stay in Holland and England gave me an opportunity to buy all kinds of necessaries of life, the inhabitants soon learned of it. Besides, European goods and wares are very expensive in war times, but especially this year. They compelled me almost to exhibit them. Contrary to expectation they were taken with a rush and with good profit, and the statement was made that so many useful things had never been seen here before. What kind of goods should be brought here and what other things are necessary, will be reported as stated above.

(16) This Journal of Michel has not been preserved. At least it is not in the city library of Berne.

After I had sold most of my wares, I traveled with the rest to Pennsylvania, about 60 hours [180 miles] distant from here. With the exception of 8 English miles it is possible to go there by water. After my arrival I sold the rest of my merchandise even more advantageously than in Maryland. Nothing is sold under 50 per cent profit, most goods bring more than 100 per cent. How easily, then, can one, who knows business here, make money!

Philadelphia is a city twenty-two years old, whose growth and fame is to be preferred to most English-American cities. I was astonished to see the difference, compared with other cities of this country, with regard to her size, splendid edifices, daily construction of new houses and ships, the regularity of the streets, the abundance of provisions, at a much cheaper price than in the neighboring cities. But the strongest reason, why there is such an influx of people from other provinces is partly due to the liberty which all strangers enjoy in commerce, belief and settlement, as each one understands it, and also because the money has 50 per cent more value. Six miles from there lies a large village, a mile long, named Germantown, where almost all the inhabitants are Germans. A Frankfort company bought 30,000 acres of land with this object, that, when they and their people should be compelled through war, religion or other accidents to leave their homes and country, they might there find a certain and secure dwelling place.

Among other acquaintances I met there the prefect Matheys of Heimbhausen (17) and the sons of the gunsmith Bondeli, (18) who

(17) According to information, kindly furnished by Prof. von Mülinen, the full name of this man was Hans Conrad Matthey, who from 1674–1680 was bailiff of Wangen. He owned an estate at Heim (en) hausen, not far from Berne, which his son-in-law, Hans Jacob Lerber, inherited in 1703. With this information at hand, it is possible to identify this man. He is the well known Conrad Matthaei, the last leader of the Hermits on the Wissahickon. They had erected a Monastery on the Ridge now within the city limits of Philadelphia. Matthaei himself lived as a recluse in a rude hut till his death in August 1748 See Sachse, *German Pietis of Pennsylvania*, Vol. I, pp. 388–401.

(18) Prof. von Mülinen gives the following information about the family of the gunsmith Bondeli (or Bundeli): "John Bundeli was bailiff of Aarwangen, his son Abraham B., a gunsmith, born 1617; his son, David, B, a gunsmith, who lived about 1680, married to Elisa Dick. They had a son who died in Pennsylvania." It is the last to whom Michel refers in his letter.

arrived here some time ago from New England. As they have been rather inexperienced in their undertaking, they have had but little profit thus far, but they entertain, nevertheless, good hope and they have brought their newly-bought farm of 100 acres (which they bought for the sum of 20 doubloons) into fairly good condition. I found the place very convenient, partly because it is so near to the city, partly because it is just like living in Germany. Three large tracts of land of equal size, were for sale for a small sum, adjoining each other. I found this place so convenient, that I fixed my designs on it, awaiting a better opportunity, with the purpose of living in the neighborhood of the aforesaid estates. The reason why I have gone to Maryland is to collect my outstanding debts completely. But especially because of my journey, which is about to begin to the rather unknown western regions, of which the Indians here have wonders to tell, on account of their high mountains, warm waters, rich minerals, fruitful lands, large streams and abundance of game which is found there. To that end I associated myself with eight well experienced Englishmen and four Indians, taking along eight horses, two of which are to carry skins at my own expense. Although we are taking provisions for only six days, we do not expect to return before four weeks. The game is so abundant that daily more can be caught than we can use. Some of the company, including myself, have the intention to take up land, if it is feasible, some go to hunt, some to discover mines, I for my part to satisfy my old curiosity, to seek out unknown things and to collect the wonders of nature, as I have already a large number of pieces, which cannot be examined without astonishment. Last evening I shot two ragun [raccoons] on a tree. I have also a live bossoon [opossum]. It carries its young in an open pocket, which it opens and closes at will.

I am altogether of the opinion that the government [of Berne] as well as private persons will most of them in time get a better knowledge of this country. How praiseworthy and easy would it be to send out a colony like other nations, which would be a greater glory and praise for our country than to send a large number, for the sake of money, to slaughter in battle. We think that it is an honor. Other nations, however, speak of it

differently. What else can be the intention of Hollanders, Swedes, Finns, Germans and other nations, which send people to this country, than to make use of such places in case of necessity. I have already had opportunity to remark sufficiently, how willingly the English government would consent to this. Who has more reason to look for expansion and places of retreat than our country? I cannot think otherwise than that the government acts culpably in not assisting in this matter with word and deed the many empty hands and hungry mouths. It would be easy to present a memorial to the English crown, the answer would soon show whether it is feasible or not. It is a great pity that such a large country, suitable for all kinds of fruits, remains unsettled. But it is necessary that people should not be deceived by some who came to this country, not knowing why they came and who had empty and lazy hands. Such people are an injury and obstacle to many others. But how do those get along, of whom a considerable number are to be found here, who not only bring nothing into the country, but are even bound out for a certain time to serve, and yet in a few years acquire more than would be possible to do in the best countries?

There is absolutely no hunger among the people, but the cattle suffered much want this spring, yet only among those who owned too large a number of them, and who had no sufficient supply of fodder for the long winter. One man who owned 103 heads of cattle lost 102 heads, the last he gave away for nothing.

I must close, commending it to your discretion to do in this matter as your sound judgment will decide. I ask you to assure Messrs. Gaudard, Ritter, Noblemen von Graviset and the other good friends and acquaintances of my respect and willingness to serve. I intended to write a number of letters, but the near departure of the ships and my own journey prevented me. In future I shall have more material to write. I am at a very inconvenient place, regarding paper and ink, which I secured with difficulty. (The ink was made altogether of gun powder). I hope to receive a letter from you during the next spring sent to the enclosed address. Meanwhile I assure My Lord of my service and friendship and remain,

Yours ready for service,

L. Michel.

[In this letter the thought of sending a Swiss colony to America is clearly expressed. Michel also mentions for the first time George Ritter, a councillor of the city of Berne. The latter proceeded to carry out the suggestion of Michel and undertook to organize a Swiss colony for America. On March 19, 1705, he submitted the following petition to the Council of Berne]:

Respectful Petition to the Mayor and Council, made by George Ritter, Druggist, of Berne:—

Your Lordship's obedient citizen, George Ritter(19), druggist, begs to submit herewith in all humility that he plans to transport himself with a colony of four to five hundred persons from here to Pennsylvania, in America, under the English crown and to settle there, if it will be acceptable to and please her Royal Majesty in England to concede and grant most graciously to him and to his companions the enclosed articles of agreement. Now, in order that your petitioner and his companions may all the more surely and certainly gain their intended purpose, he requests your Lordships in his and in all his associates' name that you will be pleased to grant them graciously not only the necessary permission of the government, but also aid them that the enclosed articles, proposed by them (which we meanwhile submit to your most wise correction and approval), will be sent to the English envoy, now residing in the Cantons, to transmit them to his government; and that at the same time they may be accompanied with your strong and weighty recommendation, so that we may all the better secure their acceptance. For this favor, granted by you, your petitioner and his associates will implore the Highest, that your noble Lordships in all your blessed undertakings may continue to flourish forever.

[This petition was accompanied by the following proposals, written in French, which Mr. Ritter sent to the Marquis Du Quesnes at Geneva. The proposals, translated into English, read as follows]:

(19) George Ritter, son of Jacob Ritter and Magdalena Gouttes, was baptized August 8, 1667. He was a druggist by profession. He is said to have been twice in America. He was married to Elizabeth Gaudard, daughter of Commissioner Samuel Gaudard. He died without issue. See *Berner Taschenbuch*, 1898, p. 138.

TO THE QUEEN.

George Ritter, citizen of the city of Berne, submits with profound respect, which is due to your Majesty, that the Noble Francis Louis Michel, citizen of the said city, having settled at a favorable opportunity in Pennsylvania, has induced your petitioner to solicit a number of persons of the laudable Canton of Berne, to go and settle near him in America, and having a desire for this, after having obtained the permission of the noble Lordships of the laudable Canton; said Ritter has been charged, in the name of all, to entreat most humbly your Majesty to give your consent to the establishment which is proposed to be made of a Swiss colony and which is intended to be formed, in order to settle some land located either in Pennsylvania or on the frontiers of Virginia, with the Divine assistance and the royal and powerful protection of your Majesty. This colony may number at first from four to five hundred Swiss persons, Reformed Protestants, as many merchants and manufacturers as agriculturists. In whose behalf the said Ritter, who acts for them, petitions your Majesty most humbly to grant them, if it is your pleasure,

THE FOLLOWING CONDITIONS:

1. That they be treated and regarded as the true subjects of your Majesty.

2. That to this colony be granted a district of land, well situated as regards climate, soil and water; near some river, navigable for commerce.

3. That to each person be given 100 acres of land in the said settlement, which shall be named Berne.

4. That materials for building be conveyed to the place which will be convenient.

5. That there be full liberty to trade, as the natives of the country, as well as other subjects of your Majesty have.

6. That they be exempted from all taxes during the first six years of their settlement, after that, that they shall pay them as the other subjects of your Majesty.

7. That they shall have liberty to choose ministers of the Gospel, officers of justice and the police, at all times under the direction of the Governor, whom your Majesty will have appointed in that country.

8. That, after having prayed publicly for your Majesty, they be permitted to pray also for their noble Lordships of the Republic of Berne, who have the honor to be allied with your Majesty.

9. That the same favors and privileges will be accorded later also to all those who in future will come from Switzerland, to enlarge their colony, notably those from the Canton of Berne.

10. And as this colony will not be able to pay the expenses of their voyage to America, your Majesty is most humbly petitioned to have the goodness to give orders that said colony be conducted thither with every possible safety, in such a way that it may embark at Rotterdam in Holland and that it be transported, at the expense of your Majesty, to the place appointed for their settlement. To that end, said Ritter, being advised in time, will betake himself, with the help of God, with said colony to Rotterdam, at the time which shall be appointed for him.

Meanwhile said Ritter and his associates pray God most fervently for the happy and long preservation of the sacred person of your Majesty, for the prosperity of your flourishing kingdoms and for the glory of your victorious arms.

[These proposals were examined by Du Quesne, corrected by him in some unessential details and sent back to Berne. Then a "clean copy" was made of them, which was sent to England to be submitted to the Councillors of the Queen.

The Council of Berne addressed Mr. William Agliomby, the English envoy at Zurich, on March 19, 1705. His answer was received on April 3, 1705. There is also preserved a letter of Agliomby, dated London, September 11, 1705; further a memoir, presented to the English envoy, Mr. Stanian, dated August 25, 1706, a letter addressed to Mr. George Ritter, merchant at Berne from Wrest in Bedfordshire, dated March 15, 1707. The writer, Mr. Gaudot, mentions in it Mr. Oks. Finally in a letter

of George Ritter to Mr. Stanian, the suggestion is made that, if Parliament be unwilling to naturalize the whole colony, the directors of the colony, namely Francis Louis Michel, John Rudolf Ochs and George Ritter, be naturalized. This letter is followed in the original Ms. by another plan of an agreement without date and signature, addressed to the English government, in which a petition is made to appoint a commission. This petition may have led to the instruction or commission referred to in the following letter of Mr. Michel to George Ritter:]

To Mr. George Ritter, Merchant at Berne.

Virginia, the 24th of September 1708.

This present letter is only to advise you that I have carried out satisfactorily the commission which was given to me by our gentlemen at Berne, and wheras, I have not had any payment from you since I have arrived in America, I have drawn on you to-day for two hundred pounds sterling, payable to the order of Mr. Jean Monbeaux in London, to whom I pray you to do me the honor of referring me upon my arrival in London(20), in order to inform you of all my progress. Awaiting yours I am

Luys Michel.

[A further report of Mr. Michel to George Ritter is dated America, December 14—25, 1708, of which the following summary has been preserved:]

A Report of Mr. Michel from America,

dated December 14—25, 1708, to Mr. George Ritter, merchant in Berne, in which, in addition to the publications already sent over, others are transmitted. He urges that the business of the colony be conducted with zeal now, when the most favorable moment has come and many members of the government and of parliament are at Court, during the winter season. He makes the suggestion that the articles of agreement, formerly drawn up, be not presented, but that properly qualified commissioners

(20) This sentence shows that Michel intended to return to England, which intention he carried out in the year 1708.

be sent and that full authority be given them to carry on the negotiations personally and to remove every obstacle as may be found necessary, for plans may be sent from a distance, but they cannot be carried out at a distance as well as near at hand. He then mentions, in connection with other statements, that Mr. Robert Collie [Callie] of Aldermary Church Yard, himself as well as other distinguished friends and acquaintances, was not a little inclined to promote the project. He advises that he [Ritter] send him a letter, outlining the project, since he could, without doubt,accomplish much, and that in future letters be sent to him [Michel] through this patron instead of through Monsieur Mondant, whose large business was already causing him a heavy correspondence.

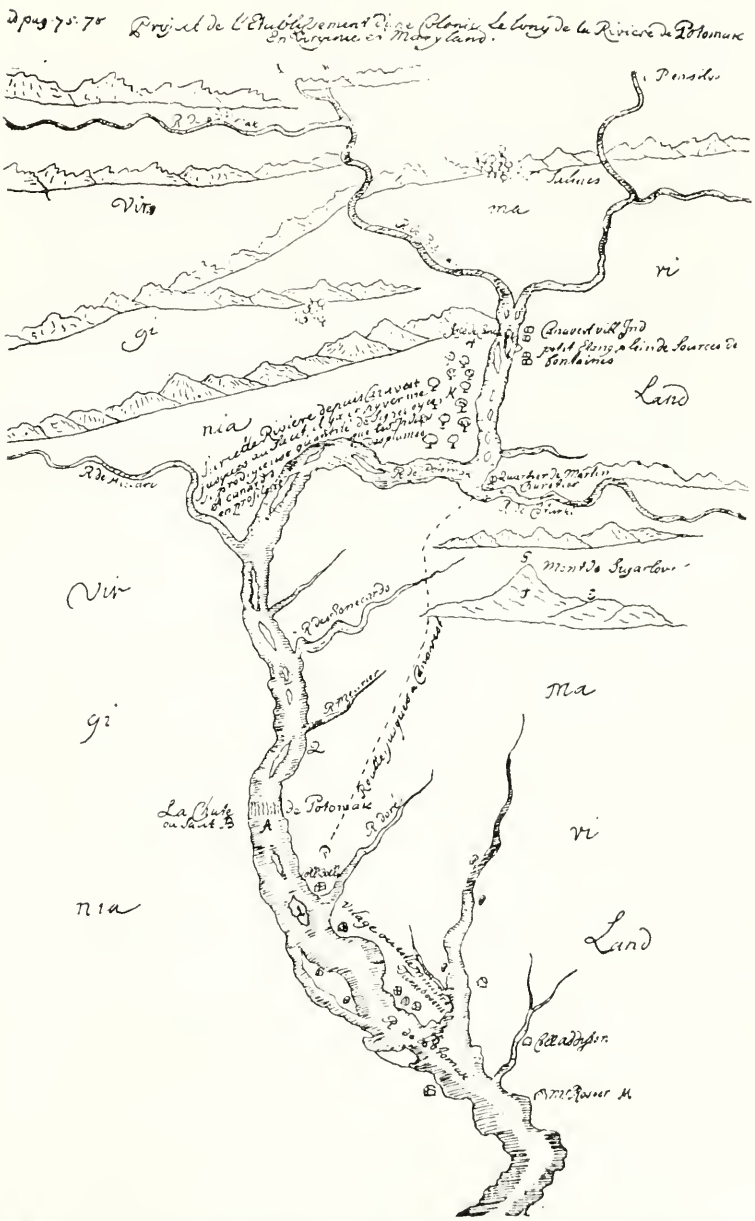
[The story of Michel is continued in the Journals of Christopher Graffenried, of which the original German and French texts(21) were recently published by Prof. Faust of Cornell University in the "German American Annals," Vol. XI, (1913), pp. 210-312 (German text); and Vol. XII (1914) pp. 64-190 (French text). According to the German version of Graffenried's journal, Michel returned to Berne in 1708, where he met Graffenried, to whom he related with evident enthusiasm his American experiences. Graffenried states with regard to this interview: "Of late I received a more accurate report of the American countries from a citizen of this city, who had been in America for five or six years. He informed me what a glorious country it is, how cheap, what liberty, what large growth, good business, rich mines and other good things it has. He told me especially what beautiful silver mines he has found and dis-

(21) Four copies of the journals of Graffenried, describing the founding of New Berne, are in existence. The first, in French, is in the public library of Yverdon, Switzerland. A literal English translation appeared in the *Colonial Records of North Carolina*, Vol. I (1886), pp. 905-985. The second, in German, is in the possession of Prof. W. F. von Mülinen, city librarian of Berne. The German text was published by Prof. Faust. The third, in French, the most complete of all, in the handwriting of Graffenried himself, is also in the possession of Prof. von Mülinen of Berne. It was also published by Prof. Faust. The fourth, in French, is a copy of a letter, written by Graffenried on January 4, 1712, to Governor Hyde of North Carolina. It includes also the copy of a treaty made between Graffenried and the Tuscarora Indians in October 1711, and the copy of a letter written by Governor Spottswood, on October 8, 1711, to the Indians, who held Graffenried captive.

covered." As Graffenried was deep in debt and saw no opportunity to improve his condition in Switzerland, the prospect of opening up silver mines seemed to him exceedingly attractive. It is, therefore, not surprizing that he accepted "the beautiful propositions of the above-named citizen." As later events clearly showed, these propositions were to the effect that Graffenried should conduct a Swiss colony to the banks of the Potomac river, where Michel claimed to have taken up land. A map, drawn by Graffenried, is still in existence, which illustrates this colonization scheme. Two settlements were contemplated along the Potomac, one below the falls of the Potomac, in the triangle formed by the Potomac and the Gold Creek. The other settlement was to be near the Indian village Canavest, along the upper banks of the Potomac river(22). Moreover, a correspondence was begun with German miners, and, on the way back to Holland, Michel had an interview with the head-miner, who was authorized to procure all the necessary tools and implements for mining. To carry out this scheme Graffenried left Switzerland in 1708, and went to England. There he met influential friends who encouraged him in his colonization scheme. Two events happened about this time which turned the enterprize into a different direction. A Swiss colonization society, a stock company, called Ritter & Co., had been formed, which Graffenried was persuaded to join and to which the proprietaries of Carolina made very favorable offers(23), in order

(22) See the French Diary of Graffenried in *German American Annals*, Vol. XII, p. 166.

(23) Graffenried concludes the third of the Journals, mentioned in the last note, with the following sentence: "It is true, that, besides the beautiful promises of [Surveyor General] Lawson, the beautiful promises of the Lord Proprietors [of North Carolina] were the cause which induced us to establish the colony first of all in North Carolina." In 1708 Lawson was in England, where he met Michel. He refers to him in his History: "My ingenious friend, Mr. Francis Louis Mitchell, of Bern in Switzerland, has been for several years, very indefatigable and strict in his discoveries amongst those vast ledges of mountains and spacious tracts of land, lying towards the heads of the great bays and rivers of Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania, where he has discovered a spacious country inhabited by none but the savages, and not many of them, who yet are of a very friendly nature to the Christians. This gentleman has been employed by the Canton of Bern to find out a tract of land in the English America, where that republic might settle some of their people, which proposal, I believe, is now in a fair way towards a conclusion between her Majesty of Great Britain and that canton, which must needs be of great advantage to both." See Lawson, *History of Carolina*, ed. Raleigh 1860, p. 334.



Map drawn by Christopher Graffenried, showing his project of establishing a colony along the Potomac River.

to induce the Swiss colonists to settle in Carolina. About this same time, in the spring of 1709, a large immigration of Germans into England took place, variously estimated from 10,000-15,000. Of these Graffenried was permitted to select 600 persons, to which later 50 more were added. These were sent to North Carolina, where they were settled at the confluence of the Trent and Neuse rivers, and the settlement was called New Berne.(24) Graffenried and Michel were not with this first colony They came with the second contingent, consisting of about 120 Swiss emigrants, who left England in July 1710 and reached Carolina in September of that year. The mining scheme of Michel and Graffenried never materialized, but the miners whom they engaged actually came to Virginia in the spring of 1714 and were settled by Governor Spotwsood, at Germanna, to work the Governor's iron mine there.]

Additions and Corrections.

Page 30, note 49. For the proposed identification of Col. Bornn with Col. Wm. Byrd, the following passage of Beverly's History may be quoted: "This gentleman has for a long time been extremely respected, and fear'd by all the Indians round about, who without knowing the name of any Governor, have ever been kept in order by him." Beverly, *History*, 1705,III,36.

Page 37, l. 30. In connection with the four kinds of squirrels mentioned by Michel, it may be noted that Lawson, in his *History of Carolina*, ed. 1860, p. 204, mentions also four kinds: fox squirrels, English squirrels, ground squirrels and flying squirrels.

Page 122, note 13. Of Beverly's *History of Virginia*, the edition of 1705 has been used throughout, not 1725, as given by mistake.

Page 122, note 14. Read Aargau instead of Aargan.

Page 126, l. 22, read cavalry instead of calvary.

Page 138, note 42, read Orvieton instead of Orvieton and Orvieto instead of Orvieto.

L. 140, note 44, read trypanosoma instead of tryfonosonia.

(24) For the history of the New Nerne Colony see Prof. von Mülinen's authoritative account, based entirely on Mss. sources: *Christoph von Graffenried; Landgraf von Carolina, Gründer von Neu-Bern*, Born 1896. Based on it is Prof. Vincent H. Todd's monograph *Christoph von Graffenried and the Founding of New Bern, N. C.*, published in Vol. XII (1912) pp. 1-123 of the yearbook of the German-American Historical Society of Illinois.

COUNCIL PAPERS 1698-1702

From Original Volume in Virginia State Library
(Continued)

Virginia: William Byrd Audito^{r} to His Maj^{tys} Revenue of two Shill^{s} for every hh^{d} of Tobacco exported out of this Colony of Virginia, & 15^{d} p tunn for every Shipp tradeing here & Six pence p^{r} pole for every p son imported into this Colony, & the forfeiture here due to his Maj^{ty} for One Yeare Ending ye 17th Augst 1698:

	£	s	d
To Ralph Wormeley Esqr Collector of Rappahannock District his Acco^{t} of two Shill^{s} p hh^{d} to this day	708.	8.	00
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties & head money	180.	13.	00
To Collo. Edmund Jenings Collector of Yorke District—his Acco^{t} of two Shill^{s} p hh^{d}	706.	15.	01
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	195.	04.	03
To Collo. Edward Hill Collecto^{r} of ye Upper District of James River his Acco^{t} of two Shill^{s} p hh^{d}	601.	12.	07
To his Acco^{t} of port Duties and head money	103.	14.	3
To Collo. Xtopher Wormeley (by Mr Griffin his Deputy) Collecto^{r} of the lower District of Potomack his Acco^{t} of two Shill^{s} p hh^{d}	165.	02.	00
To his Acco^{t} of port Duties	66.	15.	7½
To Collo. Richard Lee Collecto^{r} of the Upper District of Potomack his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	287.	3.	8
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	56.	10.	9
To Mr Peter Heyman Collecto^{r} of the Lower District of James River his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	261.	02.	04
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	89.	08.	03
To Capt William Randolph Ex^{r} of Mr Hugh Davis late Deputy Collecto^{r} of ye Lower district of James River his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	68.	09.	09
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties	18.	04.	09
To Coll'o Charles Scarbrough Collect^{r} of the Easterne Shore District his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	152.	12.	00
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	50.	12.	06
(To be Continued)	3712.	08.	09½

NOTES AND QUERIES.

Greensville Co. Marriage Binds.

Compiled by Mrs. J. O. James, Petersburg, Va.

John Heath & Lucy Young, Feb. 13th, 1787.
Nathaniel Heath & Sarah Collier, Mar. 12th, 1782.
Absalom Harris & Clara Jeter, Dec. 14th, 1785.
Edward Harrison & Frances Wilburn, July 10th, 1787.
James Hinton & Winny Rives, Dec. 16th, 1786.
Reuben Harris & Mary Rawlings, Oct. 10th, 1785.
Meshack Hitchcock & Elizabeth Jones, Dec. 26, 1789.
Howell Heathcock & Mary Woodall, Jan. 30, 1786.
Richard Harrison & Dolly Harrison, Aug. 23, 1789.
Wm. Holt & Frances Mabry, July 26, 1786.
Dudley Hargrove & Polly Coalman, Jan. 19, 1791.
Peyton Harwell & Sarah P. Batte, Feb. 5, 1790.
Joel Heathcock & Nancy Heathcock, Dec. 24, 1795.
John Harrison & Rebecca Dillshay, Sept. 21, 1793.
Reuben Heathcock & Mary Jones, Aug. 6, 1793.
John Hunt & Agnes Sills, Nov. 18, 1790.
Colley Heathcock & Grief Jeffrie, July 24, 1794.
John Harwell & Ann Spencer! July 24, 1791.
Richard Hall & Martha House, May 4, 1799.
John Hall & Elizabeth Jordan, Oct. 1, 1802.
John Heath & Wilmuth Richards, Dec. 27, 1800.
Robert Harris & Ann Lancaster, Dec. 7, 1789.
Joseph Harrison & Elizabeth Ferguson, Aug. 31, 1786.
Jess Hart & Lucy Cato, Dec. 17, 1787.
Wm. Harwel & Oney Smith.
Edwin Howard & Nancy Goodwyn, Dec. 26, 1794.
Sterling Harris & Patsy Woodruff.
Wm. Harris & Francis Branscomb, Feb. 4, 1793.
Simon Harris & Rebecca Davis, Mar. 22, 1791.
James Hailey & Anne Person, Mar. 22, 1790.
Hugh Hall & Amey Tyus, Apr. 13, 1797.
James Harrison & Susanna Jones, Dec. 4, 1801.

I

Abel Israel & Sarah Whitehorn, Mar. 3, 1786.

J

Lattna Jones & Lucretia Night, Nov. 10, 1788.
Archilles Jeffie & Mary Wall, Mar. 15, 1783.
Drury Jeffrie & Silvia Scott, Jan. 28, 1790.
Nathan Jeffrie & Clary Jeffrie, June 23, 1791.
Benjamin Jordan & Eliza Clark, Aug. 27, 1801.
Benjamin Johnson & Polly Foster, Mar. 16, 1802.
Wm. Jones & Martha Loftin, Mar. 11, 1797.
Ben. Jones & Martha Rivers, Oct. 1, 1783.
Edmund Jeter & Rebecca Rives, Jan. 13, 1791.
John Johnson & Lucy Sissons, Dec. 39, 1790.
Wm. Jordan & Elizabeth Goodrich, Dec. 39, 1799.
Upsham Jordan & Patsy Rives, Jan. 23, 1800.
John Jones & Patsy Dean, Feb. 12, 1801.
Lewis Jefferson & Polly Hill, Jan. 10, 1792.

L

John Lundy & Elizabeth Nelson, Aug. 20, 1786.
Joseph Long & Annis Lawrence, Sept. 8, 1786.
Edwin Lundy & Lucy Peterson, Feb. 3, 1789.
John Lifsay & Hollan Allen, Mar. 31, 1789.
Littleberry Lee & Lucy Cook, Jan. 19, 1792.
Edmund Lucas & Betsy Hobbs, Dec. 11, 1784.
Alexander Lowe & Rebecca Vincent, June 20, 1787.
James Lee & Mary Collier, April 27, 1786.
Nathaniel Lucas & Sarah Rivers, April 16, 1783.
Simon Lane & Nelly Jones, May 27, 1790.
Peyton Lundy & Dorothy Harris, Oct. 5, 1790.
Isham Lundy & Dolly H. Rives, Jan. 27, 1796.
John Lundy & Dorcas Took, Feb. 6, 1703.
Wid. Dempsey Took
Thomas Yates Lundie & Elizabeth Maclin, June 9, 1800.
James Lockhart & Clara Morriss, Sept. 2, 1807.
Joshua C. Lundy & Polly Tyus, Sept. 8, 1794.
Edwin Lanier & Amy W. Goodrich, Oct. 27, 1803.
Alex. Fergusson Lundie & Susanna Maclin, Dec. 17, 1804.
Charles Locke & Mary Batte, July 15, 1790.
Edmund Lawrence & Sarah Lanier, Feb. 5, 1794.
Jonathan Lawrence; Mary Hazelwood, May 10, 1802.
Lyson Lewellening; Sally Hart, May 27, 1790.

M

James Mitchell & Sally Lewellyn, June 7, 1787.
Banks Meacham & Elizabeth Person, Dec. 6, 1785.

William Maclin & Winnie Wyche, Sep. 20, 1781.
William Morris & Winnie Wilkinson, Aug. 19, 1796.
John Mason & Lucy Cardall, Nov. 8, 1780.
Jabez Morris & Elizabeth Bland Lundie, Aug. 19, 1783.
Richard Mabry & Amy Grigg, Feb. 23, 1793.
Alex. Madilland & Martha Wall, Nov. 6, 1792.
James McKennee & Martha Wilkinson, Dec. 27, 1792.
William Massey & Fanny Goodrich, Feb. 25, 1796.
Jeremiah Mangum & Nancy Jackson, Dec. 20, 1798.
John Massey & Anna Shelborn, Oct. 12, 1799.
Benjamin Montgomery & Betty Tatem, Dec. 13, 1802.
Richard Mason & Mary Woodford (wid), Jan. 14, 1799.
John Mason & Mary Maclin, Oct. 23, 1788.
Robert Mabry & Rebecca Mason, Sep. 22, 1787.
Henry Mason & Rebecca Jeter, Nov. 11, 1796.
David Mitchell & Elizabeth Scott, Mar. 22, 1794.
Joshua Mays & Hannah Dupree, Jan. 28, 1790.
Joseph Mitchell & Molly Emory, May 22, 1793.
Chislon Morris & Tabitha New, Dec. 30, 1794.
John Murrel & Charlotte Jones, May 19, 1795.
Joseph Malone & Sarah Malone, Apl. 21, 1795.
Nathaniel Morris & Angelina Adams, Sep. 17, 1796.
Bannister Mitchell & Celia Mitchell, Feb. 12, 1795.
James Moore & Permelia Payne, May 10, 1802.
Henry Mitchell & Polly Mitchell, Feb. 2, 1797.
Richard Mabry & Polly Braxton Mabry, Aug. 19, 1799.
William Mason & Tabitha Tuell (or Suell), Sep. 10, 1798.
William Mason & Rebecca Richardson, Aug. 9, 1800.
Hartwell Mosely & Patsy Wrenn, Dec. 10, 1800.
Henry Mangum, Jr. & Nancy Harrison, Feb. 9, 1801.
Isham Mangum & Patsy Allen, Dec. 1, 1800.
William Moss & Elizabeth Collier, Oct. 4, 1783.
Henry Morris & Selah Clarke, Jul. 21, 1787.

Le Neve of Virginia.

The Clerk of Prince Edward County, from its setting off in 1754 until 1783, was John Le Neve. The statement is made that Mr. Le Neve was drowned in a fresh of 1783. Wood's careful map of Prince Edward County, 1820, gives the name Le Neve's Creek to a small stream entering Buffalo in the northern part of the county. It is possible Mr. Le Neve lived in that neighborhood; it is possible that the name was given merely from the circumstance of his death there. He had a son christened Ludwell, which plainly connects him with the Williamsburg country. Mr. Le Neve had married a daughter of Samuel Cobbs, first clerk of

Amelia County, 1734-1757. It would be logical if Mr. Le Neve had been deputy to Mr. Cobbs.

Was John Le Neve, Clerk of Prince Edward, a son or near kinsman of the Rev. William Le Neve, who 'arrived in Virginia from England on St. Mark's day 1722,' and was minister of James City and Mulberry Island in 1724, fulfilling also the duties of a lectureship at Williamsburg—£20 a year for Sunday evening lectures? In 1723 William Le Neve was appointed, on his own petition, chaplain to the House of Burgesses, to attend for reading prayers every morning at ten a clock, at a salary of £20. He was still continued in this office in 1726, and was living in 1737 when he advertised in the *Virginia Gazette* the loss of an "old Pocket Book tied with a blew string."

And were John Le Neve and the Rev. William Le Neve, of Virginia, kinsmen of John Le Neve, Peter Le Neve, and Sir William Le Neve, those well known English antiquaries from 1600 to 1741? It is an engaging guess that John Le Neve, Clerk of Prince Edward, was son of William Le Neve of England and James City; and that William Le Neve of James City was one of the eight children of John Le Neve, rector of Thornton-le-Moor, Lincolnshire, all of whose antiquarian works 'were unsuccessful from a pecuniary point of view.'

We need to be precise about our early Clerks, for through them was brought in how much of the lore of Old England.

Robinson of the Eastern Shore.

Further information is desired regarding the family of Mrs. Elizabeth Robinson, whose will appears in the Virginia Magazine for April 1916, page 194. She was the grandmother of Col. Tully Robinson, son of Wm. and Col. John Custis, only child of Major General John Custis and her deceased daughter Elizabeth. Maj. Gen. John Custis and his second wife, Alicia, widow of Capt. Peter Walker witnessed the will of the widow Elizabeth Robinson, which was probated June 29, 1668, Accomac Co., Vol. 8, p. 66.

The name, age of the husband of the above Elizabeth? When he arrived in this country and where he originally settled. When he died and when and where was the will probated. Also who did Ann the executrix of her mother, Elizabeth, marry? The family were financially comfortable as well as officially prominent.

It is claimed they were the same family as Christopher Robinson and used the same crest. Any data referring to the families will be gratefully appreciated through the Magazine.

Corrections in Brooke Genealogy.

Vol. XVI, July 1908, p. 103. Should be "Ben Arnold a German married and died in this country and left," etc.

Vol. XVI, Oct. 1908, p. 213. Should be "Col. Humphrey Hill stood *father*," etc. (not *God*-father).

Vol. XX, Oct. 1912, p. 435. The oldest son of Francis E. Brooke of St. Julien should be Francis Taliaferro (named for his grandfather) and not Francis E. Same error on p. 436.

Vol. XIX, p. 320. Samuel C. Bockius, not Boskins.

Laws of Virginia 1643-46—A Correction.

It was stated in the last annual report of the President of this Society that the manuscript laws of the dates named were first discovered by Mr. McIntosh of Norfolk. Since the publication of the President's report, attention has been called to the fact that these laws were referred to and quoted by Mr. P. A. Bruce in his *Ecconomic* and *Institutional* histories. The only excuse that Mr. McIntosh, Dr. McIlwaine, President McCabe and the editor of this Magazine can make is that Mr. Bruce's books are such vast mines of original information that it is impossible to remember all that he has published.

Royall and Royster.

Richard Royall died in Pittsylvania County; will proved 1819. He came from Mecklenburg Co. where he had married Elizabeth Miniard Royster. By this marriage there were sons John and Nathaniel, and daughter Susannah, Elizabeth, Mary Royall Morrison, Judith Royall Stone, mother of Governor J. M. Stone of Mississippi, Sarah, Nancy and Caroline.

Any information concerning the Royall and Royster families will be gratefully received.

Mrs. N. E. Clement,
Chatham, Va.

A Description of Jefferson.

[The following communication was received a number of years ago]

Dr. Samuel J. Bumstead living at No. 268 W. Eldorado Street, Decatur, Ill., has a small bound volume of copies of letters (in manuscript),

written by his father, Rev. S. A. Bumstead, in Aug. 1822, to his sisters, mother and aunt, giving a description of a journey from Goshen, Md., to Harper's Ferry and thence up the Shenandoah Valley, via Staunton to Hot Springs and from there via Staunton, Charlottesville and Richmond to Brookville, Md. This little manuscript volume has the appearance of being very old. The paper is yellow with age. These copies of letters are in the hand-writing of the author himself. Rev. Mr. Bumstead was at the time a school teacher at Brookville Academy, Md , and he seems to have taken the journey he describes to learn something of the southern country and southern manners. A map of his travels accompanies the letters and is bound with them. Among these letters there is one dated Aug. 23, 1822 and is written to his Aunt Lilly from "Fluvanna Co.," which contains a vivid description of Jefferson's personality and which is new so far as I know. In this letter Mr. Bumstead, after describing his travels from Staunton over the Blue Ridge by way of Fisher's Gap, his visit to the Virginia University; his breakfasting at Charlottesville and noting his disappointment at not finding Mr. Jefferson at home and his disappointment at having to leave Monticello without meeting him, he goes on to say:

"After I got about 3 miles from his house and was about entering the Richmond road, I saw a man on horse-back at a distance off; it was difficult to conceive what the matter was or whether he wanted anything of me by his making toward me with so much speed—as he advanced within plain sight I was well aware by the cut of his jib who it was. His costume was very singular—his coat was checked gingham, manufactured in Virginia I suppose. The buttons on it were of white metal and nearly the size of a dollar. His pantaloons were of the same fabric. He was mounted on an elegant bay horse going with speed—and he had no hat on but a lady's parasol, stuck in his coat behind, spread its canopy over his head, which was very white—his hair is quite thick—his complexion sandy —and his eye, the eye of an eagle—his features regular and resembling very much the portrait you have in your parlor—He cast his very penetrating eye at me and gave a polite nod of his head as he passed. This was Thomas Jefferson—and as you may naturally expect quite gratifying to me in having my curiosity answered. Had he not have appeared in such a hurry I should have stopt and entered into conversation with him. I intended to have inquired the road that leads into the Richmond road of the first person that I met—but as soon as I saw him I forgot all about it—such a great man in such a plain and singular garb so struck me that I had not another thought about me but the request you made of me—I should have complied with your request if he had not appeared so much in haste—but I am told it is his usual gait. He does not appear as old as he really is—He is in his 84th year—He was remarkably erect and had every appearance of antiquity about him. I am told he always rides in this manner during the summer without any hat—often times many miles—it was very warm when I met him to-day and I thought he looked pretty

well heated. Thus much of this extraordinary man of whom the world has heard so much—whose writings have made somuch bustle. I think I can never forget his looks—indeed they are pretty well fixed in my minds' eye. I am now at a public house in Fluvanna Co—there is no village here. I shall expect to reach a place called Beaver Dam tomorrow.

With affection

Your nephew S. A. Bumstead."

HOBSON.

In the Land Patent Books of Richmond there is a grant of 400 acres in Spottsylvania County, patented by Thomas and Adcock Hobson of "St. George's Parish in the same county," dated June 20, 1733.

Later, I find Adcock Hobson living in Cumberland County, having, in 1741, married Joanna Lawson, daughter of Christopher Lawson. They had children John, Winnefred, born 1744, Thomas, Wm. Caleb, born 1750, Lawson, Edward, Lucy and Elizabeth.

Caleb Hobson married in 1774 Phoebe Brackett and left many descendants in Cumberland Co.

Winnefred married Thomas Carter in 1766, and in 1783 moved from Cumberland to Pittsylvania County. I am anxious to find Adcock Hobson's father. I presume Thomas was his brother.

Did John Hobson of the Royal Council have descendants?

Any information concerning the Hobson and Lawson families will be gratefully received.

Mrs. N. E. Clements,
Chatham, Va.

GENEALOGY.

The Blackwell Family.

(By Miss Stella Pickett Hardy, Batesville, Ark.)
(Concluded)

5-1. Lucy Steptoe Blackwell.

5-2. William Blackwell, m. 1822 Mary Anne Bronaugh, daughter of William and Mary Catherine Pope (Peyton) Bronaugh, and had issue.

5-3. There were other children, but I have been unable to secure their names.

4-8. John Blackwell, of Fauquier Co., Va., b. 1755; d. 1808. He served with distinction in the Revolutionary War, 1st. Lieut. 3rd Va., Apr. 29, 1776; wounded at Brandywine, Sep. 11, 1777; captain Sep. 15, 1777; was taken prisoner at Charleston, May 12, 1780; prisoner on parole to close of war; Bevet Major, Sep. 30, 1783; (Heitman's Historical Register, p. 105). Was High Sheriff of Fauquier Co., from 1783 to 1785; and County Lieutenant, and General of Va. Militia, 1794 (Fauquier County Records and Manuscripts in Virginia State Library). He received 5,166½ acres of land on May 16, 1783 for his services as Captain in Revolution (Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 265). He m. (first) 1779, Agatha Ann Eustace, b. 1765; d. after 1795; daughter of Issaac and Agatha (Conway) Eustace, of Stafford Co., Va.; (second) about 1797, Mrs. Judith Lee Pierce Peachy, a widow; b. about 1770; d. about 1805; daughter of Kendall and Betty (Heale) Lee, of Northumberland Co., Va.; (third) Nov. 28, 1804, Frances Parker, b. about 1765; daughter of Judge Richard and Mary (Beale) Parker, of Westmoreland Co., Va., Issue by 1st m.

5-1. Lucy Steptoe Blackwell, b. 1785; d. 1817; m. (first) 1805, Hugh B. Campbell; (second) 1816, Rawleigh William Downman, of "Belle Isle," son of Rawleigh and Frances (Ball) Downman of Lancaster Co., Va.

5-2. Steptoe Blackwell, b. 1786; d. unm.

5-3. Agatha Conway Blackwell, b. 1788; m. Charles Bell, of Ohio and had issue.

5-4. Eloise Blackwell, b. 1790; m. Mark Anthony Chilton, of Mo., son of Col. Charles and Elizabeth (Blackwell) Chilton, of Fauquier Co., Va., and had issue.

5-5. John Eustace Blackwell, b. 1793; m. Ricey Morris, and had issue.

5-6. William Blackwell, of Kanawha Co., Va. (now W. Va.), b. 1795; d. unm.

Issue by 2nd m.,

5-7. Emma Blackwell, b. 1798; m. about 1815, George William Downman, b. 1794; d. 1845; son of Joseph Ball and Olivia (Payne) Downman, of Lancaster Co., Va.

5-8. Ann Eliza Blackwell, b. 1800; d. 1847; m. 1817, Dr. James Kendall Ball, of "Edgewood," Lancaster Co., Va., b. 1790; d. 1836; son of Col. James and Frances (Downman) Ball, of "Bewdley," and had issue.

4-9. Judith Blackwell, b. 1759; d. 1867; m. May 23, 1775, Capt. Thomas Keith, of Fauquier Co., Va., who served with distinction in the Revolutionary War, commissioned Lieut. of Fauquier Militia, Mar. 24, 1778; serving under Capt. Turner Morehead (McAllister's Virginia Militia p. 201). He was later commissioned Captain (Manuscripts in Virginia, State Library). He was a staunch and liberal churchman; son of Rev. James and Mary Isham (Randolph) Keith, of Fauquier Co., Va., Issue.

5-1. John Marshall Keith, m. Elizabeth Jones, and had issue.

5-2. Harriet Keith, m. Mr. Skinker, and had issue, their descendants removed to Missouri.

5-3. Mary Isham Keith.

5-4. James Keith.

5-5. Susan Keith, m. Davis James, and had issue.

5-6. Peter Grant Keith, of Tenn., m. unknown and had issue.

5-7. Tarleton Fleming Keith, m. unknown and had issue.

5-8. Isham Keith, of Fauquier Co., Va., b. 179-; d. Apr. 25, 1887; m. 1822, Judith Chilton, b. 1800; daughter of Joseph and Ann (Smith) Chilton, of Fauquier, Issue

6-1. Isham Keith, C. S. A., of Fauquier Co., Va., m. Sarah Agness Blackwell, daughter of William and Anne Sparks (Gordon) Blackwell, and had issue.

6-2. James Keith, C. S. A., of Richmond, Va., b. 1839; living, a distinguished lawyer and judge; m. (first) 1875, Lilias Morson, b. 1848; d. 1877; (second) 1887, his sister-in-law, Frances Barkesdale Morson, b. 1855; d. 1908; daughters of Hon. Arthur Alexander and Maria Martin (Scott) Morson, of Richmond, Va., and had issue.

(Authority for the foregoing line of descendants of Hon. Joseph Blackwell and Lucy Steptoe, are as given in parenthesis, also Fauquier County Records, Manuscripts in Virginia State Library, Old Family Papers, Family Bibles, Letters, etc., Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 265 and 266, Hardy's Colonial Families of the Southern States of America, p. 58 to 70. For a fuller line of the lineage of Blackwells, Downings, Steptoes, Chiltons, Cookes, Colliers, Slaughters, Picketts, Bouldins, Marshalls, Keiths, Clarksons, Taylors, Scotts, Johnstons, Corbins, Balls, Lees, Smiths, Footes, etc., see Hardy's Colonial Families of the Southern States of America).

THE HARRISON FAMILY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA.
(Concluded)

(XXIII, p. 332) 24. THOMAS[5] HARRISON (Thomas[4]) born 1726, died 1727, married ———, and removed to Kentucky.

Issue: a. Benjamin[6]; b. Thomas Grayson[6]; c. Anne; d. Alicie; e. Elizabeth; f. William Butler[6], born ——, died Feb. 28, 1835; was a Cornet in Lee's Legion from 1779 to the close of the war. After the Revolution he was a resident of Loudoun Co., Va., and drew a pension to the time of his death.

(XXIV, 211) 1. BURR (error, should be) BENJAMIN HARRISON (Burr) married Nancy Hart and had issue: 1. Betsey married —— Dunwoody; 2. Benjamin, married Elizabeth Russell; 3. Dernel married Nancy Anabarett; 4. William married —— Robb.

(XXIV, 211). JONATHAN HARRISON (Burr) married Sally Tyler and had issue: 1. Burr, married —— Kato; 2. Mary, married —— Robb; 3. Cuthbert, married ——; 4. Elizabeth married —— Ashford.

(XXIV, 212): MORDECAI HARRISON (Burr), married Sarah Alston and had issue: 1. Burr, married —— Liddle; 2. Jonathan, married Caroline Ragsdale; 3. Elizabeth married —— Mitchell; 4. Rebecca, married —— Cole; 5. Lucinda married —— Nordite; 6. Benjamin, died single; 7. William, died single; 8. Thomas, married Mrs. Sykes.

The children and descendants of Burr, Jonathan and Thomas Harrison lived in the South.

87. CUTHBERT[7] HARRISON (Thomas[6]), born Jan. 26, 1777, died May 20, 1837, married ——, and had issue: Thomas[8], and Edward[8].

88. THOMAS[7] HARRISON (Thomas[6]), born Jan. 26, 1777, died ——, married Elizabeth Fitzhugh, and had issue: Anne, married John Carter Armistead; Jane Cecilie married Dr. Daniel Harrison, and Frances Barnes married Dr. William W. Taliaferro.

90. PHILIP[7] HARRISON (Thomas[6]), born May 31, 1781, died Jan. 1, 1852; a distinguished lawyer of Richmond, Va.; married, 1810, Maria, daughter of John Lawson (born Feb. 22, 1754, died Aug. 6, 1823) of Prince William County and his wife Mary M. daughter of Charles Tyler, of Prince William.

Issue: 116. Lucy Erskine, born Feb. 10, 1812, died 1814; 117. Anna Maria, born Nov. 13, 1815, died Jan. 19, 1880, married Oct. 3, 1838, Dr. James Bolton; 118. Napoleon[8], born 1815, died 1816; 119. Cora, born Nov. 13, 1812, married Frederick Anderson; 120. John Henry[8], born April 15, 1819, died unmarried; 121. Thomas Botts[8], born Oct. 17, 1821, married Steptoe Freeman and had a son Bolton[9] Harrison; 122. *Walter*[8]; 123. Philip[8], born Dec. 28, 1829, died unmarried; 124. Elizabeth born June 28, 1831, married Austin Smith.

93. Burr[7] Harrison (Thomas[6]), born Aug. 26, 1787, died Dec. 12, 1832, married Mary, widow of Mann Page, and daughter of Alexander Lithgow.

Issue: 124. William Lithgow[8], born at Fredericksburg, Va., July 21, 1816, married ——; 125. Sarah, born at Georgetown, D. C., July 21, 1819, married —— Dean; 126. Mary, married Henry Robinson.

94. JAMES[7] HARRISON (Thomas[6]), born April 29, 1789, married Ann Short and had issue: Byrd[8], Sarah, and Elizabeth.

95. JOHN[7] HARRISON (Thomas 6) born Feb. 11, 1793, married Susan Sweeney, and is stated to have had twenty-one children.

96. WALTER[7] HARRISON (Thomas[6]) born April 3, 1795, died Feb. 5, 1826, married Anne Lawson (sister of his brother's wife) and had Walter[8] who died in infancy.

122. WALTER HAMILTON[18] HARRISON (Philip7), of Richmond, Va., born May 29, 1827, died Jan. 5, 1871; Lt. Colonel C. S. A.; A. A. G. and Chief of Staff Pickett's Division, author of "Pickett and his Men," and other productions; married Helen Elizabeth, daughter of James Brown Macmurdo, of Richmond, Va.

Issue: 125. Walter Hamilton[9], married Mackie Worthington; 126. Philip[9], married Anne Lee Ansley; 127. Frank Bolton[8], died young; 128. Marie Helene, married 1890, Linn B. Enslow, of Richmond, Va.

There are a number of members of the family whose descendants we have no means of tracing and should be obliged for any additional information in regard to such descendants of the name Harrison. Space will not permit publication of lines of descent through daughters.

DESCENDANTS OF ARCHER PAYNE, OF "NEW MARKET."

Contributed by John M. Payne.
(Concluded)

8. John Robert Dandridge Payne, married Susan Bryce, daughter of Archibald Bryce and sister to Mrs. Spotswood Payne. He lived in Lynchburg and was one of the Mayors of that city and then removed to Richmond where he died. They had only one child, to wit: Mary Jane Payne, married Colonel James Turner. She died early, leaving one son, William S. Turner, who married Miss Holt of Alabama.

Note.—Colonel Turner removed to Alabama and married there.

9. Robert Spotswood Payne, born in Goochland January 15, 1809, was a prominent physician in Lynchburg until his death September 28, 1884. He was married, January 30, 1840 to Frances Ann Russell Meem, daughter of John G. Meem and Eliza Campbell Russell, daughter of Andrew Russell of Abingdon, Va. Their children were: 1. John Meem Payne, Captain S. C. A., born November 11, 1840, married December 2, 1863, Elizabeth Allen Langhorne daughter of John Archer Langhorne and Margaret Kent. Captain Payne and his wife celebrated their golden wedding in 1913 and are the oldest representatives of the Archer Payne family. They have issue.

2. Alexander Spotswood Payne, V. M. I. Cadet at Battle of New Market, born July 9, 1845, married Elizabeth B. Burks, daughter of Judge E. C. Burks and Elizabeth daughter of Capt. Pascal Buford of Bedford County. He died Oct. 2, 1910, leaving one daughter.

3. Eliza Russell Payne, born March 3, 1848 and died in Lynchburg Dec. 23, 1906 unmarried.

10. George Woodson Payne, born in Goochland Dec. 29, 1810, married Ann Dabney, sister of Rev. Ro. L. Dabney, D. D. They lived in Louisa County on the South Anna river. He died in 1869. His wife survived him for many years. They had no issue.

11. David Bryce Payne, born in Goochland August 10, 1812, married Helen James, daughter of Doctor —— James and his second wife Lillias daughter of Archibald Bryce. Mr. David Payne was a book merchant of Lynchburg for many years until his death in 1888. Their children were: 1. Ella Grattan Payne, mar. Dr. Geo. K. Turner; left issue. 2. Robert S. Payne, mar. Meta Eskridge of Augusta Co. and have issue; 3. David B. Payne, Jr., mar. Ellen Scott and have issue; 4. Richard J. Payne, died unmarried; 5. Mary C. Payne, unmarried; 6. George A. W. Payne, mar. Louise B. Mitchell and have issue; 7. Helen Stockton, mar. Edward T. Page and has issue.

12. James Ferguson Payne, born in Goochland September 10, 1814, married Frances Dudley, daughter of Capt. Peter Dudley and —— Davis. Was a well known and respected citizen of Lynchburg until his death. They had no issue.

13. Martha Dandridge Payne, born in Goochland Apr. 25, 1820, married Isaac Vandeventer of Loudoun County. They left two children, to-wit: Robert Vandeventer, mar. —— ——; died without issue; Helen Vandeventer, mar. N. S. Purcell and died without issue.

14. Ann Bryce Payne, married May 3, 1849, Rev. Henry R. Smith of Otsego, New York. She died in Abingdon Dec. 12, 1907, leaving: 1; Lillias Payne, born Sept. 17, 1852, mar. Late Salmon M. Withers and has issue; 2. Eliza Bell, born Sept. 18, 1853, mar. Jas. Isaac Hutton of Kansas City and has issue; 3. Nansie Bryce, born Jan. 14, 1857, mar. John Emil Roberts of New York and has issue; 4. Addison Melvin, born July 3, 1859. unmarried.

15. William M. Payne, born in Goochland Feb. 15, 1828, married Dec. 2, 1852 Frances Mitchell, daughter of Rev. Jacob Duche Mitchell, D. D. and his wife Harriet Morford. Wm. M. Payne served throughout the Civil War and was Major and Quartermaster of General Walker's Division at Appomattox. He died in Kinston, N. C., October 31, 1898. Their children are: 1. James Mitchell, born Sept. 8, 1855, mar. Margaret Belville and died Aug. 19, 1913, leaving issue; 2. William Spotswood, born May 16, 1858, mar. Mary Norvell and died July 9, 1907, without issue; 3. Ida M., born April 30, 1860, died Mar. 26, 1880 unmarried; 4. Josephine M., born Nov. 20, 1861, married Dr. R. W. Wooton of Kinston, N. C. and has issue; 5. J. Duche, born July 7, 1867, mar. Minnie Kohe, no

issue; 6. Alexander S., born July 31, 1869, mar. Nora VanLear Huddleson and has issue; 7. Frances Dandridge, born Sept. 14, 1871, mar. Rev. E. D. Brown and has issue.

16. Charlotte E. Payne, born in Goochland Jan. 9, 1829, married Dec. 21, 1848, John H. Winston of Louisa County. She died in Bristol, Oct. 27, 1915. Children: 1. Charlotte P., mar. (first) Samuel Read; (second) Alexander West and has issue by both marriages; 2. Sarah Aletha, mar. John Brown, died leaving issue; 3. Harriet, mar. Mr. Gwathmey and has issue; 4. Frank, mar. ——; 5. Mary Lee, unmarried; 6. John, mar. Miss Taylor and died leaving issue.

17. Harriet J. Payne, born in Goochland Feb. 11, 1831, married Capt. Wm. Steptoe in 1867 and died in 1876 without issue. Capt. Steptoe served in the 2nd Virginia Cavalry during the Civil War and was a grandson of James Steptoe the well known Clerk of Bedford Co.

18. Dr. Archibald Bolling married Ann E. Wigginton, daughter of Benjamin Wigginton of Bedford County. He practiced medicine in Bedford County until his death during the war. His family then moved to Wytheville. They had three children: 1. Judge William Holcombe, married Sept. 1860, Sallie White; 2. Harriet, mar. Mr. Waddell of Mississippi, has issue; 3. Mary Jefferson, mar. Mr. Teusler and has issue.

The late Judge William H. Bolling left his widow and nine children, of whom Edith married (first) Norman Galt of Washington and (second) Woodrow Wilson, President of the United States.

[For additional Payne genealogy, see this Magazine Vol. VI, number 3 and 4; VII, 1, 2; XIX, 2.]

The Gorsuch and Lovelace Families.

(Continued)

Children of the Rev. John[3] Gorsuch (Daniel[2], William[1]) and his wife Anne (Lovelace), Richard Gorsuch[4], of Talbot County, Maryland.

6. Richard Gorsuch[4] (John [3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Baptized April 19, 1637 at Walkern, Herts. He was one of the four younger children for whose transportation Theo. Hoane received land on the Rappahannock February 22, 1652 (see ante p. 89). He joined in the petition to the Lancaster Court April 1, 1657, asking for the appointment of guardians (see ante p. 91). With Thomas Powell July 16, 1659 he entered rights for 300 acres of land for Powell and himself in Baltimore County (Maryland Patents; 4; 54). The tract "Richardson" on the north shore of the Patapsco on the east side of Welshman's Creek was surveyed for him July 30, 1659 and patented February 14, 1659-60 (Idem.; 4; 234 and 341). May 13, 1661 he entered rights for transporting six persons, among them an Elizabeth Gorsuch, into the province

(Idem,; 1; 551). Richard Gorsuch (no wife mentioned in the deed) "14th of 1st month, 1661" assigns to Thomas Powell the tract (unnamed), 300 acres on the north side of the Patapsco surveyed for him in 1659 (Balto. Co. Deeds R. M.: H. S: 5); and again "12th of 11th month, 1664-5," Richard Gorsuch and his wife Elizabeth convey to Thomas Powell, by what seems to be a confirmatory deed, 300 acres of land, apparently this same tract, but here called "Walnutt Neck"*, on the east side of February" 1664-5, when his wife Elizabeth joins him in transferring Welshman's Creek (Idem. I. R: P. P: 66). If the Elizabeth Gorsuch mentioned above for whose transportation he claimed rights was his wife Elizabeth, it seems probable that he married her before coming to Baltimore County, although it is just possible that this Elizabeth was his sister who, about that time, married a Powell. It is certain that Richard Gorsuch married prior to the "12th day 11th month called "Walnutt Neck" [or "Richardson"]. He probably removed to Talbot County soon after disposing of this tract, for his name as well as that of his brother Lovelace and of the Powell family soon appear on the records of this county. Richard Gorsuch and his brother Lovelace appear as executors of the will of Thomas Powell of Talbot County, dated January 17, 1669-70 and proved April 11, 1670. Soon after this time Richard Gorsuch appears to have wandered into the Province of New York where his uncle, Col. Francis Lovelace was then Governor, as there can be little question that the following reference applies to him: "Richard Gorsuch, conveyed his right to a patent for a tract of land on the west side of Delaware River to Governor Lovelace. It is described as 'bounded on ye North by a Creek called ye Indyans Quiackkitkunck Creek als Nicambanack Creek.'—General Entries, vol. 4, p. 189; dated in an order relating thereto, August 12, 1672" (New York Executive Council Minutes; 1668-1673, Administration of Francis Lovelace; Albany, 1910, Vol. I, p. 167). In the Minutes of the Executive Council of the Province of the New York Jan'ry 28th, 1672, there is an entry "relating ye Miscarriage of a Packett from his Ma'tie [Majesty], w'ch Mr. Gorsuch was to give Accot. of, but his Letter is not Arrived." (Idem) The editor of the recently published Minutes of the Executive Council, identifies Mr. Gorsuch the bearer of the Packett as Richard Gorsuch the patentee of the tract on the Delaware, but on what grounds he does not state. It seems possible, however, that his brother Robert Gorsuch, whose whereabouts at this time is not known, might well have been in New York.

Richard Gorsuch[4], Oct. 3, 1663, before he finally left Baltimore County, purchased from Edward Lloyd 200 acres on the north west side of Dividing Creek on the north side of the Choptank River, part of a large tract

*In later deeds this tract is referred to as "Richardson" vulgarly known as "Walnutt Neck".—see deed from James Todd to Mark Swift (Balto. Deeds; H. W.: No. 2, 153).

of 3050 acres patented by Lloyd and known as "Hier Dier Lloyd" (Talbot Co. Deeds 1; 6), where Richard Gorsuch and his descendants appear to have afterwards lived. There is an acknowledgment from Thomas Powell, dated March 24, 1665-6 to Richard Gorsuch, which recites that a tract of land at the head of the north west branch of the Great Choptank ["Old Town"] containing 800 acres, had been surveyed for Thomas Powell and Richard Gorsuch, but as the patent had been issued to Powell, he wishes to acknowledge that half of this land belongs to Gorsuch (Talbot Co. Deeds A. No. 1; 169). With it is filed a letter from Edward Roe certifying that he was a witness to this acknowledgment. This tract was afterwards resurveyed by his son, Richard Gorsuch[5], under a special warrant issued March 3, 1695-6. (Annap. Warrents Liber A; 76). Henry Parnam of Talbot, Jan. 20, 1671 deeded his personal property and all of his lands by deed of gift to Richard Gorsuch, the latter agreeing to supply Parnam "with sufficient food and rement honestly performed as becometh a man and nourished in sickness or in health—during this my naturall life" (idem; 34). It was doubtless in this way that Richard Gorsuch acquired "Rigby's Marsh," 300 acres, afterwards sold by his son, Richard Gorsuch[5] March 11, 1703-4 to Howell Powell (Talbot Deeds 9; 307). This tract lying on the Cabin Branch of the Choptank had been sold "3d 10th month 1665" by James Rigby and his wife Catherine R[ingold] Rigby to Henry Parnam (Talbot Deeds A No. 1; 23).

The Annapolis Testamentary Proceedings show that Richard Gorsuch[4] acted as Deputy Commissary for Talbot County in 1674, 1675 and 1676. "Mr. Richard Gorsuch," Jan. 20th, 1673-4 was a Commissioner of Talbot County (Talbot Co. Deeds I No. A; 273). Richard Gorsuch was appointed March 2, 1675-6 one of the "Gent. Justices" of Talbot (Archiv. Md. 15; 71). It is uncertain whether Richard Gorsuch became a Quaker, as his brothers Charles and Lovelace and his sister Elizabeth Powell are known to have done. It is of course possible that the purchaser, Thomas Powell, was responsible for the Quaker phraseology of the two deeds already referred to, by which Richard Gorsuch transferred land on the Patapsco to Powell.

Under the will of Edward Roe of Talbot Co. dated March 4, 1675 and proved July 3, 1676, Thomas Duncan, the son of the testator's wife, received the tract "Bachelor's Plantation," while the remainder of the land was left to his wife Mary and to his daughter Elizabeth. He left 10,000 pounds of tobacco to Anne Gorsuch, the daughter of Richard Gorsuch and an additional 10,000 pounds to be divided among the rest of Richard Gorsuch's children. The widow, Mary Roe, Capt. Philamon Lloyd, Capt. Peter Sayer and Richd. Gorsuch were appointed executors. (Annap. Wills 5; 59). Richard Gorsuch died intestate and his estate was administered upon Apr. 2, 1677 by his widow Elizabeth (Annap. Test. Proc. 9, 23). The inventory filed June 23, 1677 showed a personal estate of 36,624 pounds of tobacco appraised by Thos. Alexander and Richard Girling (Annap. Invs. & Accts. 4; 187). A petition was filed in

the Prerogative Court March 12, 1682 by Samuel Hatton and his wife Elizabeth, relict of Richard Gorsuch, in which it was recited that Edward Roe left a legacy of 10,000 pounds of tobacco to Ann, daughter of Richard Gorsuch and a like amount to be divided among Gorsuch's other children. It is further recited that Ann Gorsuch died unmarried and that Richard Gorsuch at the time of the death of Edward Roe had four children then living, viz., Mary, Richard, Elizabeth, and Sarah, one of whom, Mary, had since married Richard Keene. The Court ordered the two executors, William Combs and his wife Mary, the daughter of Richard Roe (the other executors appointed under the will of Edward Roe having renounced) to make distribution of the legacies (Annap. Test. Proc. 13; 13). Entered at the end of Liber H of the Talbot County Court Proceedings are to be found a number of seventeenth century records of births. Among these entries are the following: Richard Gorsuch, the sonn of Richard Gorsuch was born Feb., 1672; Charles Gorsuch, the sonn of Richard Gorsuch born Feb., 1676. These are both unquestionably the sons of Richard Gorsuch[4]. The date of Charles Gorsuch's birth being really Feb., 1676-7 explains why he did not share with his brother and sisters the legacy of Edward Roe who had died before his birth.

From the above evidence Richard Gorsuch[4] appears to have married prior to May 13, 1661, probably before coming into Maryland. The surname of his wife Elizabeth is not known. It would appear that there may be a relationship between her and Henry Parnam who deeded his property to Richard Gorsuch in 1671. It is also possible that there may have been a connection between her and Edward Roe who left legacies to the Gorsuch children. It is known from the petition of March 12 1682 that she married secondly Samuel Hatton of Talbot County. She appears to have married him prior to Sept. 23, 1678, when Samuel Hatton, Gentleman, and his wife Elizabeth convey their moiety in the tract "Hatton" to Geo. Conoley (Talbot Co. Deeds 3; 245). Samuel Hatton in a deed dated Jan. 20, 1673-4 conveys a tract called "Chairpinham" in St. Michael's River to Abraham Bishopp, in which Hatton describes himself as of the City of Bristol, England, merchant. (idem A. No. 1; 287-8). There was evidently a close relationship between this Samuel Hatton and a "Thomas Hatton of Tewkesbury in the county of Glouster in the Kingdom of England, brother and heir of John Hatton formerly of London," as all three are mentioned in a Maryland Chancery suit about 1668-71 (Annap. Chan. Proc. CD; 87-91). In this suit a tract "Persimmon Point," 400 acres in Baltimore County on Rumley Creek purchased by John Hatton is one of the tracts involved. Samuel Hatton and his wife Elizabeth March 11, 1678-9 gave a power of attorney to Charles Gorsuch and James Phillips to convey this tract to Miles Gibson describing it: "which land has - - - come into the hands of Samuel Hatton" (Balto. Deeds IR; PP. 32-33). Samuel Hatton probably died in 1687-8 as his estate was administered upon by Elizabeth Hatton Mar. 8, 1687-8 (Test. Proc. 9; 474). Whether Samuel and Elizabeth Hatton had issue is not

known. The widow married very promptly a third husband, as Herman ffoakes and Elizabeth his wife soon afterwards file an account (Test. Proc. 10; 184). Nothing further has been learned in regard to this last marriage.

From the petition in regard to the distribution of the estate of Edward Roe it has been seen that Richard Gorsuch[4] and his wife Elizabeth had five children born prior to July 3, 1676 viz., Anne, Mary, Richard, Elizabeth, and Sarah, while from the old Talbot register of births not only the date of the birth of the eldest son Richard is learned, but the fact that there was another son, Charles, born Feb., 1676-7. Down to this point we are on comparatively solid ground. When an attempt is made however to trace the descendants of the two sons, Richard[5] and Charles[5], difficulties are at once encountered in establishing identities. It will be recalled that Richard Gorsuch[4] and his younger brother Lovelace[4] were the only two of the four Gorsuch brothers who came to Maryland, who settled permanently upon the Eastern Shore, the former establishing himself in Talbot and the latter in Dorchester, the adjoining County. Fortunately the line of Lovelace Gorsuch[4] (see post) can be thoroughly worked out by wills, deeds and the Tred Avon Quaker Meeting records. There remain however a considerable number of individuals bearing the name Gorsuch found recorded in the registers of the established church of Talbot County, and among the other county records, during the first half of the eighteenth century, definitely known not to be of the line of Lovelace Gorsuch[4], who not only by exclusion but by various indirect evidence, would certainly appear to be descendants of Richard[5] and Charles[5], sons of Richard Gorsuch[4]. In view of the impossibility of drawing positive conclusions from the insufficient data now in hand, it seems best at this point to give all the Gorsuch entries in the Register* of old St. Peter's Parish, Talbot County, and to construct therefrom, and from the few other Gorsuch references of this period available, what must be a more or less tentative pedigree of these latter lines. It is hoped that the publication of this pedigree may be the means of bringing to light additional evidence from sources not available to the writer. The writer wishes to take this opportunity of thanking Miss Harriet P. Marine, of Baltimore, for the invaluable assistance she has rendered by her researches among the Talbot County Court records, and for the interesting data which she has unearthed.

Richard Gossutch and Elizath. Martin, married Dec. 3, 1696
Charles Gorsuch and Sarah his wife married 12th day June, 1700 by Mr. Nobbs, minister
Charles Gorsuch, son Charles & Sarah Gorsuch, born Sept. 25, 1703
Thomas Bowdle & Sarah Gorsuch married Dec. 6, 1709
William Ridgway & Sarah Gorsuch married Nov. 19, 1724

---

*Gorsuch Entries—St. Peter's Parish Register Talbot County

Charles Gorsuch married Mary Cornich Dec. 2, 1725
Sarah Gorsuch, daughter of Charles & Mary, born June 13, 1728
Elizabeth Gorsuch, daughter Charles & Mary, born April 16, 1730
John Gorsuch, son Charles & Mary, born March 14, 1731
Hannah Gorsuch, daughter of Charles & Mary, born Feb. 20, 1733
Richard Gorsuch & Elizabeth Eason married June 5, 1732
Richard Gorsuch & Mary Wheeler married May 29, 1739
Daniel Gossage, son of Charles Gossage & Eve Hopkins his wife, born Feb. 28, 1760 married Nov. 28, 1783 to Elizabeth Hopkins.

St. Luke's Register, Queen Anne County:

Rachel Gossage married John Starkey, June 29, 1758 by license.

Talbot County Marriage Licenses:

Charles Gorsuch married Mary Dodson, Oct. 18, 1746 by license.

Children of Richard[4] (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]) and Elizabeth Gorsuch:

1. Anne Gorsuch[5] (Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Died unmarried prior to March 12, 1682.
2. Mary Gorsuch[5] (Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Married prior to March 12, 1682, Richard Keene. Line not traced.
3. Richard Gorsuch[5] (Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). He was born February 4, 1672 (Talbot Co. Court Proc. Liber II). There is no question that he was the Richard *Gossutch**, who Dec. 3, 1696 married Elizabeth Martin (St. Peter's Reg.). Her identity has not been determined with certainty. She was probably the daughter of Thomas Martin, who appears to have lived on the plantation, also a part of the tract "Hier Dier Lloyd," adjoining the land of Richard Gorsuch on Dividing Creek branch of the Choptank River, and who Feb. 8, 1693-4 petitioned the Council of Maryland to order a resurvey of the bounds between his plantation and that of Richard Gorsuch (Archiv. Md. 26; 38-9). This Thomas Martin in his will dated August 27, 1690, proved August 2, 1705, names his sons, Samuel, Thomas, William, Henry, and Robert Martin, and his wife Jane, but only makes reference to a daughter Hannah (Annap. Wills; 3; 667). That he had at least one other daughter seems certain from the will of his son, Thomas Martin, Jr., of Talbot, dated Jan. 5, 1715, proved June 14, 1741 in which he mentions his sister, Mary Lyon (Annap. Wills 1741). There seems every likelihood therefore that Thomas Martin, Sr. had other daughters provided for during his life and therefore not mentioned in his will, one of whom apparantly married Richard Gorsuch[5]. There is a tombstone in the old Martin graveyard at "Hampden,"

---

*The name is spelt *Gossutch* in the original register; in the Md. Hist. Soc. transcript it has been incorrectly copied *Gossutoh*.

Talbot, Countyof "Elizabeth Martin ye daughter of Thomas Martin" died 1676 (Ridgley's Historic Graves of Maryland; 219). It was probably another daughter of the same name, born shortly afterwards, who married Richard Gorsuch[5]. The Martins of Talbot have been an influential family for generations. Richard Gorsuch July 17, 1700, leased to Alexander Boyess [Boyce] a tract, unnamed and of unstated acreage, upon which Boyess was then living, lying on the north side of Dividing Creek adjoining the plantation of Thomas Martin, during the life of Alexander Boyess and his wife Sarah (Talbot Co. Deeds; 11; 20). Richard Gorsuch, Dec. 27, 1703 conveys to Nicholas Goldsborough his one-third interest in the tract "Old Town," 800 acres (Talbot Co. Deeds 9, 262). This was the same tract which had been surveyed originally for his father Richard Gorsuch[4] and Thomas Powell. Richard Gorsuch[5] March 11, 1703 conveyed to Howell Powell a tract of 300 acres called "Rigby's Marsh" on Cabin Branch of the Choptank River (Talbot Deeds; 9; 307). It has already been shown that this tract had been acquired by his father, Richard Gorsuch[4] from Henry Parnam. Richard Gorsuch[5] died in 1705, as his widow, Elizabeth Gorsuch, exhibited her administration bond, with John Mullikin and John Lyon her securities in £200, Oct. 7, 1705 (Test. Proc. 19B; 89). The inventory of Richard Gorsuch of Talbot County showing personal property valued at £103:16:10 was filed Apr. 17, 1706; and the administration account by Elizabeth Gorsuch, the widow, filed July 19, 1706, showed a total personal estate of £438:8:10 (Annap. Inv. & Accts. 25; 371 & 42). The Talbot County Rent Roll for 1707 (Md. Hist. Soc. MSS.), shows that Richard Gorsuch's widow was then in possession of 200 acres, a part of "Hier Dier Lloyd," bought by his father in 1663. As corroborative evidence of the identity of Elizabeth Martin, the wife of Richard Gorsuch[5], it should be noted that one of her sureties for the administration of her husband's estate was John Lyon. It will be recalled that Thomas Martin, Jr. had a sister Mary Lyon. This supports the theory that Elizabeth Martin, who married Richard Gorsuch[5], was probably a sister of Thomas Martin, Jr. Furthermore the lease executed in 1751 by Thomas Martin to Richard Gorsuch[6], at a nominal rent, of "Hier Dier Lloyd" for the remainder of Richard's life may indicate that Martin wished to render assistance to a hard-up relation. The widow of Richard Gorsuch[5] was living in 1733, when she appears in the Annapolis Debt Book as charged with the quit rent of "Hier Dier Lloyd." Richard Gorsuch, who appears in a transaction involving the Gorsuch tract, part of "Hier Dier Lloyd," in 1724 was certainly the son of Richard[5] and Elizabeth (Martin). It is not known whether there were other children.

Issue of Richard[5] and Elizabeth (Martin) Gorsuch:

(1) Richard[6] Gorsuch (Richard[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born prior to 1706. The marriage of Richard Gorsuch and Elizabeth Eason took place June 5, 1732 (St. Peter's Register). Again May 29, 1739 the marriage of Richard Gorsuch and Mary Wheeler is recorded (idem). What little else is known in regard to Richard Gorsuch[6] is learned through a rather remarkable series of transactions in which the Gorsuch portion of the tract, "Hier Dier Lloyd," figures. Richard Gorsuch Sept. 7, 1724 leases all this tract of 200 acres to Loftus Bowdle for the life of Loftus and the latter's son Thomas, With this lease was filed the bond of Loftus Bowdle under which he binds himself in return to provide for Richard Gorsuch during the remainder of Gorsuch's life. This bond is of considerable interest as it gives a picturesque view of the every-day life of the times, and would seem to be a not unusual form of agreement existing in Talbot County in early times, and if carried out in spirit, was not altogether an unsatisfactory method of assuring a comfortable old age to a broken-down relation or friend. Bowdle undertakes "to keep and maintain Richard Gorsuch in good and sufficient drink, washing, lodging and wearing apparell of every kind with all other necessarys suitable to the following stuffs or chattels, to be worn by the said Gorsuch according to the season of the year, that is in summer sogathy, duroy, or camblet, in the winter English kersey, or for want of these, some other like price service and decency, and also to keep or provide saddles and bridles for the said Richard Gorsuch his use, farther the said Loftus hath undertaken for the said Richard to free & exempt him from all manner of public tax or pole money whatsoever, and from all labor, and also to pay unto the said Richard Gorsuch three gallons of rum or brandy, [a year] and two barrels of maze or Indian corn with good and sufficient pasturage for one horse—during the whole term of the natural life of the said Richard and no longer—and to maintain and keep or cause to be maintained or kept in the dwelling-house of him the said Loftus and his heirs with good and sufficient meat, drink, and all other things necessary—so that the before mentioned Richard be handsomely and neatly kept and maintained—(signed) Loftus Bowdle." (Talbot Deeds 13; 135-145). Thomas Bowdle, the son of Loftus, and his wife Mary, Sept. 22, 1741 sold to Thomas Martin what would seem to be their leasehold interest in a part of the Gorsuch tract (idem 15; 92), and July 22, 1746 the remainder of the tract to Martin. There was some difficulty about the title for it would appear from the deed that Martin had brought suit against Bowdle

in the Provincial Court Apr. 1746, and that the Court had ordered Richard Gorsuch and Thomas Bowdle to execute confirmatory deeds (idem 16; 294, 297, 311). Apparently to perfect the title, Thomas Martin July 16, 1751 leases part of this same tract to Richard Gorsuch for the latter's life, and immediately thereafter Richard Gorsuch assigns his lease to Loftus Bowdle (idem 17; 524). It will be recalled that there was a connection between the Gorsuch and Bowdle families, Thomas Bowdle having married Sarah Gorsuch Dec. 6, 1709. It is supposed that this Sarah Gorsuch was the aunt of Richard[6]. No further trace of Richard Gorsuch has been found in the records, nor is it known whether he left descendants.

4. Elizabeth Gorsuch[5] (Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Living and unmarried in 1682. Not traced.
5. Sarah Gorsuch[5] (Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Living and unmarried in 1682. It was probably this Sarah Gorsuch who Dec. 6, 1709 married Thomas Bowdle (St. Peter's Register). The Register records the birth of Joseph son of Tho. and Sarah Bowdle 30th 8th mo 1710, and also records the death of Sarah Bowdle May 12, 1724. This Bowdle line has not been worked out.
6. Charles Gorsuch[5] (Richard [4],John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). He was born Feb. 1676-7 (Talbot Co. Court Proc. liber II). The St. Peter's Register records the marriage June 12, 1701 of "Charles Gorsuch and Sarah his wife" and the birth of Charles, son of Charles and Sarah Gorsuch, Sept. 25, 1703. The birth of no other child of this marriage is recorded. The Sarah Gorsuch whose marriage Nov. 19, 1724 to William Ridgway is recorded in the St. Peter's Register may be another child of Charles[5] or she may be a child of his brother Richard[5]. The name Sarah rather suggests the first possibility. The date of Charles Gorsuch[5] death is not known, neither has his will nor administration been found. The will of John Burnyeyat (Barnyeat) of Talbot County dated Apr. 26, 1726 and proved Aug. 3, 1726, mentions his kinsman Charles Gorsuch (Annap. Wills 19;1). This may refer however either to this Charles[5] or to his son Charles[6].

Issue of Charles[5] and Sarah Gorsuch:

(1) Charles Gorsuch[6] (Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born Sept. 25, 1703 (St. Peter's Register). This is unquestionably the Charles Gorsuch whose marriage to Mary Cornich Dec. 2, 1725 is recorded (St. Peter's Register). A Talbot County deposition gives the age of Charles Gorsuch as 35 or 36 in 1741 (Dr. Christopher Johnston's Depositions MSS.). Nothing further has been learned in regard to Charles Gorsuch[6] except the record of the births between 1728-1733, of four children of Charles and Mary Gorsuch in the St. Peter's Register viz., Sarah, Elizabeth, John and Hannah. There is

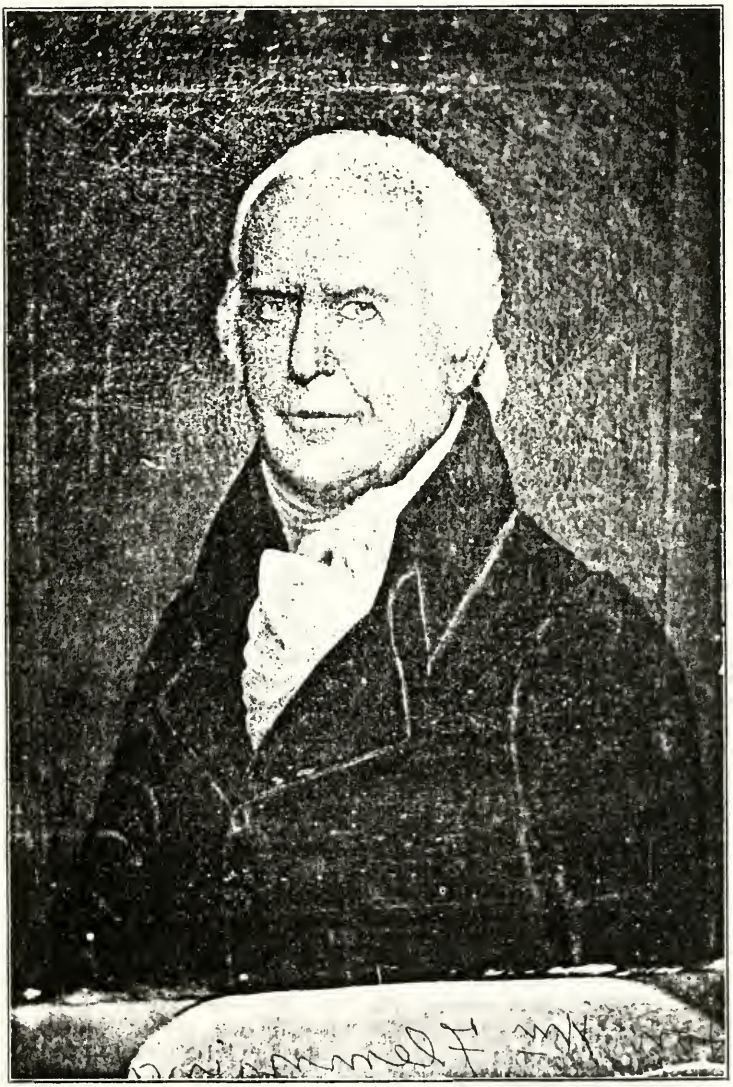
no Register record of the birth of a son Charles, although there is every likelihood that the Charles Gorsuch who married Eve Hopkins prior to 1760, was another son. There may also have been another son Robert (see foot note*). Whether the Charles Gorsuch who married Mary Dodson 1746 is Charles[6] making a second marriage or a son Charles[7] is uncertain.

Issue of Charles[6] and Mary (Cornich) Gorsuch:

i.? Charles Gorsuch[7]? (Charles[6], Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). As stated before there was a Charles Gorsuch living in Talbot during the middle of the eighteenth century, who for the following reasons would seem to belong here. A Talbot County marriage license to Charles Gorsuch and Mary Dodson was issued Oct. 18, 1746. The St. Peter's Register records the birth of Daniel son of Charles Gossage and Eve Hopkins his wife Feb. 28, 1760. It seems probable that the latter record alone refers to Charles Gorsuch[7]. The writer has seen a deposition made by Mrs. Elizabeth (Gorsuch) West a granddaughter of Charles Gorsuch the husband of Eve Hopkins, dated June 4, 1880, she being then 74 years old, in which she declares that her grandfather who is buried in White Marsh Church (St. Peter's Parish) near Oxford, Talbot County, was a son of Charles Gorsuch of Talbot. The affidavit gives the children of her grandfather Charles Gorsuch as Daniel, Peter, Solomon, James, Joshua, Samuel, Elizabeth and Nancy, the deponent being a daughter of Peter. The statements contained in this deposition are confirmed by an entry in the St. Peter's Register: "Daniel Gossage, son of Charles Gossage & Eve Hopkins his wife, born Feb. 28, 1760 married Nov. 28, 1783 to Elizabeth Hopkins." If the order of birth of the children as given in the deposition is correct, is it probable that they were all the children of Charles and Eve (Hopkins) Gorsuch. It also seems probable that the Gorsuch family of Talbot, which until comparatively recently was rather numerous in that county, were all descended from this Charles, many of them adopting the spelling *Gossage** later. These lines are not carried down here.

---

*In "Heads of Families—Maryland, 1790," under Talbot County are to be found the following "heads": Charles Gossage, with 1 free male under 16, and 2 free white females; Robert Gossage, with 4 free white males under 16, and 2 free White females; Daniel Gossage, with 2 free white males under 16, and 2 free white females; John Gossage, with one other free white male over 16, and 3 free white females; Greenberry Gossage, with 4 free white females. In the lists the first two names immediately follow each other, as do the last three. All are doubtless of this same line, although some cannot be placed. No other individuals bearing the name Gossage or Gorsuch are found in the lists of any of the other Eastern Shore counties.



JUDGE WILLIAM FLEMING

Negative Property of
H. P. Cook, Photographer,
Richmond, Va.

ii. Sarah Gorsuch[7] (Charles[6], Charles[5], Richard[4], John[5], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born June 13, 1728 (St. Peter's Reg.).

iii. Elizabeth Gorsuch[7] (Charles[6]. Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born Apr. 16, 1730 (St. Peter's Reg.).

iv. John Gorsuch[7] (Charles[6], Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born March 14, 1731 (St. Peter's Reg.).

v. Hannah Gorsuch[7] (Charles[6], Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Born Feb. 20, 1733 (St. Peter's Reg.).

(2)? Sarah Gorsuch[6]? (Charles[5], Richard[4], John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]).?

It seems probable that the Sarah Gorsuch whose marriage Nov. 19, 1724 to William Ridgway is recorded in the St. Peter's Register belongs here. This line has not been traced.

The Ancestors and Descendants of John Rolfe with Notes on some Connected Families.

The Fleming Family.

(Continued)

13. William[3] Fleming, "fourth son and sixth child was born at Mt. Pleasant in the county of Goochland (now Powhatan) on the 6th day of July 1736, and married Bettie Champe, the 6th and youngest daughter of Col. John Champe, late of the county of King George (merchant) on the fifth day of Oct. 1766 and had issue four daughters who lived to be women, and one son. He died at Summerville, February 15, 1824." (*Family Bible*).

William Fleming was educated at William and Mary College, and while there was the collegemate and friend of Jefferson, and others, who became leaders in the Revolution, and with whom he remained on intimate terms in after life. On completing his College course he studied for the bar, and commenced the practice of law in Cumberland and the neighboring counties. Not long before the Revolution he entered public life, taking his seat as a member of the House of Burgesses for Cumberland in February, 1772, and was reelected to the sessions of March 1773, May 1774, August 1774, and June 1775. Like all his family, Wm. Fleming was an active supporter of American rights, and in Feb. 1775 was a member of the county committee of safety of Cumberland. He was recommended by the committee for appointment as Colonel of the militia of the county, and qualified in this office by taking the oath Oct. 23d, 1775. On Nov. 26, 1775, when a new election was held to choose members of the committee, he received next to the highest vote, and on October 28, 1776 was again re-elected, he and George Carrington receiving the same vote,

more than was cast for any other (*Journal of Committee*). He was a member of the Conventions of March 1775, July 1775, December 1775, and of that which met May 6, 1776, and declared the independence of Virginia, and in the last named he was a member of the "independence committee." (*Journals of Conventions*). After the establishment of the state government he continued a member of the House of Delegates, representing Cumberland in Oct. 1776, Dec. 1776, May 1777, and Oct. 1777, and Powhatan (which had been formed from Cumberland) in the sessions of May and October 1778, Dec. 1779, and Chesterfield in May and Nov. 1780. During the sessions of 1780, he was Chairman of the committee of the whole. On Dec. 10th, 1778 the Virginia Assembly elected him a member of Congress, in the room of John Banister resigned, to serve until August 11, 1778. (*Journals of House of Delegates*). He appears not to have taken his seat in the latter body until April 28, 1779, for on that date the Journals of Congress record that he attended and presented his credentials. On Nov. 26, 1780 the Virginia Legislature again honored him by electing him a judge of the General Court, and some years later promoted him to the bench of the newly formed Court of Appeals. His commission to the latter position, dated Dec. 31, 1788, and signed by Gov. Beverley Randolph, is preserved.

Nor was it only in a civil capacity that Wm. Fleming rendered service during the Revolution. When the county of Powhatan was formed from Cumberland he was appointed county lieutenant, his commission, signed by Gov. Henry, bearing the date July 31st, 1777. He probably held this office for several years, and as documents remaining show, rendered useful service. Among the few of his papers which remain is a subscription list taken in Powhatan county, for the purpose of paying bounties to recruits and preventing a draught of the militia. It is as follows, the number after the names indicating the number of dollars subscribed:

"We the subscribers hereby oblige ourselves to pay on demand, to the commander of the militia of Powhatan, the several sums of money set against our names respectively, to be by him equally distributed amongst such able bodied men as will engage to serve in one of the Virginia regiments on continental establishment, for one year, in order to prevent a draught of the militia for completing the sd regiments; provided that not more than 200 dollars, besides the public bounty, be paid to any one person so enlisting.

"Wm. Fleming 40, Cha. Fleming 30, Wm. Mayo 30, Jas. Bagbey 10, Samuel Hobson 10, Thomas Moseley 10, Robt. Hatcher 10, Wm. Tucker Jur. 10, Jos. Mayo 10, Thos. Harris 20, Robt. Smith 10, John Moseley 10, Littleberry Mosby 40, David Hughes 10, Joseph Thomson 10, Wm. Pointer 3, Pete Wilkinson 3, Jas. Wilkinson 5, Absalom Toler 4, Saml. White 3, Patrick Fitzsimmons 4, Danl. Hix 3, Rd. Crump 30, Robt. Richardson 16, John Moss, D. Creek 6, Chas. Rice 4, Saml. Woodson 6, John Porter 10, John Steuart Senr. 5, Geo. Mosby 8, Edward Mumford 20, James Pleasants 10, S. Hyde Saunders 10, Jas. Drake 10, Henry Bagby

Jr. 6, W. Watson Sr. 3, Sam. Webster 4, John Wilkinson 4, Ananias Hancock 3, W. Goode 5, T. Wilkinson 2, P. F. Turpin 20, Capt. Binns 2, Wm. Karr 3, Thos. Epperson 3, Jesse Winfree 7, Jas. Toler 2, John Wilkinson 10, John Perkins 4, Jos. Baker 3, Peter Crawford 10, Jas. Kerr 2, Ab. Stovall 2, Egbert Woodfin 2, John Gilbies 6, Otey Prosser 4, Wm. Scott 3, Danl. Bagby 3, Bennett Goode 10, Edwd. Cox 20, Wm. Bagby 6, John Cannifax 5, John French 2, John Carter 10, Jacob Moseley 4, John Hurt 3, J. P. Bondurant 4, John Welburn 4, Saml. Morgan 4, Wm. Moss 4, Wm. Hules 9, Jos. Vaughan, Frank Stegar 10, Sandy Cousins 3, John Bryant 1, Wm. Bennet 1, Wm. Howard 2, Jos. Salle 2, Jas. Scott 3, Wm. Cooper 10, Wm. Forsie 10, John Sublit 6, John Depp 4, John Harris 4, John Sandefar 4, Wm. Burner 8, Wm. Street 5, John Short 5, Fell Leseur 3, C. Forsie 10, Robt. Cardin 5, Peter Lookado 10, Jos. Clark 3, David Flournoy 2, Shadrach Roper 12, Lewis Chadoin 8, Henry Holman 10, Danl. Branch 5, Noel Lacy 3, John Deans 30, Robt. Moseley 5, John Harris 20, Martin Leseur 5, Anth'y Martin 20, Geo. Stov. Smith 10, Wm. Burton 5, John Howard 20, John Moss 3, Dutoy Branch 2, Wm. Gay 40, John Moss, 5, David Lyne 5, John Bernard 25, Danl. Scott, John King, Jas. Bedford.

"Rec'd of Vincent Markham 12th Feby 1778, £23. 3. 9, or 77 dollars and 1. 9d. W. Fleming.

"Besides wch Jno. Baugh pd. 20 and T. Dawson 10 dollars. W. F. p'd at the G. muster 100 dollars to Vinc. Markham, who gave 30 of them to Rd. Crump.

"Collected by V. Markham and W. Mayo at Gen. Muster 207 Dollars."

From 1788 until his death, thirty six years, Wm. Fleming remained a judge of the Court of Appeals, and from 1810, was President of the court. While not a man of brilliant talents Judge Fleming was an able lawyer, and an efficient and useful judge.

In the series of biographical sketches of Virginia judges given in Coll's Reports (IV, XIX) it is said: "He had good sense, was an ardent patriot, and a very upright judge. Indulging in no theories or subtilties, his opinions were on the honest side of the cause; and always aiming to decide rightly, he generally attained his object."

Another writer says: "Roane could give more reasons for his opinion; but Fleming was most apt to be right."

The Richmond Enquirer of Feb. 19, 1824, prints a brief obituary: "We pay the melencholy duty we owe to a pure, revolutionary patriot, a most venerable citizen, an upright judge, in recording the death of William Fleming, esquire, Presiding Judge of the Court of Appeals of Virginia. He has descended to the tomb full of years and accompanied by the universal respect of his fellow citizens. The life of such a man calls for something more than a hasty paragraph in a newspaper. We should feel obliged to the pen which will furnish us with a biographical sketch of the deceased patriot, who has served his country near 60 years."

In the House of Delegates of Virginia, on Feb. 19th, "On motion of Mr. Branch the following resolution was adopted.

"Resolved unanimously, That this House from a grateful sense of the long and faithful public services of the late William Fleming, one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of Appeals, feel the deepest sympathy on account of his death.

In offering this resolution, Mr. Branch made a few handsome and appropriate remarks, in eulogy of the merits and virtues of that venerable and beloved citizen. His faithful and gallant services during the whole of the Revolution, both in the armies and the councils of the nation; his able and upright services for more than half a century, without the intermission of a day, in the various public stations, to which the admiration and confidence of his fellow citizens had called him, were all referred to by Mr. Branch as giving him a just claim to this tribute of respect and gratitude. But, Mr. Branch said, his amiable and gentlemanly deportment, his merits as a man; as a patriot, and as a friend and servant of his country, were too well known to require of him the least illustration."

Judge Fleming was throughout life a careful and systematic man in matters of business, and at his death left a large quantity of papers, and letters, neatly filed, filling several barrels. In addition to his own papers covering a public life of fifty years or more, there were many which had belonged to his father, and brothers, to all of whom he was surviving executor. This very valuable collection (which included his diary for many years) was almost entirely lost through the carelessness of his executor, and the latter's representatives.

In the *Southern Literary Messenger* for 1837, pp. 304-306, are printed several letters from Jefferson to William Fleming, and one from Fleming to Washington. The first letter is without date; but was evidently written shortly before the second, in 1764. These letters were found among Judge Fleming's papers. The second letter is endorsed by the recipient "Tom Jefferson's letter 20th March, 1764." The third letter, not represented here, is a request that Fleming take charge of the business of the Clients of Dabney Carr, who had just died, and the fourth and fifth (neither reprinted here) are on political subjects. The first two are given as illustrations of the life of the time and of the intimacy between Fleming and Jefferson.

"Ri xxxx

"Dear Will,

From a crowd of disagreeable companions, among whom I have spent three or four of the most tedious hours of my life, I retire into Gunn's bedchamber to converse in black and white with an absent friend. I heartily wish your were here that I might converse with a Christian once more before I die: for die I must this night unless I should be relieved by the arrival of some sociable fellow, but I will now endeavor to forget my present sufferings and think of what is more agreeable to both of us.

last Saturday I left Ned Carters ["Blenheim," Albemarle] where I had been happy in other good company, but particularly that of Miss Jenny Taliaferro and though I can view the beauties of this world with the most philosophical indifference, I could not but be sensible of the justice of the character you had given me of her. she has in my opinion a great resemblance of Nancy Wilton, [Ann Randolph of "Wilton"] but prettier. I was vastly pleased with her playing on the spinnette and singing, and could not help calling to mind those sublime verses of the Cumberland genius.

"Oh! how I was charmed to see
Orpheus' music all in thee."

When you see Patsy Dandridge, tell 'god bless her.' I do not like the ups and downs of a country life; today you are frolicking with a fine girl and tomorrow you are moping by yourself. Thank god! I shall shortly be where my happiness will be less interrupted. I shall salute all the girls below in your name, particularly S—y P—r. dear Will I have thought of the cleverest plan of life that can be imagined. you exchange your land for Edgehill, or I mine for Fairfields, you marry S—y P—r, I marry R—a B—l [Rebecca Burwell, his "Belinda"], join and get a pole chair and a pair of keen horses, practise the law in the same courts, and drive about to all the dances in the country together. How do you like it? well I am sorry you are at such a distance I cannot hear your answer, however, you must let me know it by the first opportunity, and all the other news in the world which you imagine will affect me, I am dear Will

Yours affectionately
Th: Jefferson."

"Wms.burg. March 20. 1764. 11 o'clock at night.

Dear Will

As the messenger who delivered me your letter, informs me that your boy is to leave town tomorrow morning I will endeavor to answer it as circumstantially as the hour of the night, and a violent headach, with which I have been afflicted these two days, will permit. With regard to the scheme which I proposed to you some time since, I am sorry to tell you it is totally frustrated by Miss R. B's marriage with Jacquelin Ambler which the people here tell me they daily expect. I say, the people here tell me so, for (can you believe it?) I have been so abominably indolent as not to have seen her since last October, wherefore I cannot affirm that I know it from herself, though am as well satisfied that it is true as if she had told me. well the lord bless her I say! But S—y P—r is still left for you. I have given her a description of the gentleman who, as I told her intended to make her an offer of his hand, and asked whether or not he might expect it would be accepted. She would not determine till she saw him or his picture . Now Will, as you are a piece of a limner I desire that you will seat yourself immediately before your looking glass and draw such a picture of yourself. as you think proper,

and if it should be defective, blame yourself. (Mind that I mentioned no name to her). you say you are determined to be married as soon as possible, and advise me to do the same. No, thank ye; I will consider of it first. Many and great are the comforts of a single state, and neither of the reasons you urge can have any influence with an inhabitant and a young inhabitant too of Wms.burg. who told you that I reported you was courting Miss Dandridge and Miss Dangerfield? it might be worth your while to ask whether they were in earnest or not so far was I from it that I frequently bantered Miss J—y T—o about you, and told her how feelingly you spoke of her. There is scarcely any thing now going on here. You have heard I suppose that J. Page is courting Fanny Burwell. W. Bland, and Betsy Yates are to be married thursday sinnight. The Secretary's son is expected in shortly. Willis has left town intirely so that your commands to him cannot be executed immediately, but those to the ladies I shall do myself the pleasure of delivering tomorrow night at the ball. Tom Randolph of Tuckahoe has a suit of Mecklenburg silk which he offered me for a suit of broadcloth. tell him that if they can be altered to fit me, I will be glad to take them on them terms, and if they cannot, I make no doubt but I can dispose of them here to his advantage. Perhaps you will have room to bring them in your portmanteau, or can contrive them down by some other opportunity. Let him know this immediately. My headachs, my candle is just going out, and my boy asleep, so must bid you adieu.

William Fleming to George Washington.

Dear Sir,

This will be handed you by my friend Mr. William Claiborne junr. who is at present a judge of the superior court of the state of Tennissee, and who aspires to the office of District judge in that state, where I spent several days in a late tour through the western country. Mr. Claiborne has much the respect and confidence of his fellow citizens in that quarter, among whom he has been a very successful practitioner of the law for several years; indeed his superior talents, great sobriety, and intense application to business, distinguish him from the generality of young gentlemen of his age; and I am persuaded, should he be so fortunate as to succeed in his application you will never have cause to regret the appointment.

I hope sir, you will pardon the trouble I have given you on this occasion; and whilst the pen is yet in my hand, and you are about to retire to the enjoyment of domestick tranquility, permit me to express my entire approbation, and admiration of the wisdom, ability, and firmness with which you have discharged the arduous duties of the most important office in the United States, at a time when party prejudice, interested views, and (perhaps) resentment for supposed injuries combined are ever

active in misrepresentations to the people, and in unremitting endeavours to thwart a wise and just administration of one of the best governments in the universe.

With the highest veneration for your publick and private virtues, and most fervent prayers for your presents and future happiness, I have the honor to be &c—.

Judge Fleming's portrait and that of his mother Mary (Bolling) Fleming were in the possession of Mr. Wm. Fleming Eggleston, deceased, Birmingham, Ala.

William and Elizabeth (Champe) Fleming had issue: 20. Son, died young; 21. Lucy Champe, married Jan. 9, 1794, John Markham; 22. ——; 23. Mary Bolling was married to Beverley Chew Stanard, of Spotsylvania County on the 8th day of February 1799. She died at Summerville, Chesterfield County, on 22d day of Jan. 1812, in the 34th year of her age. (*Family Bible*).

(To be Continued)

BOOK REVIEWS.

THE MASTERING OF MEXICO. Told After One of the Conquistadores and various of his Interpreters. By Kate Stephens, author of "The Greek Spirit," "Workfellows in Social Progression," etc. [Illustrated]. New York, The Macmillan Company, 1916, pp. XI, 335.

The descriptive printing on the "jacket" of the book does it an injustice as it would be inferred that, to some extent, it was a work of fiction This is not the fact as it is a very readable condensed translation of the narrative of Bernal Diaz del Castillo, the companion of Cortez. No fiction is needed to enhance the thrilling interest of this account of the conquest of Mexico by one who was an active participant. Its statements are facts, yet it reads like some romance of almost incredible adventure. Such a book would find a large audience at any time, but it comes at a particularly apt moment.

THE GREAT REVIVAL IN THE WEST, 1797-1805. By Catharine C. Cleveland. University of Chicago Press 1916, pp. VI, 215.

We cannot do better in treating of this valuable book than use Dr. Dodd's words in his introduction: "In this story of the Great Revival in the West, Miss Cleveland has shown clearly the religious 'destitution' of the frontier, the craving of men for excitement, and the effect of powerful emotional appeals upon the minds of simple folk far removed from the main currents of contemporary civilization. The author certainly presents in the following pages, the best, and I believe, the only scientific account of this important movement. The result is a distinct and positive contribution to our knowledge of the social and moral conditions of primitive life in America."

This great revival, with its strange accompanying phenomena, and its great effect on the spiritual condition and the morals and habits of the people is well worth the attention of every student of American history. A good bibliography adds to the value of the book.

NATIONALITY IN MODERN HISTORY, By J. Holland Rose, L. H. D., Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge [&c. &c.] New York. The Macmillan Company 1916, pp. XI, 202.

"The varied manifestations of nationality among the chief European nations are studied in this book, The author, one of the ablest of modern historians, has supplied, in effect, the background of the conflict in

Europe, contributing largely to a clearer understanding of those factors which made for war. Beginning with a discussion of the dawn of the national idea, he takes up in turn the growth of that idea in France, Germany, Spain, Italy and the Slavic Kingdoms, concluding with a consideration of The German Theory of the State, Nationality and Militarism, Nationality since 1855 and Internationalism."

A History of the National Capital from its Foundation through the Period of the Adoption of the Organic Act. By Wilhelmus Bogart Bryan. Vol. II, 1815-1878. New York, The Macmillan Company 1916, pp. XVI, 707.

The second volume of this valuable work maintains the high standard of the first.

Richmond College Historical Papers. Vol. I, No. 2, June 1916, Virginia Loyalists 1775-1783 and Essays on the Presidential Election of 1850 in Virginia, Andrew Stevenson, and the Campaign of 1855 in Virginia and the Fall of the Know-Nothing Party with Important Historical Documents. Edited by D. R. Anderson, Ph. D. Head of the Department of History and Political Science. Published annually. Price $1.00. For copies address the Editor, Richmond College, Va., Richmond, Va., 1916, pp. 182.

Richmond College (and it should be added, Randolph-Macon) is doing a most valuable work in studying the Revolutionary and post Revolutionary history of Virginia. These studies were begun not long ago and have already produced results of importance. In the present instalment the papers, as they appear, are by John A. George, M. A., a young man of marked talent whose death is much lamented; Margaret K. Monteteiro, B. A.; Eugene N. Gardner, M. A., and Constance M. Gay, B. A. It is a pleasant thing for believers in the higher education of women to see what serious and scholarly work the young ladies of Westhampton College are doing. At the end of the historical studies is published a collection of petitions and letters to the Virginia Conventions and Legislatures 1775-1783 asking redress for various grievances.

As has been said all the papers are valuable; but our space will admit detailed notice, even brifly, of only one. Mr. George's paper on the Virginia Loyalists 1775-83 presents the recent view of the subject in opposition to that formerly held, as a mere matter of belief without much investigation, that they were few in number. In his carefully studied and very interesting paper the author certainly shows the presence of a considerable Loyalist element; but in such things numbers are not all. One cannot help feeling that the large Loyalist element in Virginia (like some other historical discoveries) is a historian's party rather than a real vital fact. Theoretically the Loyalists should have been of considerable importance—really they mattered but little. There were two classes of Loyalists whose position was creditable. People

like Beverley, Corbin, Wormeley and some others had been educated at English universities and had so many associations with England that it was a bitter wrench to break the ties. Some of these men entered the English army; but others, like Lord Falkland in the great Civil War, saw so much reason on each side that it was difficult for them to support one or the other. The other class composed of British merchants, factors and clerks, were really not Virginians at all and were entirely right in their support of the home government. The remainder of Loyalists in the East were an obscure leaderless mob, some of whom drifted from side to side as fear actuated, and others were in gangs held together by "cohesion of public plunder." The Tories of the West were equally unimportant. It is absurd to suppose that a set of illiterate and half barbarous mountaineers should be actuated by convictions on constitutional matters or patriotic devotion to England. Like the Union men in the mountains during our Civil War they were simply "agin' the government" which was nearest. They disliked the taxes and the draft as their descendants did.

Reviews of Dr. H. J. Eckenrode's *The Revolution in Virginia*, and Col. J. C. Wise's *The Long Arm of Lee*, are unavoidably postponed until the next number.

$500 per Annum Single No. $1.50

THE VIRGINIA MAGAZINE OF HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

RICHMOND, VA.

VOL. XXIV—No. 4. OCTOBER, 1916.

Entered at the Postoffice at Richmond, Va., as Second-class Matter.

MITCHELL & HOTCHKISS, PRINTERS TO THE SOCIETY
6-8-10 North Eighth Street

CONTENTS.

THE
VIRGINIA MAGAZINE
OF
HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.

VOL. XXIV. OCTOBER, 1916. No. 4

MINUTES OF THE COUNCIL AND GENERAL COURT 1622-1629*.

From the Originals in the Library of Congress.

(CONTINUED.)

*All erasures in the originals are here printed in italics.

(187.)

John Parsons (1) sworne and Examined sayeth y^t Phillip Kytely made an agreement w'th Zacharie Cripse, Edward White and Mathew Hayman beinge then in [their] howse & beinge w'th him to have for his labor a Share and to beare the share of such provis'con as was brought into the howse.

Anthony West sworne and examined sayeth y^t he made an agreement w'th Zacharie Crips, and Edward White, to have

(1) John Parsons, who came in the *Marygold*, 1619, was living at the Treasurers Plantation, James City, 1624-5. Philip Kithly, who came in the *Fnrtherance*, 1622, was living at the same place 1624-5, as were Zachary Cripps, who came in the *Margaret and John*, 1621, Edward White in the *Bona Nova*, 1620, Mathew Hamon in the *Southampton*, 1622, and Anthony West in the *James*, 1622. Planting on shares seems to have been common at the time.

fyfteen hundred plants and after, he intending to goe for England, he quitted that agreement, and after, purposing to staye about planting tyme, Zacharie Crips promised to give the said deponent content for his labor, and so he stayede and Contynued in worke w'th him till the cropp was in. And further sayeth y^t after Mathew Hayman was dead Phillip Kyteley did wish y^t divers tymes *he had more handes to* Zacharie Crips and Edward White would gett more handes to help forward ye Cropp.

Thomas Willson (2) sworne and Examined sayeth y^t Phillip Kyteley did often tymes wysh y^t they hadd more handes to help him onward w'th the cropp and y^t after plantinge tyme when Mr. Blaynies men were sick, ye said Kyteley spoke words to y^t effect.

The Court doth order y^t ye said Phillip Kyteley should have but a sixt parte of ye Cropp, another beinge dew to Zacharie Cripps, another to Edward White, another for Thomas Willson who workinge abroade uppon his trade had three d'yes work for two, Another for two men hired of Mr. Blayney, and a seasoned man putt in their roome after they died, & another for Anthony West. Consideringe also y^t the howse and ground belonged to the said Zacharye Cripps and Edward White, They havinge a shorte lease thereof.

(188.)

Nicholas Thompson (3) sworne and Examined sayeth that one frydye the second of December about eight of the clock at night Zachary Cripps came to Mr Swifte beinge sent for by Mr Swifte, And when Zacharie Cripps came into the room where Mr Swifte laye, he asked Mr Swyft whether he did know him, and Mr Swyfte answered I know you well enuff. Then Zach-

(2) Thomas Wilson, aged 27 in 1624-5, who came in the *Abigaile*, 1620, was one of Dr. Potts' servants in 1625.

(3) Nicholas Thompson, who came in the *George*, 1621 was a servant of George Sandys' 1624-5. "Mr. Swift" was living at "The Plantation over against James City." in Feb. 1623. He was probably Ensign James Swift, who was with the party wrecked on the Bermudas, which reached Virginia in 1610. In 1620 he was with Dr. Bohun and others granted land in Va. on condition of the transportation of 300 people to the colony. Elias Long lived at West and Shirley Hundred Feb. 1623.

ary Cripps said to him Mr Swyfte you said the other d'ye y^{t} you would dispose of your Tobacco and other your goodes, and to have it sent into England, w't is your will, and how doe you intend to dispose therof now. To whom Mr Swyfte said, I will have yourselfe and Edward White to take the charge therof and to send my tobacco and w't shalbe made of my other goodes into Englande to my Brother-in-law Robert Lee at Graves End for the use of his children.

David Mansell Sworne and Examined Sayeth he was sent by Mr Swyfte for Zachary Cripps and was in place and hearde Mr Swyfte saye the same words to Zachary Cripps as Nicholas Thompson hath formerly saide.

Elias Longe sworn and Examined sayeth y^{t} he was in place when Mr Swyfte spake the same wordes to Zacharie Cripps and Nicholas Thompson and David Mansell formerly delivered.

The Courte doth order Zacharie Cripps and Edwarde White shall have a letter of Administration wherby to Administer Mr Swyfte's goodes.

(189.)

Capt. Marten alledgeth y^{t} he hath paid Mr Rastell three hundred and ffyftie pownde of Tobacco for w'ch he hath Mr Rastell's receipt And two hundred more by Capt. Epps, and fowr score by Mr Weston, And two hundred weight of Elizabeth Jones w'ch was to goe for 1501 And two hundred weight of Robert Thresher w'ch Capt Tucker accepted for payment.

Thomas Weston, merchant, sworne and examined sayeth y^{t} Mr Rastell desired him to make an agreement between him and Capt. Martin and sayeth y^{t} he drew them to an end, and y^{t} this deponent paid Mr Rastell 80 pownd of Tobacco for Capt. Martin, And that Mr Rastell was contented to accept of 200 li. of Tobacco y^{t} Elizabeth Jones did owe to Capt. Martin, w'ch 200 li. Mr Rastell was to have for 150 li. in regarde he stode to the Adventurers of the receavinge of ye same And for the rest of Capt. Martin's Dept Mr Rastell was Contented to take Capt. Martin's bond to pay him next Cropp, And y^{t} Mr Rastell was after willed by order from Capt. Martin to come and see ye bond seald.

George Grave (4) and Elias Longe do undertake that Robert Wright shall appear before the Governor and Counsell of estate at James Cyttie one Mondye fortnight next after Christmas being the 14th of January to answere to the suit of Capt Wm Tucker.

(190.)

William ffoster sworne and Examined sayeth, that he this deponent demanded of Mr Nevell at Canada beinge abord the Swann, wherfor Mr Cornishe was hunge, unto whom Nevell answered he was hung for a rascally boye wrongfully, And that he hath heard Mr Nevell say so divers tymes.

(191.)

A courte held the xixth of December 1625 being present

S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c, Capt ffrancis West, Capt. Smith, Capt. Mathews, Capt Hamor, Mr Abraham Peersie, Mr William Cleybourne.

Yt is ordered yt a warrant be sent for Mr Wm Bentley to

---

(4) George Grave, who came in the *Seaventure*, his wife Elinor, who came in the *Susan*, and their son John, aged ten, were living at James City 1624-5. Robert Wright, aged 45, who came in the *Swan*, 1608, and Jane Wright, and two children born in Virginia, were living at Anthony Bonall's plantation 1624-5. So many of the early settlers of Virginia died intestate after a short illness, that the administrations granted in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury should give a good deal of information in regard to them.

(5) William Bentley, aged 36, who came in the *Jacob*, 1624, was living at Farrar Flinton's plantation 1624-5. In 1626 he owned 50 acres below Blunt Point. On Dec. 1, 1624, he was granted, as his first dividend, 50 acres between Newport News and Blunt Point. He is described as "a new planter who came over into this country at his own charges." He was a Burgess for Nutmeg Quarter, October 1629. "Lieutenant Giles Allington of Kiccoughtan in the Corporation of Elizabeth City, gentleman, an ancient planter," was granted, as his first dividend, 100 acres between Newport News and Blunt Point Dec. 1, 1624. He was a member of the Va. Company in 1620, and probably was of the family of Allington, of Horseheath, Cambridgeshire, in the name Giles was frequent in that family. The Census of 1624-5 shows that the "Muster" of Farrar (frequently spelt Pharaoh) Flinton at Elizabeth City, included himself aged 36, who came in the *Elizabeth*, in 1612, Joane Flinton aged 38, who came at the same time, Wm. Bently, and four servants. On Dec. 1, 1624, as "Pharaoh Flinton, gentleman, an ancient planter," he was granted 150 acres between Newport News and Blunt Point.

Testifie his knowledge between Mr Allington and Mr fflinton, to be heere one mondye the 14th of January now next ensewinge.

Robert Thresher sworne and examined sayeth that, Thomas North came over in ye shipp w'th Capt. Nuce, but that he is ffree this deponent knoweth nott

Yt is ordered yt Thomas North (6) shall serve owt his seven yeeres Prentishipp, And then to have his ffreedome

Edward Baker sworne and examined sayeth that he did warne Arthur Avelinge to be at the Courte and handed him the warrant, and sayeth that Mr Newman his m'r said he should come upp, and his m'r did read the warrant to him.

Robert Saben sworne and examined sayeth that one Thursdaye last was sen'night he caled to Richard Ewens and asked him whether his man Arthur Avelinge should not goe upp to James Cyttie to the Courte, and yt said Ewens answered and said yt his man had no business to do there, And there deponent replied why he is in the warrant, and Ewans answered I have other business for him to Doe, he shall not goe upp, This deponent again replyed you doe mean as you saye, w'ch Ewans replyed yes by my troth do I.

(192.)

Thomas Cripps [Crispe], gent., sworne and Examined sayeth that on Thursday morninge beinge the viiith of December Capt Tucker and his Sergent Richard Evans (7) were goinge to Newports News to serve A warrant one Mr Weston and as they were speeking of the warrant Capt. Tucker told this deponent that he must be at James Cyttie and told Rich. Evans that Arthur Avelinge must be there also, and Evans made Answere yt he could not, unles Mr Weston would give Securitie to bringe him down againe

(6) Thomas North lived at Elizabeth City Feb. 1623.

(7) Richard Evans lived at Basses Choice Feb. 1623. His is another name omitted from the Census of 1624-5.

John Weayne (8) sworne and Examined sayeth y^{t} one Thursdye last was sennight Capt Tucker and his Sargent Evans were goinge to Newports News, and beinge at this deponents howse, Capt. Tucker told Evans that his man Arthur Avelinge who was there p'sent must be at James Cyttie at Court on Mondye followinge, And Evans replied, y^{t} he had been abourd Mr Weston's shipp the d'ye before to demand securitie y^{t} Mr Weston should bringe downe Arthur Avelinge againe and y^{t} Mr Weston refused to give securitie and therefore he should not goe upp. To w'ch Capt Tucker replied, that is no matter he must goe upp, And charged ye said Arthur to goe upp.

Robert Saben sworn and Examined sayeth y^{t} that Mr Weston and Robert Newman were at this deponent's house, And Mr Weston demanded of Mr Newman w't comodities he would bringe from Canada, Mr Newman replied y^{t} the choicest things that he would bringe should be two or three servants & asked Mr Weston w't he must give for the transportinge 8 men from Canada, Mr Weston said y^{t} the said Newman must provide the men him selfe and give xx li. for ye transport of 8 men and find them provisions.

(193.)

Thomas Cryspe, gent., by the oath he hath formerly taken, sayeth y^{t} Mr Newman demanded of Mr Weston at Canada for to bringe A servant man to Virginia. Mr Weston replied, he wolde bringe, none yf he wolde give him a hundred pounds Mr Newman asked him why, And Mr Weston replied y^{t} Newman's mate was not able to keepe them but would starve them. And ye said Mr Weston further said y^{t} servants were sold theere upp & downe like horses and therefore he held it not lawfull to carie any

George Menefie, merchant, sworne and examined sayeth y^{t} Mr Pountis at his departure for England, appoynted this

(8) The Muster of John Waine at Elizabeth City 1624-5 included himself, aged 30, who came in the *Neptune*, 1618, Amitye Waine, aged 30, who came in the *Swan*, 1610, George Ackland, aged 7, and Mary Ackland, aged 4, born in Va. (probably her children by a former marriage) and three other persons.

deponent and Mr Blaynie to sattisfie Mr Sandys about a dept w'ch Mr Pountis was indepted for Southampton Hundred, and y^t A dept of 322 li. Tobacco dew to Mr Langley was rebated to Mr Sandys.

Capt. Raphe Hamor, Esquire, Counsellor of State, affirmeth y^t when it was ordered in Court y^t Mr Pountis should pay Mr David Sandys 2000 weight of Tobacco for Southampton hundred, That then Mr Pountis alleged y^t Mr Sandys did owe to Mr Pountis by a debt of Mr Langley's to whom he was executor 300 weight or therabouts of Tobacco w'ch Tobacco Mr Sandys did accept of as p'te of y^t 2000 weight of Tobacco w'ch Mr Pountis should have paide him, and at ye same tyme Mr Sandys demanded a xxii s. peice [?] for a sermon at ye buriall of Mr Langley (9), And Mr Pountis answered he would allow him such Tobacco as should valewe ye peece, but Mr Sandys wold not accept therof but wold have a peece of xxii s.

(194.)

Edward Barker sworne and examined Sayeth that ye Swan was maide at Dambrells Cove in Canada, where she laye safe and owt of danger, And after beinge left in charge w'th Mr Nevell he removed her awaye to A stage head where she hung and tooke hurte and w'thin 2 or 3 d'yes after she became leaky.

Robert Newman sworne and examined Testified in open Court y^t the Certificate under the m'rs handes & his owne written at Canada is A trew Certificate.

It is ordered y^t Mr Weston shall pay to Mr Crispe for the damage of his Tobacco five hundred and three score pounds weight of good merchantable Tobacco, And Mr Crispe not to pay for his Transporte from Canada to Virginia.

Y^t is ordered y^t Mr Weston shall pay to Mr Crispe w'thin these fowerteene d'yes xxx li. in money, And fowerteen pound of good sweete and holesome English byskett or els to deliver the green ginger to Mr Crispe and xxx li. in money.

(9) "Mr. Langley out of the *Margarett and John*," died between April 1622 and Feb. 1623.

Nicholas Roe sworn and Examined sayeth y^t when Mr Nevell did move the shipp shee lay agrounde at A low water.

Y^t is ordered y^t Mr Nevell shall pay the one half of the damages done to Mr Crispe, Vizt: three hundred and thirtie pounde weight of Tobacco., W'ch Tobacco shalbe paid by Mr Weston and Mr Nevell by the xx^th d'ye of January at James Cittie, And Mr Weston to carrye it to Kickotan gratis for Mr Crispe.

(195.)

Y^t is ordered y^t Nicholas Roe shall quietly enioye Those two men he now hath for his wages and the Business & Covenant granted [?] between Mr Weston and him.

Y^t is ordered y^t Mr Weston shall satisfie Robert Thresher for Accordinge to the former order of the vi^th d'ye of January next ensuing.

Thomas Crispe, gent., by the oath he hath formerly taken affirmeth y^t Jefferey Cornishe did say y^t Edward Nevell should tell him y^t his brother suffered death wrongfully, and the said Thomas Crispe wyshed the said Jeffery Cornishe to take heede w't he saide for sure the Governor would do no wronge or iniustice to any man, for y^t he shalbe anserable for w't he doth. Theruppon the said Jeffery Cornishe did vow y^t he would be the death of the Governor yf ever he came for England.

Y^t is ordered y^t a warrant be sent for Richard Evans and Arthur Avelinge to appeare here at James Cyttie one mondye next come sennight.

(196.)

Wheras the Company under their seale did grante assign and sett over unto the Governor the whole term of yeers w'ch xx Tenants and xii boys, were by theire severall Covenants to serve, and in and by the saide Comistione it may Appear, w'ch grant & Assignment was after confirmed under the handes of the Lordes of his Maties most hon'all prince Cornwell, The Courte doth Conceave it to be righte & equitie that the Governor should enioy the said grant & assignment According to

the trew intent & meaning therof, And dyspose of the said Tenants and boys to his best advantage & benefitt.

Uppon the request of Capt. Samuell Mathewes ye Counsel hath assented he shall have leave to take upp his Divident of lande at Blunt poynt when he is already seated.

Lawrence Poole sworne and examined the xxxth d'ye of December 1625 by the Right worp'll S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c, sayeth y^{t} about August last past was three yeere Robert Leyter Cominge downe from James Cyttie, This deponent hard the said Leyter saye y^{t} Capt.Tucker had given him very harsh wordes w'ch grieved him very much and said y^{t} he would be revenged of Capt. Tucker yf he lived.

(197.)

A courte held the third day of January 1625, being present S'r ffrancis Wyatt, Knight, Governor &c, Capt. ffrancis West, Capt. Roger Smith, Capt. Raphe Hamor, Mr Abraham Peirsie, Mr Wm Cleybourne.

Clement Dilke (10), gent., sworne and examined sayeth, that uppon the weighing over of my La. Yeardley's Tobacco at Hog Islande he founde the Tobacco to be Contrary to my lady's Com'and and directions given to Maximilian Stone (11) for y^{t} it was mixed the most p'te w'th ill condicioned leaves, soe y^{t} as this deponent conceaves she had been better to have lost four or five hundred weight of Tobacco. for it was so mixed ye good and bad together, And said this deponent Thinketh y^{t} she had Transported the said Tobacco for England soe condicioned it would have been a very great loss and preiudice to her in the sale therof and further sayeth y^{t} uppon the weighinge and receaving the Tobacco w'^{ch} Mr William Peirce understood that this deponent meant to inform my La. of the truth in w't Condicion he found it the said Stone desired this deponent to make the best of it to my La. to whom this deponent did answere,

(10) Clement Dilke and Mrs. Dilke were living at James City Feb. 1623, but are omitted in the Census of 1624-5. See note on him th. Magazine I, 443.

(11) In 1624-5, Maxmilian Stone, aged 36, who came in the *Temperance*, 1620, appears at the head of the list of "Sir George Yeardly's men" at Hog Island. Elizabeth his wife, who came in the same ship, and Maximilian his son, aged 9 months, are also in the list.

y^t he would neither make it better or worse, but would inform her trewly how he found it.

Lieut. Peppet (12) sworne & examined affirmeth as much as Mr Delke hath said, save in the late clause y^t Maximilian Stone requested Mr Delke to make the best of itt to my La. w'ch he heard nott.

(198.)

Y^t is ordered y^t Maximilian Stone shall loose the hundred and fyfteen pound of Tobacco dew to him by his Covenants and shall serve my La. Yardley as her servant untill the last d'ye of ffebruary now next ensewinge.

Mrs. Isabel Perry sworne and examined sayeth that Mr Robert Langley having been longe sick in her howse and thinkinge himself somewhat recovered, intended to goe downe to Kickotan, but went no further than Hog Island, and cominge back againe found himself very sicke and came to this deponent's howse where he found himself very sick, And told this deponent that he did expect to make Mr Pountis and this deponent's husband overseers of his estate, but said he would do nothinge till his fitt was past, and in that fitt he dyed, makinge no other order in his concerns, And this deponent was by him from that tyme to the tyme of his death.

Wheras Mr Robert Tokeles [?] by his letter of attorney as Administrator to Mr Robert Langley, hath given Authoritie to Mr Abraham Pearsie to Receive [?] upp all such depts as are dew to the said Robert Langley in this Country of Virginia, But the said Robert Tokeles hath not sent over any testimony or proff to this Country that letters of Administration of ye said Robert Langley's goodes were granted to him in England, The Courte doth require the said Robert Tokeley to send over

(12) Gilbert Peppett lived at Flowerdew Hundred Feb. 1623, and owned 50 acres at Blunt Point in 1626. On Aug. 18, 1627, he was granted 250 acres on the south side of Warnock River, 50 acres of which was in right of his wife Alice who came in the *Jonathan*, in 1620 "for whose passage Sir George Yeardley is satisfied," and 50 for Richard Evans (see above) who came from Newfoundland in the *Temperance* in 1619. Peppett was a member of the convention held in 1625. He does not appear in the Census.

Testimony therof, And in the mean tyme do order that the deptors of the said Robert Langley do putt in Sufficient securitie to Mr Abraham Persie for ye sattisfaction of those depts to the right Administrator of the said Robert Langley when sufficient proof shalbe brought into the Courte.

(197.)

Wheras Mattahias Fenton (13) died intestate and his goodes being praysed Amounted to five score pownde of Tobacco, And there beinge two billes of dept p'duced in Courte, the one for 265 pound of Tobacco and the other for fortie two pounde of Tobacco, y^t^ is ordered y^t^ Mr Emersone shall pay to Mr Stephens [?] 60 li., And to Capt. West 20 li. And that there havinge been noe other bills of dept produced in Court and no more of Mr fflenton's left to pay any depts y^t^ Mr Emersone *shall* nor any other shalbe further troubled for any of his depts in respect of his goods left behinde him, but be sattisfied as they may by his freendes in England.

William Carter sworne and examined sayeth that he did hold the breech of the Peece whilst John Jeffersone (14) did cutt it and lenthen it, and further sayeth that John Jefferson did carry the peece so mended home to Capt. Smith's howse.

Rychard Allforde sworne and examined sayeth that John Jeffersone him selfe did bringe the peece home to Capt Smith's howse, y^t^ did hurte Henry Booth, and deliver ye peece to ye hands of this deponent (see Johnson's oath).

Y^t^ is ordered y^t^ John Jefferson shall pay Doctor Pott for the cominge of Henry Booth's Eye, And to give the said Henry Booth sixteen pound weight of good merchantable Tobacco towards his mayne't, The Court doth ye rather mittigate ye Crime because ye strive [?] in ye peece in the barrel was faultie, and him self being a poore man and A Tenant to the Company

(13) Probably the "Mr. Fenton, minister," who was buried at Elizabeth City, Sept. 5, 1624.

(14) Whether John Jefferson, the blacksmith, left descendants is not known. The other John Jefferson, London merchant, was probably not at this time in the colony.

[200.]

Y^t is ordered y^t the Prentises sent over at the Cytties(15)charges shall Accordinge to the condicions sent over by the Company (Vidlt) for the Tearme of seaven years or more so as theire apprentishipp may expier at their severall ages of xxi yeares or uppwards, And after their app'tship is passed, To serve seven yeares more as Tenants for halfes, The Company furnishing them w'th such things as their Agreement w'th the Cyttie was

Richard Evans sworne and examined sayeth y^t he did warne Wm. Geney the xxvi^th of December 1621 [5?] eyther to agree w'th Capt. Tucker for a Dept dew to Mr Rastell, or else to appear at James Cyttie the next Courte D'ye Following, to w'ch Mr Geney made this deponent Answere y^t he would eyther agree w'th Capt Tucker or els appear at James Cyttie accordinge to the d'ye of warninge.

Y^t is ordered y^t a Specyall warrant be sent for Wm Geney to Appeare at James Cyttie one mondy cum fortnight beinge ye xxiii^th d'ye of January there to answere his contempt, as to answer to Capt Tucker's suite

Y^t is ordered y^t yf Mr Humphrey Rastell come nott in by the last of this month, to deliver Capt Bass a boye that this Capt Tucker shall pay to Capt Bass or his assigne five hundred pownd weight of good merchantable Tobacco owt of Mr Rastell's goods yf Capt Tucker can recover upp so much depts.

[201.]

Capt Tucker sworne and examined sayeth that Mr Rastell did acknowledge to owe to Capt Bass Fyfteen bushells of Corne or therabouts, ye w'ch ye said Rastell prayed this Deponent to p'cure for Capt. Bass either in Corne or other P'viz'one.

Y^t is ordered y^t in regarde of the loss and hindrance Capt. Bass sustayned by want of his Corne, That Mr Rastell or Capt. Tucker for him of his goodes shall pay Capt. Bass one hundred and twelve pownd of ye best merchantable Tobacco.

Y^t is ordered y^t Capt Tucker shall pay Thomas Jones for the dept of Mr Rastell one hundred and fyftie pounds weight of the best merchantable Tobacco, or furnish such good Com'odities as it shall come unto.

(15) On Dec. 28, 1619, the Common Council of London agreed, in response to a petition of the Virginia Company, to send 100 more children to Virginia.

Anthony Burrows,(16)gent, sworne and examined Sayeth that when Capt. Tucker came aboarde the Fleeinge harte he found John Geney aboarde the shipp Contrary to the Governor's express com'ands And Capt Tucker Chided him for his soe doinge, And Tucker sentenced [?] servant [?] to by neck and heeles for his offence, And when Capt. Tucker was gone the said Geney said that Capt. Tucker would be the death of him as he was of Robert Leyster.

George Thompson sworne and examined sayeth, That he heard John Geney say that Capt Tucker by some woordes he used was the death of Robt Leyster and that the said Glyney said he would certifie it before the Governor & Counsell.

(16) At the Census of 1624-5, Anthony Burrows, aged 44, who came in the *George*, in 1617, lived at Elizabeth City. He owned land near Blunt Point in 1628. The ship referred to, the *Flying Hart*, of Flushing, made frequent voyages to Virginia.

(To be continued)

LETTERS OF WILLIAM BYRD, FIRST.

(From his letter book in the Collection of the Virginia Historical Society)

(Continued)

To Mr. Gower.

Virg'a. March ye 31st 1685

Sr

Yours of the 8th of August last come Safe to my Hands, though ye poor Gent that was to bring itt, dyed att Sea the 10th of 8br much lamented by all his friends, ye Old Gentlewoman Seemed mighty disconsolate Some short time, however was marry'd again abt ye latter End of Jan'ry & is now mighty earnest to gett all ye Estate into her hands, & I daily expect a Writt against Capt Randolph & my Selfe (Exrs here) for her bond of 1900 l. weh I fear will in a manner carry away all the Estate here.

I am Sorry I could recieve but one letter from you this year, but hope to hear oftner hereafter. I returne you hearty thanks for your token, wth wsh wee remembred all your Good healths & shall Suddenly Send you Some Small returne. My wife & Girls are well, & ye biggest (Ursula (1)) comes herewith. My wife Salutes you, Pray give my Service to all where its due, & accept the Same most heartily from

Sr

Yor oblidged friend & Servant

Wm. Byrd

Pray Send mee Some Savoy
Cabbage Seed
To mr Gower ⁋ Culpeper

(1) Ursula Byrd, known in her family (doubtless from her complection) as "Little Nutty" was born about 1681. She returned to Virginia, married Robert Beverley, the historian, and died before she was seventeen, leaving one child, William Beverley, afterwards of "Blandfield." Her tomb with Byrd and Beverley arms impaled, was formerly at Jamestown. See this Magazine XII, 317, for copy of epitaph, and a drawing of part of the tomb containing the arms.

To ————

Virg'a. March ye 29th 1685.

Gen^t

This Serves to accompany Capt Bradly with Sixty one H^ds of Tobacco & 6 of Skins, wch I hope will come Safe to hand. Since my last, I rec^d your acco^t via Maryland, truely I believe ye Wm & Mary a very hard penyworth, I wish shee gets well home, for shee is a very dull Sailer by all report. I am Sorry the losse of Sugars keeps mee So far behind hand, & Hall comeing in So late, ye Tob'o was generally bought up, before his arriveall, that I fear I shall make a bad x x [illegible] of it this year, hope shall Send enough to clear all [illegible] I have sent for. I have rec'd great complaints of my Duffeilds, the colour is too light, a Darker blew pleases better plentifully Supplyed & if I have not as good [illegible] not expect to Sell them to any Advantage. [illegible] offer^d for Tob'o next year, & ye planter (if [illegible]) a great Crop, & hath prepared accordingly. Paggens concern [illegible] certain intelligence of a negro ship wch will be here by [illegible] of May, if no extrorardinary accident intervene, they offer for the trade. I believe Tobacco may doe well another year, but am Sure, they that are not early Supplyed here, can expect little, & I am halfe out of heart with Hall, to expect him a first ship, unlesse he comes out a month or two before any other. Mr Brain (who hath marry'd Mrs Grendon) pretends great matters though I cannot conceive w^t incouragement they have found this year, comeing into the Country in Sepr wth 30 Servants & 1000 or 1200l. worth of Goods, & could not (notwithstanding they tooke 100 H^ds fraight) dispatch a Small ship of ab^t 350 or 360 H^ds. If your designe by barbados fails, wee shall bee fouly disappointed for without Servants or slaves, no great crop is now to bee purchased, by Capt Morgan (who designs to Saile with or before this) I shall Send my Invoice, & by him write whats farther necessary. I hope to hear from you by all oppertunitys, & shall not trouble you farther at present but with my best respects & Service take leave

Gen^t

Yo^r reall fr^d & Servt
W B

I have charged a bill of Ex^ed on yo
to Capt Bradly for 8 1 10s St'g w^ch
please to pay accordingly

To Mr North

Virg'a March ye 29th 1685.

S^r

My last to you by Hall, by whom I sent an Invoice for my Indian trade, wch I hope may come in timely to Satisfaction this onely Serves to Salute you & our friends by Bradly I shall write more largely by Ruds who Sails wth or before this, by whom have Sent you ab^t 80 H^ds Tob'o & Six of furres, as allso my Invoice for English Goods; I had no occasion for those Guns m^r Dyose Sent mee, they now ly by & I have writ him word that if hee will take (1st) cost for them (w:^h is 5l. 15s) I would desire you to pay him, otherwise shall deliver them to his Order. Yo^r Duffeilds much complain'd of both y^e goodnesse & color a darker blew pleases the Indians best. Capt Bradly tells mee hee expects his ship will bee Sold when hee comes home, & y^t hee may buy her & Sett her out to Sea under 1000l. St'g. If So I promised him if you would come in (& mony will hold out) to hold $\frac{1}{16}$, Capt Randolph & Some others here have promised the like; I looke on him to bee an industrious & succesfull man & imagine it can bee no hard bargain if (as hee Saith) y^e ship bee well found; Pray remember mee to all our friends & accept of mine & my wives best respects & Service to yo^rselfe & Lady from

S^r

Yo^r friend & Servt

W B

Yo^r blew plains were ye best onely Something too dear

To m^r North ℘ Bradly

To Charles Dyose

Virginia Aprill ye 1st 1685.

S^r

Yo^rs by Capt Bradly came to my Hands wth Eight Guns (as I suppose) in a Case not yett open'd, I have at this time about

100 of my owne, & cannot expect to Sell them this year, I have offer'd y'm to mr Harrison on your Acco^t but hee told mee hee had no occasion for y'm nor any Order ab^t them, the Country at this time is much over Stocked with tradeing Goods, of all Sorts. I am Sorry I could not Serve you in this; if you will take ye 1st cost (w:h is 5. 15) for y'm, I will write to mr North to pay it you, otherwise order whom you please to receive them, & they shall bee deliver^d; My best respects & Service to your selfe & Lady from

Yor friend & Servt

To mr Charls Dyose W B

To ———

Virg'a P'o Aprill 1685

Sr

I wrote to you 2 days Since pr Bradly who is not yet gone, this will (I hope) come Safe to your Hands, by Capt Ruddes wth 8 Hds of Tob'o & 6 of furres & skins. I have now allso Sent my Invoice for English Goods, & I fear drawne it a little too largely, but if mony will not hold out you may abate Somethings for I doe not care to bee in debt. Pray Send my Goods in a first Ship but not where mrs Perry & Lane ship my other Cargo. If the Booth will take them Send by her. My Little Daughter Ursula comes in the Culpeper pray if shee wants anything lett her bee Supplyed. I shall not doubt yor kindnesse. I suppose my father Horsmonden (2) will take care for her w'n hee hears of her Arriveall. Capt Rudds is now with mee & tells mee hee hath but 83 hds of Tobacco on board, though there is 84 mention^d in my Invoice, (his men as hee Saith) haveing

(2) "Father Horsmanden," was Warham Horsmanden, who had emigrated to Virginia during the Civil Wars and had been a member of the House of Burgesses and Council. He returned to England at the Restoration and lived first at Lenham, Kent., and later at Purleigh, Essex, where he was patron of the rectory. He was son of Rev. Daniel Horsmanden, Rector of Ulcombe, Kent, and his wife Ursula, daughter of Sir Warham St. Leger, of Ulcombe. He died in 1691, aged 64. His son Daniel (the "Brother Daniel" of the Byrd letters), M. A. Magdalen Hall, Oxford, 1679, became rector of Purleigh 1680. See this Magazine XV, 314-317.

left one behind. However hee promiseth if the H^{do} bee foun on board, itt shall bee deliver^{d} you. I guesse it may bee No 299 but am not certain; I shall not trouble you farther att present, but with best respects & Service to yor selfe, Lady & all our friends, take leave

S^{r}

Yo^{r} friend & Servant

Wm B

To M p Ruds

To ——————

Virg'a Aprill the first 1685.

Gen^{t}

I wrote to you 2 days Since p^{r} Capt Bradly, wch I hope wth w^{t} Goods I sent will come Safe to Hand, as allso this p the Culpeper wth the Tobacco & furres as p bill of Ladeing & invoice inclosed, allso a little daughter of mine (wth her maid) who is designed to my father Horsmonden in Essex. I hope you'l please to bee kind to ye Child, & assist her on her way. Inclosed is my invoice for Goods which I hope may come in timely. Capt Morgan is now with mee & tells mee hee cannot give mee bills, yett not knowing whether all is on board or not I suppose there is no mistake, & if I have not opertunity m^{r} Pr Perry will Send you a bill of Ladeing. If you could help mee to a likely Youth that might bee trusty, & was capable of buisinesse, it would doe mee a Kindnesse, hee should bee put to no hard worke, his chief buisinesse would bee in the Store, the boy I have now is allmost free & I cannot bee without one. I hope you will bee carefull in my Indian Trucke y^{t} nothing bee wanting, but Duffeilds, Cottons & plains to bee good in their kinds & of a Darker blew then formerly, there is on board this ship 5 H^{ds} of Tob'o (as p inclosed invoice) ship^{d} by order of m^{r} Pr Perry for a Servant boy (belonging to ye Wm & Mary) Sold to John Willson. By Capt Tibbets you shall hear farther My best respects & Service to all where Due & please to accept the Same your selves from

Gen^{t}

Yo^{r} reall frd & Servt

W B

My humble Service to my Lady Berkeley (3) if not come away. If my Daughter wants anything lett her bee Supplyed.

To ——————

Virg'a Ap'll ye 1st 1685

Dear S^r

I am Sorry I was So unhappy as to receive but one letter from you this year & that gave mee an acc^t you were indisposed, & truely I should have fear^d your health, had not m^r North, often writt mee word all our friends were Well of w'm you Ime Sure ever deservedly hath ye first place in my thoughts, & truely if kindnesse to any one in a Superlative degree bee a demonstration of friendship, I have ever found it from you beyond expression, wch I shall never bee able Sufficiently to acknowledge. I am Sorry our poor friend that should have brought yor lett^r dyed att Sea, So untimely before hee had past ye meridian of his age, the good old wom: (that shee might loose no time) marry^d again in Jan'ry to a Stranger. wee lately dranke your token att Capt Randolphs amongst a great deale of good company & returne our hearty thanks for the Same. We dranke all yor Good healths & designe you shall hear farther from us Suddenly. I have a little daughter comes home in this ship & have no reason in the least to Suspect yor kindnesse to her, nor Assistance one her way into Essex. Pray present Capt Morgan wth a p^t of plate ab^t 6 or 1.7 price. My best respects & Service to all where due, & in a more p'ticular manner to yor selfe & Lady from

D^r S^r

Yo^r Oblidged fr^d & Servt

W B

---

(3) "My Lady Berkeley," widow of Sir William. It is probable that not long after her return to Virginia she married Col. Phillipp Ludwell, of "Rich Neck." She was a Kentish Culpeper (a first cousin, it seems to Governor Lord Culpeper) and was probably related to Byrd's wife. On Oct. 5, 1680, Lord Culpeper wrote to his sister in England "My Lady Berkeley is married to Mr. Ludwell and thinkes no more of our world." After the English fashion she retained her higher title, and at Jamestown a fragment of stone with the letters "Frances, La." is all that remains of her tomb.

To Daniel Horsmonden

Virginia June ye 5th 1685

Dear Bro.

Least you should have just occasion to blame mee, for not giveing you an acco^t^ of our Condition here, I send this to acquaint you of our wellfare, though allmost x x x x ab^t^ 5 weeks Since, by a mighty flood wch came wth great Violence downe the river & raised it upward of 20 foot above ye common, & hath done mee & my neighbo^rs^ much damage. My wife is fair for another little one; little Molly is well, & I hope little Nutty by this is well with you. Capt Randolph, m^r^ Banister in health & give you their best respects & Service. Pray give mine to all our friends & my blessing to my Child'n and accept of my most unstained love & Service yor selfe from

Yo^r^ loveing bro & Servt

W B

To Bro. Dan'll

To ———

Virg'a June 6th 1685

Gen^t^

Since my last I rec^d^ one from you via Barbados, wch keeps us still in hopes of the Pinke, you formerly menconed: & wee now daily expect if it should faile twould bee an unhappy dis-appointment haveing neglected all other ways of Supplying our Selves wth those commodityes. the 26 & 27th of Ap'll last here a mighty fresh came downe this river, itt rise ab^t^ 3 foot higher then ever any knowne before, carry'd away all our fences, destroy'd all our Tob'o plants, wth much more mischief. Since which hath been such a drought, that I feel wee (hereabouts) shall Scarce make any Corne or Tob'o either: I hope what Goods Sent you by Hall, Bradly & Culpeper got Safe, this by Capt Tibbet wth x x x x H^ds^ of Tob'o & five of furres I hope will doe the like. Should have been glad by my last to have had our Acco^t^ of ye market of furres & as well as others, but its possible was forgotten: Pray Send some better paper p next,

for this is not fitt for writeing as you may easily perceive. I have Sent by Capt Tibbet a patterne of a Saw for a Saw mill & would desire you to Send mee a do of Saws according to that paterne, onely would have them 6 inches Longer, the Bever Sent herewith (I thinke) is generally good though a great part of it hath been Wett wch makes it show rough, yett being well dryed I conceive its nere the worse, w^{t} ye Tob'o is I know not but Col'o Powell promised it should bee as good as their parts did afford. I shall not trouble you farther at psent, but wth respects & Service take Leave

Gen^{t}

Yo^{r} fr^{d} & Servt

W B

To ——— RAND(4)

Virg'a June 8th 1685

Dear S^{r}

I wrote to you last by the Culpeper by whom I sent my little daughter Nutty & hope ere this is Safely arrived, my wife is fair for another, because shee will not bee behind her Sister; ab^{t} the latter end of Aprill here hapen'd the greatest flood was ever knowne, ore floweing all our Lands came into my dwelling house (5), & did us infinite mischief. should bee glad to hear

(4) This "Brother" Rand, appears to have married a Horsmanden, a sister of Mrs. Byrd. This conjecture is confirmed by some entries in a Purleigh register. Susanna, daughter of Daniel Horsmanden had in 1691 for one of her godfathers "Nordest Rand Esq.," while in 1692, one of the sponsors for Ursula, another daughter, was "Mrs. Ursula Rand, her aunt."

(5) Byrd's dwelling house into which the flood came could not, of course, have been on the present Belvidere Street or anywhere else on Oregon Hill in Richmond. The residence on this height must have been built later. Probably this freshet induced the removal to the hill. This reference seems to render it very, unlikely that William Byrd, the founder of Richmond, who was born in 1674, had as his birthplace either of the known sites on the hill. It is more probable that he was born at this house accessible to the water, near the river bank. Thomas Stegg from whom the elder Byrd inherited much land near the Falls of James River had a stone house in the low grounds on the south side of the river opposite the present Chesapeake & Ohio wharves. This may have been Byrd's residence in 1680.

oftner from you, how all our friends doe, & what news, of wch you have often the Speediest way of Sending the ships Sometimes lyeing long att Deale. All friends here in health & give you their Service. Pray give mine where due; especially to Sister Betty, Dudly, mr Knowles, & most unfeigned to yor selfe & Lady from

Dear Sr

Yor affectionate Bro. & Servt

W B

To Bro. Rand

To Mr Gower

Virg'a June 8th 1685

Sr

I wrote to you formerly by the Culpeper & gave you then an accot of the losse of our good friend Coz Grendon, I hope his Estate in England will Satisfy his ingagements there for here will not bee any thing to bee had, the old Gentlewo. haveing a very firme bond for 1900 l. St'g. wch will take preheminence & Sweep away all the Virg'a Estate, I wish wee could have served our friends that way. Wee dranke your health merrily wth yor token, & by Col'o Hill have Sent a returne. Yor Bro.(6) & all ye friends here in health, onely allmost drowned lately by a mighty flood wch raised our river upward of 20 foot above an Ordinary tide. Pray give my best respects to all our friends at Edmonton, & where else you know its due, & accept the Same yor selfe, wth hearty thanks for all yor favors from

Yor reall frd & Servant

W B

To mr Gower

To P——————

Virg'a Nobr ye 8th 1685

Gent

This Serves onely to cover the inclosed bill of Ladeing & Invoice, hope to have time to inlarge, if I can gett a conveniency to Send my letters downe

Yor frd & Servt

To P p Wyn W B

(6) "Your brother" was Abel Gower of Henrico County, in regard to whom see this magazine XVII, 400, 401. The person addressed was Thomas Gower, of Edmonton, England.

TO MR NORTH

Virg'a Nob^{r} ye 8th 1685

S^{r}

This Serves onely to cover the inclosed Invoice & bill of Ladeing for 20 H^{ds} of Tobacco, this ship saileing sooner then expected have not time to adde any thing but respects to all our friends from

Yo^{r} fr^{d} & Servt

W B

To m^{r} North p ye Booth

To ——————

Virg'a Xb^{r} ye 8th 1685

Gen^{t}

Its about three weeks since I wrote to you by Wynne who (I hope) is, by this prety well on his Voyage. Last weeke I hear the Booth Sail^{d}, I had not notice thereof So could n write. I hope this p Hall will not bee long after, herewith I have Sent 36 h^{ds} Tob'o & four of furs & Skins, wch Capt Hall would not let mee put on board wth out leaving 4 H^{ds} of Tob'o of ye 80 hee promised mee though hee could fetch Tob'o from m^{r} Cainfields. Its possible hee may bee glad of them another year. Yo^{r} Goods sent p him I hope prove well, I hear few complaints as yet, for Indian Goods none as yet Sold. Hereafter shall give you Acco^{t} how they prove. I wonder you should Send mee 2 Close stools (wch to mee or any else I thinke are uselesse) without pans. I suppose they might bee forgott, as allso womens Stockings of wch I rec^{d} one doz. though had none charged mee. I want one Reame of paper 2 being charged but 1 come to Hand, these I thinke are the most materiall Errors, if I find more shall hereafter acquaint you with them. Hope Tob'o may doe well this year. All agree its generally better y'n hath been of late years. The proposition ab^{t} negro's I hope will bee comply'd wth & Wynne dispatched, for Paggens (7)

(7) Petter Paggen & Co. of London, did a large trade with Virginia about this period.

Concerne may justly glory in the trade of this River haveing been mighty Successfull these two last years. No News as yet of our Salt from Orton, Roger Newham hath lately promised us to Send it up. Ime Sure I want it. Ships here will find a ready dispatch, Newham & Bradly will Saile within a month if Weather p'mits. Wee are in daily expectation of ye Culpeper, fraight yet wanting. All our friends well. Pray pay any charge my father Horsmonden shall desire you, or shall bee any otherwise due, for my Child^ns^ maintenance & Schooling in England, its but 3 days Since yours Via barbados & p Deptford ketch came to Hand, wth an Acco^t^ of ye Holl^d^ Venditia I wish it proves no worse this year, shall not enlarge att present, but wth best respects take Leave G^t^

Yo^r^ reall fr^d^ & Servt

W B.

(To be continued)

VIRGINIA IN 1678-1679.

(Abstracts by W. N. SAINSBURY, and copies in the McDonald and De Jarnette Papers, Virginia State Library.)
(Continued)

May 20, 1679

PETITION OF BARTHOLOMEW PRICE, GUARDIAN TO JOHN JEFFREYS a Minor son to Col. Herbert Jeffreys, to the King. For payment of £300, granted by his Maj. to Col. Jeffreys, still in the hands of Alderman John Jeffreys and arrears of his salary from 25 March 1678 for the relief of the poor widow now in prison & the maintenance of her poor orphan and to grant an order for her release. "Delivered to the Committee by Mr Secretary Coventry 20th of May 1679."

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80. p. 304.)

LETTER MRS. JEFFREYS TO SECRETARY COVENTRY.

Sir

I presume so much upon Your known Justice and Charity to represent to You my sad condition here which now is more deplorable than anybodys was. I paid or gave Bail to all Debts that came to me and when I thought I had satisfied the most strictest Laws in the World and was ready to come home in Captain Morris ship, Coll. Spencer, my Lord Culpepers Attorney, lays in a claim against me for all perquisits since my husband came into this Colony notwithstanding that the words of the Kings Letter is that all perquisits, and Arrears not actually received by You, shall remain in custody for the said Lord Culpeper and I have offered to give Security to pay all that can be found my husband has received since the 25th March 1678 but that will not satisfy, therefore 'tis plain they seek my life in malice to my husband though none of them can tax him of doing any injustice therefore Sir, May most humble Petition

to you is that you will be pleased to take the cause of so miserable a poor Widow into Your Protection and make it acceptable to His Ma^ty^ by your presenting of it for I cannot hope to outlive this persecution but I most humbly beseech you to intercede for me to His Ma'^ty^ that my child may not be ruined since his father lost his life in most faithfully performing his duty to His Ma^ty^. I do not doubt that if my enemys here would give me leave to come and cast myself at the Kings feet but His Ma^ty^ would be graciously pleased to extend his accustomed goodness to me and my poor fatherless Child and give him a comfortable subsistence in this world.

But I am most unjustly kept here therefore do most humbly beg of you to take the cause of the poor fatherless child into your protection and whilst I breath you shall never want the prayers of Sir,

Your humble and obedient
Ser. Jeffreys.

Sir

I beseech you to pardon all faults here, for so great a load of afflictions distract me.

A true Copy teste
W. Davis.

Whitehall, May 20, 1679

Minutes of a Committee of Trade and Plantations. Information of Capt. Rudge, Master of the Hopewell, lately come from Virginia, summoned by Order in Council of 16th inst. in reference to the great disorders committed by the Indians who had lately made peace with the English, in killing several of the people & totally ruining Col. Place's plantation, who is now in England; the great terror caused by a body of 8 or 10,000 Indians assembled about Blackwater upon the Northern borders of Carolina; the people not reconciled to one another since the Rebellion which has a deal of ill blood. Sir Henry Chicheley the present Governor very old, sickly and crazy (1).

(1) At this time "crazy" referred to bodily, not mental, weakness. No serious attacks by the Indians followed the great gathering of the tribes referred to. It may have been nothing but a baseless rumor.

Information of Capts. Grantham & Rider that at York river there was a report of a great incursion of Indians about Rappahannock River, that many people had left their plantations thro fear. Concerning a Convoy for the next fleet to Virginia.

Petition of Bartholomew Price, Guardian to John Jeffreys son to Col. Herbert Jeffreys late Governor of Virginia, complaining of ill usage to Mrs. Jeffreys, Widow, by reason of a pretended debt of Col. Spencer, Attorney to Lord Culpeper for perquisites received since her husband came into the Country. Lord Culpeper's answer to the same. 4 pp.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 106, pp. 5-8.)

Whitehall, May 21, 1679

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL ON REPORT OF COMMITTEE FOR TRADE AND PLANTATIONS on Petition of Bartholomew Price, Guardian to Col. Jeffrey's son directing that Sir Henry Chicheley, Governor of Virginia inform himself of the differences depending between Lord Culpeper or his Agents and Mistress Jeffreys who is to be permitted to come to England to settle her deceased husband's debts; and that Secretary Coventry take sufficient security on the part of Lord Culpeper as of said Mrs. Jeffreys that all things be duly performed pursuant to his Maj. letter of 27 Dec. 1677. (which see) 3 pp.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80. pp. 309-311.)

Council Chamber June 27, 1679

MEM'DM. THE LORD PRESIDENT IS DESIRED BY THE LORDS OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS to report to his Maj. in Council That upon a motion made by the Earl of Essex from the Lords of the Treasury, their Lordships are of opinion that it will best consist with his Maj. service and the ease of the Treasury that all allowances made by his Maj. unto the Governors and other Officers of the Plantations as also for the Companies maintained there may be paid by the pay-master of his Maj. forces upon the general establishment settled for that service.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 97, p. 63.)

Whitehall June 27, 1769

ORDER OF THE KING IN COUNCIL on report of Lords of Trade and Plantations on the present allowances for support of the Government of his Maj. Colonies in America; that the following Allowances & Establishments shall be continued & no others, viz.:

For Virginia (among others)	
To the Governor per ann.	1000
To the Lt. Gov. per ann.	600
To the Maj. Gen. per ann.	300
For maintenance of forts	600
For two Companies of 100 each	3327.11.8.
To the Chirurgeon per ann.	91. 5.0.
To the Chaplane per ann.	121.13.4.
	6040.10.0.
Besides an allowance to an Engineer to be retained for some time longer in case the Country proceed to build a Fort after the rate of 10s. per diem for himself & 4s.p^{r} diem for one serv^{t} p^{r} ann.	219.
As also to a Gunsmith & two mates to be cont^{d} some time longer at 8s. 4d. per diem—per ann.	152.
Total	£6371.10.0.

To be paid as they become due by the Paymaster of his Maj. Forces upon a General Establishment to be settled for that service which the Lords of the Treasury are hereby directed to see done accordingly—The two foot Companies of Virginia to be continued for one year and until further order.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 97, pp. 63-66.)

Whitehall, July 25, 1679

ORDER OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL, referring to the Committee of Plantations a letter from Sir Henry Chicheley and the Speaker of the Assembly of Virginia to the King together with a letter from Sir Henry Chicheley to Sec. Coventry. see 20 May 1679.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80, p. 362.)

Whitehall Aug. 6, 1679

ORDER OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL. That an Act of Assembly begun at James City 25 April last entitled An Act (2) enabling Major Lawrence Smith and Capt. Wm. Bird to seat certain Lands at the head of Rappahannock River and James River be forthwith suspended until his Maj. further pleasure be signified and that no Assembly be called in Virginia before 1st January next of all which Sec. Coventry is to give intimation to Sir Henry Chicheley Deputy Governor of that Colony—also to signify that his Maj. has received the Address concerning the pay of the soldiers there and the arrears of Quit Rents.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80, p. 359.)

Whitehall, Aug. 6, 1679

ORDER OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL on letter from Sir Henry Chicheley of 20 May last and Address of the Assembly of Virginia inclosed (which see). That a letter be prepared for the King's signature to Lord Culpeper to acquaint the Assembly on his arrival that his Maj. before the receipt of their address, had taken care for payment of the arrears due to the soldiers & for the continuance of the same for the future; and that as to the Quit rents, his Maj. had long had that matter under consideration & will shortly give orders therein for his own service & the ease of the people. Also that he has sent some laws to them to which he expects a cheerful & ready compliance, assuring them of his particular care and kindness for that his Colony. That an Instruction to Lord Culpeper be prepared to forbear the publication of his additional Commission for six months after his arrival if he think fit.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80, pp. 363-4.)

Aug. 9, 1679, Whitehall

SEC. COVENTRY TO SIR HENRY CHICHELEY, Deputy Governor

(2) This act of the Assembly of April 1679, appears in Hening II, 448-454. It was intended as a cheap provision for the defense of the heads of James and Rappahannock Rivers. Major Lawrence Smith, of Gloucester, was granted a tract at the falls of Rappahannock four and a half by four miles, and Wm. Byrd of Henrico, a tract five by three miles at the falls of James. Each was to keep fifty armed men constantly on their grants and was given some local jurisdiction.

of Virginia. Is commanded by the King to signify to him that an Act enabling Major Lawrence Smith & Capt. Wm. Bird to seat certain lands at the head of Rappahannock River and James River be forthwith suspended so that no proceedings may be had thereupon until his Maj. shall signify his further pleasure—that no Assembly be called or held in Virginia before 1 January next—and that having received an Address concerning the pay of the soldiers there and the arrears of Quit rents such order will be taken therein upon the arrival of Lord Culpeper as shall be for the good of his Maj. subjects there.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 95, p. 175.)

Whitehall, Aug. 9, 1679

SECRETARY COVENTRY TO SIR HENRY CHICHELEY, Deputy Governor of Virginia. Has received his letter of 20th May last wherein he enlarges upon the matter of the Address from himself and the Assembly concerning the pay of the soldiers there and the arrears of the Quit rents to which his Majesty has ordered his answer. Shall endeavour to deserve his good opinion by showing his hearty inclinations for the welfare of Virginia, and also to his own particular.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 95, p. 175.)

Whitehall, Sept. 10, 1679

The King to Thos. Lord Culpeper.

At his earnest and reiterated instances and in contemplation of the condition of affairs in Virginia where his presence is highly necessary his Maj. has condescended to his speedy repair thither notwithstanding the great and urgent occasions the King has of his services here. He is hereby granted full power to repair back to the King's presence as soon as in his discretion the state of affairs in Virginia will in any sort permit his absence, as well in person to give an exact account of the same and continue his services to his Maj. here, as for some short time to take care of his own private concerns, which his constant attendance on the King has hitherto hindered him from sufficiently providing for—After which the King will give orders for his speedy return thither again to perfect the settlement and welfare of that Colony.

(Col. Entry Bk. No. 80, pp. 380-1.)

(To be continued)

THE WILL OF JOHN BAYLOR OF NEW MARKET.

Made 19th February, 1770. Proved 16th May, 1772.

In the name of God, Amen.—

I, John Baylor of New Market, in the County of Caroline, being of sound mind and disposing memory do make this my last will and testament for settling my temporal concerns after recommending my soul to my blessed Saviour and Redeemer, trusting not in my own merits but in His mercy for Salvation and my body to the earth to be buried at the discretion of my dear wife and friends.

Imprimis.—I give to my well beloved wife, Frances Baylor, in lieu of dower and claim out of my estate the use of all that part of the tract of land whereon I now live, within the following bounds, that is to say—Beginning at the end of Pendleton Hill road opposite to my house and running thence to the branch which runs between my dwelling house and that wherein my stewards have lived—thence down the said branch to where it empties itself into the Great Meadow Swamp—thence along the said swamp to a dam formerly made across the same — thence a straight line to the river at a ford called Swift Water, down the river to Todd's line, along that line to the main road and along the road to the beginning. Also the following slaves, to wit:

Carpenter, Tom, Old Guilbert, Ben and Tom in the house, Michael, Joe, Sam, Ismael, Peter, Lewis, Ralph, Kicky, Robin, Pompey, Young Samson, Old Sarah, Beck, Caroline and her four children, Grace and Clara, Judy, Sam, Gabriel and Beck, Scilla and her six children, Caleb, Lewis, Armistead,Bernard, Agga and Scilla, Old Hannah, Isbell, Sall, Milly, Betty, Jenny, Thone and her two children Fannie and Bick, Christian and her two children Bird and Polly, Old Malade, Nan, Hannah,

Scylvia, Daphney, Esther and Humphrey, with their increase from the date of my will during her natural life and after her death, I give the said lands to my son John for such estate and subject to the like limitations and remainders as her-in-after mentioned in the devise to him of the residue of my home tract, and the said slaves with their increase to be equally divided between my four sons, John, George, Robert and Walker Baylor, or the surviving heirs in case either of them should die before their marriage without issue. I give to my said wife as her absolute property one half of my stocks of black cattle, sheep, and hogs, half the grain of all sorts and plantation tools, all plows, horses and wheel carriages which shall be at my home plantation and Goose Pond Quarters at my death, also my charriot and seven horses now used to draw it, my riding chair, with one half of my household and kitchen furniture, spinning wheels and looms, and their tackle, to her Executors, Administrators or assigns forever. And the estate given my said wife to be exempt from the payment of debts and legacies.

Item—I give and devise to my oldest son John Baylor the residue of the tract of land whereon I now live and the several parcels purchased thereto adjoining on the north side of Mattapony river, with my Mill and Mill Quarter lands to my son John and the heirs of his body, and in default of such heirs I give the same with the lands lent my wife to my son George and the heirs of his body, and in default of such heirs to my son Robert and the heirs of his body, and in default of such heirs to my son Walker and the heirs of his body forever. I also give to my said son John all the lands I hold in the County of Orange with the slaves thereon, being eighty in number, and their future increase, also all stock of horses, cattle, sheep, and hogs, grain of all sorts, pots and pans, and plantation tools upon the said lands, also the following slaves, to-wit: Sawney a carpenter Gabriel and Ben (Smiths), two Martins (wheelwrights), Gilbert (miller), Lunny, Peg, Carter, Tom, Miles, Gabriel, Patty, Dolphin at home, and Old Jamie, Young Jamie, Austin, Dick, Lott, Penn, Grace, Zachary, Neil, Nan, Alice, Lott, Sarah and her children, at the Mill with their future increase, also all grain at the Mill, and all grain, Stocks of black cattle, sheep, and hogs

and plow horses, pots, pans, and plantation tools of all sorts on the Mill Quarter plantation—half of my stock of black cattle, sheep and hogs at my home and Goose Pond Quarter plantation, my English horse Fearnaught, and these mares, namely: Old Jenny, Dismal, English, Gray Steady, Sally and Lovely, and all my books, all of which I give to my said son John and his heirs, forever—upon this express condition, that he shall pay unto my son Walker Baylor six hundred pounds, when the said Walker shall become of the age of twenty-one. At the same time deliver to him two young male, Virginia bond tithable slaves to be his absolute property, and also a good young riding horse, and shall pay to him and each of his brothers George and Robert the sum of twenty-five pounds sterling to assist in a library which I highly recommend to be yearly added to, subject also to the charges here-in-after laid on my son John, but if my son John shall die before he arrives at the age of twenty-one years then the said slaves and stock devised to him shall be equally divided between my other three sons George, Robert, and Walker, or the survivors of them, subject, however, to the charges aforesaid.

Item—I give my lower Pole Cat tract of land in this county containing about three hundred acres to my son George Baylor and the heirs of his body forever, and in default of such issue, to my son John and the heirs of his body, and on failure of such heirs to my son Robert and the heirs of his body, and in default of such to my son Walker and the heirs of his body forever—I also give to my said son George all the grain, stocks of black cattle, sheep, and hogs, plow horses, pots and pans, and plantation tools upon the said lands, his own riding mare, Jenny, Dismal's colt, Godoplhin—his young mare Sprightly at the old house, and the young brown English begotten mare Ballad Stella, with their future increase, together with the following slaves, to-wit: Bet, Jenny, Lawney, Goose Pond Nat, Shoemaker Nat, Phil, Lee's Tom, Jack, Henry, Daniel, Kickey, Ambrose, Lewis, Jemmy, Ned, Hannibal, Peter, Will, Annibal, York, Dick, Adam, Solomon, Reuben, Eve, Pallas, Cate, Nan, Dice, Jenny, Christian, Rose, Hannah, Simon, Pleasant, Sarah, Evans, Flemming, Avy, Eve, Ester, Grace, Jerry, Isbell, Jack,

Michael, Jack, Nan, Ned, Will, Grace, and Stephee, and their future increase, all of which I give to my said son George, and his heirs forever, upon this express condition, that he pay unto my said son Walker the sum of two hundred and fifty pounds when the said Walker arrives to the age of twenty-one or marries, and then deliver him for his own use three good young Virginia born tithable slaves and twelve head of black cattle, subject to the charges here-in-after laid upon my said son George, but if my said son George shall die before he arrives at the age of twenty-one or marries, the slaves and stock devised to him shall be equally divided between my sons John, Robert, and Walker, or the survivors of them in case either of them should be dead without leaving issue, subject nevertheless to the charges aforesaid.

Item—I give my old house tract of land to my son Robert Baylor, and the heirs of his body, and in default of such heirs to my son John, for such estate and subject to the like limitations and remainders as are mentioned in the devise of my Caroline lands to him.—I also give to my said son Robert Baylor, all the grain, stocks of black cattle, sheep, and hogs, plows, horses, pots and pans, and plantation tools upon the said land, and his riding horse, a mare Lucinda, and her colt Sally, Steady, Fan, Rachel, with their future increase, together with the following slaves, to-wit: Hannibal a carpenter, Johnny, Bob and Sampson, Sawyer, Isaac, Judy, three children Charlotte, Godfrey and Bob, Ezekiel, Martin, a boy, Anny Cockery's daughter Judy, Joe, Harry, Kickey, Randall, Moses, Ezekiel, Ambrose, Larpedor, Jack, Dick, George, Frank, Molly, Cate Cockeney's Anthony, Amy, Sawney, George, Cloe, Jack, Charles, Esther, Dinah, Hannah, Stephen, Nancy, Dill and Ephram, Sarah and Lucy, Sally, Judy, Betty, Amy and Patty's Ester, and their future increase, all which I give to my son Robert Baylor and his heirs upon this express condition, that he pay unto my son Walker when he shall arrive to the age of twenty-one years, or marries, the sum of two hundred and fifty pounds and deliver him three young good Virginia born titheable slaves and eight head of black cattle to his own use, subject also to the charges here-in-after laid on my said son Robert, but if my said son

Robert shall die before he arrives to the age of twenty-one years, or marries, the slaves and stock devised to my said son shall be equally divided between my three sons, John, George, and Walker, or the survivors of them in case either of them shall be dead without leaving issue, subject to, however, the charges aforesaid.

Item—I give my upper Pole Cat tract of land containing between two and three thousand acres, and all of my lots of land in the town of Port Royal, purchased of Oliver Towles, to my son Walker Baylor and the heirs of his body forever, and in default of such heirs to my son John for such estate and subject to like limitations and remainders as mentioned in the devise of my Caroline lands to my said son John. I also give to my son Walker a negro named Hylliard to his own use.

Item—I give to my daughter Lucy Armistead all my South River tract of land with the land of Bohannon thereto adjoining to her and her heirs forever, also the following slaves, to-wit: Simon, Davy, Jeoffrey, Peach, Betty and her children Patty and John Wilkes, Milly, Esther and Judy.

Item—I give to my daughter Fanny Baylor her negro girl Sally and future increase and six hundred pounds current money to be paid her when she arrives to the age of twenty-one years or marries, but if she dies before she becomes of age or marries the said money is not to be raised, but be sunk for the benefit of my sons.

Item—I give to my daughter Courtney Baylor her negro girl Phebbe and six hundred pounds current money to be raised and paid at the time and upon the same conditions as Fanny's.

Item—I give to my daughter Betty Baylor her negro girl Angella and six hundred pounds to be raised and paid in manner and upon the same conditions, my meaning that my two last named daughters' fortunes shall be payable when they respectively become of age or marry, and are severally to be sunk for the benefit of my sons in case of their death before they come of age or marry.

Item—I give my granddaughter Fanny Armistead one hundred pounds and a negro Rachel called hers.

Item—I give unto my grandson John Baylor Armistead a

negro boy named Jemy called his, and a good colt at the discretion of my executors.

Item—I do hereby direct that the remaining half of my household and kitchen furniture, with all my horses, mares, and colts not before devised, be sold by my executors and the money applied to the payment of my debts and legacies, and my outstanding debts collected and applied to the same uses.

Item—My desire is that my whole estate except what is given and lent to my wife and daughter Lucy, be kept together and the profit applied to the common maintenance of my children unmarried and the payment of debts and legacies, until my son John arrives at the age of twenty-one years and comes to Virginia or sends to demand his part, at which time an account must be stated of the above sales, outstanding debts, and profits and what this shall be deficient in paying my debts and raising the fortunes devised to my three youngest daughters and granddaughter shall be supplied and paid one moiety by my son John and the other moiety by my sons George and Robert equally between them, and in the like proportion shall my sons contribute hereafter to the education and maintenance of my son Walker and three daughters Fanny, Courtney, and Betty until they respectively arrive to the age of twenty-one years or marry, and subject these charges as well as the condition expressed in each devise. My will is, that the bequeaths to my said sons John, George and Robert shall then take place and vest in them respectively. But if my son John shall die under age then such devision and settlement shall not take place until my son George shall arrive to the age of twenty-one years, or marries, and then shall take place in the manner aforesaid.

Item—I empower my executors out of the profits of my estate, if they find it convenient, to purchase land and slaves for all or any of my sons, charging same to such sons to be settled in the account on equal distribution of profits.

Item—My earnest desire is that in any division to be made of my slaves, particular care be taken to avoid a separation of families of slaves as much as possible.

Item—All the rest and remainder of my estate and interest therein not fully disposed of I give to my son John and his heirs forever.

Lastly: I constitute and desire my son John Baylor, my son-in-law Mr. John Armistead and my friends Gregory Baylor, Nathaniel Burwell, Edmund Pendleton, Anthony Thornton, Erasmus Taylor, James Madison, James Taylor, Jr. and John Semple, Gentlemen, to be my executors of this my last will and testament, and the five first named to be guardians of my children during their minority.

In witness whereof I have signed my name to the first sheet of this, my will, and to this last have set my hand and seal, this 19th day of February, 1770.

Signed and published by the testator.

SEAL J. Baylor.

The words "and daughter Lucy" in this sheet first interlined in presence of us who subscribed the same in his presence.

Maury Dudley. John Fitzhugh.
Henry Turner. Christ. Blackburn.

At a court held for Caroline County the 16th day of May, 1773, this will was proved by the oath of Maury Dudley and Christopher Blackburn and admitted to record on the motion of Nathaniel Burwell and John Armistead, Gentlemen, who having taken the oath prescribed by law, certificates for obtaining a probate thereof is granted them.

Bond acknowledged and ordered to be recorded.

Teste—

William Nelson, Clerk.

Recopy Teste—

John Pendleton—D. C. C.

We are indebted to Dr. T. V. Brooke, Sutherlin, Va., for the copy of this will. Col. John Baylor was born May 12, 1705 at Walkerton, King and Queen Co. and was educated at Putney Grammar School and Caius College, Cambridge. He was County Lieutenant of Orange County (where he owned a great landed estate), and was a member of the House of Burgesses for Caroline 1742-1765, inclusive. He was greatly interested in thoroughbred horses, and imported many from England, including Sober John, and Fearnaught. At his death nearly a hundred "blooded" horses were sold by his executors. He died April 6, 1772, leaving a very large, but greatly involved estate. He married Jan. 2, 1744, Frances daughter of Jacob Walker of Va., and had issue: 1. Courtney, educated like her sisters, at Croydon, Kent., married Jasper Clayton, of Gloucester Co., Va.; 2. Lucy married John Armistead; 3. Frances, married ——— Nicholson; 4. Elizabeth, died unmarried; 5. John, also educated at Putney Grammar School and Caius College, inherited his father's estate of "Newmarket," Caroline County; 6. George, Lt. Colonel in the Revolution; 7. Walker, Lieutenant in the Revolution; 8. Robert.

ABSTRACT OF CHANCERY SUIT*(1), PRESIDENT AND MASTERS OF THE COLLEGE OF WILLIAM AND MARY *v.* FREWEN.

Contributed by LEO CULLETON, 92 Piccadilly, London, Eng.

Chanc. Proc. Reynardson No. 169-6.
14 NOV. 1702. TO THE RIGHT HON'BLE SR. NATHAN WRIGHT, KNIGHT, LORD KEEPER OF THE GREAT SEALE OF ENGLAND.

Humbly Complaineing sheweth unto yor Lordshipp yor orato^r Sr Edward Northey Kn^t her Majestyes Attorney generall att the relacon of the President and Masters of the Colledge of William and Mary in Virginia, and the Mayor Comonalty and Citizens of London.

That in p'suance of severall Orders and Decrees made in a Cause formerly depending in this Hon'ble Court wherein Sr Thomas Trevor, Kn^t his late Maj'tys Attorney gen'all, Dame Elizabeth Gerrard, widdow and Thomas Owen Esqr were plaintiffs, ag^t ye R^t Hon'ble Rich^d, late Earle of Burlington, Sr Henry Ashurst Kn^t and Barr^t. and John Warr, gent. Exec^rs of

---

(1) Hon. Robert Boyle (Jan. 26, 1626-1691) a younger son of Richard, first Earl of Cork, was noted for his scientific attainments. The nature of his bequest is seen from the bill of the President and Masters of Wm. & Mary. The suit was a friendly one to authorize the sale of the mansion house of Brafferton Hall, which would be an unprofitable burden on the trust. It will also be seen that the fund was not charged with the payment of £90 to Harvard, as has been stated; but only for £45 which was to be expended by that college in the payment of ministers salaries. The portrait of Robt. Boyle is in the library of Wm. & Mary College. He was friendly to Wm. Byrd (2d) when the latter was a young man in England and quite intimate relations continued between Byrd and members of the Boyle family. In "The Orrery Papers" are a number of letters from Byrd to Charles 4th Earl of Olney (now chiefly remembered by Macauley's account of his contest with Bentley), and to his son Hon. John Boyle, afterwards 5th Earl. It is a curious editorial slip where the editor of the "Orrery Papers" states in his preface, that Earl Charles died in 1737, which the letters prove that he died in 1731.

ye Hon'ble Robt Boyle Esqr. dec^d, deftes. ye said defts were Decreed to lay out for the purchase of the Manno^r of Brafferton in the County of York the sume of Five thousand four hundred pounds (out of ye p sonall estate of the said Robert Boyle) wch when purchased was to be conveyed to the May^r Comonalty and Cittizens of London (subject to a rent charge of ninety pounds a yeare clear of taxes for ever issueing thereout to the Company for p'pogateing the Gospell in New England and the parts adjacent in America one Moyety whereof Viz^t forty five pounds a yeare ye said Company was yearely to remitt for the Sallary of two preaching Ministers to instruct the Natives in or near ye Colonyes of his late Maj^tye and Successors in New England in ye Christian Religion and the other Moyety of ye said Ninety pounds a yeare ye said Company and their Successors were yearly to transmitt to the President and Fellowes of Harvard Colledge in Cambridge in New England to be by them employed and bestowed for the Sallary of two other preaching Ministers to teach ye said Natives in or neare ye said Collonyes in the Christian Religion upon trust that the yearly rents issues and p'fitts thereof (after the said ninety pounds a yeare should be deducted) should be transmitted to the said P^rsident and Ma^rs of the Colledge of William and Mary in Virginia and their Successors in trust in the first place to expend so much as should be necessary towards fitting and furnishing lodgings and Rooms for such Indian Children as should be brought into ye said Colledge and afterwards to keep soe many Indian Children in sicknesse and health in meat drink washing and lodging Cloaths Medicines books and Educacon from ye first beginning of letters till they should be ready to receave Ord^rs at ye rate of fourteen pounds a yeare for every child as ye yearly p'fitts of ye said Manno^r would amount to ..... And yor Orat^r further sheweth that in p'suance of ye s^d Orders, ye purchase of the said Manno^r was made, ye said rent charge of ninety pound a yeare was granted thereout to ye said Company for p'pogating ye Gospell in New England in America in trust for ye purposes aforesaid.....Yo^r Orat^r further sheweth y^t ye said Manno^r of Brafferton consisting of a Capitall Messuage called Brafferton Hall and severall Farmes belonging

thereto all of ab^{t} ye yearly vallue of two hundred and seaventy pounds and by ye Acco^{ts} yearly transmitted to ye said p^{r}sident and Ma^{r}s of ye said Colledge in Virginia by their Agent here in London of ye rents & p'fitts of ye said Manno^{r} there has been alwayes a demand for five or six pounds a yeare for expences and charges for repayers laid out on ye said Messuage and without any p'fitt or advantage for ye same and ye said President and Ma^{r}s of ye said Colledge in Virginia upon inquiry found that ye same would be alwayes a charge to ye Charity and without any prospect of profitt they did propose to sell ye same and accordingly did by their Agent in England treat with one Laton Frewen of ye Citty of York, gent. for ye sale of the said Messuage or Manno^{r} house called Brafferton Hall.....and at length ye said President and Ma^{r}s of ye said Colledge at Virginia by the Agent did come to a full agreem^{t} with ye said Laton Frewen for the sale thereof and for which he was to pay two hundred and seaventy pounds which said sume was agreed to be laid out in the purchase of Lands as near ye Manno^{r} as can be had and settled to ye same uses and subjected to ye same trusts..... whereby ye said Charity would be improved as much as such purchase shall amount to and an yearly expence saved besides which was apprehended would be rather an Inducement then otherwise for ye said Laton Frewen to go on with the purchase. Butt now the said Laton Frewen "flyes of" from his said Agreem^{t} and refuses to go on with the said purchase pretending that he cannot with safety purchase ye same it being settled as aforesaid for a charitable use, which objeccon is not sufficient to acquitt him of the said purchase for y^{t} though ye said Capitall Messuage agreed to be sold be settled as aforesaid for a Charitable intent, yet if it shall be found that by ye sale thereof that the charitye will be improved thereby Yo^{r} Orat^{r} questions not but this Court will Decree the said Laton Frewen to go on with the purchase.....And to that end yor Orat^{r} prayes that the said Laton Frewen may be compelled to execute his said Agreement by payment of the purchase money.....May it therefore please yor Lordshipp to grant unto yor Orat^{r} his Majestyes most gratious Writt of sup'na to be directed to the said Laton Frewen, comanding at a certaine day and under a certaine

paine therein to be limitted to be and appeare before yor Lordshipp in her Majestyes most high & Hon'ble Court of Chancery and then and there to Answ^r to all and singular the premisses. And yor Orat^r shall ever pray &c.

Edw Northey.
Ric Turner.

The Answer of Laton Frewen, gent., deft to the Bill of Complaint or Informacon of Sr Edward Northey, Knt. her Maj'tyes Attorney Generall at the Relacon of the President and Masters of the Colledge of William and Mary in Virginia and others Complainants.

The said Defend^t Reserving to himselfe now and att all times hereafter all manner of benefitt and advantage of Excepcons that can or may be taken to the many fold Errors incertaintyes and insufficiencyes in the Complain^ts said Bill of Complaint contained for Answ^r thereunto. Answereth that it may be true that the Manno^r of Brafferton Hall in the County of York might be purchased and settled in pursuance of severall orders and Decrees of this Court for the Charitable uses and purposes in the bill menconed to which for more certainty this Defend^t referrs And he hath been informed that the Messuage or Manno^r House aforesaid hath been hitherto a charge to the Charity And he confesseth that hearing that the said President and Masters of the said Colledge of William and Mary in Virginia would sell the said Messuage did treat with Mr Myers and Mr Musgrove for the purchase thereof and did agree to pay for the same the sume of two hundred and seaventy pounds which sume was agreed to be laid out in the purchase of Lands of Inheritance as near Brafferton as conveniently can be had and settled to the same uses and trusts of trusts of the former Charitye which this Defend^t is ready to pay soe as the same be laid out as aforesaid and soe as this Honoble Court will Decree a good Conveyance of the fee symple of the said Messuage or Manno^r House to him this Defendant and his Heires freed and discharged from the former Charityes "without that that any other matter or thing in the Complainants said (sic) Bill of Complaint

contained materiall or effectuall in the Law for him this Deft (as he is advised) to make Answ^{r} unto as not herein and hereby sufficiently Answ^{r}ed unto confessed and avoided or Denyed is true to the knowledge of this Defend^{t}." All which matters and things this Defend^{t} is ready to Justifye and mainteyne. And therefore prayes to be dismissed with his reasonable Costs and charges.

Tho. Pengelly.
Mills.

VIRGINIA GLEANINGS IN ENGLAND.

(Contributed by Leo Culleton, 92 Piccadilly, London, W, and the late Lothrop Withington.)
(Continued)

JOHN BENSKYN, Citizen and Vintener of London.

Dated 15 Nov. 1617 Proved 28 Nov. 1617.

My bodie to be buried within the parish Church of St. Magnus the martir, London whereof I am a parishioner. To the poore of the said parish of St Magnus the martir, neere London Bridge, Forty shillings. To my Brother Thomas Benskyn of Sallowe in the Countie of Nott, yeoman, Tenne poundes. To my Brother Raph Benskyn, Fyfteene pounds. To my sister Margaret Pick, wief of William Pick of great Dawlby in the County of Leic, husbondman, Fyve pounds. To her daughter Hanna, Forty shillings. To my sister Sara Wyatt, wief of Thomas Wyatt of Thrummiston [? Thurmaston] in the said County of Leic, husbondman, Tenne poundes. And to her three Children Forty shillings a peece. To every one of the Eight Children of my said Brother Thomas Benskyn, Forty shillings a peece. To my sister Martha Hoden, wief of Robert Hoden, Citizen and Dyer of London, Tenne poundes. To my Father in lawe, Nicholas Oesley, Fyve pounds. To my sister in lawe, Ellen Oesley, Tenne pounds. To Judith Smyth, Widdowe, whoe nurseth my Child, Twenty shillings. To my Cosen Sibbell Pye, wyfe of Henry Pye, Fortie shillings. To my freinds Mr Richard Sleigh, Citizen and Vintner of London, to Mr Frances Benbowe, to my Aunt Merrick, to my Cosen Anne Poole and unto her mother Mary Overton, Forty shillings

a peece to make them Ringes. To my servants, Edward Johnson, John Mills and Alice Tewks, Fortie shillings a peece. To my Child Frances [Francis?] Benskyn, the sume of two hundred and Fiftie pounds. And unto the Child wherewith my wife nowe goeth, the like sume of two hundred and Fifty poundes. And if my said wife shall nowe goe with more than one Child then the same twoe porcons of two hundred and Fifty poundes shalbe and remayne equally amongst my said Children. And the said legacies to be paide unto them at the age or ages of one and twentie yeares of my sonne or sonnes, and at the age or ages of one and Twentie yeares or Dayes of marriages, first happening, of my Daughter or Daughters. And whereas I am seised of certen lands and hereditamts in Suyston als Seston als Sytheston, in the Countie of Leic. my will is that my Executrix and Overseers hereafter named shall make sale thereof to the most benefytt they can, For and towardes the payment of such Debts and summes of money as I owe.

Residuary Legatee and Sole Executrix. my wife, Katherin Benskyn. Overseers: my Unckle Sr Jno Merricke of London, Knight, and Jno Poole, Citizen and Mercer of London.

James Goodyer, Scr., John Bludworth and Christopher Fanell, (servt to the said James Goodyer, Scr.) Witnesses.

Proved 28 Nov. 1617 by Catherine Benskyn, the relict and Sole Executrix named.

P. C. C. 102 Weldon.

[The wills of Francis Benskin, Esq. of St. Martins in the Fields, proved Jan. 2, 1691, and of his son Henry Benskin, "lately arrived in England from the plantation of Virginia," proved Oct. 19, 1692, are in Waters' Gleanings. The latter had two daughters, Mary wife of William Harman of New Kent Co. and Frances wife of William Marston of James City County. Benskin appeared later as a Christian name among the Marstons and their descendants. It is possible that John Benskin, the testator above was father of Francis Benskin.]

HENRY BUSHRODE of Craford in the Countie of Dorset, yeoman.

Dated 10 Sept. 1612. Proved 12 July 1614.

To be buried in the Churchyarde of this same parish. To the Churche of the same parish, sixe shillings eight pence. To the

poore of the same parish, Five poundes. To the poore of little Craford, Twentie shillings. To the poore of Keniston, Twentie shillings. To Henry Brushrode, the sonne of Robert Bushrode of Shireborne late deceased, Thirtie poundes, to be paid him at the age of one and Twentie Yeares. To his other two sonnes, Twentie pounds, a peece, to be paid at the age of one and twentie yeares. To the youngest of my brother John Bushrods daughters, of Tawnton, late deceased, Twentie poundes. To Mary Bushrode, my kinswoman, Ten poundes. To my Cosen William Bushrode, Tenne poundes. To the Children of Robert Rapsham of Shireborne, Fortie shillings a peece. To Henry Roberts, Fortie shillings. To George Schovell, the sonne of George Schovell, six poundes, and two heyfers which are nowe at pasture with William Hughes. To the Children of John Bushrode, late of Shireborne, Five poundes a peece, to be paid at the age of twentie and one yeares. Residuary Legatee and Sole Executor. Richard Bushrode* of Dorchester.
Thomas Frampton and George Batt, Witnesses.

To my brother William Bushrode, Five poundes. To my godchildren, two sheepe a peece.

Proved 12 July 1614, by the Sole Executor *named.

*[No relationship given].

[In Vol. XXIII, 48, this magazine, was printed the will of Samuel Bushrod, of the County of Dorset, clothier, proved June 1, 1647, who seems to have been brother of Richard and Thomas Bushrod the emigrants to Virginia. This Henry Bushrod was evidently nearly related to Samuel. In each will is mention of members of the Scovell family.]

Mr. Martin Jefferson an Enlish man merchant adventurer living in Rotterdam. Will 1 October 1650; proved 28 October 1651. Appears before John Froost notary public admitted by the Court of Holland and left all his property and the guardianship of his children to his wife Weyntge Jefferson. Witnesses: William Ende Jongh and Martine Alma my clerks. A. Sommetradt Not: Pub: 1651 & H. de Custer Not: Pub: 1651 swear that John Frost is a notary and that instruments affected before him are legal and attesting the translation appears Josua

Mainet not: pub: 1651. Proved by Wentgen Jefferson the relict. *Grey*, 188.

[This abstract and the one following have been printed to preserve possible clues for tracing the Jefferson family. The John Jefferson, whose will follows, may have been the one who was a member of the Va. House of Burgesses in 1619.,

---

JOHN JEFFERSON the elder of the parish of St. Peter ad Vincula within the Tower of London, citizen and bowyer of London. Will 26 December 1645; proved 30 October 1647. I give to my son John Jefferson my livery gown and all my wearing apparel whatsoever, and all my bows, bowstaves, working tools, and other implements of archery, together with my seal ring. To Mary Jefferson, my said son's daughter, my Cyprus desk. To my daughter Elizabeth Tyrer my ring set with a blue stone and other stones. To my daughter Dorothy Watkins my gold ring that was my Wife's wedding ring. All other my rings I give to my son Nathaniell Jefferson. To each of my aforesaid four children, a silver spoon apiece. I will that all my beds, bedding, and household stuff shall be duly and justly appraised, and indifferently shared into four equal parts, one part whereof I give to my said son John, one other part equally amongst my grandchildren, children of my said son Nathaniel, one other part amongst the children of my daughter Elizabeth, and the other amongst the children of my daughter Dorothy. The parts given to all the children shall remain in the custody of my son Nathaniel, and shalbe by him kept or sold to the best profit he can for the benefit of the said children at their respective ages of 21 or marriage. All the rest of my goods I give amongst all my said grandchildren, viz., the children of my said two sons and two daughters, to be divided amongst them at their ages of 21 or marriage. I appoint my son Nathaniel Jefferson to be my full executor. (signed) John Jefferson. Witnesses: Joseph Alfort scr., Johes Aurelius, not. pub., Oliver Obery, servant to the said scrivener. Proved by the executor named. *Fines.*

Elizabeth Braxton of the parish of St. Gregory, London, widow. Will 8 April 1652; proved 30 April 1653. I give to my cousin Elizabeth Wilson, and to her brothers John Watson and William Watson, and to my cousins Elizabeth and John Watson, son and daughter of John Watson deceased, 12d. each. To Margaret Guy 10s. to make her a ring. To Mr. Thomas Bruise, junior, a little gold purse and an enammelled ring with a death's head on it. To my maidservant Christian Lucas my best wearing apparel, and to my maidservant Sara Underwood my ordinary wearing apparel. To my sister Joanne Dawson, my wedding ring. To John Dawson and Ellen, son and daughter of William and Joane Dawson, my two gilt bowls. I make my brother William Dawson, cook, my sole executor; and if any of my kindred (by me not now remembered) shall happen to disturb my executor in the performance of this my will, I give to each of them that shall come in 12d, which legacies I give not unto them to cut them off from what is their due, but to ascertain my executor (as in all conscience I am bound) that he shall not be endangered by any engagements that be upon him concerning me, and to enable him the better to pay my debts, he being very well known to, and better respected amongst my creditors than any other friend that at this time I could make use of. (Signed) Elizabeth Braxton. Witnesses: Richard Hodgekinson, Robt. Gebbins. Proved by the executor named. *Brent*, 298.

[As the name Braxton, or Brexton (the same name) appears so rarely in English records, and as absolutely nothing is known of the English ancestry of the Virginia family, it has been thought worth while to preserve these two wills as possible aids to investigation.]

William Brexton of St. Martin in the Fields, county Middlesex, gent. Will 1 August 1634; proved 28 August 1634. Body to Church of Holy Trinity in Winton. To repair of said church £10. To my brother Richard Brexton £1000 remaining in the custody of Sir Richard Titchbourne Baronett as by Bond in my Custody. Said £1000 to remain in the hands of said Sir Richard for three years after my death and in the meantime if mine executor be so minded to renew the same but not to call it in.

In token of my love to Sir Richard and for many curtesies I have received I give to him £30. To my Lord Weston £30 humbly desiring him to accept the same. To my father and mother and the longest liver of them the lease of a house in the city of Wiston which I bought of Mrs Savage together with the wine licence which I took from Mr. Diggens of the wine office. To my said brother Richard Brexton the sums of money which may accrue upon a Privy Seale made by assignment of Mr. Melvill with Captain Milwoode and Mr. Bedingfield of Gray's Inn. To my said brother the residue of the term of said howse as shall be unexpired after the death of said father and mother. To my sister Ellen Zouche a diamond ring of about £20. To my three brothers Thomas, Cornelius and Francis £40 apiece I release my cousin Mr. Thomas Travers of £13 and all arrears. My said brother Richard sole executor. Mr. Edward Bettes and Mr. William Longland the elder Overseers. To each of them 6s. 8d. Witnesses: Tho. Travers, Hen. Crosse, Thos. Stockton. *Seager*, 78.

William Corderoy of Chuet county Wilts esqre. Will 15 June 1621; proved 4 November 1623. Body to my Chappell in Chuet church. To Lady Church of Sarum 40s. To poor of Chuet 40s. and 10s. to church. To my daughter Annah £400. To my daughter Ellenor £400. My brother Edward Godderde esq my cosen William Sotwell esq and my cosen William Stanton esq to raise money for 12 years on my land, and pay to my son William Corderoy £50 yearly. To my said son all my lands in Chuet Conholt. Langley Mowse, Upham and Wilton for ever. In default then to my son Edward and for default to my son John. My son William sole executor. To my wife and her maid beds bedding etc. and their diet. To my three daughters £20 yearly, i. e. £6. 13s. 4d. apeece. Witnesses: Wm. Corderoy, Andrew Kingsmill, Jasper Mompesson, Edwd Flower. Memorandum. The legacy of £400 (there is no mention of it in body of Will) given by testator to said Bridget Corderoy was stricken out by testator in presence of witnesses 6th January 1622, Wm. Stanton, Ann Arnold, Kingesmill Long, Constance Browne. *Swann*, 109.

[Chester's *Marriage Licenses* shows that "Richard Bernard, of Petsoe, Bucks, widower, aged 26," was granted a license, Nov. 24, 1634, to marry "Anne Corderoy, aged 26, daughter of ——— Corderoy Esq.," at St. Andrews-in-the Wardrobe, London. They came afterwards to Va., and in a grant of land to Mrs. Anna Bernard July 2, 1652, appear the names of Ellinor, William and Edward Corderoy, headrights. From the names in the will and the headrights it looks very much as if this William Corderoy was the father of Mrs. Bernard. There are other things which seem to prove that this was indeed the fact. Among the other headrights to the Bernard grant, which has been referred to, were William, Francis and Elizabeth Ironmonger (or Iremonger). In the Salisbury marriage licenses, now in course of publication in the (English) *Genealogist*, it appears that on July 23, 1628 a license was issued for the marriage of Samuel Iremonger of Dennington (Donnington?), Berks., gent., aged 21, and Bridget Corderoy of Chute, Wilts., aged 24. We have therefore the three daughters of William Corderoy, the testator, accounted for. Anna, who married Richard Bernard, Elinor, who came with her sister to Virginia, and Bridget, who married Samuel Iremonger. Evidently Mrs. Iremonger's children came with their aunt to Virginia. There were also others not included among these headrights. In this Magazine XI, 75, 76, are the administrations granted 1681 to Elizabeth (Iremonger) wife of Anthony Evenden, on the estates of her sisters Martha (Iremonger) wife of John Jones, and Ann (Iremonger) Rumney, and her brother Corderoy Ironmonger, all of whom had died intestate in Virginia.]

From a pedigree printed in *The Genealogist*, XII, 22, and in the *Visitation of Wiltshire*, 1623, edited by Marshall, the following genealogy of the family of Cordray or Corderoy of Chute, Wiltshire, has been compiled.

"Arms: Sable, a chevron or between two mullets of the second in chief and a lion passant ducally crowned of the second in base within a bordure of the third."

THOMAS CORDRAY of Chute, Co. Wilts., gent., married Jane, daughter of ——— Gray in Co. Somerset, and by her had issue: 1. Thomas[2], son and heir; 2. Richard; 3. Maude, married Lucas Linton, of Alsford, Co. Hants.

THOMAS[2] CORDRAY of Chute, marr. Jane, daughter and heiress of Roger Sennore of Andover, Co. Southampton (Seamor, according to the *Visitation* of 1623) and had issue: 1. Thomas[3], son and heir; 2. Alys, married first Thomas Bartholomew, of Salisbury, second Robert Elliott, of the same place; 3. Katherin, married William Poton of Colbarwick.

THOMAS[3] CORDRAY of Chute, gent., married Jane, daughter of Thomas Coxwell, of ———, Co. Berks (Thomas Morris, of Coxwell, in the Visitation) and had issue: 1. Edward[4], son and heir married a sister of James Merum, and d. s. p.; 2. William[4]; 3. John; 4. Thomas; 5. Robert; 6. Richard; 7. James; 8. Jeromy; 9. Elizabeth; 10. Jane; 11. Alys; 12. Mary; 13. Jane.

WILLIAM[4] CORDRAY, Esq., of Chute, brother and heir of Edward[4], married Bridget, daughter of Edward Goddard, of Woodhay, in Co. Southampton. Issue: 1. William, Esq., son and heir, aged 22, in 1623; 2. Edward aged 20; 3. John aged 16; 4. Bridget, aged 21; 5. Anna, aged 15; 6. Ellinor, aged 11.]

JOHN CULPEPER of Greenway Courte, county Kent, Esquire. Will 14 December 1635; proved 3 January 1635-6. To be buried in chancel of Hollingbourne Church where Sir Thomas Culpeper shall think fit or most convenient and in such manner as my son Thomas Culpeper shall think fit. To Anne Culpeper my wife all debts owing to her as administratrix to her late husband, except debt owing by the Lord and Lady Lambert which I give to my son Thomas Culpeper. To son John annuity for life of £30 payable by Sir John Culpeper. To daughter Sicely Culpeper £300. To James Medlicott my son in law and Frances Medlicote my daughter 20s. each. Residuary Legatee and Executor: son Thomas. Witnesses: Tho. Culpeper, Alexander Culpeper, John Culpeper, Willm Cragge. *Pile*, 4.

[The testator was evidently nearly related to the Lord Culpeper. A Francis Culpeper of Greenway Court, uncle to the first Lord, died in 1591, leaving a son Sir Thomas Culpeper of Hollingbourne. Lord Fairfax must have had some special cause for attachment to the place for he named his home in Frederick Co., Va. after it.]

ROGER FOWKE of Little Wisley, county Stafford Esq. Will last June 1627; proved 6 May 1630. To be buried in Norton church or if possible in Chancel. To poor of Norton 40s. To eldest son Thomas all evidences and charters and court rolls belonging unto him that concerns the lands in Brewood Norton little Wirley or Pelsall. To my 3 younger sons James, Roger, and Walter Fowke, all my goods and household stuff and make them my executors. *Scroope*, 45.

[Roger Fowke, of Little Wisley, was a kinsman of the Fowkes, of Gunston, and married, in 1570, Joan, daughter of Roger Fowke of Gunston. Her brother Francis was the great grandfather of Gerrard Fowke of Va. and Md.]

GEORGE HOPE of Dodleston, Chester, esquire. Will 4 January 1653-4; proved 15 March 1653-4. I give my body to be buried in the parish church of Hope. I bequeath to my grandchild Mary Hope, towards her preferment and maintenance, £400 within 3 years of my decease. To my grandchild Magdalen, now wife to Sqmuell Cawley Gwersvilt, gent., £200 within 2 years. To my daughter Magdalen, now wife to John Baskervile of Blagdin, £100. To my great grandchild Hugh Roberts

the younger £20. To my grandchild Roger Hope an annuity of £20, and a like annuity to my grandchild John Hope, to commence immediately after the decease of their mother Anne Hope. All the rest of my estate, real and personal, I bequeath to my grandchild George Hope, whom I make my executor. (Signed) George Hope. Witnesses: Hugh Roberts, Thomas Rolland, Roger Decke. Proved by the executor. *Brent*, 395.

[Magdalen, daughter of George Hope, of Queens Hope, County Flint, and Dodlester, Co. Chester, Eng., married John Baskerville, of Old Withington, Cheshire, Eng. (1599-1661) and was the mother of John Baskerville, born 1635, who emigrated to York Co., Va., and was ancestor of the family here.]

(To be continued)

EXTRACTS FROM KING WILLIAM COUNTY RECORDS.

(Contributed by W. B. Cridlin, Richmond, Va.)

BOOK XI.

1800. Thomas Pollard, John Sweet and Mary his wife, Susanna Pollard and Frances Pollard, of King William, to Yancey Lipscomb, Deed. Witnesses: Wm. Croxton, B. Timberlake and Wm. Wingo. (P. 51, 52.)

1703. Richard Littlepage, and Frances his wife, of New Kent, gent., to John Ostin (Austin), Deed, conveying land adjoining Henry Fox and Harry Madison, being part of a greater dividend received by will from Samuel Osteen. Witnesses: Elias Pea, John Williams (P. 61, 62.)

1702. Maurice Roberts to Henry Slaughter, Deed. Also deed to Henry Madison, Witnesses: Francis Goodrich, John Scarbrick (P. 77, 78.)

1702. Francis Nicholson (Governor) to Thomas Nicholls. Patent for land in Pamunkey Neck.

1702. Thomas Nichols and Isabella his wife, to John Cawthorn. Deed for above land. Witnesses: Thos. Carr, Robert Napier, John Carr (P. 77.)

1703. Thomas Beckley [Joseph?] of King and Queen, to John Waller of King William, gent., for whole and sole use of Ralph Shelton, son of Mrs. Sarah Gissedge, relict of Mr. Richard Gissedge, lately deceased. Mentions marriage, by Gods grace, speedily to be performed between Joseph Bickley and Sarah Gissedge (P. 81).

1702. Hugh Owen, gent., attorney for Edward Bell and Mary his wife, to John Whitworth, Sr., patented land. Witnesses: Stephen Geodie, William Fite (P. 82-86).

1704. Mathew Towler (Toler) to Vincent Inge. Land patented in 1702, for transportation of 3 persons. E. Jenings, Secty. (P. 87-89).

1704. John Claiborne to John Graves. Bond and deed. Witnesses: Edward Guthrie, Henry Collison, Francis Griggs, John West, Thos. West. (P. 90, 95-97, 138.)

1702. John Mann and Mary his wife to Robert Bulress. Deed. Witnesses: Edward Burgess, William Noyes, Thomas Geers. (P. 93, 94.)

1705. Thomas Wood of King William to Richard Elliott of King William. Deed for land purchased of Edward Huckstep. (P. 93, 94).

1704. Thomas Clayborne and Anne his wife to Samuel Cradock. Deed (P. 97-101).

1703. John Waller and Thomas Torry to Richard Littlepage. Deed for land escheated from Joseph Thomas, deceased (P. 101).

1703. John Higgason, John Quarles, and Wm. Neale. Commission to appraise the estate of David Thomas, deceased, attached by John James (P. 102, 103).

1704. Edward Bell (son of Thomas Bell) and Mary his wife to Griffin Pond, son of Griffin Pond late of New Kent. Deed (P. 103-107).

1704. John Waller to Richard Marr, Deed. Witnesses: Ephriam Burrell, Henry Webber. Conveying land lately bought of Elias Downes (P. 106-108).

1704. James Honey (Honney) and Margaret his wife to Isaac Hill, Deed (P. 109, 110).

1704. Richard Yarbrough and Sarah his wife to Robert Abbott, Deed. Witnesses: Joseph Cooperham et als (P. 111, 112, 117).

1703. Thomas Burrus to Jacob Burrus, Deed (P. 112).

1705. John Hill and Jane his wife to Robert Garrett, Deed (P. 113, 114).

1703 or 1704. Samuel Boys to John James. Sale of a servant. Witnesses: Thomas Boys, Thomas Burke (p. 115).

1704. Thomas Arnold and Frances his wife to Michael Waldroop (P. 116).

1705. John Mask to John Monroe, Deed (P. 121).

1706. Henry Nelson of King and Queen to Thomas Baker, Deed (P. 122).

1704. John Madison of King and Queen to George Purchase, Deed (P. 123, 124).

1706. John Higgason to Eliz. Brightwell, relict of Randall Brightwell (P. 125, 126).

1706. Nathaniel West, and ———, to Orlando Jones and Martha his wife, formerly Martha West. Deed of gift (P. 125).

1706. Mary Barker, John Oakes, John Yarbrough, admis.; in behalf of Thomas Smith and Flower Smith, orphans of John Smith (P. 127).

1705. John Olliver, Sr. to John Olliver, Jr., Deed of gift (P. 129).

1705. William Burus to Thomas and Charles Burus, Deed for land adjoining Edward and Edmond Burrus (P. 130-134).

1704. Edward Nott, Governor, to Orlando Jones, land formerly granted Mathew Towler in 1702 and by him deserted. Patent (P. 131, 132).

1705. Charles Burrus to John Burrus. Deed (P. 134).

1707. John Waller and Thomas Carr, gentlemen, to Philip Whitehead, ½ acre in Delaware Town, Deed. Witnesses: George Braxton, Martin Palmer, Mathew Creed (P. 135, 136).

1707. Col. John West, of King William, to John Waller, Philip Whitehead, and Thomas Carr, 2½ acres in Delaware Town, laid out by Harry Beverley (P. 137).

1707. John Waller of King and Queen to John Walker of King William, Deed (P. 139-141).

1707. Same to William Anderson (P. 140-144).

1707. Same to Major Nicholas Meriwether, Deed. Land in Delaware Town (P. 145).

1707. Same to Daniel Miles, James Terry and Thomas Terry (P. 146).

1707. Same to John Monroe, clerk (P. 147).

1707. Same to William Meriwether of New Kent (P. 148).

1707. Same to Mrs. Unity West (P. 149).

1707. Same to Henry Fox (P. 150).

1707. Same to Stephen Willis of New Kent (P. 151).

1707. Same to George Clough of New Kent (P. 152).

1707. Same to Hon. Wm. Bassett of New Kent (P. 153).

1707. Same to Richard Roy of King and Queen (P. 154).

1707. Same to George Priddy of New Kent (P. 155).

1707. Same to George Dabney, Gt., of King William (P. 156).

1707. Same to Richard Wyatt of King and Queen (P. 157).

1707. Same to Larkin Chew of Essex (P. 158).

1707. Same to John Higgason of King William (P. 159).

1704, Nov. 19. Will of Thomas Swan of King William. Legatees: William Lipscomb, Jr., son of Wm. Lipscomb and his wife Mary Lipscomb; Mrs. Mary Carr, wife of Thos. Carr, gent., John Terry, as soon as of age; well beloved friend Thomas Carr, gent. Witnesses: Wm. Portens, Gilbert Ellett (P. 165).

1704. Jno. Hail report on inventory of estate of Robt. Gleave, deed. (P. 166).

1702. John Davis son of Wm. Davis to sister Sarah Davis, about to marry William Holladay (P. 171).

1703-4. Major Joseph Bickley to John Waller, gent. Bond for two years schooling for Ralph Shelton, son of Mrs. Sarah Gissedge, widow (Book I, 177).

1706. Capt. John West to John Waller, Philip Whitehead, and Thomas Carr, in trust for town of Delaware in King William County. Mentions his brother Thomas West (P. 357).

1707. John Waller, Philip Whitehead and Thomas Carr, gents., to Mrs. Unity West, ½ acre lot in Delaware Town (P. 379).

1793. Roger Gregory, Jr., of Henrico County and Sarah his wife to Nathaniel Gregory, their entire interest in a tract of land known as King William Court House, which was purchased by said Roger Gregory and William Gregory at public sale (P. 2, 3).

1796. Wm. Gregory of King William and Anne his wife to Nathaniel Gregory, conveying his interest in the above tract. (P. 184, 185).

1800. Nathaniel Gregory to Falvey Frazer. Deed, land at King William Court House (293, 294).

1793. Nathaniel Gregory from Thos. Frazer. Bill of sale (P. 4).

1797. John Beckley of the City of Philadelphia, and Roger Gregory, Jr., of the county of Henrico, State of Virginia, conveying to Nathaniel Gregory land in King William Co., in trust towards the support of Mary Ann Gregory, wife of said Nathaniel Gregory, and towards the maintenance, education and support of Nathaniel Beckley Gregory, Thomas West Gregory, and Richard Claiborne Gregory. Mention of William Gregory as party to the deed, and that said deed also conveyed a mortgage from Falvey Frazer (P. 296, 297).

1795. William West and Sally his wife to Thomas Taylor, land adjoining Richard Squire Taylor. Witnesses: George West, Dabney Turner, William Penn et als. (P. 152, 153).

1800. Major Atkinson of King William to William West, conveying land formerly the property of William Hill, Deed (P. 223).

1804. Richard Frazer and Ann Catherine his wife to Lucy Skyrin, Deed. Witnesses: James Gwathmey, John Skyring, John Roane, John Roane, Jr.

1803. John Roberts and Ann his wife of King William, to Richard Eubank, Deed (P. 101).

1704. John Yarbrough planter, to William Aylett. Deed. Land sold and exchanged by the Chickahominy Indians with Arnold for other lands, and by said Arnold, of King and Queen, sold to John Hurt of King and Queen (St. Stephens Parish). Deed acknowledged in King and Queen Nov. 12, 1691, and by said Hurt sold to Richard Yarbrough, father of said John, as by deed acknowledged in King and Queen Feb. 12, 1695-6, and by virtue of deed for half interest conveyed from said John's brother Richard Yarbrough (P. 104-133-modern).

1820. Bernard Houchings and Elizabeth his wife to the legal representatives of George Turner, deceased. Deed (P. 137-138).

1819. George B. Fleet, and Catherine his wife, who was Catherine Lipscomb, and Thos. W. L. Gregory, of the second part, and Christopher Johnson, of the third part, all of King William. Security on bond. Mentions Abner Allen and Agnes his wife. (Note by John Willeroy, Capt. Morrison Lipscomb, deceased, father of Catherine Lipscomb) (P. 134).

1820. Bernard L. Powers, Coleman Williams and Waller Burke, deed of trust. (P. 135).

1810. Thomas R. Evans and Mary his wife. Deed of gift of negroes to Thos. E. Row, son of Francis Row and grandson of said Mary Evans. Also to Agnes Frazer, infant daughter of Alexander Frazer (P. 139).

1816. Sarah Terry, Dicey Terry and Patty Terry, their mother, to Robert Hill. Deed. Witnesses: Robert W. King, John Houchings, William Waller (P. 140).

1817. William Brownley to Hardin Littlepage. Deed. Witnesses: Philip Aylett, Jr., Isaac Quarles, Jr., John Hageman, George W. Quarles (P. 140, 141).

1817. Thomas H. Fox, and James Fox, admis. of John Fox, decd., to Ambrose Edwards. Deed (P. 142).

1817. Daniel Powers, Robert Hill, William Hill, and Walter Burke, Commissioners, to Henry Brenan. Mentions John White and wife Eliza, who was Eliza Watkins, Edwin Lipscomb, infant child of Beverley B. Lipscomb and Mary his wife, who was Mary Watkins, Sally Watkins, Richard Watkins, and William Watkins, the last infants under 21 years of age, and Ambrose Lipscomb, deceased (Robert Pollard, Jr., trustee). This land having been conveyed for use of Susanna Watkins, now deceased, and equally divided among her lawful heirs. Witnesses: Thomas N. Grymes, Thomas W. New and Richard Willeroy. (P. 142, 143).

1817. William Presley Claiborne to John A. Lipscomb, Deed. Land purchased of Daniel Lipscomb. Witnesses: Carter Braxton, Reuben Dugar, Wm. A. Browne (P. 145).

1817. John S. Quarles of Amelia County to Isaac Quarles of King William Co. Deed for land inherited from Isaac Quarles, Sr. Witnesses: G. W. Quarles, Daniel Powers, Bernard L. Powers.

1818. Edward Hill, administrator of Philip Pendleton, deceased, of King and Queen Co. to Hardin Littlepage, for land purchased in 1803. Also mentions land devised to Wm. Henry Quarles by his father Major James Quarles, deceased, on which Col. Quarles lived in the latter part of his life. Also land purchased by W. H. Quarles of Henry Graves and Mary his wife,

which is subject to the dower of the widow of Col. James Quarles (P. 147, 148).

1817. William Elliott and Temple Elliott of King William Co. to Wm. Campbell of King William (P. 147).

1822. John Terry to John Houchings. Deed for land purchased of Elisha Terry (P. 149).

1821. William Trimmer and Mary his wife and Obediah Trimmer, conveying land inherited from their father William Trimmer, deceased, to Carter Braxton, Charles H. Braxton and Corbin Braxton. Deed (P. 150).

1817. Brooke Hill of the town of Louisville, County of Jefferson, State of Kentucky, guardian of Edwin B. Hill, appoints Richard Hill of King William Co., Va., as attorney to collect lying left by the grandfather of the said E. B. Hill, viz.: William Fleming Gaines, late of King William Co. Certificate signed by Andrew Steele, Presiding Justice of the County Court of Jefferson, Worden Pope, County Clerk (P. 151, 152).

(To Be Continued)

COUNCIL PAPERS 1698-1702.

(From the Originals in the Virginia State Library)

ACCOUNT OF WILLIAM BYRD, AUDITOR, 1702.
(Continued)

Contra Cred^{r}	
By Ball'a last yeare due to the Audito^{r}	2955. 09.08½
By paid Capt Joshua Broadbent, for Eight months Sloop hire, Victualling and Men's Wages of the Sloope Spywell in His Maj^{tys} Service by Order of His Excellency	144. 00. 00
By p^{d} his Excell'cy one Yeares Sallary Ending the 25th of March last by Order as before	000. 00. 00
By p^{d} his Excell'cy one yeares house Rent Ending ye Same time by Order as before	150. 00. 00
By p^{d} the Gent. of the Councill one yeares Sallary Ending ye 27th Aprill last by Order as before	350. 00. 00
By Wm Blathwayt Esqr his Maj^{ty} Audit^{r} One Yeares Salary Ending Lady Day last, by Order as before	100. 00. 00
By p^{d} James Sherlock Clk of ye Councill one Yeares Salary Ending ye 26th of ffebr^{y} last by Order as before	50. 00.00
By p^{d} Wm Randolph Esqr his Maj^{y} Attorney Gen'll one yeares Sallary Ending ye 20th Aprill last by Order as before	40. 00. 00
By Barth ffowler for so much paid Severall Ministers for their Attendance two Gen'll Co^{rts} & Assembly by Order as before	15. 00. 00
By p^{d} the Sollicto^{r} of the Virg'a Affaires One yeare Sallary, Ending on Lady day last by Ord^{r} as before	100. 00. 00
	5904. 09.08½

The Auditor is Continued D^{r}

To Severall Articles brought over amounting to	3712. 08.09½
To his Majestys one third part of the Ship William (charges deducted)	79. 10. 00
To the Estate of Thomas Wilkinson, debts and Charges deducted	17. 11. 01
To Severall fines Received	7. 06. 09
Soe that there remaines due to the Audit^{r} on Ballance of this Acco^{t} the sume of Two Thousand Seven hundred, Seaventy four pounds Nine shillings and Eight pence half penny ster'g	2774. 09.08½
	6591. 6. 4½

William Byrd Aud^{r}

Contra Cred^{r}	
By Severall Articles brought over amounting to	5904. 09.08½
By p^{d} Edward Ross, Gunn^{r} of the ffort at James Citty, one yeares Salary Ending on Lady day Last by Order of his Excellency	15. 00. 00
By p^{d} Richd Dunbarr Gunn^{r} of York ffort one Yeares Sallary Ending on lady day last by Order as before	10. 00. 00
By p^{d} John Chiles for Carrying his Majesty's Packetts to Maryland and New Yorke by Order as before	15. 00. 00
By p^{d} John Chiles his Maj'tys Messenger to Attend His Excell^{cy} and Councill One Yeares Sallary Ending on Lady day last by Order as before	25. 00. 00
By Collectors' Sallary at 10 p C^{t} of £3712.08.09½ is	371. 04.10½
By the Audit^{r} Sallary at 7½ p C^{t} of £3341. 03. 11. is	250. 11. 09
	6591. 6. 04

Virginia ss.

William Byrd Audit^{r} to his Maj^{tys} Revenue of 2^{s} reserved for every hundred acres of Land held of His Maj^{ty} in this Colony also Composition for the yeare 1697 ..... D^{r}

To the Ball'a of Last yeares Acco^{t}	3333.	9.	6½
To the Q^{t} Rents of Gloucester County Cask and Sallary deducted 28428^{h} Tobo. at 7^{s} 6^{d} p C^{ts}	106.	12.	2
To Ditto in King & Queen 35004—at 7. 6	131.	5.	3
To Ditto in New Kent 29212—at 7. 6	109.	10.	10
To Ditto in Yorke County—12520—at 7. 6	46.	19.	00
To Ditto in James Citty 18745^{h} Tobo. at 6^{s} p C^{t}	56.	4.	9
To Ditto in Warwick County 7604—at 6^{s} p C^{t}	22.	16.	3
To Ditto in Eliza. City 5812—at 6 p C^{t}	17.	8.	8
To Ditto in Middlesex County 9842—at 6 p C^{t}	29.	10.	6
To Ditto in Essex 10318—at 6 p C^{t}	30.	19.	2
To Ditto in Charles Citty 25533—at 6 p C^{t}	76.	12.	3
To Ditto in Henrico 26241—at 6 p C^{t}	78.	14.	4
To Ditto in Surrey 21500—at 6 p C^{t}	64.	10.	00
To Ditto in Isle of Wight 24036—at 5^{s} 6^{d} p C^{t}	66.	2.	00
To Ditto in Nanzamond 22337—at 5^{s} p C^{t}	55.	17.	00
To Ditto in Norfolke 20088—at 5^{s} p C^{t}	50.	4.	5
To Ditto in Princess Ann 17931—at 4: p C^{t}	35.	17.	3
To Ditto Northampton 20482—at 5: p C^{t}	51.	4.	1
To Ditto Accomack 40767—at 5: p C^{t}	101.	18.	4
To Severall Compositions for Escheats amounting to	27.	2.	4
	4492.	18.	1½

Pr Contra Cred^r

By Salary of £1159. 8^s 7^d at 7½ p C^t	86. 19. 1½
So that there remaines due to his Majesty from this Accomptant the Sume of ffour Thousand four hundred and five pounds Nineteen Shillings	4405. 19. 0
	4492. 18. 1½

William Byrd Aud^r

Jan'y 1698

Memor. Warrants part not yet paid nor brought to Acco^t

Octob^r ye 7th One payable to Sr Edm^d Andros Kn^t for half a year's Salary due to him on Michaelmasse day last for	1000. 00. 00
One Ditto for 6 months House Rent	75. 00. 00
Novr ye 5th One ditto payable to Mr Chicheley Corbin Thacker for Severall Messages to Kiccongton one ye Ac of Adm'll Nevel with his Squadron as also for extraordinary expresses to Maryland, Potomack & other remote parts of the Governm^t	79. 00. 06
One Ditto payable to Mr Thacker for soe much paid by him to severall persons for extraordinary Services about the fort at Tindalls point Tarr &c	11. 08. 06
Decem^r ye 8th One Ditto to Sr Edm^d Andros Kn^t for Salary from Michaelmas to ye 8th &c	383. 10. 11
One ditto for house Rent to the Same time	28. 15. 04
	1577. 15. 03

William Byrd Aud^r

Since the makeing up of my last Acco^t I have rec^d about one Hundred and Sixty pounds which is all till this time come to my hands.

William Byrd, Aud^r.

Jan'y ye 19th 1698.

Jan'ry 1698.

An Acco^{t} of what Salary's are due out of His Maj^{ts} Revenue of 2^{s} p hh^{d} and port Duties Since the last Acco^{t} Sent for England, (for which noe Warrants yet issued) to the 9th of December 1698 inclusive.

Viz^{t}

To the Gent of his Maj^{ts} Hon'ble Councill from the 27th of Aprill to the said time after the rate of £350 p ann	216. 14. 05
To William Blathwayt Esqr His Maj^{ts} Aud^{r} &c from Lady day to the said time after the rate of £100 p ann	59. 07. 06
To the Clke of His Maj^{ts} Councill from the 26th of ffeb^{r} to ye said time after the Rate of £50 p an	38. 10. 10
To His Maj^{ts} Attorney Gen'll from ye 20th of Aprill to the said time after the rate of £40 p an	23. 01. 01
To severall Ministers for their Attendance one Gen'll Court and one Assembly	10. 00. 00
To the Sollicit^{r} of Virg'a Affaires from Lady day to the abovesaid time after the Rate of £100. p an	59. 07. 06
To the Gunner of James Citty ffort from Lady day to the said time, after the rate of £15 p ann	10. 06. 08
To the Gunner of Yorke ffort from Lady day to the Same time, after the rate of £10 p an	6. 17. 06
To His Maj^{ts} Messenger from Lady day to the Same time after the Rate of £25 p an	17. 03. 09
	441. 09. 03

Errors Excepted

p William Byrd Aud^{r}

Mem^{d} Extraordinary Charges paid out of ye 2^{s} p hh^{d} and port Duties, since the 20th of July Anno Dm. 1693—

19th July 1694 P^{d} Mr Bateman for fees &c about the Northern Neck	28. 14. 08
19th July 1694	

Pd Messrs Perry &c for soe much paid ye Stationer for Law Bookes, paper &c for the use of the Councill Chamber	16. 09. 00
Pd Ralph Wormeley Esqr for soe much paid John Perry Express wth his Majts Pacquets to Maryland, N. Yorke: and Boston	13. 00. 00
Pd Mr Sherlock for makeing ye Armory, Cleaning removeing and putting up the Armor	12. 01. 00
Pd ye Same for Expences in his Journey to & from Maryland	8. 00. 00
Pd Trebitt for freight of Granadoes & other Stores from N. Yorke	20. 00. 00
Pd ye Goverr of N. Yorke pursuant to an Ordr of His Exc'y and Councill	500. 00. 00
Pd Thomas Palmer for 16 Carriages and wheels for Yorke fort	60. 00. 00
Pd the Widdow Goodrick for plank an a partition in the Secretaries Office	3. 10. 00
Pd Ralph Wormely Esqr for removeing stores from Yorke to James Citty	40. 04. 03
Pd Captt Cary for trouble and expence in His Journey to New Yorke	90. 00. 00
Pd Captt Ballard for Carrying Captt Cary to the Eastern Shore the said Journey	8. 00. 00
Pd Mr Wellbourne for bringeing Edward Randolph Esqr from the Eastern Shore	5. 00. 00
Pd Mr Sherlock for Severall Messengers to N. Yorke &c	£ 37. 12. 06
	£ 852. 11. 05

31st May 1695

Pd Mr Sherlocke for bookes and paper for the use of ye Councill	5. 07. 00
Pd ye Widdow Dunbarr ye Ballce of £35 for a house built at Tindalls point	15. 00. 00
Pd John Tillett for mending Carriages &c. at Ja. Town	50. 00. 00
Pd James Peters &c for Carriages at Nanzimond	47. 14. 00

P^d Mr Peter Beverley for mounting 8 Guns at Tindals point	5. 01. 00
P^d for a Halser for the use of ye fort at James Citty	8. 00. 00
P^d Mr Sherlock for Messengers	10. 17. 00
	£149. 19. 00

16th June 1696

P^d Capt Henry Beverly for Sloops hire, Victualling and men's Wages for ye Garvin & Katherine in His Maj^ts Service	569. 13. 04
P^d the Gover^r of N. Yorke over and above £500 allowed out of the 4^d p Gallon	269. 04. 07
P^d Mr Sherlocke for 14 Barrells of Tarr for the platformes, an Express to Carolina	25. 15. 00
P^d Mr Sherlock for 6 Iron Gunns for use of Ja: City ffort	28. 00. 00
P^d Capt Ballard for transport of 8 Carriages over Yorke River for the use of Yorke ffort	10. 00. 00
P^d Mr Secretary for Soe much p^d Severall Messeng^rs	29. 12. 00
P^d James Bringley express to N. Yorke ab^t ye Quota	12. 00. 00
P^d Edwd Ross for Carrying his Maj^ts Packetts to Maryland, Pensilvania, ye Jerseys & New Yorke	20. 00. 00
	£964. 04. 11

29th Aprill 1697

P^d Joshua Broadbent for Six months Sloope hire, Victualling & Wages of ye Sloope Spywell	108. 00. 00
P^d Henry Cary for makeing a plattforme at Yorke ffort	35. 00. 00
P^d Edwd Ross for removeing Great Gunns, hooping 63 barrells, of Powder & 170 foot plank for J. C. fort	11. 07. 06
P^d for Messengers this Yeare	31. 00. 00
	£185. 07. 06

Augt 1698

P^{d} Joshua Broadbent 8 Months Sloope hire, Victualls and Wages	144. 00. 00
Anno: 1694	£852. 11. 05
Anno: 1695	£149. 19. 00
Anno: 1696	£964. 04. 11
Anno: 1697	£185. 07. 06
Anno: 1698	£144. 00. 00
	£2296. 02. 10

p William Byrd Aud^{r}

Memor. paid out of His Maj^{tys} Quitt Rents for Anno Dom. 1693 and since Viz^{t}

To the Goveno^{r} of the Royall Colledge of William and Mary	£1135. 14. 00
To His Excellency Coll'o Nicholson one Yeare's Salary as Leiu^{t} Goveno^{r}	300. 00. 00
Transferred to the Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d} soe much as p^{d} ye Goveno^{r} of New Yorke in the Yeares 1691 & 1692	202. 00. 00
Transferred as above soe much p^{d} ye Goven^{r} N. York 1693	500. 00 .00
P^{d} Mr Comissary by Order of 11th July 1693	100. 00. 00
	£2237. 14. 00

1694

P^{d} Capt Gardiner pursuant to her Maj^{ts} Direcions being dated at Whitehall Octob^{r} ye 5th 1694	175. 00. 00

1695

P^{d} His Excellency Goveno^{r} Nicholson	125. 00. 00
P^{d} Mr Commissary Blair by Order ye 18th Dem^{r} 1695	100. 00. 00
Transferred to ye 2^{s} p hh^{d} by Order ye 1st May 1695	765. 03. 03
P^{d} ye Treasurer and paymasters of his Maj^{ts} Ordnance	665. 12. 01
	£1530. 15. 04

Anno: 1693	2237. 14. 00
Anno: 1694	175. 00. 00
Anno: 1695	125. 00. 00
Anno: 1696	1530.15.04½
	£4068. 09.04

p William Byrd

Virg'a ss.

William Byrd Audit^{r} to His Maj^{ts} Revenues of 2^{s} for every H^{dd} Tobacco Exported out of this Colony of Virginia & 15^{d} p Tunn for every Shipp Tradeing here and 6^{d} p pole for ever pson imported into this Colony and the forfeiture here due to His Maj'ty for One Yeare Ending the 24th June 1699 ..... D^{r}

To Transferred from Acco^{t} of Quitt Rents	£2955. 09.08
To Ralph Wormeley Esqr Collector of Rappa. District his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d} to this day	645. 16. 00
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	174. 06. 00
To Collo. Edmund Jenings Collect^{r} of York District his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	912. 03. 00
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	230. 07. 00
To Collo. Edward Hill Collect^{r} of the Upper District of James River his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	581. 08. 00
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duty^{s} and head money	165. 01. 03
To Mr Peter Heyman Collector of ye Lower District of James River his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	470. 01. 05
To his Acco^{t} of Port Duties and head money	138. 14. 00
To Collo. Charles Scarbourgh Collect^{r} of the Eastern Shore District his Acco^{t} of 2^{s} p hh^{d}	59. 00. 00
To his Acc^{t} of Port duties and head money	18. 00. 00
To His Maj^{ts} third part of the Ships Integrity Charges deducted	43.07.06¾
	£6393. 19.11

No Acco^{t} returned for Potomack District.

(To be continued)

EXTRACT FROM VIRGINIA GAZETTE 1752 AND 1755*.

(Volumes in the New York Public Library. Transcripts made 1913 for Arthur P. Scott.)

Feb. 28, 1750-51, No. 9.

"*Virginia*, ss.

The Hon. Lewis Burwell, Esq., President of His Majesty's Council, and Commander in Chief of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia,

To all Sheriffs, Constables, and other His Majesty's Liege People, to whom these Presents shall come, Greeting.

Whereas Complaint is this Day made to me, by Thomas Wilson, of the Borough of Norfolk, That an Apprentice, named Samuel ———— has absented himself from his Service, and it is supposed is gone towards Hanover or Fredericksburg, on a mare which he stole from Warwick County. He is about 5 Feet 6 Inches high, of a ruddy Complection, his Eyes somewhat red, and has a sore Leg; he is freckled in the Face, and when accused of any Thing, has a down Look. He had on a good large Hat, a brown cut Wig, a blue Cloth Coat, lin'd with Scarlet, and had yellow Metal Buttons. He is a Taylor by Trade.

These are therefore, in His Majesty's Name, to require you, and every of you, to make diligent Search and Pursuit, by Way of Hue and Cry, within your several Bailiwicks and Precincts, after the said Run-away; and him having found, to convey from Constable to Constable, until he shall be deliv(er)ed unto his said Master. Herein you are not to fail, as you will answer the Contempt at your Peril.

*The Virginia Gazettes for 1752 and 1756 exist only in one file each and in some scattered numbers. The gentleman who contributed these extracts was studying the subject of crime in the Colonies. Hence the amount of such matter in the extracts.

GIVEN under my Hand, the 25th Day of February, 1750-1.

LEWIS BURWELL.

Whoever takes up the said Run-away, and conveys him to me, shall have a Pistole and a Half Reward, besides what the Law allows.

Thomas Wilson."

A brick Prison is to be built for Essex County, which will be let to an Undertaker, at the Court-House, on the 19th of March, by

William Roane
James Jones

FIFTY PISTOLES REWARD.

On the 13th of February Inst. the Store-house belonging to the Subscriber, in Smithfield Town, Isle of Wight County, was broke open, and sundry Merchandize stolen from thence; also a considerable Sum of Money, contained in Two gilt Trunks. Whoever will give Information of the Thieves, so that they, or any of them, be apprehended and convicted of the Robbery, shall receive Fifty Pistoles Reward of

James Dunlop.

March 7th, 1750-1.

By the True Patriot, Capt. Trenchard, from Bristol, we hear, that the Spaniards who were Passengers from Virginia, in the Jubilee, belonging to Mr. Hanbury, had form'd a Scheme to murder the Crew, and run away with the Ship, which they endeavoured to carry into Execution; but by the Activity of the Englishmen were happily prevented in their Design.—Several of them were kill'd, and the others confin'd.

We have Advice, that the Crew of a Ship bound from Liverpool, to North Carolina, joined by some Convicts on Board, rose on the Captain and Mate, and having confined them, cut the Sails and Rigging to Pieces, and afterwards leaving the

Ship in that Condition, got ashore in North Carolina. Three of them travel'd from thence to Norfolk, and pass'd for Captain, Mate, and Boatswain of a Ship cast away on Cape Hatteras. A Vessel from Boston, came up with the Ship soon after they left her, releas'd the Captain and Mate, and brought her into North Carolina. A Hue and Cry being issued by Governor Johnston for apprehending the Villains, four of them were taken in that Province, and two of them at Norfolk; and as there is strict Search making after the rest, we have good Reason to believe they will be all soon apprehended and brought to Justice.

This Day a Court of Oyer and Terminer was held for York County, for Tryal of three Negroe Fellows, concerned in several Robberies committed in this City. Two of them were found Guilty of Burglary, and sentenced.

April 4, 1751.

Philadelphia, January 29.

A Person that goes by the name of John Jones, supposed to be a Coiner, and an Out-law of Virginia, for whom, 'tis thought, a considerable Reward was offer'd by the Government some Time ago, being apprehended in a Hay Stack, and a Kind of Augre for making Holes about him, is committed to Prison. (This we have Reason to believe is one of the Jackson's.)

April 18, 1751.

Low Jackson, from Nansemond County, (whose Ingenuity has occasion'd so great a Disturbance in this Colony) was brought before the General Court on Tuesday last, and indicted for forging and counterfeiting Spanish Double-Doubloons; and after a long Trial, his Jury brought him in Guilty.

John Hill, alias Seale, from Southampton County, for Horse-stealing, was found Guilty. This is the fourth Time he has appear'd before the General Court, and was once condemn'd, but afterwards receiv'd a Pardon; and is the same Fellow who got out of Norfolk Prison some Time ago, robb'd a Store, and return'd into Prison again to prevent Suspicion.

Joseph Markham, from Northumberland, for stealing Tobacco, found Guilty; and John Boah, for a Misdemeanour in receiving said Tobacco, was fin'd Forty Shillings, and ordered to be imprisoned Six Months.

John Birk, from King George, for stealing 300 weight of Tobacco, found Guilty.

John Ashwell, from Essex, for stealing Wigs, &c., Guilty.

Thomas Smith, from Northumberland, was convicted of the Manslaughter of Robert Knowles.

William Maniffee, from Spotsylvania was indicted for Manslaughter, but acquitted.

Thomas Alley, from York, for Felony, acquitted.

The Trial of George Catr, from Nansemond, for the Murder of Samuel Milner, is continued to October.

May 9, 1751.

The Prisoners who were convicted at the Beginning of the General Court, were brought to the Bar, on Tuesday last, when,

Low Jackson, for coining and counterfeiting Double Doubleloons, and John Hill, alias Seale, for Horse-stealing, were sentenced to die.

Seale, who is an old Offender, made a Petition to the Court, before Sentence was pass'd, desiring their Honours Clemency; alledging, That tho' a Brother should sin Seventy Times Seven, yet, on his Repentance, Christianity obliged us to forgive him.

Thomas Smith, for Manslaughter, John Ashewell, John Birk, and Joseph Markham, for Felony, were burnt in the Hand.

June 13, 1751.

At the Court of Oyer and Terminer, held here this Week, Edward Young, convicted of Felony, in stealing a Slave, was sentenced to die. Anthony Weathered convicted of Felony, and having had the Benefit of Clergy, in December, by the Name of James M'Donald, alias John Dolphin, was sentenced to die. Thomas Ellison, convicted of Felony, burnt in the Hand. Diana Ellison, for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury. Martha Little, for the Murder of her Bastard Child, acquitted by the Petit Jury.

August 8.

Lowe Jackson, who was condemned last General Court, for Coining double Doubleloons, is repriev'd 'til His Majesty's Pleasure be known.

October 11.

The following Prisoners are now in the Public Goal here; their Trials will come on before the General Court on Wednesday next.

John Holt, from Stafford, committed for a Felony. Anne Gray, from Stafford, for a Felony. Edward Stokes, from Frederick, for Horse-stealing. Peter Batesman, from Northumberland, for House-breaking; Henry Stanworth, from York, for Murder; John Brown, from King William, for stealing a Watch; Robert Howles, from Hanover, for breaking Goal; Nicholas Dernin, from Amelia, for burning the Prison; Richard Burk, from Norfolk, for Murder; Day Thoroughgood, from Augusta, for Murder; Moses Rawlings, from Norfolk, for counterfeiting the Current Coin.

Oct. 17, 1751.

At the General Court held Yesterday and To-day, the following Criminals were brought to their Trial, viz.

George Kerr, from Norfolk, for Murder, guilty. Death.

Richard Burk, from Norfolk, for Murder, acquitted.

William Johnson, from Spotsylvania, for stealing a Watch, guilty. Death.

Anne Gray, from Stafford, for Felony, acquitted.

John Brown, from King William, for stealing a Watch, acquitted.

Henry Stanworth, from York, for Murder, guilty. Death.

Edward Stokes, from Frederick, for Horse-stealing, acquitted.

Nicholas Dernin, from Amelia, for burning the Prison, guilty. Death.

Robert Howles, from Hanover, for breaking Goal, imprisoned one Year.

Moses Rawlings, from Norfolk, for counterfeiting the Current Coin, acquitted.

John Holt, from Stafford, for Felony, guilty.

Oct. 24.

Virginia, to wit.

At a General Court held at the Court-house in Williamsburg, October the 17th, 1751.

ORDERED, That the Witnesses who shall for the future be summoned or bound to attend this Court on the sixth Day thereof, on Behalf of His Majesty, do, in the morning of that Day, before the sitting of the Court, attend the Attorney General, to instruct him in forming Indictments against the Criminals; and that if they fail to appear in Court on their first Calling, no Certificates be granted them to the General Assembly, to entitle them to their Allowances from the Publick.

Dec. 12.

At the Court of Oyer and Terminer, held the 10th, 11th, & 12th Instant, the following Criminals were brought to their Trial, viz.:

Day Thoroughgood, from Augusta, for the Murder of His Master James Conerley, guilty. Death.

Peter Bateman, from Northumberland, for Felony, in breaking open Charles Campbell's Store, guilty. Death.

John Floy, from Culpeper, for Manslaughter, burnt in the hand.

James Grainger, from King & Queen, for Felony, burnt in the hand.

Josiah Harper and Christopher Gume, from Norfolk, for Felony, burnt in the hand.

Dec. 27, 1751.

George Kerr and Henry Stanworth, condemned for Murder, at the General Court in October, were executed on Friday last.

January 10, 1751-2.

This day Peter Bateman for Felony, and Day Thoroughgood for Murder, condemned at the Court of Oyer and Terminer in December last, were executed in this City.

April 30, 1752.

The following Persons, indicted for Felony, were brought to their Trials, before the General Court, on the 16th and 17th Instant, viz.:

Peter McGuire, from Spotsylvania, acquitted.

Henry Todd, from Glocester, guilty.

Thomas Wenwick, from Prince William, guilty.

Hannah Hopkins, from York, guilty; but since pardoned.

William Hoomes, from King William, acquitted.

Ambrose Bucker, from Culpepper, for Murder, acquitted.

Hamill Moore, from Essex, for a Cheat, was found guilty; and stood in the Pillory one Hour, having a Paper, on which was wrote FORGERY, fix'd to his Breast.

The Trial of William Flannakin, from Hanover, for a Rape, was put off, 'til June Court, the Evidences against him not appearing.

George Smith, and John Shockley, for Horse-stealing, were Out-law'd.

May 15, 1752.

A Person who calls himself by the Name of John Keef, and has lived in this City for some Months past, as a Painter, having offered to dispose of three Dublin Bank Notes, of considerable Value, to a Gentleman, it was suspected from several Circumstances, that he did not come honestly by them. Information being made to the Governor, His Honour ordered Search to be made for the said Bills, which were found at the said Keef's Lodgings, as also His Majesty's Commission to Paul Leonard Craddock, Coronet of the Scotch Greys, under the Earl of Stair, signed Carteret. Keef being out of Town, a Messenger was sent for him, who return'd with him the next Day, and he is now confined in the Public Goal. One of the Bills is for £506 payable to Miss Catherine O'Brien, or Bearer, signed by Richard Brewer, for John Wilcox and John Dawson, the other two Bills, one of which is for £506 and the other for £500 are signed in the same Manner, and payable to the Bearer, all dated at Dublin, in 1749.

Keef came to Virginia, sometime in the Year 1750, in the Dutchess of Queensbury, Capt. Dixon, as an indented Servant. He told the Ship's Company when he came on Board, that he was an Officer in the Army, that he was going to be married to a young Lady, Miss Catherine O'Brien, but some of her Relations interposing, he wounded one of them, and was obliged to fly, a Reward of £500 being offered for apprehending him. On his examination, he made no other Defence, than insisting that the Bills were his Property, having received them of Miss O'Brien, for a valuable Consideration. He is a Man of a middle Stature, very much pock-fretted, stammers in his Speech, and has a down Look; as it is not doubted, he used some unlawful Means to procure these Bills, 'tis hoped the Truth of the whole Affair will come to Light, before his Releasment.

June 12, 1752.

At the Court of Oyer and Terminer, which began on Tuesday last, the following Persons were brought to their Trials, viz.:

John Trotman and John Sparks, for the Murder of James Fox, guilty. Death.

William Flannagin, for a Rape, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Abigail Bennet, for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Owen Flooker, for a Rape, acquitted by the Petit Jury and bound to his good Behaviour for Seven Years.

Randall Gibson, for Felony, burnt in the Hand.

Henry Bates, for Felony, burnt in the Hand.

July 3, 1752.

On Wednesday last John Sparks confin'd in the Public Goal, under Sentence of Death, for the Murder of James Fox, contriv'd to saw off his Irons in the Day Time, and at Night, as soon as the Goaler open'd the Prison Door, knock'd him down with a Quart Bottle, and made his Escape. He was apprehended Yesterday Evening, and brought to Town this Morning, and to prevent a Possibility of his escaping the Justice his Crime deserv'd, was this Day executed at the Gallows. He confessed himself guilty of the Murder, but entirely acquitted James Trotman, who was sentenc'd with him at the same Time, and whose Execution is respited.

July 10.

A few Days ago, a fine Negroe Man Slave, imported in one of the late Ships from Africa, belonging to a Wheelwright, near this City, taking Notice of his Master's giving another Correction for a Misdemeanor, went to a Grindstone and making a Knife sharp cut his own Throat, and died on the Spot.

August 21.

Sometime last Month, a Negro Fellow belonging to Mr. Tunstall Hacke, of Northumberland County, while his Master was asleep, went into his Chamber in the Night, and with an Intent to murder him. He carried with him a broad Ax and struck him a Blow with it on the Left Shoulder and Arm, by which he is very much wounded, but his Life is in no Danger. He immediately made his Escape, and has not yet been heard of. His Honour the Governor has issued a Hue and Cry against him, directed to the Sheriffs of the several Counties; and, 'tis hoped their Endeavours will not be wanting to bring the Villain to Justice.

October 19, 1752.

At the General Court held on Monday and Tuesday last the following Criminals were brought to their Trials, viz.:

Henry Bates, from King William, for Felony. Guilty.

Moses Thomson, from Frederick, for Horse-stealing, guilty. Death.

James Wright, and Anne his Wife from Henrico for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Simon Bayley, from King William, for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Zebulon Hollingsworth, from Frederick, for Murder, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Thomas Kelly, from Fairfax, for shooting Thomas Davis, a notorious Robber and Horse-stealer, acquitted by the Petit Jury.

Dec. 8.

Last Friday Night about 11 o'clock, the Play-House in this City was broke open by one White Man and two Negroes, who violently assaulted and wounded Patrick Maloney, Servant to the Company, by knocking him down, and throwing him upon the Iron-Spikes, one of which run into his Leg, by which he hung for a Considerable Time, till he was relieved by some Negroes. The Villains that perpetrated this horrid Fact escaped, but a Reward is offered for apprehending them, and as the aforesaid Patrick Maloney continues dangerously ill of his Wounds, it is hoped they will be taken and brought to Justice.

Dec. 15.

At the Court of Oyer & Terminer, begun on Tuesday last, the following Criminals were brought to their Trials, viz.:

Alexander Gauling, for robbing on the Highway, guilty. Death.

John Clifton, for Felony, in picking a Pocket, guilty. Death.

Thomas Aubery, alias Smith, for Horse-stealing, guilty. Death.

John Robinson, for Felony, pleaded guilty. Burnt in the hand.

William Coulter, for Murder, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Thomas Lester, for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

Tomkins Marter, for Felony, acquitted by the Grand Jury.

The Virginia Gazette in J. H. Univ. Lib. contains: Feb. 28, 1755; May 7 to 28 complete; Apr. 4, etc., April complete; May 9; Sept. 5; May 16, 23; Sept. 12, 14, 26; Oct. 3, etc., complete; Nov. 7, 14.

"Virginia, February 4, 1755.

As a Person, pretending to be the Son of the late Duke of Wirtemberg, and in holy Orders, and taking upon himself the Names and Titles of *Carolus, Ludovicus, Rudolphus, Wirtemberg, princeps*, A. M., M. D., hath obtained the Liberty, ac-

cording to his Report, of preaching in several Churches within this Dominion. This is to give Notice, to all Ministers and others, That the said Person is an Impostor. He is a short, middle aged Man, a most notorious Liar, and affects to speak broken *English*. In order therefore to put a stop to this, and the like shameful Irregularities for the future, His Honor the Governor hereby strictly charges, and commands all ministers, or in their Absence the church Wardens, not to allow a Stranger, or an itinerant Preacher, under any Pretence whatever, to officiate in their churches, or Chapels, unless they have previously qualified themselves, as the Constitutions and canons of the Church of *England* and the Law of this Country expressly provide.

By Order of the Governor

N. Walthoe, Cl. Con.

Feb. 28, 1755.

Edmund Pendleton has been easy in collecting fees from clients, now needs money, having engaged ——— on account of Mr. Thomas Wild. The funds appointed by him for my Security being slow as well as deficient, I am obliged not only to submit to be publicly insulted on account of those Engagements, but am Threatened with Suits on that account. Asks those owing him to pay next April Court.

Mar. 7-55.

Speech of Gov. Glen of So. Car., Nov. 13, 1754 to Gen. Assembly there.

Urges defence against French and Indians "For, not only our Country, but our Constitution is worth contending for. We enjoy the happiest and most perfect Frame of Government in the World; it is the Envy of all Nations; the Language of all Nations is, Who would not be a Briton? By this Constitution, this Colony, from small Beginnings, has, in a short Space of Time, become very considerable, and highly beneficial to Great Britain. When our Fathers came from thence to settle here, they brought the Laws of their Mother-Country as their Birth-

right, and a glorious Inheritance they are. They brought with them that inestimable Jewel, the Privilege of enacting Laws for their good Government & without which they could have made no Progress; this Privilege I hope we shall ever possess, in the same pure Manner we do at present."

Procl. of Dinwiddie forbidding illegal trade with French. No flour, bread, pork or beef to be allowed out in any ship clearing at the customs.

Runaway negro from Wm. Skipwith, Brandon, Pr. Geo. Co., took a grey mare. Reward.

Feb. 28—2 negroes, runaways, in Surry Co. goal, sent to public goal, Williamsburg.

Mar. 21—Horse race at York—4 mile heats best 2 in 3—carrying 135 lbs.—Purse of 67 pistoles.

Mar. 24—Philadelphia, Mar. 11—Public desired to beware of counterfeit milled pieces of eight exceedingly well done—date 1754—have Philip instead of Ferdinand on them.

Mar. 24—Runaway negro from Saml. DuVal's plantation, Flat Rock Creek, Lunenburg Co., negro named Porringer, speaks pretty good English—has been in country 3 yrs.

Apr. 4-55.

Run away, Irish servant man, John D'Anvers—pretends to be barber-surgeon—age 30—pitted with small-pox—rode off on a brown mare—signed, Robt. Lyon, Wmsbg.

Apr. 11.

Ran away from Taverner Beal, Orange Co., "a Servant man, named *Michall Weston*, born in *Yorkshire*, age 23, pitted with small-pox." He came in as a Book-keeper but has served as a School-master. Took a bay horse—had on a white fustian coat with metal buttons, fore parts of his jacket uncut Velvet,

hind parts red callimanco, leather breaches, brown wig, new castor hat and a ruffled shirt—supposed to have made towards the shipping—5 pistoles reward (12 outside colony).

Ran away from Francis Tomkies, Gloucester Co., March last "a Conicut Servant man, named *John Sniley*"—was a plow hand, age 27, born in Yorkshire—went away with a Convict Servant maid of Mr. Warner Lewis's, "who he let out of prison." He is a malster by profession.

Horse stolen from stable near Wmsbg. Matthew Shields will give ½ pistole reward, or 1 pistole on connection of Thief.

Apr. 18-55.

On *Wednesday* and *Thursday* last, the following Criminals were brought to their Trials, viz.:

John Turner, from Sussex for Murder, guilty. Death.

Mary Murray, alias Clark, alias Atkins, her former sentence ordered to be put in Execution.

Eleanor Feltom, from Norfolk, for Felony acquitted.

Stephen Hutchings, from ditto, or Bigamy, acquitted.

George Carter, from Stafford, for Felony, acquitted, but bound to his good Behaviour.

John Fraser and William Thompson, from Stafford, for Felony, convicted.

Robert Hamilton, from Augusta, for Murder, acquitted.

Alexander Rigsby, from Essex, for Murder, convicted of Manslaughter.

William Ritch, from Culpeper, for Felony, acquitted.

Peter Ridgeway (a Convict) for Felony, acquitted.

Bridget Huggins, from James City, for Felony, acquitted.

Judith Bird, from York, for Felony, convicted.

Thomas Jackson and Joseph Gaby, for Felony, acquitted.

Susanna Barnett, from Albemarle, for Felony, acquitted.

(To be Continued)

NOTES AND QUERIES.

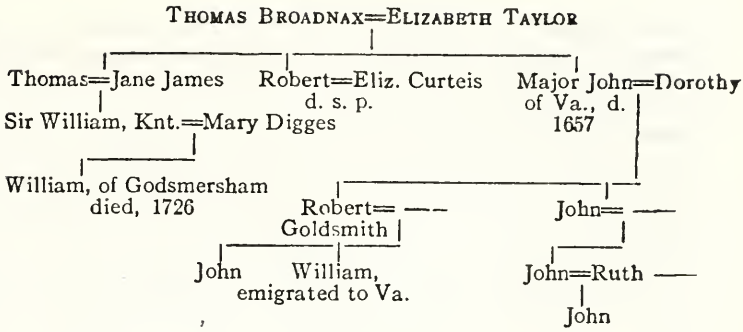
Brodnax Family—Evidence from a Chancery Suit.

[We are indebted to Dr. John W. Brodnax, of the Medical College of Virginia for the copies of papers in an English Chancery suit which are printed below. These papers not only make clear the English ancestry of the Virginia family of Brodnax, but show the character of the genealogical information contained in the vast mass of Chancery records in England].

Major John Brodnax came to Virginia and settled in York County about the middle of the Seventeenth Century. His will, as of the parish county of York, was dated July 21, 1657 and proved March 6, 1657(8). He gives his wife Dorothy silver plate; to his son John Brodnax a gold ring with this motto "Thinke on thy end and also the life and death of thy friend;" to daughter Elizabeth Brodnax "My Bible book and my Eare ring with a Dyamant in itt;" to his youngest sons William and Robert Brodnax gold rings. Bequests to eldest son Thomas, and to son John then living with Mr. Joseph King in "Gratious" [Gracechurch] Street [London]. Son Thomas, to be sent home to England to Mr. Thomas Turget in London. Various other bequests to his wife and children. Robert Baldey and Edward Baxter overseers of his will. The inventory of his personal estate included, three periwigs, one rapier and belt, five broadcloth suits, slippers, ribbons, &c.

The pedigree of Brodnax in Berry's *Kent*, p. 126, shows Thomas Brodnax, Esq. of Godmersham, Kent, who died 1658 (and who was 6th in descent from Robert Brodnax living *temp.* Henry V) married Elizabeth Taylor and had issue: (1) Thomas of Godmersham, Esq. who died 1667; (2) Robert, died 1673; (3) John married Dorothy—[the emigrant to Virginia]; and four daughters. The same pedigree states that John and Dorothy Brodnax had issue (1) Thomas; (2) John; (3) William; (4) Robert; (5) Elizabeth; (6) Martha.

In a Brodnax family Bible brought to Virginia, and now in possession of Mrs. W. S. Roulhac, Spray, N. C., are the following entries: "William Brodnax was born Feb. 28, 1675, the youngest son of Robert Brodnax, goldsmith in Holborn, London. He was born at Godmersham, in Kent." William Brodnax emigrated to Virginia, and dying Feb. 16, 1727 left the Bible to his eldest son. John Brodnax, older brother of Wm. Brodnax, was born in 1668, and also settled in Virginia. For accounts of the family see *Wm. & Mary Quarterly, XIV*, 52-59, 135-139. The following chart will show the relationship of the people referred to:



Abstract of Chancery Suit Entitled *Brodnax versus Gibbon.* (Bundle 486, No. 46-Bridges), in the Public Record Office, Chancel Lane, London, England.

13 April, 1676

Robert Gibbon of Middle Temple, London, Esq. That ROBERT BRODNAX OF THE PARISH OF ST. ANDREW, HOLBORN, LONDON, GOLDSMITH. Did Declare and affirm to your Orator that Robert Brodnax, late of the Town of Tenterden, in the county of Kent, was in his life time seized in fee of a messuage called Cold Harbour Farm with three score and ten acres in the parishes of Tenterden and Rowenden and all those parcels of land in the Hundred of Tenterden heretofore purchased by the said Robert Brodnax of one Free-gift Boorne of the parishof Biddenden, Kent. All that messuage containing one acre called Claverings, situated in the parish of St. Nicholas, Harbledon, Kent, and all that parcel of land containing four acres planted with cherry trees and known by the name of Harbledon Hill in the said parish and of and in a piece of land called Pennylesse Bench containing two acres in the said parish, and two pieces of fresh marsh containing nineteen acres in the parish of Snave in Romney Marsh, and a piece of fresh marsh containing ten acres in the parish of Newchurch, and a piece of fresh marsh containing fifteen acres in the said parish, and one other piece of fresh marsh containing three acres in the said parish, and one piece of fresh marsh in the said parish and all those three pieces of fresh marsh in the same parish containing seventeen acres, and of, and in several messuages &c. in said county of Kent. That the said Robert Brodnax, late of Tenterden was a near kinsman of *him being his father's brother* and that he had a great love and kindness for him, and the said *Robert Brodnax* (*of Holborn*) did affirm to your Orator that the better to express his affection to him the said Robert Brodnax of Tenterden being so seized did on the 10th of July, 1673 make his last will and Testament in these words "I Robert Brodnax of the Town and Hundred of Tenterden, Co. Kent gent. x x I bequeath all my messuage etc. called Cold Harbour Farm with three score and Ten acres in the parishes of Rowenden and Tenterden Co.

Kent to *my nephew Robert Brodnax, son of my brother John Brodnax,* deceased to him and his heirs for ever. The better to satisfy my debts, legacies &c. I give to my *nephew Robert Brodnax* all my three parcels of land &c., &c., as above————To my sister, Dame Sarah Howell 5 pounds. To my niece Elizabeth Brodnax daughter of my *said brother John Brodnax* 100 pounds to be paid by my said *nephew Robert Brodnax.* To my brother's and sister's children 10 shillings a piece. To my godson Gilbert Knowler one gelding colt. To the poor of the parish of Tenterden 5 pounds————Elizabeth Brodnax, my wife (deceased) daughter and sole heir of John Curleys of Woodchurch, gent, deceased.

Robert Brodnax, executor. "That the said Robert Brodnax of Tenterden on the 22nd. February, 1673 died so seized whereby the said premises are vested in the said *Robert Brodnax of* Holborn. That the said Robert Brodnax of Holborn did affirm to your Orator that the said Cold Harbour Farm and Hodge Park lands in Tenterden and Rowenden aforesaid are worth 40 pounds per annum and the better to evince the same by indenture dated 2nd. October, 1675 let the same to John Harman the present tenant at the yearly rent of 46 pounds. And the said Robert Brodnax did declare to your Orator that the aforesaid premises were in no way liable with any charges &c., other than one indenture or demise by the said Robert Brodnax the testator to Dame Sarah Howell of Cold Harbour Farm aforesaid for a term of years yet to come. That your Orator relying on the said declarations was induced to make an agreement with the said Robert Brodnax of Holborn for the purchasing of said lands in Tenterden and Rowenden, and about the 16th. December, 1675 your Orator did agree with the said Robert Brodnax for the purchase thereof and for the assignation of the said morgage made to the said Dame Sarah Howell for the sum of 660 pounds. Notwithstanding which the said Robert Brodnax, combining with William Brodnax Esq. who doth affirm himselph to be son and heir of Sir William Brodnax, Knight, who was one of the sons of Thomas Brodnax who was eldest brother of the said Robert Brodnax the testator deceased and Robert Brodnax who affirmeth himself to be one of the sons of the said Thomas Brodnax and John Brodnax who likewise affirmeth that he is the son of John Brodnax who was the son of John Brodnax and second brother of the said Robert the testator do endeavor to prevent the said premises from being conveyed to your Orator, sometimes giving out in speeches that the said William, Robert, and John or one of them is or are heirs at law the said Robert the testator or that they have a right to the said premises according to the custom of Gavelkind they denying the validity of the will.

Answer of Robert Brodnax, of the parish of St. Andrew, Holborn, London, Goldsmith.

30 May, 1676.

It is true that this defendant did declare that Robert Brodnax late of Tenterden was seized of the said premises and that the said Robert

Brodnax was this defendant's Kinsman that is this defendant's father's brother. That defendant is willing on receipt of purchase money and completion of conveyance to deliver up to complainant all deeds, writings etc. Denies that he said the testator was insane on making his will.

Answer of John Brodnax, an infant under the age of 21 by Ruth Brodnax widow, his mother.

31 May, 1676.

That it is true that the said Robert Brodnax of Tenterden, this defendant's great uncle was seized of the said messuages and that the said Robert Brodnax deceased was this defendant's father's uncle and this defendant's great uncle. Does not know that the said Robert Brodnax made any will. Saith it is true that this defendant's is son and heir of John Brodnax deceased and that the said John Brodnax this defendant's late father was one of the sons of John Brodnax deceased this defendant's late grandfather, and that this defendant's grandfather was brother of the said Robert Brodnax deceased and this defendant is one of the co-heirs at law of the said Robert and is entitled to his share under the custom of Gavelkind.

Answer of William Brodnax, an infant under the age of 21, by Thomas Twiner his guardian.

That the said Robert Brodnax was this defendant's father's uncle and this defendant's grandfather's brother. Does not know if the said Robert Brodnax made any will. That this defendant is son and heir of Sir William Brodnax, knight, deceased, who was one of the sons of Thomas Brodnax deceased, and the said Thomas Brodnax was eldest brother of the said Robert Brodnax and this defendant is one of the co-heirs at law according to the custom of Gavelkind.

---

*This abstract of the Chancery Suit, "Gibbon versus Brodnax" shows that Major John Brodnax who died in Virginia in 1657 (will recorded in York Co.) was the father of Robert Brodnax, goldsmith of Holborn, London, and grandfather of John and William from whom all the Brodnaxs of Virginia descended. Major John Brodnax was 2nd. son of Thomas Brodnax, called "Generosus" of Godmersham Park, Kent Co., Eng., born 1565, died 1659, and uncle of Sir William Brodnax to whom Godmersham descended. A pedigree carrying the Brodnax family many generations back of this Thomas Brodnax may be found in Berry's Visitation of Kent."

Harrison Papers.

Mrs. W. W. Richardson, Hampton, Va., has a number of old Harrison papers which have descended in her family and to her from her grandfather Wm. Henry Harrison of "Bicars," Prince George County, who was a son of Robert Harrison.

Following are abstracts of some of the papers:

At a Crowwall Court held at James City the 19th of October 1691—
Preform—Francis Nicholson, Esqr.—
Lt. Gouevnour—

Wm. Cole, Esq-Secty	Christopher Wormley, Esq.
Wm. Byrd, Esq.	Edward Hill, Esq.
John Lear, Esq.	

Capt. James Biss and Sarah his wife, having had liberty to traverse the office of Escheat of four hundred seventy and an half acres of Land found to Escheat to their most sacred Maj— from James Waradine and it appearing that William Barker, —— whom —— claimed had sold all right of the patent of the Land in differance to the said Warradine, it is the opinion of this Court that the said Waradine had an Estate in fee Simple in the said Land & therefore adjudged that the right of the said Land is in Our Sovereign Lord and Lady the King and Queen.

—R. Beverley—

Memorandums taken from the several Papers Delivered in the Parcels of my Land called Bicars formerly Charles City County but now Prince George Containing 470½ Acres. Notes collected this 25th of Feb'ry Anno Domi 1743.

1. The Land called Bicars was first granted to one Thom[s] Mathews in the year 1641 and surveyed for him by Math. Gough, but lost by this Mathews for want of seating.

2. After this Land was lost by Matthews it was granted to one James Warradine by Sr. William Berkeley, Governor of this Colony by Patent bearing Date 8th of July 1647, which Grant mentions this Land being formerly Granted to Matthews and allows the Platt made by Matthew Gough in 1641 to be the true bounds.

3. It appears from a copy of a Verd't, of a Jury that there was an Inclusive Patent Granted by this James Warredine for 1070½ Acres of Land which grant bears date 18th March 1662.

4. It appears that this Land called Bicars was granted by an Escheat Patent to Capt. John Stith, Junr. the 29th of Aprile Anno Domini 1692, which said grant mentions the Quantity of 470½ Acres & that it was formerly the Land of James Warradine as above mentioned.

5. This Capt. Jno. Stith lived in Charles City at a place called the Indian Fields and left two Sons and one daughter Vizt. John, William and Elizabeth. Aforementioned Land called Bicars he gave to his

youngest son William, of whom I bought it as appears by Deed dated 11th of Sept. 1733, proved in Prince George Court.

Berkley Feb'ry 21st, 1743.

Benje. Harrison.

This Indenture made this eleventh day of September in the fourth year of our Sovereign Lord King George the Second, and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirty and three, between William Stith of William and Mary College, Clerk of the one Part and Benjamin Harrison of the Parish of Westover in Charles City County, Gent, of the other Part, Witnesseth, that the said William Stith for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred and seventy pounds Sterling money of England to him in hand, paid by this said Benjamin Harrison. The receipt whereof the said William Stith doth hereby confess and acknowledge and for divers other good causes and considerations, him thereunto moving, &c., &c., &c. ——confirm unto this said Benjamin Harrison his Heirs and Assigns forever—Parcel of Land containing 470 acres more or less commonly known by the name of Bicars or Cureton—&c., &c. This being signed by Mr. Wm. Stith with seal, and Deed to Colo. Benja. Harrison Sept. 11th, 1733.

In 1760—Bargain and Sale and agreed by the parties before signing the Within Deed that the said Benj. Harrison is only to Warrant a title to the said Harrison for all his Lands called Bycars and Curetons as they are now held by the two pattents by the said Benjamin, without his being obliged to bind any certain quantity of Land as Witness our hands this 19th day Nov. 1760.

Signed

Benj. Harrison
Robert Harrison

Plat made of land containing 150 acres made March 29th, 1682, showing boundary line and compass—Made by Richard Ligon.

Memorandum that Wm. Barker agrees that James Warradine shall hold and enjoy all the Land at Bicars or Bycars, being 600 acres of land or thereabouts. Warradine paying 2000 pounds of good and well condetioned leaf Tobacco on the 10th of Oct., and 2000 pounds of the like Tobbo. on the 10th day of November, which shall be in the year of our Lord 1646.

At a Court holden at Westopher, April 3rd, Anno 1647, Charles City County.

Bill of Sale from Benjamin Harrison for consideration of the sum of Forty-five Pounds Current Money for two negro slaves named Dido & Ned, unto Robert Harrison and his Heirs forever, 11th Day of June 1736.

Signed by

Benj. Harrison

Capt. Robert Harrison of the 62nd Regt., P. G. Militia, commanded Fort Powhatan in the War of 1812. Payroll, signers names and witnesses.

Some Records Relating to Huguenot Families.

Goochland, Nov. 9, 1730, Peter Guerrent qualified as administrator of Daniel Guerrant, who died intestate, his widow Frances relinquishing.

Goochland, Feb. 1730, William Salle qualified as administrator of Isaac Salle, intestate.

Goochland, March 1731, John Fleming qualified as administrator of John Le Grand, intestate, Katherine Le Grand relinquishing.

Goochland, Nov. 6, 1733, deed from Judith Ballew of Goochland, conveying to Peter Guerrant land devised to her by her father Peter Chastain, deceased.

Cumberland. Will of Peter Guerrant, dated Dec. 3, 1749, proved Jan. 25, 1750.

Cumberland. Inventory of Anthony Lavillain, deceased, recorded July 23, 1750.

Cumberland. Receipt Aug. 3, 1730 from Charles Perro to Magdalen Guerrant, executrix of Peter Guerrant for £36. 10. 11 current money, amount due said Perro's wife from the estate of Daniel Guerrant, deceased, and also her receipt for what was due her from the estates of her deceased brothers Daniel and Peter Guerrant [? should the date 1730 not be 1750.]

Cumberland. Will of Ann David, King William Parish, dated Oct. 18, 1750, proved Nov. 1750.

Cumberland. Will of Isaac Dutoy, King Wm. Parish, dated Nov. 9, 1750, proved 1752.

Cumberland. Will of Pierce Sallee, King William Parish, dated Dec. 24, 1750, proved Nov. 27, 1752.

Cumberland. Will of Peter Lewis Soblet, King William Parish, dated Nov. 5, 1754, proved Jan. 27, 1755.

Cumberland. Will of Margaret Rapene, King William Parish, dated June 8, 1755, proved Jan. 26, 1756.

Cumberland. Will of John Chastain, King William Parish, dated Dec. 22, 1760, proved Jan. 25, 1762.

Cumberland. Will of John La Villain, King William Parish, dated Jan. 26, 1765, proved Feb. 22, 1768.

Cumberland. Marriage bond, Nov. 22, 1753, Matthew Woodson and Elizabeth Villain.

Cumberland. June 25. 1750, James Le Grand orphan of Peter Le Grand chose James Barnes guardian.

Cumberland. June 25, 1750. Alexander Le Grand orphan of Peter Le Grand chose George Baskerville guardian.

Goochland. Will of Peter Chastain, King William Parish, proved Nov. 1728.

Goochland. Will of Stephen Chastain, "late of the place Vose in Doffine [Dauphine] in the province of France, Inhabitant at Manakintown, parish of King William, Goochland County," dated June 10, 1732-3, proved Aug. 21, 1739.

Goochland. Will of Martha Chastain (widow of Stephen Chastain), dated April 23, 1740, proved May 20, 1740.

Goochland. Deed 1741, from Rene Chastain of Goochland.

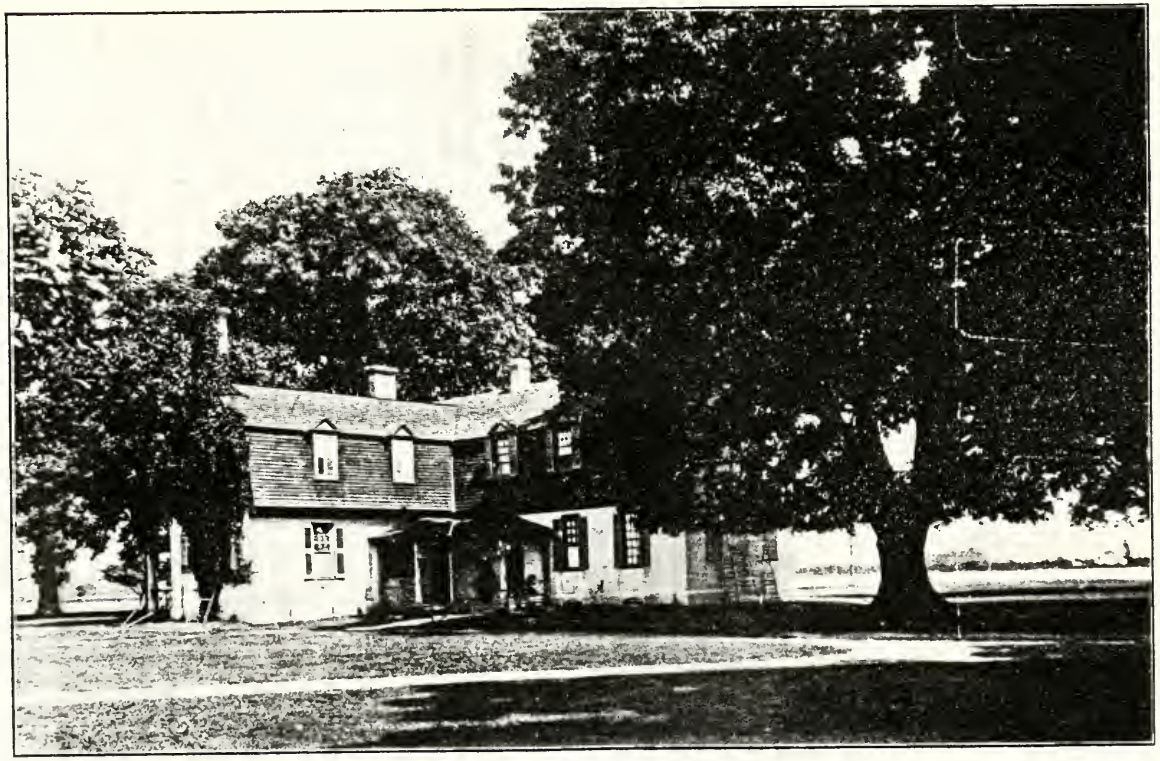
Goochland. June 1744, Inventory of Anthony Trabue, deceased.

Goochland. Will of Jacob Michaux, dated Nov. 3, 1744, proved Jan. 15, 1744.

Goochland. Will of Jean La Villain, "native of the town of Jessy in Lower Normandy in the Kingdom of France and at present living in King William Parish, Goochland County, Virginia" [date omitted in copy].

Powhatan. Will of Frances Salle, dated Sept. 9, proved Nov. 20, 1777.

Lunenburg. Will of Abraham Michaux, proved Dec. 31, 1747.



TODDSBURY, GLOUCESTER CO., VA.
(From "Historic Virginia Houses and Churches")

Courtesy of Mr. R. A. Lancaster, Jr.

GENEALOGY.

The Gorsuch and Lovelace Families.
(Continued.)

(By J. H. P., Baltimore, Md.)

Anna[4] Gorsuch and the Todd Family of Virginia and Maryland.

7. Anna[4] Gorsuch (John[3], Daniel[2], William[1]). Among the "baptisms" in the Walkern Register Transcripts is the entry that Anna' daughter of John and Anna Gorsuch, was baptized Mar. 13, 1638-9, while among the "marriages" for 1639 there is another entry giving her baptism date as Mar. 15, 1639-40. The first entry is probably the correct one. As she does not join her brothers in their petition to the Lancaster County Court in 1657 for the appointment of guardians, although then a minor, it would seem probable that she was married at this time (see ante p. 91). She married about this date, probably in Virginia, Capt. Thomas Todd then of Mobjack Bay, Gloucester County, who removed a few years later to North Point on the Patapsco River in Baltimore County, Maryland.

Anna[4] Gorsuch married three times. All three of her husbands were men of prominence. She apparently had issue only by her first husband, Capt. Thomas Todd. The descendants of this marriage both in Virginia and Maryland and indeed elsewhere throughout the country are very numerous. She married as her second husband, Capt. David Jones. It is he who has given his name to Jones Falls so well known to every Baltimorean, and it was upon his plantation, Coles Harbor, that Baltimore afterwards was laid out. Anna Gorsuch married as her third husband Capt. John Oldton, commander of the fort known as the Garrison and owner, among other tracts, of a large grant, Oldton's Garrison, on the south side of the Green Spring Valley, near where this fort was located. An account not only of her first husband, Thomas Todd, but of David Jones and John Oldton will doubtless prove of interest to her descendants, as well as to all who are interested in the early history of Baltimore. So much has been written which is inaccurate and misleading in regard to the Todd family that it has seemed wise to restudy the entire subject and to accept nothing which the writer has not been able to verify from the original sources. As some limit must be placed upon the scope of this work, only in exceptional cases will an attempt be made to carry down the lines further than three generations from Thomas Todd and his wife Anna[4] Gorsuch.

The name Todd was not an uncommon one in Virginia in the seventeenth century. The writer is indebted to the editor of the Magazine for a list of early Virginia patents under the name Todd. A Thomas Todd, August 18, 1631, claimed 250 acres of land on the eastern branch of the Elizabeth River in New Norfolk County for transporting his wife Elizabeth, Mary Whitemoore, Wm. Whitledge and James Bleese into the colony. Thomas Todd May 12, 1638 received 250 acres on Back or Little Creek in Lower Norfolk County for transporting John Williams, Richard Wooten, John Witkins, John Johnson and John Fells; while Oct. 2, 1640 Thomas Todd received 50 acres on the eastern branch of Elizabeth River, and March 5, 1645 a regrant of 50 acres, possibly of the last mentioned tract. Thomas Todd March 6, 1647 patented 50 acres in Elizabeth City County bought from Th's Williams. The editor of the Magazine has been kind enough to run through Volume I of the Lower Norfolk County records preserved at Portsmouth, a copy of which is at the Virginia Historical Society, and has noted the following Todd entries: Thos. Todd Nov. 15, 1641 claimed 50 acres for transporting Job Seamore into the Colony in the ship Blessing anno 1637. The Court, Jan. 3, 1641 ordered Rd. Kennor to pay Thos. Todd £7 sterling due in 1640, and again Sept. 10, 1642 ordered Col. Francis Trafford to pay Thos. Todd 150 lbs. of tobacco for work done by Todd upon a vessel belonging to Trafford. On July 17, 1643,—Lovett, security of Will Capps who purchased 2000 "puffe" and "clench" from Thos. Todd was ordered to pay. On Dec. 15, 1645 Thos. Todd appears in the record in connection with fees due a witness. Among a number of depositions extracted from Books A, B & C (1637-1665), in the Norfolk County Clerk's Office is one of Thomas Todd dated 1647, aged 33 years or thereabouts (Wm. & Mary Quart. 25; 38). This Thomas Todd, born about 1613, could scarcely have been the Thomas Todd referred to above, who claimed land in 1637 in New Norfolk County for transporting his wife Elizabeth and others, but may have been a son. Probably to this same line belonged Richard Todd, who August 9, 1665 patented 600 acres in Elizabeth City County, of which 350 acres had been received by Richard Todd under the will of Richard Greyson, and the remaining 250 acres had been purchased by Mr. Thomas Todd and given by him to Richard Todd. These Todds of Elizabeth City County and Lower Norfolk County have not yet been connected with the Todds of Gloucester.

The three following Thomas Todd patents for land in Gloucester were apparently issued to Capt. Thomas Todd, the subject of this sketch. Thomas Todd Oct. 27, 1652 patented 150 acres on the eastern side of Eastermost River in Mockjack [Mobjack] Bay adjoining the land of Wm. Humphrey and Phill Hemley for the transportation of George Bone and Hewett Gepperson. Thomas Todd Oct. 15, 1653 received 600 acres on the western side of Eastermost River in Mockjack [Mobjack] Bay adjoining the land of Wm. Holder for the transportation of Thomas Uggins, John Waine, Mary Maddox, John Martin, Sandees Madross, James Mal-

ney, John Blake, etc. Thomas Todd Oct. 9, 1665, patented 700 acres on North River, Mobjack Bay, acquired from Wm. Davis. It seems probable that the Robert Todd and his son William, to whom the following tracts in Gloucester were issued, were of this Thomas Todd's immediate family, possibly Robert was his brother. May 7, 1666 William Todd, son and heir of Robert Todd, received 500 acres, Tindall's Neck, on the north side of Charles [York] River, Gloucester, which had been sold by Thomas Beale to Robert Todd, father of the patentee William, and which was now due to the said William. Robert Todd Sept. 21, 1674 patented 380 acres at Tindall's Point [now Gloucester Point] on York River, Gloucester County, 250 acres of which had been granted to the said Robert's father May 7, 1666. This Gloucester County line of grandfather, father and son bearing respectively the names Robert, William and Robert has not been traced further. A writer in the William and Mary Quarterly (Volume 3; 120) states that a Robert Todd appeared as a purchaser of land in York County in 1642 and of land in Gloucester in 1652. In Hotten's Emigrants a Robert Todd aged 20 brought over in the Hopewell, 1622, appears among the Muster of William Tiler in Elizabeth City County. Greer's Early Virginia Immigrants enumerates nine persons bearing the name of Todd brought into the colony down to 1666. Among these were two bearing the name Thomas Todd brought over in 1642 and 1652 respectively, but neither these nor any of the other Todds enumerated as headrights can be identified.

Further comment upon the above mentioned patentees and immigrants seems unnecessary. It is probable that three or four different individuals bearing the name Thomas Todd were in Virginia at this period. The patentee of 1631 who brought in his wife Elizabeth could certainly not have been Capt. Thomas Todd the subject of this sketch. Whether he was identical with Thomas Todd of Lower Norfolk or Elizabeth City County is uncertain. It is important to note that a Thomas Todd, not identical with Capt. Thomas Todd, the subject of this sketch, came into Maryland in 1651, probably with the Puritan emigrants from Virginia, and settled on the Severn River near Annapolis. This Thomas Todd became the founder of the Todd family of Anne Arundel County, Maryland, which has been so exhaustibly worked out by Dr. Christopher Johnston, the well-known genealogist (Md. Hist. Mag. IX; 298-305). While the writer is in possession of some evidence from the English records suggesting that there was a connection between Capt. Thomas Todd of Gloucester and Baltimore and Thomas Todd of Anne Arundel, this fact has not been definitely established, and the relationship, if any, was probably not a close one.

A recent "find" has revealed the English origin of Capt. Thomas Todd, the husband of Anna[4] Gorsuch. Through the researches of Miss Harriet P. Marine of Baltimore, a descendant of Capt. Thomas Todd, a deed has very recently been discovered in Queen Anne County, Maryland, which establishes the place of origin in England of the Todds. Capt. Thomas

Todd in his will, dated Feb. 21, 1675-6 and probated May 30, 1677 in Maryland, and March 1678 in London, to which reference in greater detail will be made later, leaves a tract of 700 acres "called Todde [Todley] lying in Chester River in Cosico [Corsica] Creek" to his brother, Christopher Todd and to his heirs, and also makes a bequest of twenty pounds sterling to his brother, Christopher, to be paid him in England. The Queen Anne County Rent Roll (Md. Hist. Soc. MSS.) shows that the tract, Todley, 700 acres, was surveyed June 14, 1670 for Thomas Todd at the head of the North East Fresh Run of Corsica Creek and was "possessed by Thomas Todd's heirs in England," while a somewhat later Rent Roll in the Land Office, Annapolis, shows that this same tract had been sold in 1709 by David Airey. A search of the Queen Anne County land records resulted in the discovery by Miss Marine of a deed dated Sept. 20, 1709 from David Airey to Robert Finley and Robert Grundy (Q. A. Co. Deeds; E. T. No. A; 41). David Airey and Elizabeth his wife convey to Finley and Grundy the tract, "*Todley or Todd Linges*," on the south side of Chester River at the head of the North East Fresh Run of Corsica Creek, 700 acres, "all which said Land did formerly belong to a certain Captain Thomas Todd deceased, & by his last Will & Testament did leave the same unto his Brother Christopher Todd Late of Denton in the County of Durham and his heirs, and afterwards sold and conveyed from William Todd of Chester in the county of Durham, Son and heir of the said Christopher Todd unto Thom. Cook and his heirs as by a certain deed bearing date the 6 August, Anno. Domi. 1687." This would seem to settle beyond question that Denton, Durham, was the home of the Todd family in England, for Capt. Thomas Todd gave the name Denton to his home plantation on the Patapsco patented by him under a survey dated June 24, 1669. Until the discovery of this deed it was not possible to decide with which of the various places in England, bearing the name Denton, the Todd family was probably identified. The writer is now making efforts to trace the Todd family in England, and it is hoped that additional information may be obtained for publication in a later number of the magazine.

Capt. Thomas Todd first appears in the Maryland Records August 17, 1664, describing himself as "now living in Goucester County, Virginia." He purchased from Thomas Powell three tracts of land, viz: Old Road 287½ acres; Richardson [later called Black Walnut Neck] 300 acres and a tract 100 acres adjoining Walnut Neck [Powell's Point] (Balto. L. Deeds IR: PP, 66). The same date he deeds the above mentioned "three dividends" of land bought of Thomas Powell "for the love and affection I have unto my two sonnes, Robert Todd and John Todd." (Balto. Deeds IR: PP, 65). The description of these tracts show that they lay on the north side of the Patapsco near its mouth on what is now known as Old Road Bay. Thomas Todd's name does not reappear again in the Baltimore County records until July 6, 1668, when still describing himself as of Gloucester County, he gives a power of attorney to his beloved

friend, Richard Ball of Baltimore County (Balto. Deeds IR: PP, 65). It has been previously shown that this Richard Ball was a son of Colonel William Ball of Lancaster County (see ante 93). Thomas Todd, Apr. 29, 1669, now describing himself as resident in the Patapsco River, Baltimore County, purchased from Ralph Williams of Bristol, merchant, a tract called North Point, 300 acres on the north side of the Patapsco River near its mouth (idem IR: PP, 71). The name North Point has been made historic by the battle fought near there, Sept. 12, 1814, in the defense of Baltimore during the War of 1812, to which it gave its name, this event inspiring Francis Scott Key to compose "The Star Spangled Banner." August 9, 1670 he patented the tract, Denton, 190 acres which had been surveyed for him June 24, 1669 (Balto. Co. Rent Roll; Md. Hist. Soc. Md. MSS.). Thomas Todd also purchased the following tracts in Baltimore County viz.: Hoopers Island, June 1, 1669, from Mary Goldsmith, 75 acres, near the mouth of Gunpowder River (Balto. Deeds: IR; PP, 72); Walkins Neck, "28th 10th month 1669," from John Walkins, south side of Back River (idem IR: PP 88). He also patented Todd's Range 400 acres on the north side of the Patapsco on Humphrey's Creek [Old Road Bay] surveyed for him June 24, 1669. (Balto. Co. Rent Roll Md. Hist. Soc. MSS). From an examination of the above deeds and patents it will be seen that Capt. Thomas Todd became possessed of extensive land holdings on the lower part of what is known as Patapsco Neck. In several of these deeds he is described as "merchant of the Patapsco River" and there is no question that he remained a resident of the Patapsco River until the time of his death. He appears to have moved with his family into the Patapsco shortly before Apr. 5, 1669 when Capt. Thomas Todd demanded land for transporting himself, his wife Ann Todd, Robert, Ann, John, Johanna, and Francis [Frances] Todd his children, and seven servants. (Annap. Patents 12; 202). Again Oct. 15, 1671 Capt. Thomas Todd of Baltimore County proved rights for transporting 24 persons, among them a Richard Todd into the province (Annap. Patents 16; 394). This warrant for 1200 acres was made returnable to the Land Office March 9, 1671-2. Capt. Thomas Todd represented Baltimore County in the Lower House of the General Assembly at the session of February 1674-5 (Arch. Md. 2, 422). Filed with the will of Thomas Todd is a letter to his son, Thomas Todd dated Apr. 1, 1676, which shows that the father was then about to sail for England. It would appear from the letter which is addressed to his son "at his house in the North River with Care and Speed" that the father was then on shipboard en route to England from his plantation on the Patapsco, and wished to see his son as he passed his Gloucester plantation. The letter is of sufficient interest to publish in full:

Deare Son—My love to you Remembred, this is to give you notice that I am aboard of Captain James Connaway Commander of the Ship Virginie Factor bound for England. I am very weake and sick and have beene a long time. all my desire is to see you before I goe for fear I shall

never see you. We lie against Munday's Creeke and intend to set sayle tomorrow if it be a faire Winde being the eleventh day of Aprill. I want some good syder to keep mee alive, which I suppose you have enough of; if the wind hang Easterly wee may stay longer but if North or Northwest or south west, we shall be gone. I Looked long for you to bring up the negroes, which I shall loose my Crop for want of them. If it be not my luck to see you, let me heare from you by writing. Direct yor letters to M: Barnaby Dunne his house for me. Yo'r mother brothers and sisters are well. I pray you send me what tobaccoes you can. and my love to John Robinson & all the rest of my friends. I have made my will and made you my executor. Nor else at present but the Lords blessing and mine be with you, Your loving Father till death

April the 10th 1676 Thomas Todd

These for my son Thomas Todd at his house in the North River with Care and Speed.

Capt. Thomas Todd died in London while on this visit to England. His will, dated Feb. 26, 1675-6, was probated in Maryland May 30th, 1677. An affidavit of Miles Gibson who had married Todd's daughter, Anne, bearing the same date as the probate, was filed in the Prerogative Court. It reads as follows:

The Affidavit of Miles Gibson of Baltemore County, aged about 29 years, sworne this 30 day of May, 1677, saith: That about this time twelve months, Mrs. Anne Todd then the wife of Thomas Todd Senior, did shew this deponent her husband's will & told him that it was his will and desired this Deponent to reade it, who accordingly read it to her & shee took it into her Custody againe & sometime afterwards hearing of her husband's death, she left her habitation and what was thereon in the Custody of her eldest daughter, who then tooke the said will into her possession, the which will she kept untill the day of her marriage & then delivered it into the Custody of this deponent her now husband who hath delivered the said will into the hands of Thomas Todd Junior executor nominated in the said will, & further saith that the said will now produced is the same will which was first shewen him by the said Anne, and that he being frequently acquainted with the said Thomas Todd Senior his hand, the Deponent saith he verily believeth the said Todd did signe and seale the said will and further saith not.

Miles Gibson

The will of Capt. Thomas Todd was not only probated in Maryland May 30, 1677 (Annap. Wills, 5; 227), but also proved in London in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, March, 1678 (P. C. C. Wills; 1678; Reeve 29). Note of this probate in England is also to be found in the records of the Maryland Prerogative Court: "30 March 1678 came Thomas Todd of 'Mop:Jacke Bay', sole execr. named in the will of Capt. Thomas Todd his father late of Balto. County, Maryland, decd. at

London Engd. & exhibited invy. together with letters of admin. to him committed under seals of prerogative Court of Canterbury, &c." (Test. Proc. 10. 14). One of the witnesses of the will having died and the other having left the province the letter and affidavit were filed as evidences of its validity. Richard Ball, one of the appraisers, having died, the Court appointed Nathaniel Hurst and John Harding, May 30, 1677. (Test. Proc. 9, 162-8).

The will of Thomas Todd, taken from the Annapolis records, is of sufficient interest to publish in full:

In the name of God, Amen. Febr. the 26th Anoque Domini 1675 I Thomas Todde of Baltemore County in the province of Maryland being weeke in body but of perfect memory praised be Almighty god my blessed Saviour into whose hands I comitt my soule hoping for Salvation through his merits doe make ordaine & appoint this my Last Will & Test. Revoking all other Will or Wills whatsoever. I doe by these presents make ordaine & apoint my well beloved Sonne Thomas Todd my whole and sole Executor to see this my last Will performed in manner and forme as followeth. Imprimis I give and bequeath to my well beloved wife Anne Todd fower hundred poundes Sterling now lying in Alderman Richard Boothes hands in London. I likewise bequeath my said wife one hundred seaventy six pounds sterling being in ye hands of Robert Gorsedge and my p'cell of Land lying on old England which the said Robert Gorsedg is now possessed of. Thirdly I give and bequeath my said Wife two of my best breeding Mares. Fourthly I give to my fower Daughters Anne Johanna Frances and Averella the product of Eighty seaven hogsheds of Tobacco now shipt for England, it to be equally Divided betweene them. Fifthly I give to each of said daughters one breeding Mare apiece. Sixthly I give & bequeath my wife one feather bed & furniture. Seaventhly I give to my dauthter Anne one feather bed. Eightly I will that if there be occasion for money that my parte of the Shippe Augusteene be sold. Ninthly I give and bequeath to my brother Christopher Todd twenty pounds sterling to be paid him in England. Tenthly I give my said brother Christopher Todd seaven hundred acres of Land called Todde lying in Chester River in Cosicoe Creeke to be disposed of as he shall think to his heirs Executors or Administrators. Elleventhly I will that my sole Executor Thomas Todde, that he have not my Estate praised nor suffer noe admon. to be taken out. I witness of all which I have hereunto sett my hand and seale the day and year within mentioned

Eben: Mylam

Witness present his Thomas Todd (seal)

Symond X Whitthall

marke Proved 30 May 1677

Philip Calvert

Capt. Thomas Todd had a considerable estate in the colonies and in England. Robert Gorsedge, mentioned in the will, was his wife's brother, Robert[4] Gorsuch (see ante 216-221). Nothing is known in regard to "aldeman [Alderman] Richard Boothe." Thomas Todd's interest in the "Shippe Augusteene," and the fact that he is so often referred to as merchant may possibly indicate that his title "Captain" was that of sea captain rather than of military origin. It is interesting to note that although his wife, Ann, and four daughters—Ann, Johanna, Francis, and Averelea [Averilla] are mentioned by name, he only names one son, Thomas, whom he appoints executor. That there were other sons will be pointed out later. It seems almost certain that his failure to make specific bequests in his will to his several sons was due to the fact that he had already settled lands in Virginia and Maryland upon them. As has been noted before, the bequest to his brother, Christopher Todd, of Todde [Todley] on Corsica Creek, Chester River has been the means of identifying the Todd family with Denton in Durham, England.

The widow, Anna[4] (Gorsuch) Todd, remarried soon after the death of her husband, Thomas Todd. The inventory of the estate of Thomas Todd, late of Baltimore County, appraised by Natl. Hawkins and Jno. Ardon, Jan. 16, 1678-9 shows goods and chattels valued at 14,870 lbs. of tobacco, and enumerates among other items certain stock "delivered to David Jones, who married the relict of Thomas Todd." (Balto. Invents. 1; 284). That all had not run smoothly in the management of the estate in Maryland is shown by a lengthy petition filed by the executor, Thomas Todd, in the Prerogative Court in which among other statements he declares that the estate of his father, Thomas Todd "is now in danger to be wasted and destroyed by the relict of the said decd., who is since married to a wasteful spendthrift." (Test. Proc. 9; 162). The widow was probably contemplating her second marriage, when Jan. 18 1676-7 she executed a deed of gift to her children: "I Anna Todd of Baltimore County of the Province of Maryland for and because of the natural affection I have for my children—give all my estates to my children now in being—they allowing me a liberal maintenance for life—I constitute my dearly beloved brother, Charles Gorsuch, to acknowledge the same—(signed) Anna Todd." (Balto. Deeds IS: IK; 57). There would seem to be no question that Anna[4] (Gorsuch) Todd was the mother of all of Capt. Todd's children. The eldest daughter Anne who had married Miles Gibson prior to May 30, 1677, was doubtless named after her mother. Thomas Todd, Jr. appointed executor under his father's will, who was apparently the eldest son, is known to have been born in 1660. Thomas Todd, Sr., in the letter to his son Thomas dated 1676 writes: "Your *Mother*, Brothers and Sisters are well." Anna[4] (Gorsuch) Todd was baptized March 13, 1638-9, and there is some evidence that she was a married woman in 1657.

Anna[4] (Gorsuch) Todd married her second husband, Capt. David Jones, probably in 1677. Jones was a very early settler in Baltimore

County. He not only gave his name to Jones Falls, the stream which rising in the Green Spring Valley flows through the heart of Baltimore and empties into the northwest branch of the Patapsco, but also to Jones's Town, laid out in 1731, and incorporated ten years later with Baltimore Town.* He patented a tract Jones Range, 380 acres, surveyed for him Jan. 15, 1671 on the north side of the Patapsco River on Denton Creek near the mouth of the Patapsco River. (Balto. Co. Rent Rolls; Md. Hist. Soc. MSS). The Rent Roll shows that he also patented the following tracts in Baltimore County: Jones Chance [Fortune] 130 acres, surveyed June 12, 1682 on [Old] Road Creek lying on the easternmost bounds of Powell's Pumpkin Patch; Rangers Lodge, 500 acres, surveyed 12th of June, 1682 at the head of Bush River between the Middle Branch and James' Branch to the northeast side of Bynum's Run; Stony Banks, 50 acres, surveyed June 16, 1682 on the north side of the Patapsco "in the woods;" Long Point, 250 acres, surveyed June 16, 1682 on the west side of the main branch of Back River in the Valley of Herring Run; Jones Adventure, 80 acres, surveyed June 16, 1682 on the north side of the Patapsco. The Baltimore County land records show that David Jones purchased the following tracts in Baltimore County. Dec. 8, 1679 he purchased from Charles Gorsuch [his brother-in-law] three tracts of land viz.: Cole's Harbor 550 acres lying upon the northwest branch of the Patapsco; Maiden's Choice, 450 acres, lying upon the head of the middle branch of the Patapsco; and Maryborne [St. Mary Bow], 200 acres, lying upon the main run [Jones Falls] of the northwest branch of the Patapsco. (Balto. Deeds; IR: PP; 46). David Jones also purchased, 1685, from Samuel Wheeler, Monteney's Neck, 200 acres, lying upon the northwest branch of the Patapsco. (idem; RM: HS; 180). David Jones and his wife Anna sold to Charles[4] Gorsuch Dec. 5, 1679, the tract Jones Range near the mouth of the Patapsco about the same date that he purchased from Charles Gorsuch the three above mentioned tracts on the upper Patapsco. (idem IR: PP; 47). He sold, 1686, his Bush River tract, Ranger's Lodge, mentioned above, to James Phillips (idem; RM: HS; 205). The transfers of tracts upon the upper Patapsco in which David Jones figures are of great interest to students of the early history of Baltimore. When he gave up his residence on the lower Patapsco, apparently soon after his marriage to Anna[4] Todd, David Jones selected for his dwelling plantation the tract,Cole's Harbor upon which Baltimore Town and Jones's Town were afterwards laid out. This tract, Cole's Harbor, 550 acres, which was later resurveyed by David Jones's step-son, James[5] Todd under the name Todd's Range, 510 acres, included that part

*The number of settlers upon the upper Patapsco had rapidly increased and in 1728 by an Act of the Assembly, a town comprising sixty acres, to be known as Baltimore Town was ordered laid out upon the northwest branch of the Patapsco, to the west of Jones Falls, and in 1731, Jones's Town, containing ten acres was laid out on the east side of the Falls just opposite. Both towns were taken out of Cole's Harbor or Todd's Range. In 1741 the two towns with certain adjacent land were incorporated together under the name Baltimore Town. In its further growth, Cole's Harbor soon became entirely absorbed in the rapidly developing city. Griffith states that before this an attempt had been made to locate Baltimore Town upon Moale's Point on the middle branch of the Patapsco.

of Baltimore bounded in a very general way on the south by the harbor, on the east by Bond Street, on the north by Madison Street, and on the west by Howard Street. The tract Maryborne [St. Mary Bow] which he also purchased from Charles Gorsuch, and which afterwards was resurveyed by a later owner under the name Mount Royal, lay along Jones Falls, and comprised in a general way that portion of the city now traversed by Mt. Royal avenue and Jones's Falls extending from Charles Street to Druid Lake. Maiden's Choice lies to the southwest of the city in the direction of Catonsville. Its name is still preserved in Maiden's Choice Lane. A confirmatory deed from Charles Gorsuch and his wife Sarah, to David Jones to these three tracts, dated August 1, 1682, in the description of Cole's Harbor refers to it as the land "David Jones now lives upon." The deed further recites that Charles Gorsuch had come into possession of these three tracts through his wife, Sarah Cole, as the heir at law of Thomas Cole of Baltimore County, by whom they had been patented (idem; IR: AM; 186). David Jones added a tract of 200 acres to his home plantation Cole's Harbor by the purchase in 1685 from Samuel Wheeler of the tract Monteney's Neck, adjoining Cole's Harbor on the east, extending his land holdings in a general way as far as Fells Point on the southeast to a point on the northeast near what is now the intersection of Monument and Wolfe Streets. The southern portion of Monteney's Neck was bisected in a general way by the stream originally known as Monteney's Run and more recently as Harford Run, but now merely a covered storm water drain. David Jones appears to have continued to live upon this plantation until his death in 1686-7. The history of these early tracts upon which Baltimore was laid out has been gone into in some little detail because of sundry errors which have crept into the accounts of the settlement of Baltimore as given in Griffith's Annals of Baltimore, and in Scharf's Chronicles of Baltimore, to which further reference will be made later (see also James Todd[5] post). There is some reason however to question Griffith's assertion that David Jones was the first actual settler upon the original site of Baltimore Town as there is no proof that Thomas Cole or his son in law Charles[4] Gorsuch may not have lived upon Cole's Harbor, although his statement may well be true that David Jones's "residence was upon the north [east] side of Jones Falls near the head of tidewater where the stream was crossed without a bridge by the great eastern road." This would apparently place his house somewhere near the intersection of Gay and High Streets. In the Proceedings of the Baltimore County Court, among the members of the Grand Jury for 1684, the name of Capt. David Jones heads the list, probably indicating that he was foreman. He left a considerable landed estate and seems to have been a prosperous planter. The assertion of his stepson, Thomas[5] Todd, that he was a "wasteful spendthrift" was probably largely based upon the desire to get the management of his father's estate entirely out of the hands of his new step-father, and he therefore did not hesitate to use forcible language to strengthen his appeal to the court.

That David Jones was a man of social standing is shown by frequent references to him in the County Court Proceedings as "Mr. David Jones." Francis Lovelace of Baltimore County in his will dated March 3, 1673-4 and proved May 19, 1684, leaves "unto my cosen Anna Jones my looking-glass and—unto David Jones my sword" (Annap. Wills). The relationship between Francis Lovelace and Anna[4] (Gorsuch) Jones will be discussed later. He was probably the son of her uncle Thomas Lovelace (see Lovelace, post). A few years after David Jones's death in 1687, a rather picturesque suit, which does not seem to have found its way into print, was filed in the Baltimore County Court to determine the ownership of a gold ring which he had lost. At the September, 1693, session of the Court, Capt. John Oldton and Anne his wife, executrix under the will of David Jones, in a suit against one Nicholas Corbin declare that "David Jones in his lifetime was possessed of one gold ring to the vallue of twenty-two shillings—which ring the sd. David att the house of the sd. Nicholas Corban in Patapsco Hundred in Baltemore County—from his finger did casually loose wch sd. ring about the fifteenth of July 1691*—was upon the dung-hill near the house of sd Nicholas by one of the servants of Nicholas found and by the sd servant placed into the hands of the sd Nicholas." The complaint goes on to recite that Nicholas refused to give up possession of the ring and has since disposed of it. The plaintiffs demand damages amounting to £2:4:0. Filed with the suit is the deposition of Martha Love age twenty-five years, a servant of Nicholas Corbin, dated May 29, 1693, in which she declares that when she and the other servants of Nicholas Corbin were engaged in clearing away the dung-hill sometime before, their master had reminded them that they might find the lost ring. She further testifies that she saw one of her fellow servants, William Tallbott, find the ring and conceal it, and that she had afterwards persuaded him to give it to her master which he did about a week later. It is interesting to note that the Court decided that John Oldton and his wife Anne were not entitled to damages and lost their suit. (Balto. Co. Court Proc. 1693-6; 125-6).

Capt. David Jones died between Feb. 3, 1686-7, the date of his will and March 1, 1686-7, when Ann Jones of Baltimore County petitioned the Prerogative Court to commission John Boring [Deputy Commissary of Baltimore County] to prove the will of her late husband David Jones under which she was appointed executrix. This the Court granted and appointed Anthony Demondader and John Carrington appraisers (Test. Proc. 13, 453). The will was proved before John Boring deputy commissary March 14, 1686-7 (Annap. Wills 4; 240). The will was filed, an inventory exhibited, and ordered recorded Apr. 26, 1687, with a further report by John Boring upon the estate July 8, 1687 (Test. Proc. 13, 483, 495). This will of David Jones is of considerable interest as it disposes of tracts upon which the city of Baltimore was afterwards built, and be-

*The date 1691 is obviously a clerical error, as Jones died in 1687.

cause of the fact, that not being recorded among the Baltimore County testamentary records, it has escaped the eyes of local historians and title searchers. The spelling is atrocious, making identification impossible to the casual reader of several of the persons and tracts mentioned. This is doubtless due to the fact that the old Annapolis liber in which the will was originally recorded is no longer in existence, the present will book having been transcribed in the early part of the last century, probably by a clerk who could not read the seventeenth century hand-writing. The will, omitting the lengthy introduction, is as follows:

Will of David Jones—In the name of God Amen ye 3rd day of Feb'y 1686[-7],—I David Jones being sick in body but of good and perfect memory—I give and commit my soule unto Almighty God etc—and my body to be buried in such place where it shall please my Ex hereafter named to apoint and now for the setling of my temporall estate and such goods chattles and debts as it hath plesed God far above my desarts to bestow upon me I doe order give and dispose the same in manner and form following that is to say

First I will that all these debts and dutys as I owe in right or consience to any manner of pson or psons whatsoever shall be well and truly contented and payd or ordained to be payd with them convenient time after my decease by my Execu'rx hereafter named.

I will that my deare wife Ann Jones being Exect'rx after my death, I give and bequeath unto my deare wife all my personall estate and to her ers [heirs] all my psonall estate excepting the legacies as after shall be mencened.

Item. I give and bequeath unto John Grosch [Gorsuch] and Tho: Gorash [Gorsuch] equally to be divided between them both and to their heirs four hundred and fifty acres of land called ye Midians [Maiden's] Choyce.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Frances Toodd and her heairs two hundred and fifty acres of land called the long point at the head of bays [Back] River.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Abuillye [Averilla] Tood on[e] hundred and thirty acres of land called by the name of Jones Fortin [Chance]

Item. I give and bequeath unto James Toodd eirt[y] acres of land belonging unto Black Walnot Neck and to his heairs.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Robert Gepson [Gibson] two hundred acres of land called Marrayland [Marybone or St. Mary Bow]

Item. I give and bequeath unto Edward Norish [Norris] on cow and calfe to be delivered this next year.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Sarah Garnt [Garnet] on cow and calfe to be delivered next year.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Moyciss [Moses Groome] Grome one cow and calfe to be dd this next year.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Danall Walch one cow and calfe to be dilivered the next year insueing.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my deare shister Elizabeth Jons my now dwelling Plantation with all the land belonging unto it after my wifes decease.

Item. I will that if in case my sistor dyes before my wife that then I give and bequeath unto Frances and Abiell [Averilla] Todd aforesaid after ye decease of my wife.

Item. I bequeath that servant before next yeare to my wife that is at her demand and his name George Williams all in genrall only I give and bequeath unto Robert Jopson [Gibson] on neger after the dece'd of my wife.

Item. I give and bequeath unto Miles Gipson [Gibson] on guld ring of twenty shillings price.

Item. I give and bequeath unto John Williams one gold ring of twenty two shillings price. Ass witness my hand and seale

his
David X Jones (SEALED)
mark

John Roch, Mathew Hidson, Wolfan Hunt [Witnesses]

Merandom 14th day of March Mathew Hudson and Wolfan Hunt did prove this within menconed will upon oath before me to be the act and deed last Will and Testament of David Jones latly deceased. Given under my hand this 14th day of March 1686 [-7].

John Boring

A careful study of David Jones's will has cleared up many obscure points. *Midians Choyce*, 450 acres left to John *Grosch* and Tho: *Gorash* and their heirs, explains how Maidens Choice purchased by David Jones Dec. 8, 1679 from his brother-in-law Charles Gorsuch, came into the possession of John and Thomas *Gorsuch*, sons of Charles Gorsuch[4], who disposed of it March 11, 1708-9 to Thomas Cromwell (see Charles Gorsuch[4] post), which has never before been understood. The tract Long Point, 250 acres, on Back River left to Frances *Toodd* and her heirs, which tract was patented by David Jones in 1682, and later turns up in the possession of Richard Cromwell, will be further discussed under Frances Todd[5] (Anna Todd[4]). The tract JonesFortin, 130 acres left to Abuillye [Averilla] Todd appears to be the tract Jones Chance, 130 acres, on Old Road Creek patented by him 1682. The unnamed tract on Black Walnut Neck, 80 acres, left to his step-son James Todd and his heirs was probably Jones Adventure, or Jones Venture, 80 acres, as it is called in the Rent Roll. The tract *Marrayland*, 250 acres left to Robert Gepson was Maryborne or St. Mary Bow purchased by Jones from Charles Gorsuch Dec. 8, 1679, and now left to Robert Gibson, the son of Miles Gibson and Anne[5] Todd, his wife, the step-daughter of Jones. His "now dwelling Plantation with all the land belonging unto it" which he leaves to his wife during her lifetime, and after his wife's death to his

sister Elizabeth Jones, to pass to Frances and *Abiell* [Averilla] Todd, who are also his step-daughters, provided his sister Elizabeth died during the lifetime of his wife, was certainly the tract Cole's Harbor, 550 acres, which he had bought from Charles Gorsuch Dec. 8, 1679, and may have included also the adjoining tract Monteney's Neck, 200 acres, which he had bought from Samuel Wheeler in 1685. The bequests of stock to sundry individuals have no special interest, but the bequest to "Miles Gipson [Gibson] on guld ring ot twenty shillings price" recalls the episode of the lost ring. The subsequent history of some of the tracts disposed of under the will of David Jones will be later gone into in detail for reasons which will be discussed more fully under James Todd[5] (see post).

The date of Anna[4] Gorsuch's marriage to her third husband Capt. John Oldton is not known. She had married sometime prior to August 1693 when John Copas brought suit against John Oldton and Ann his wife, relict of David Jones, in a dispute about the ownership of a heifer (Balto. Co. Ct. Proc. 1691-3; 484-5). Capt. John Oldton was prominent in the affairs of Baltimore County. He got into serious trouble as the result of an affray with Dennis Garrett, a prominent planter, which caused Garrett's death. Oldton, says the old record, hit Garrett on the forehead with his sword "of the value of twenty shillings." The occurrence took place July 31, 1691, and Garrett languished away, dying Sept. 2. Oldton was condemned to be hanged but afterwards "the said Oldton was graciously pardoned by the Majesty's pardon in the usual form." (Annap. Judgements D. S. no. C; 15). Perhaps this demonstration of his prowess with the twenty shilling sword had something to do with his appointment by the Governor and Council of Maryland March 23, 1694-5 as Commander of the Baltimore County Rangers, which post he continued to hold for several years and to which he owes his title. (Archiv. Md. 20). Oldton was commander of the "Garrison", a fort which he built on the south side of the Green Spring Valley upon what is now known as the Cockey farm near Roger's Station. The name still lives in "Garrison Forest Church" as old St. Thomas's in the Valley is familiarly known. The Baltimore County Rangers whose headquarters were the Garrison appear to have patrolled a backwoods trail extending from the headwaters of the main falls of the Patapsco to the Susquehanna, along which were built small auxiliary garrisons or "cabins." Oldton signed Nov. 1696 with other civil and military officers of the Province, an address to the King congratulating him upon his escape from attempted assassination (Arch. Md. 20, 544). The Baltimore County Rent Roll for 1700 refers to him as being then in England (Md. Hist. Soc. MSS). He was a member of the Grand Jury of 1708 (Balto. Co. Ct. Proc. IS: B; 1). Oldton was an extensive land holder. He owned a tract called Oldton's Garrison, which he afterwards sold Nov. 11, 1699 to Thomas Cromwell and James Murray (Balto. Co. Deeds IR: PP; 159). This was located in the Green Spring Valley near the Garrison fort. Other tracts owned by him were Fellowship, 200 acres, surveyed for him June 12, 1696;

Friendship, 250 acres [about a mile southeast of Towson], sold Sept. 2, 1702 by him to Edward Stevenson (idem; TR: RA; 165); Leakins, part of Thurrell's Neck, on Back River sold to John Harriman July 24, 1704 (idem; HS no. 2; 167); and Darley Hall 300 acres. This last tract was located in what is now Baltimore City in the neighborhood of North Avenue and Harford Avenue, and was sold by him to John Ensor, Nov. 13, 1697 (idem; IR, AM 104). The date of the death of his wife Anna[4] is not known, but Oldton had married prior to Sept. 2, 1702, Mary the widow of Francis Watkins, she joining him in the deed to Stevenson. Francis Watkins had married as his first wife Christina Waites, whose mother Jane had married as her second husband John Dixon, Justice of the Baltimore County Court. The latter's granddaughter Penelope Scudamore became the wife of James Todd. James Todd was John Oldton's stepson (see James[5] Todd, post). There is a deed of gift from Francis Watkins to his "mother-in-law" [step-mother] Mary Oldton in the Baltimore County Land Records. John Oldton died between May 4, 1709 the date of his will and June 30, 1709 the date of probate. He left his entire estate to his wife Mary mentioning by name the tracts Kindness 200 acres, the Bold Adventure 160 acres, and Pimlico (Annap. Wills; 12 Part 2; 105).

The identity of Anna[4] Gorsuch is established beyond doubt. The deed of gift from Anna[4] Todd to her children dated Jan. 18, 1676-7, already referred to, appoints "my beloved brother Charles Gorsuch my attorney to acknowledge same." (Balto. Deeds 1. S: 1K; 57). There is a also a power of attorney from Ann Jones to her son Miles Gibson to acknowledge for her the sale of Jones his Range to her brother Charles Gorsuch, Dec. 9. 1679 (idem 61). Again in connection with the sale by Charles Gorsuch and his wife Sarah to David Jones of Coles Harbor and other tracts Dec. 7, 1679, Charles and his wife Sarah appoint "cozen Miles Gibson," their attorney to acknowledge this conveyance of the same "to our brother [brother-in-law] David Jones" (idem, 60). Charles Gorsuch, May 26, 1680, in a letter appointing Miles Gibson [who married Anne[5] Todd] his attorney, signs himself "thy loving uncle" (idem IR: PP; 49). The will of Frances Lovelace of Baltimore County 1694, a connection of the Gorsuch family, refers to her as his "cozen Anna Jones."

Anna[4] Gorsuch died between May 23, 1694 when she appears as a witness of the will of Edith Beacher of Patapsco River (Balto. Co. Court Proc. R. M: HS. no. 1; 550) and Sept. 2nd 1702, when John Oldton, her third husband, is joined in a deed by his second wife Mary. She had probably died prior to Nov. 13, 1697 for Oldton at this date executed a deed in which no wife joins.

Anna[4] Gorsuch appears to have had issue only by her first husband Capt. Thomas Todd. Certainly the will of her second husband Capt. David Jones shows that he left no issue. She was a woman of nearly fifty when she married her third husband Capt. John Oldton. The eldest son of Thomas and Anna[4] Todd was Thomas[5], his heir, born in 1660 (see

Thomas[5] Todd post). The names of two other, sons John and Robert living Aug. 17, 1664 are learned from the deed of gift of land from their father. That there was a fourth son James, probably the youngest, is established by many references in the Land Records. Thus in a confirmatory deed from Thomas [5]Todd to Stephen Johnson, 1694 it is recited that Thomas had formerly conveyed a certain tract to his brother James (Balto. Deeds RM: HS; 399). From the rights proved by Capt. Thomas Todd Apr. 5, 1669 naming his children Robert, Ann, John, Johanna and Francis, the order of birth, also confirmed by the will, is ascertained. From Thomas Todd's will the name of a fourth daughter Aberill [Averilla], probably born after Apr. 5, 1669, is learned. That the Richard Todd, who was among the other 24 headrights proved by Thomas Todd Oct. 15, 1671, was a son seems rather unlikely. No person of this name later appears on the records. In previously published accounts of this family it has been stated that there were three other sons Christopher, Philip, and William. There is no evidence to support this statement. The error seems to have arisen several years ago in mistaking the will of Thomas Todd[6] of Baltimore County died 1715, with that of his father Thomas[5] of Virginia who really outlived his son by ten years. In this will Thomas[6] mentions his brothers William, Philip and Christopher. These were therefore grandsons and not sons of Thomas and Anna[4] Todd, there being no evidence of other children than the four daughters and four sons given above.

(To be continued)

The Ancestors and Descendants of John Rolfe, with Notes on Some connected Families.

The Fleming Family.

(Concluded)

17. John Fleming (John[3], John[2], Charles[1]) entered the military service of his country at the beginning of the Revolution. The Virginia Gazette of Oct. 21st, 1775 says: "Two companies of regulars are just arrived [in Williamsburg] viz., Captain John Fleming's from Henrico, and Captain Robert Ballard's from Mecklenburg." On March 26, 1776 commissions, to date from January 27th, were issued to Captain John Fleming and his subalterns (Council Journal) though according to Heitman, he was commissioned captain in the 1st Virginia regiment Oct. 2d, 1775. The records of the War Department give the former date, while a report of J. H. Smith, Virginia Commissioner of Military Claims says: "John Fleming, Captain Continental Line; Captain 1st regiment, July 22d, 1776, and August 7th, 1776 (see Council Journal of those dates). Died in service as Major (See Certificate of Benjamin Harrison on file in executive

department). His heirs received 5333½ acres of land. Are entitled to additional land from Aug. 7, 1776 to the end of the war." His regiment marched to the Northward and joined the army under Washington. A return of the 1st Virginia regiment Nov. 5, 1776, shows that Captain John Fleming was in command, all the field officers being absent sick (Force's Archives). He led his regiment at the battle of Princeton, and while acting with distinguished gallantry, was killed. Bancroft says: "In this way (while rallying fugitives) fell Fleming, the gallant leader of all that was left of the first Virginia regiment." Washington wrote to Congress, January 5, 1777, that among the killed at Princeton was Captain Fleming who commanded the first Virginia regiment.

The Virginia Gazette of January 24th, 1777, has the following notice of his death: "By accounts from the northward, we have the melancholy news of the death of Captain John Fleming of the 1st Virginia regiment, who proved himself to be a gallant officer, and nobly fell on the 3d instant, near Trenton, at the head of his company, in defense of American freedom. He was universally esteemed by those who were acquainted with him, and his loss is much regretted

Lament, ye brothers—all ye brave should mourn
And drop a tear of pity o'er his urn."

The same paper of January 31st, prints a letter, "from a general in the Continental service," dated Trenton Jan. 9th: "We lost a very good officer Captain Fleming of the 3d [1st] Virginia batallion. Within ten yards of the enemy he called to his men, 'Gentlemen, dress before you make ready.' The British troops blackguarded our people and damned them, 'they would dress them,' and gave the first fire. Our men placed their fire so well, that the enemy screamed as if devils had got hold of them. They were encouraged by their officers, and advanced with their bayonets, but were forced out of the field by the brave Americans."

On March 16, 1784 the heirs of John Fleming, major in the Continental Line, were granted a bounty of 5333 acres for his services. Governor Harrison's order for this grant to issue was as follows:

"March 17, 1784.

Sir,

You'l please to issue a certificate to the representatives of John Fleming for the quantity of land allowed a major, in which capacity I know he acted when killed:

Col. Meriwether Benj. Harrison."

These heirs were stated in a certificate by Wm. Fleming, also on file in the State Land office, to be Mary, who married Warner Lewis, Esq., and Susan who married Addison Lewis, Esq., only surviving sisters and coheiresses of the said John Fleming.

On May 30, 1838 a warrant for 1142 acres, additional, was issued to the representative of Major John Fleming. Accompanying the warrant, as on file in the Land Office following certificate:

"Gloucester County, Nov. 1838, on motion of Susan Byrd it was ordered to be certified that satisfactory evidence was adduced to the Court, that Mary Ellis, who was Mary Fleming, died in Gloucester Co., having made a will, and said will, after giving some pecuniary legacies, left the residue of her estate to her niece Susan Byrd, it was also proved that John Fleming, who was a major in the Continental line, died intestate, killed at the battle of Princeton, and his nearest heir is Susan Byrd, who is the only heir of Susan Lewis, who was a sister of John Fleming."

2. TARLETON[2] FLEMING (Charles[1]), b. ——, d. Nov. or Dec. 1750; m. Hannah ——.

Tarleton Fleming, of "Rock Castle," Goochland, was one of the justices of that county at its formation in 1728, and sheriff in 1730 and 1731 (Goochland records). He is stated to have married Hannah Bates, probably a daughter of John Bates of York Co. There is recorded in Goochland a deed dated 1744, from "Mrs. Jane Fleming" to Capt. Robert Moseley, conveying an island of 28 acres in James River, opposite "Fleming's Rock Castle tract." As it was the custom in that day to address unmarried women as "Mrs.," she was probably a sister of Tarleton Fleming, for in 1742 Tarleton and Hannah Fleming witnessed the will of Isham Randolph. The will of Tarleton Fleming was dated Oct. 30, 1750, and proved in Goochland Dec. 18, 1750. He gives all his lands, stock, interests, furniture and other estate, real and personal, to his son Tarleton, except what was otherwise devised. To his daughters Susanna, Hanna, Elizabeth and Judith £500 current money each. Appoints his son Tarleton, Jno. Fleming, Jr., Tarleton Woodson, Jr., Tarleton Woodson, Sr., and Jacob Woodson, executors. Elizabeth Bates, Elizabeth Woodson, John Bates, Wm. Fleming, and James Meredith, witnesses.

Issue:

24. Tarleton[3], born ——, d. Jan. 1778; m. Mary Randolph.

25. "Charles[3] son of Tarleton and Hannah Fleming born Dec. 10, 1725" (St. Peter's Register). Doubtless died before his father.

26. Susanna[3], b. ——, d ——.

27. Hannah[3], married Apr. 1756, George Webb, Jr.; 28. Elizabeth married Josias Payne, Jr., member of the House of Burgesses for Goochland (marriage bond Aug. 23d, 1755, Goochland records); 29. Judith[3], b. ——, d ——.

24. TARLETON[3] FLEMING (Tarleton[2], Charles[1]), b. ——, d. Jan. 1778; married Mary, daughter of Wm. Randolph, of "Tuckahoe," Goochland.

Col. Tarleton Fleming (as he was styled from his rank in the militia) was sheriff of Goochland in 1771 (Goochland records). In June 1773 he gave a deed of trust on 51 negroes to Thos. M. Randolph, of Goochland, George Webb of New Kent, and Neill Campbell of Henrico, as security for £2074.16.8, with interest from Feb. 3d, 1772; said parties being his securities in a debt to George Kippen & Co. In 1775 and 1776 he was a member of the County Committee of Safety, and was a member of the

House of Delegates from Goochland in 1776. He married Mary, daughter of William Randolph, of "Tuckahoe." Her portrait is in the possession of a relative in this city. The will of Tarleton Fleming was dated Jan. 18, 1778, and proved in Goochland Feb. 16, 1778. States that he had by marriage contract made ample provision for his wife Mary, and now gives her, in addition, his chariot, horses, &c. Bequests to sons William, Thomas and John (the latter a minor). To daughter Judith, ten negroes. The inventory of "Col. Tarleton Fleming deceased" was recorded March 1778, included 84 negroes; a collection of books "valued p inventory £25.; total value personal estate, £13646.

Issue:

30. William Randolph[4], b ——, d. ——; member of the House of Delegates from Goochland 1791, 1804-5, 1805-6; sheriff Goochland 1808-9; Lieutenant Col. commanding 2d regt. Va. militia artillery 1807 [when organized in expectation of war with England].

31. Thomas Mann[4], b. ——, d. ——; m. Ann Spotswood Payne.

32. John, b. ——, d. ——.

†33. Judith, b. ——, d. ——; m. in 1785, George Webb, of Henrico Co.

31. Thomas Mann[4] Fleming; b. ——, d. ——; married Ann Spotswood, daughter of Archibald Payne of Goochland Co., and his wife ——, daughter of Col. Nathaniel, and Dorothea (Spotswood) Dandridge.

Thos Mann Fleming was appointed a justice for Goochland in 1799.

Issue: 34. Martha, Dandridge[5], married in 1817 Peter Cottom, of Richmond, Va.; 35. Mary Page[5]; 36. Ann Spotswood[5]; †37. Tarleton[5], of "Mannsville," Goochland, b. ——, d. ——; married Rebecca Coles.

37. Tarleton[5] Fleming, of "Mannsville," Goochland Co., b. ——, d. ——; m. ——, Rebecca daughter of Walter Coles, of Albemarle Co.

Issue: †37. Thomas Mann[5], b. ——, d. ——; m. (1) Virginia Pemberton; (2) Virginia Morrison. No issue by last marriage; 38. Wm. Randolph[6]; b. ——, d. ——; m. Lelia Shield; 39. Elizabeth[6], married Capt. Wm. Webb, U. S. A. & C. S. N. (see Webb); 40. Sarah[6], m. J. H. Heath, living in Petersburg, Va., and had issue: Eliza[7], Maunsell[7], Jane[7], Tarleton F.[7], of Petersburg, and Ellen.

37. Thomas Mann[6] Fleming, M. D., Goochland Co., b. ——, d. ——, married (1) Virginia Pemberton; (2) Virginia Morrison. No issue by last marriage.

Dr. Fleming served as surgeon C. S. A.

Issue: 44. Rebecca[7], married George Anderson, of Richmond; 45. Cannon married Nannie, daughter of Andrew Ellett, Richmond; 46. Virginia married Frank Prettyman.

38. Wm. Randolph[6] Fleming, of Goochland Co., b. ——, d. ——; m. Lelia Sheild, of York Co., Va.

Mr. Fleming served in the C. S. A. as a lieutenant in the Goochland troop, 4th regt. Va. Cavalry.

Issue: 47. Wm. R.[7]; 48. Henry C.[7]; 49. Orlando F. S.[7]; 50. Tarleton B.[7]; 51. Charles S[7]; 52. Sheild[7].

(To be continued)

Yeardley—Flowerdewe—West.

Notes from English Records in reference to the Yeardley, Flowerdewe, West Families, furnished by Miss Ethel G. Grogan, No. 55 Fitz George Ave., Kensington, W. London, Eng., at the instance of Mr. Griffin C. Callahan, Phila., Pa.*

Will of Ralph Yardley.

(From Water's Gleanings.)

Ralph Yardley, citizen and merchant tailor of London 25 August 1603, proved 27 Feb. 1603. After my debts paid and my funerals discharged I will that all and singular my goods chattels & debts shall be parted and divided into three equal portions according to the laudable use and custom of the City of London. One full third part therof I give and bequeath to Rhoda my wellbeloved wife, to her own use, in full satisfaction of such part or portion of my goods, chattels and debts as she may claim to have by the custom of the same city. One other full third part therof I give and bequeath amongst my children, Raphe, George, John, Thomas, and Anne Yardley and to such other child or children as yet unborn as I shall happen to have at the time of my decease, to be equally parted, shared and divided between them, and to be satisfied and paid to my said sons at the accomplishment of their several ages of one and twenty years, and to my said daughter at the accomplishment of her age of one and twenty years or marriage, which shall first happen, etc. etc. And the other third part therof I reserve to myself therewith to perform and pay these my legacies hereafter mentioned, that is to say, I give and bequeath to the poor of the parish of St. Saviours in Southwark where I now dwell twenty shillings to be divided amongst them by the discretion of the overseers of the poor there for the time being, and to such of the bachelors and sixteen men of the company of merchant tailors London as shall accompany my body to burial twenty shillings for a recreation to be made unto them, and to the Vestrymen of the said parish twenty shillings more for a recreation to be made unto them. I give and bequeath unto my sister Palmer a ring of gold to the value of six shillings eight pence, and to my cousin John Palmer her husband a like ring of the like value, and to my daughter Earby my first wife's wedding ring, and to my son Erby her husband my best cloak, and to my cousin Richard Yearwood my black cloth gown of Turkey fashion. The rest and residue

*Note—We have had extensive investigations made in England as to the ancestry, etc., of Sir George Yeardly, with a view of correcting an error in a footnote (prepared by us) in the Yeardly Pamphlet prepared in 1896 by the late Thomas T. Upshur. These notes are the result of those investigations.—Griffin C. Callahan.

of all and singular my goods, &c., I wholly give unto my said children &c. &c. Item—I give and bequeath to my brother Thomas Yardley a ring of gold of the value of six shillings eight pence. And I ordain and make the said Raph Yardley my son to be Executor &c. and the said Richard Yarwood and my son Edward Earbye, overseers. As to my freehold lands and hereditiments I will devise give and bequeath my messuage, lands &c. in South walk or elsewhere with my said children &c. 24 Harte.

Acts of the Privy Council (Colonial) Calendar.
1613-1680

p. 149 Whitehall, 30 June, 1630.
[abridged copy.]

A petition was this day presented to the Board by Francis West Esq. late Governor of Virginia, shewing that Sir George Yardley, knight, about three years since by his last will bequeathed to Dame Temperance his then wife (whom he made his sole executrix) all his household stuff in his house in St. James City, and likewise ordained that all his other estate in Virginia should be sold by her; and disposed of for tobacco, to be conveyed into England, and that a third part thereof should be for the use of his said wife, and the other two parts for his three children. The said Sir George soon after died, and the Petitioner marrying his widow, did during her life wholly refer unto her the ordering of all the said Sir George's estate, who according to the intent of the said will converted such part thereof as aforesaid into tobacco, and sent the same for England, which coming into the hands of Ralphe Yardley citizen and Apothecarie of London, and brother to the said Sir George, and he being by this means possessed thereof, and understanding that the Petitioner's said wife, was since deceased in Virginia, under pretence of affection to the said children procured to himself as well the administration of the said Sir George's estate, as also the administration of the goods and chattels of the Petitioner's said wife, and being thus possessed of the estate aforesaid, doth refuse to account with the petitioner for the same, or to come to any reasonable or friendly mediation or agreement with him, and therefore the Petitioner humbly sought to be relieved herein by order from the Board.

(To be Continued)

BOOK REVIEWS.

LIFE AND LETTERS OF DOLLY MADISON. Allen C. Clark, Washington, D. C. Press of W. T. Roberts Company, 1914, pp. 517, with 45 illustrations.

No American woman was more beloved in her day than Dolly Madison, and no one has since been regarded with a more sympathetic and sentimental interest. This large and handsome book not only contains very many letters to and from Mrs. Madison, but also others about her and her distinguished husband. It is a valuable contribution to the social and general history of the period.

FENWICK ALLIED ANCESTRY. Ancestry of Thomas Fenwick of Sussex County, Delaware, Provincial Counsellor (etc.). By Edwin Jaquett Sellers, Philadelphia, 1916, pp. 191.

This book, prepared with the care and thoroughness of all of Mr. Sellers' genealogical work, is a store-house of information in regard to a great number of prominent European families, from whom the Fenwicks descended. Thomas Fenwick settled first in Maryland, removed to Lower Norfolk, Va., where he married, returned to Maryland and ultimately settled in Delaware where he became a prominent man.

LIFE OF HENRY WINTER DAVIS. By Bernard C. Steiner. John Murphy Company, Publishers. Baltimore, Md., 1916, pp. 415.

This is a very interesting life of a distinguished man, and fills a gap in American biography. The short autobiography which is included is especially valuable on account of the insight it gives into Senator Davis' character. For a man who had not had opportunity for very thorough classical study and who only stiuded a short time at the University of Virginia, to pronounce the great Grecian, Gesner Harrison, "a plodding pedant" was, to say the least, a rash judgement.

THE FOUNDING OF SPANISH CALIFORNIA. THE NORTHWESTWARD EXPANSION OF NEW SPAIN, 1687-1783. By Charles Edward Chapman, Ph. D., Assistant Professor of History in the University of California. New York, The MacMillan Company 1916, pp. 483, with a portrait and six maps.

Dr. Chapman seeks to show in this volume that the Spanish occupation of California in the years just prior to the American Revolution, was, in a great degree, responsible for the later acquisition of American frontage

on the Pacific. The early settlement of 1769, the founding of San Francisco in 1776 and its significance, the developement of California by Spain, the designs of England and Russia and the massacre of 1781 are among the topics taken up. The materials employed by the author are for the most part, new, and were found by him at the Archivos General Indias during two years residence in Seville, Spain.

MAXWELL HISTORY AND GENEALOGY. Including the Allied Families of Alexander, Allen, Bachiler, Batterton, Beveridge, Blaine, Brewster, Brown, Callender, Campbell, Cary, Clark, Cowan, Fox, Dinwiddie, Dunn, Eyler, Garretson, Gentry, Guthrie, Houston, Howard, Howe, Hughes, Hussey, Irvine, Johnson, Kimes, McCullough, Moore, Pemberton, Rosenmuller, Smith, Stapp, Teter, Tilford, Uzzell, Vawter, Ver Plank, Walker, Wiley, Wilson. By Florence Wilson Houston, Laura Cowan Blaine, Ella Dunn Mellette. Also Baptismal Record of the Rev. John Craig, D. D., of Augusta County, Virginia, 1740-1749, containing One Thousand Four Hundred and Seventy-four names (First Publication of the Original Record). Press of C. E. Pauley & Co., Indianapolis Engraving Co., Indianapolis, Indiana, pp. 641, with 50 illustrations.

The title page of this very comprehensive book is so full that but little other description is needed. After an account of various branches of the great Scottish house of Maxwell (with which no positively proved connection is shown or indeed claimed), families of the name in central and western Virginia are taken up, and a most elaborate and carefully studied account is given of Bezaleel Maxwell of Albemarle county, and of his descendants in every line. These have been very numerous. Then comes a "Maxwell Miscellaney" treating of various persons and families of the name on America. The Craig Register is a document famous in Scotch Irish genealogy and its publication in full will interest great numbers of people. The book is a remarkable example of genealogical work.

GENEALOGY AND HISTORY OF THE NEWKIRK, HAMILTON AND BAYLESS FAMILIES. By Thomas J. Newkirk, Evanston, Ill., pp. 88.

This is a carefully prepared account of families which settled in New York and South Carolina.

FRENCH POLICY AND THE AMERICAN ALLIANCE OF 1778. By Edward S. Corwin, Ph. D., Professor of Politics, Princeton University. Author of "National Supremacy," "The Doctrine of Judicial Review" etc. Princeton University Press, Princeton 1916, pp. 436.

The object of the author has been to show that the motive of France in intervening in the American Revolution was, primarily, to recover

her lost preeminence on the Continent of Europe. He also gives prominence to the embarrassment caused to France by the conflicting interests of her allies, Spain and America.

THE PROBLEM OF THE COMMONWEALTH. By Lionel Curtis, Toronto, The MacMillan Company of Canada, London (etc.), 1916, pp. 248.

The problem discussed in this book; how a British citizen in the Dominions can acquire the same control of foreign policy as one domiciled in the British Isles, is one of the utmost importance, not only for the British Empire, but for the world. The issue, as put by the author is whether The Dominions are to become independent republics or whether "the world-wide Commonwealth is destined to stand more closely united as the noblest of all political achievements." The book will be read with an interest in keeping with the importance of its subject.

NEGRO YEAR BOOK. AN ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE NEGRO, 1916-1917, Monroe N. Work, in charge of Division of Records and Research, Tuskegee Normal and Industrial Institute, Editor. Negro Year Book Company, Tuskegee, Ala., pp. 470.

This is not only a valuable record of the many and varied activities of the Negro race during the past year, but also gives much historical information. It is a very useful work

GENERAL INDEX.

TITLES OF SEPARATE ARTICLES ARE INDICATED BY SMALL CAPITALS.

Vol. 3 for Pat

WIFE OF JOHN CUSTIS

Information is desired as to the surname of Susanna, first wife of Major John Custis, of Deep Creek. The will of Major Custis was proved in Accomac, February 7, 1732.

MRS. W. H. WHITRIDGE
604 Cathedral Street - Baltimore, Maryland

4t

The Virginia Historical Society.

Members are requested to solicit contributions of books, maps portraits, and manuscripts of historical value or importance particularly such as may throw light upon the political, social or religious life of the people of Virginia.

The Society will become the custodian of such articles of this character as the possessors may from any cause be unwilling to give, and in the case of family papers or other manuscripts which it may be undesirable to publish, it will, upon request, keep them confidential.

☞ A large *fire proof safe* has been secured and placed in the society's building, in which all manuscripts and papers of value are carefully preserved by the Librarian.

In the vicissitudes of war, and the repeated removals to which the Society's Library has been subjected, many volumes have been lost and the sets broken. Odd volumes from the collections of its members and well-wishers will therefore be gratefully received.

It is especially desirable to secure as complete a collection as possible of early Virginia newspapers, periodicals and almanacs.

Any book or pamphlet written by a native or resident of Virginia, published or printed in Virginia, or in any way relating to Virginia or Virginians, will be accepted and preserved.

The Society requests gifts of photographs (cabinet size) of old portraits of Virginians, or photographs, drawings, &c., of Coats of Arms of Virginia families. Albums have been provided and an interesting collection has already been made.